



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

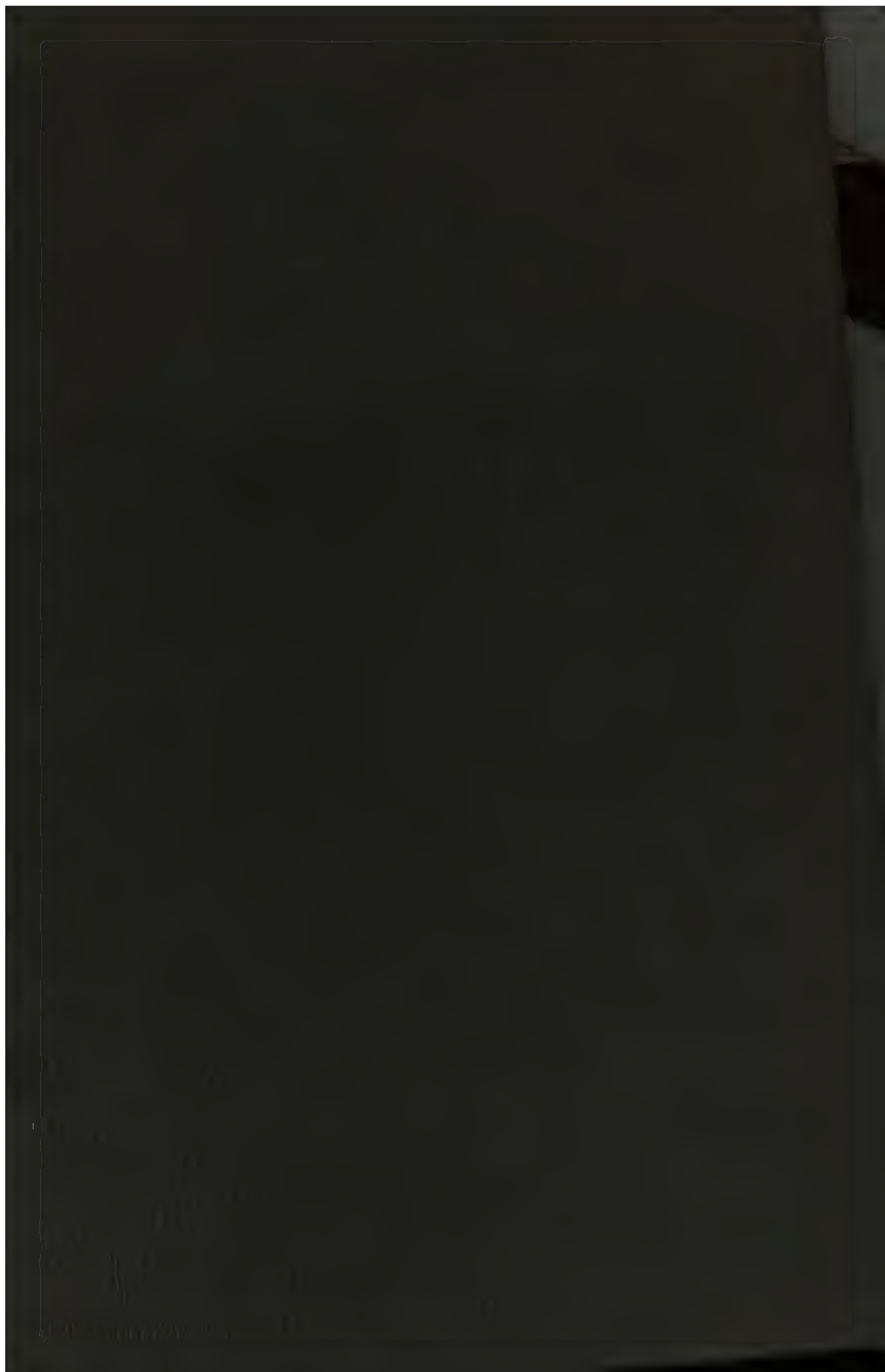
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>







23718.10

## Harvard College Library



### FROM THE BRIGHT LEGACY

One half the income from this Legacy, which was received in 1880 under the will of

**JONATHAN BROWN BRIGHT**  
of Waltham, Massachusetts, is to be expended for books for the College Library. The other half of the income is devoted to scholarships in Harvard University for the benefit of descendants of

**HENRY BRIGHT, JR.,**  
who died at Watertown, Massachusetts, in 1686. In the absence of such descendants, other persons are eligible to the scholarships. The will requires that this announcement shall be made in every book added to the Library under its provisions.











Compliments of Mr Maxwell  
to

Hen. S. B. Elkins,

—

Parsens, Wva. March 22, 1898





























GOVERNOR J. J. JACOB.



RESIDENCE OF COLONEL SAMUEL COOPER.



HISTORY

OF

# Hampshire County

WEST VIRGINIA

From Its Earliest Settlement to the  
Present

BY HU MAXWELL, M. A., LL. D., F. R. S.

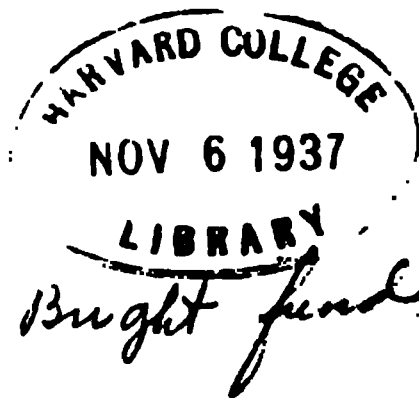
NEW YORK

A. S. BARNES & CO. PUBLISHERS



us 23798.10

✓



COPYRIGHT BY  
Hu Maxwell and H. L. Swisher.  
1897.

37-227-1  
29



## INTRODUCTION.

---

Hampshire county, the oldest in West Virginia, was formed in 1754. It then included nearly all the valley of the South branch, and its limits westward were not defined. The present county of Mineral and a portion of Morgan were then in Hampshire. In 1785 Hardy county, including the present territory of Grant and part of Pendleton, was taken from Hampshire. In 1820 Morgan county was created, taking part of its territory; and in 1866 Mineral was formed from Hampshire. Thus the old county was reduced to its present limits. In 1784 its area was two thousand eight hundred square miles, with about fourteen thousand population. Its area is now six hundred and thirty square miles with about thirteen thousand population. In writing the present history no labor or expense has been spared. The aim has constantly been to present a faithful narrative of events, beginning with the earliest explorations and settlements and leading down to the present time. In order to present occurrences in their proper sequence and relation, the work has been divided into three parts. The first considers the county of Hampshire as one in a group of counties forming the state. Many features of history cannot be adequately considered if restricted to a single county because they concern the whole state. Part I. of this book, therefore, contains a synopsis of the history of West Virginia, thereby laying a broad foundation on which to construct the purely local history of the county. Part II. contains the county history. Part III. deals with family history. Each of these parts is complete and could stand alone; but the three are so related that they form one work, the state history being



## INTRODUCTION.

the foundation, the county history the superstructure, and the family history the finishing. Every nook and corner of Hampshire has been ransacked to collect the scattered and disconnected, but mutually related, fragments from which to compile this book. The magnitude of this work may be partially appreciated when it is stated that more than thirteen hundred families were visited at their homes, and a record made of the births, marriages and deaths in each family, not only for the present generation but often extending back more than one hundred years. The result of this has been carefully condensed and is presented in part III. The aggregate distance traveled in collecting this material was no less than three thousand miles; and if one man had collected the material and written this History of Hampshire it would have occupied his whole time for seven hundred days.

While the preparation of the family history was the most laborious and expensive part of the undertaking, much work was required for the other parts. The book has been written for the homes, and the aim has been to make it an educational work, not so much for the older people who probably are already acquainted with much that is in it, but for the young whose education has only begun. To this end, special attention has been given to the geography, botany, geology and mineralogy of the county, and the kindred topics relating to climate and products. These have been written from original investigation and observation; for no writer had ever before entered that field in Hampshire county, except in the most general and superficial manner. It is confidently believed that the school children of Hampshire will find the way opened for a more intelligent and practical understanding of their county's geography and natural features, particularly of what the mountains contain, how soils are made, and the effects of climate, and many kindred topics.

The destruction of many of the county records during



## INTRODUCTION.

the war has been a serious obstacle in the way of fully investigating many events in the county's early history. However, no source of information that could possibly throw light upon the subject has been neglected. The compilation of the history of the war in Hampshire presented most discouraging difficulties. There were few documents and almost no official or unofficial records accessible. Days of investigation often were required to fix a date; and sometimes the date could be fixed only approximately. The narratives of events were collected from scores of sources, and were often so conflicting that to bring order out of chaos seemed impossible. But, after months of labor, the chapter on the war is presented to the people with the assurance that they will find it an important and painstaking record of events as they occurred in Hampshire. It is believed that, in the main features it is absolutely correct, and in the minor details it contains very few errors.

It has not been the purpose to go much beyond the present borders of the county in dealing with its history, yet, so intimately are historical occurrences interrelated, that a proper handling of the subject often led the investigator beyond the confines of Hampshire. The book is a tolerably full history of the lower portion of the South branch valley. Trivial matters have been omitted in order to devote more space to what is of greater importance. Valuable assistance has been given by the citizens of Hampshire. They have cooperated nobly in the work, and if they find this history a book of value, they helped to make it so.







**PART I,**

**State History**



**BY HU MAXWELL.**







# CHAPTER I



## EXPLORATION AND SETTLEMENT.

It is impossible to say when and where the first white man set foot on the soil of what is now West Virginia. In all probability no record was ever made of the first visit. It is well known that adventurers always push into new countries in advance of organized exploring parties; and it is likely that such was the case with West Virginia when it was only an unnamed wilderness. Probably the Indians who waged war with the early colonists of Virginia carried prisoners into this region on their hunting excursions. But there is no record of this, and history deals with records and not conjecture. Sixty-five years were required for the colonists of Virginia to become superficially acquainted with the country as far west as the Blue Ridge, which, until June 1670, was the extreme limit of explorations in that direction. The distance from Jamestown, the first colony, to the base of the Blue Ridge, was two hundred miles. Nearly three-quarters of a century was required to push the outposts of civilization two hundred miles, and that, too, across a country favorable for exploration, and with little danger from Indians during most of the time. In later years the outposts of civilization moved westward at an average yearly rate of seventeen miles. The people of Virginia were not satisfied to allow the Blue Ridge to remain the boundary between the known and unknown countries; and, in 1670, sixty-three years after the first settlement in the state, the governor of Virginia sent out an exploring party with instructions to cross the mountains of the west, seek for silver and gold, and try to



discover a river flowing into the Pacific ocean. Early in June of that year, 1670, the explorers forced the heights of the Blue Ridge which they found steep and rocky, and descended into the valley west of that range. They discovered a river flowing due north, as far as they could see. The observations and measurements made by these explorers perhaps satisfied the royal governor who sent them out; but their accuracy may be questioned. They reported that the river which they had discovered was four hundred and fifty yards wide; its banks in most places one thousand yards high. Beyond the river they said they could see towering mountains destitute of trees, and crowned by white cliffs, hidden much of the time in mist, but occasionally clearing sufficiently to give a glimpse of their ruggedness. They expressed the opinion that those unexplored mountains might contain silver and gold. They made no attempt to cross the river, but set out on their return. From their account of the broad river and its banks thousands of feet high, one might suppose that they had discovered the Canyon of the Colorado; but it was only New River, the principal tributary of the Kanawha. The next year, 1671, the governor of Virginia sent explorers to continue the work, and they remained a considerable time in the valley of New River. If they penetrated as far as the present territory of West Virginia, which is uncertain, they probably crossed the line into what is now Monroe or Mercer counties.

Forty-five years later, 1716, Governor Spotswood of Virginia led an exploring party over the Blue Ridge, across the Shenandoah river and to the summit of the Allegheny mountains near the source of the South branch of the Potomac. It is probable that the territory of West Virginia was entered on that occasion in what is now Pendleton county. It would be unreasonable to suppose that these exploring parties were the real pioneers of West Virginia. Daring hunters, traders and adventurers no doubt were



by that time somewhat acquainted with the geography of the eastern part of the state. Be that as it may, the actual settlement of the counties of Jefferson, Berkeley, Morgan, Hampshire and Hardy was now near at hand. The gap in the Blue Ridge at Harpers Ferry, made by the Potomac breaking through that range, was soon discovered, and through that rocky gateway the early settlers found a path into the valley of Virginia, whence some of them ascended the Shenendoah to Winchester and above, and others continued up the Potomac, occupying Jefferson county and in succession the counties above; and before many years there were settlements on the South branch of the Potomac. It is known that the South branch was explored within less than nine years after Governor Spotswood's expedition, and within less than thirteen years there were settlers in that country.

Lord Fairfax claimed the greater part of the territory in what is now the eastern panhandle of West Virginia; that is, he claimed the territory now embraced in the counties of Jefferson, Berkeley, Morgan, Hampshire, Hardy and Grant. But his boundary lines had never been run. The grant called for a line drawn from the head of the Potomac to the head of the Rappahannock. Several years passed before it could be ascertained where the fountains of these streams were. An exploring party traced the Potomac to its source in the year 1736, and on December 14 of that year ascertained and marked the spot where the rainfall divides, part flowing into the Potomac and part into Cheat river on the west. This spot was selected as the corner of Lord Fairfax's land; and on October 17, 1746, a stone was planted there to mark the spot and has ever since been called the Fairfax stone. It stands at the corner of two states, Maryland and West Virginia, and of four counties, Garrett, Preston, Tucker and Grant. It is about half a mile north of the station of Fairfax, on the West Virginia Central and Pittsburg railroad, at an elevation of



three thousand two hundred and sixteen feet above sea level.

George Washington spent the summers of three years surveying the estate of Lord Fairfax, partly in West Virginia. He began the work in 1748, when he was sixteen, and persecuted it with ability and industry. There were other surveyors employed in the work as well as he. By means of this occupation he became acquainted with the fertility and resources of the new country, and he afterwards became a large land holder in West Virginia, one of his holdings lying as far west as the Kanawha. His knowledge of the country no doubt had something to do with the organization of the Ohio company in 1749 which was granted 500,000 acres between the Monongahela and the Kanawha. Lawrence Washington, a half brother of George Washington, was a member of the Ohio company. The granting of land in this western country no doubt had its weight in hastening the French and Indian war of 1755, by which England acquired possession of the Ohio valley. The war would have come sooner or later, and England would have secured the Ohio valley in the end, and it would have passed ultimately to the United States; but the events were hastened by Lord Fairfax's sending the youthful Washington to survey his lands near the Potomac. While engaged in this work, Washington frequently met small parties of friendly Indians. The presence of these natives was not a rare thing in the South Branch country. Trees are still pointed out as the corners or lines of surveys made by Washington.

About this time the lands on the Greenbrier river were attracting attention. A large grant was made to the Greenbrier company; and in 1749 and 1750 John Lewis surveyed this region, and settlements sprang up in a short time. The land was no better than the more easily accessible land east of the Alleghany mountains; but the spirit of adventure which has always been characteristic of the



American people, led the daring pioneers into the wilderness west of the mountains, and from that time the outposts of settlements moved down the Greenbrier and the Kanawha, and in twenty-two years had reached the Ohio river. The frontiersmen of Greenbrier were always foremost in repelling Indian attacks, and in carrying the war into the enemy's country.

The eastern counties grew in population, and within a dozen years after their settlement there was an organized church on the South branch, with regular monthly meetings at Opequon. Prior to the outbreak of the French and Indian war in 1755, there were settlements all along the Potomac river, not only in Jefferson, Berkeley and Hampshire, but also in Hardy, Grant and Pendleton counties. It is, of course, understood that these counties, as now named, were not in existence at that time.

The Alleghany mountains served as a barrier for awhile to keep back the tide of emigration from the part of the state lying west of that range; but when peace was restored after the French and Indian war the western valleys soon had their settlements. Explorations had made the country fairly well known prior to this time as far west as the Ohio. Immense tracts of land had been granted in that wilderness, and surveyors had been sent to mark the lines. About the time of the survey of the Greenbrier country, the Ohio company sent Christopher Gist to explore its lands already granted and to examine West Virginia, Ohio and Kentucky for choice locations in view of obtaining future grants. Mr. Gist, a noted character of his time, and a companion of Washington a few years later, performed his task well, and returned with a report satisfactory to his employers. He visited Ohio and Kentucky, and on his return passed up the Kanawha and New rivers in 1751, and climbed to the summit of the ledge of rocks now known as Hawk's Nest, or Marshall's Piller, over-



hanging the New river, and from its summit had a view of the mountains and inhospitable country.

In speaking of the exploration and settlement of West Virginia, it is worthy of note that the Ohio river was explored by the French in 1749; but they attempted no settlement within the borders of the state.

Had Virginia allowed religious freedom, a large colony would have been planted on the Ohio company's lands, between the Monongahela and the Kanawha, about 1750, and this would probably have changed the early history of this part of West Virginia. A colony in that territory would have had its influence in the subsequent wars with the Indians. And when we consider how little was lacking to form a new state, or province, west of the Alleghanies about 1772, to be called Vandalia, it can be understood what the result might have been had the Ohio company succeeded in its scheme of colonization. Its plan was to plant a colony of two hundred German families on its land. The settlers were to come from eastern Pennsylvania. All arrangements between the company and the Germans were satisfactory; but when the hardy Germans learned that they would be in the province of Virginia, and that they must become members of the English church or suffer persecution in the form of extra taxes laid on dissenters by the Episcopacy of Virginia, they would not go; and the Ohio company's colonization scheme failed.

Another effort to colonize the lands west of the Alleghanies, and from which much might have come, also failed. This attempt was made by Virginia. In 1752 the House of Burgesses offered Protestant settlers west of the Alleghanies, in Augusta county, ten years' exemption from taxes; and the offer was subsequently increased to fifteen years' exemption. The war with the French and Indians put a stop to all colonization projects. Virginia had enough to do taking care of her settlements along the western border without increasing the task by advancing the fron-



tier seventy-five miles westward. The first settlement, if the occupation by three white men may be called a settlement, on the Monongahela was made about 1752. Thomas Eckerly and two brothers, from eastern Pennsylvania, took up their home there to escape military duty, they being opposed to war. They wished to live in peace remote from civilized man; but two of them fell victims to the Indians while the third was absent. The next settlement was by a small colony near Morgantown under the leadership of Thomas Decker. This was in 1758, while the French and Indian war was at its height. The colony was exterminated by Indians the next spring.

In 1763, October 7, a proclamation was issued by the King of England forbidding settlers from taking up land or occupying it west of the Alleghanies until the country had been bought from the Indians. It is not known what caused this sudden desire for justice on the part of the king, since nearly half the land west of the Alleghanies, in this state, had already been granted to companies or individuals; and, since the Indians did not occupy the land and there was no tribe within reach of it with any right to claim it, either by occupation, conquest or discovery. Governor Fauquier of Virginia issued three proclamations, warning settlers west of the mountains to withdraw from the lands. No attention was paid to the proclamations. The governors of Virginia and Pennsylvania were ordered, 1765, to remove the settlers by force. In 1766 and the next year soldiers from Fort Pitt, now Pittsburg, were sent into West Virginia to dispossess the settlers by force. It is not probable that the soldiers were overzealous in carrying out the commands, for the injustice and nonsense of such orders must have been apparent to the dullest soldier in the west. Such settlers as were driven away, returned as soon as the soldiers were gone, and affairs went on as usual. Finally, Pennsylvania bought the Indian lands within its borders; but Virginia after that



date, never paid the Indians for any lands in West Virginia. The foregoing order was the first forbidding settlements in West Virginia, north of the Kanawha and west of the Alleghanies. Another order was issued ten years later. Both were barren of results. The second will be spoken of more at length in the account of the incorporation of part of Ohio in the Province of Quebec.

Settlements along the Ohio, above and below Wheeling, were not made until six or seven years after the close of the French and Indian war. About 1769 and 1770 the Wetzels and Zanes took up land in that vicinity, and others followed. Within a few years Wheeling and the territory above and below, formed the most prosperous community west of the Alleghanies. That part of the state suffered from Indians who came from Ohio; but the attacks of the savages could not break up the settlements, and in 1790, five years before the close of the Indian war, Ohio county had more than five thousand inhabitants, and Monongalia had nearly as many.

During the Revolutionary war, parts of the interior of the state were occupied by white men. Harrison county, in the vicinity of Clarksburg, and further west, was a flourishing community four or five years before the Revolution. Settlers pushed up the West fork of the Monongahela, and the site of Weston, in Lewis county, was occupied soon after. Long before that time frontiersmen had their cabins on the Valley river as far south as the site of Beverly, in Randolph county. The first settlement in Wood county, near Parkersburg, was made 1773, and the next year the site of St. George, in Tucker county, was occupied by a stockade and a few houses. Monroe county, in the southeastern part of the state, was reclaimed from the wilderness fifteen years before the Revolution; and Tyler county's first settlement dates back to the year 1776. Pocahontas was occupied at a date as early as any county west of the Alleghanies, there being white settlers in 1749;



but not many. Settlements along the Kanawha were pushed westward and reached the Ohio river before 1776.

The population of West Virginia at the close of the Revolution is not known. Perhaps an estimate of thirty-five thousand would not be far out of the way. In 1790 the population of the territory now forming West Virginia was 55,873; in 1800 it was 78,592, a gain of nearly forty per cent in ten years. In 1810 the population was 105,469, a gain of thirty-five per cent in the decade. The population in 1820 was 136,768, a gain of nearly twenty-three per cent. In 1830 there were 176,924, a gain in ten years of over twenty-two per cent. In 1840 the population was 224,537, a gain of more than twenty-one per cent. The population in 1850 was 302,313, a gain in the decade of more than twenty-five per cent. In 1860 the population was 376,388, a gain of more than twenty-two per cent. In 1870 the population was 442,014, a gain in ten years of nearly fifteen per cent. In 1880 the population of the state was 618,457, a gain of twenty-six per cent. In 1890 the population of the state was 762,794, a gain of more than twenty-three per cent. in ten years.

Land was abundant and cheap in the early days of West Virginia settlements, and the state was generous in granting land to settlers and to companies. There was none of the formality required, which has since been insisted upon. Pioneers usually located on such vacant lands as suited them, and they attended to securing a title afterwards. What is usually called the "tomahawk right" was no right in law at all; but the persons who had such supposed rights were usually given deeds for what they claimed. This process consisted in deadening a few trees near a spring or brook, and cutting the claimant's name in the bark of trees. This done, he claimed the adjacent land, and his right was usually respected by the frontier people; but there was very naturally a limit to his pretensions. He must not claim too much; and it was considered in his



favor if he made some improvements, such as planting corn, within a reasonable time. The law of Virginia gave such settlers a title to 400 acres, and a pre-emption to 1,000 more adjoining, if he built a log cabin on the claim and raised a crop of corn. Commissioners were appointed from time to time, some as early as 1779, who visited different settlements and gave certificates to those who gave satisfactory proof that they had complied with the law. These certificates were sent to Richmond, and if no protest or contest was filed in six months, the settler was sent a deed to the land. It can thus be seen that a tomahawk right could easily be merged into a settler's right. He could clear a little land, build his hut, and he usually obtained the land. The good locations were the first taken, and the poorer land was left until somebody wanted it. The surveys were usually made in the crudest manner, often without accuracy and without ascertaining whether they overlapped some earlier claim or not. The foundation was laid for many future law suits, some of which may still be on the court dockets of this state. It is said that there are places in West Virginia where land titles are five deep. Some of them are old colonial grants, stretching perhaps across two or three counties. Others are grants made after Virginia became a member of the United States. Then come sales made subsequently by parties having or claiming a right in the land. The laws of West Virginia are such that a settlement of most of these claims is not difficult, where the metes and bounds are not in dispute.



## CHAPTER II



### INDIANS AND MOUNDBUILDERS.

Indians enter largely into the early history of the state, and few of the early settlements were exempt from their visitations. Yet, at the time West Virginia first became known to white men, there was not an Indian settlement, village or camp of any considerable consequence within its borders. There appears to have been several villages in the vicinity of Pittsburg, and thence northward to Lake Erie and westward into Ohio; but West Virginia was vacant; it belonged to no tribe and was claimed by none with shadow of title. There were at times, and perhaps at nearly all times, a wigwam here or there within the borders; but it belonged to temporary sojourners, hunters, fishermen, who expected to remain only a short time. So far as West Virginia is concerned, the Indians were not dispossessed of it by the white man, and they were never justified in waging war for any wrong done them within this state. The white race simply took land which they found vacant, and dispossessed nobody.

There was a time when West Virginia was occupied by Indians, and they were driven out or exterminated; but it was not done by the white race, but by other tribes of Indians, who, when they had completed the work of destruction and desolation, did not choose to settle on the land they had made their own by conquest. This war of extermination was waged between the years 1656 and 1672, as nearly as the date could be ascertained by the early historians, who were mostly missionaries among the tribes further north and west. The conquerors were the Mohawks, a



fierce and powerful tribe whose place of residence was in Western New York, but whose warlike excursions were carried into Massachusetts, Virginia, Pennsylvania, West Virginia, even further south. They obtained firearms from the Dutch colonies on the Hudson, and having learned how to use them, they became a nation of conquerors. The only part of their conquests which comes within the scope of this inquiry was their invasion of West Virginia. A tribe of Indians, believed to be the Hurons, at that time occupied the country from the forks of the Ohio southward along the Monongahela and its tributaries, on the Little Kanawha, on the Great Kanawha and to the Kentucky line. During the sixteen years between 1656 and 1672 the Mohawks overran the country and left it a solitude, extending their conquest to the Guyandot river. There was scarcely a Huron left to tell the tale in all this state. If a small village on the Little Kanawha at the coming of the white man was not a remnant of the Hurons, it cannot be ascertained that there was one of that tribe within the borders of this state when the white men pushed their settlements into it. Genghis Kahn, the Tartar, did not exterminate more completely than did these Mohawks. If there were any Huron refugees who escaped, they never returned to their old homes to take up their residence again.

There is abundant evidence all over the state that Indians in considerable numbers once made their home here. Graveyards tell of those who died in times of peace. The dead left on the field of battle are seldom buried by savages. Graves are numerous, sometimes singly, sometimes in large aggregations, indicating that a village was near by. Flint arrowheads are found everywhere, but more numerous on river bottoms and on level land near springs, where villages and camps would most likely be located. The houses of these tribesmen were built of the most flimsy material, and no traces of them are found, except fireplaces, which may occasionally be located on account of charcoal



and ashes which remain till the present day and may be unearthed a foot or more below the surface of the ground. Round these fires, if the imagination may take the place of historical records, sat the wild huntsmen after the chase was over; and while they roasted their venison, they talked of the past and planned for the future; but how long ago, no man knows.

As to who occupied the country before the Hurons, or how long the Hurons held it, history is silent. There is not a legend or tradition coming down to us that is worthy of credence. There was an ancient race here which built mounds; and the evidence found in the mounds is tolerably conclusive that the people who built them were here long before any Indians with which we are acquainted; but history has not yet been able to deal with the question whether the Indians built the mounds or whether they are the work of another race. The strongest argument against the claim that the mounds are the work of Indians of a pre-historic time is the fact that Indians have not built mounds since they have been under the eye of the white race. This evidence is of a negative sort, but it is given weight, and properly so. The argument that the work done shows that the people who built the mounds were a more highly civilized race than the Indians, is not well supported. They were probably more industrious. The mounds in this state, and in the Ohio and Mississippi valleys, seem to have been the crude beginnings of architecture which was improved and enlarged in the pyramids of Mexico, built, or supposed to have been built, by the ancestors of the Aztecs and Mayas. If such were the case, the conclusion would not be unreasonable that the people who built the mounds were driven southwestward into Mexico by the irruption of a new people from the north, and that when the exiles reached their new home they turned their hands again to building mounds, and their experience in building enabled them ultimately to build pyramids. In Mexico to-



day the Indians, Mayas and Aztecs live side by side, and their features and general characteristics show them to be radically the same people, not different races. They are at least as much alike as are the Germans and Spanish, the Greeks and the French; and the common origin of these nations is not difficult to trace. The limits of this work will not permit an extended discussion of this puzzling question. Neither is it proper nor profitable to enter at length upon the consideration of the origin of the Indians. It is a question which history has not answered, and perhaps never will answer. If the origin of the Indians were known, the origin of the people who built the mounds would be near at hand. But the whole matter is one of speculation and opinion. The favorite conclusion of most authors is that America was peopled from Asia by way of Berings strait. It could have been done. But the hypothesis is as reasonable that Asia was peopled by emigrants from America who crossed Berings strait. It is the same distance across, going west or coming east; and there is no historical evidence that America was not peopled first; or that both the old world and the new were not peopled at the same time; or that each was not peopled independently of the other. Since the dawn of history, and as far back into prehistoric times as the analysis of languages can throw any light, all great migrations have been westward. No westward migration would have given America its inhabitants from Asia; but a migration from the west would have peopled Asia from America. As a matter of fact, Berings strait is so narrow that the tribes on either side can cross to the other at pleasure, and with less difficulty than the Amazon river can be crossed near its mouth.

It is the opinion of ethnologists that a comparison of the grammatical construction of a large number of the Indian languages would reveal characteristics showing that all had a common origin. But the study has been barren of



results up to the present time. The language of the Indians is a puzzle, unless it be accepted as true that there is no common thread through all leading to one source. There were eight Indian languages east of the Mississippi at the coming of the Europeans.

The number of Indians inhabiting a given territory was surprisingly small. They could hardly be said to occupy the land. They had settlements here and there. Of the number of Hurons in the limits of this state, before the Mohawk invasion, there is no record and no estimate. Probably not more than the present number of the inhabitants in the state capital, Charleston. This will appear reasonable when it is stated that, according to the missionary census, in 1640, the total number of Indians in the territory east of the Mississippi, north of the Gulf of Mexico and south of the St. Lawrence river, was less than one-fourth of the present population of the state of West Virginia. The total number is placed at 180,000. Nearly all the Indians who were concerned in the border wars in West Virginia lived in Ohio. There were many villages in that state, and it was densely populated in comparison with some of the others; yet there were not, perhaps, fifteen thousand Indians in Ohio, and they could not put three thousand warriors in the field. The army which General Forbes led against Fort Duquesne (Pittsburg) in 1758 was probably larger than could have been mustered by the Indians of Ohio, Indiana and Illinois combined, and the number did not exceed six thousand. The Indians were able to harass the frontier of West Virginia for a quarter of a century by prowling about in small bands and striking the defenseless. Had they organized an army and fought pitched battles they would have been subdued in a few months.

While the Indians roamed over the whole country, hunting and fishing, they yet had paths which they followed when going on long journeys. These paths were not made



with tools, but were simply the result of walking upon them for generations. They nearly always followed the best grades to be found, and modern road makers have profited by the skill of savages in selecting the most practicable routes. These paths led long distances, and in a general direction, unvarying from beginning to end, showing that they were not made at haphazard, but with design. Thus, crossing West Virginia, the Catawba warpath led from New York to Georgia. It entered West Virginia from Fayette county, Pennsylvania, crossed Cheat river at the mouth of Grassy run, passed in a direction south by southwest through the state, and reached the headwaters of the Holsten river in Virginia, and thence continued through North Carolina, South Carolina and it is said reached Georgia. The path was well defined when the country was first settled, but at the present time few traces of it remain. It was never an Indian thoroughfare after white men had planted settlements in West Virginia, for the reason that the Indian tribes of Pennsylvania and New York had enough war on hand to keep them busy without making long excursions to the south. It is not recorded that any Indian ever came over this trail to attack the frontiers of West Virginia. The early settlements in Pennsylvania to the north of us cut off incursions from that quarter. A second path, called by the early settlers Warrior Branch, was a branch of the preceding. That is, they formed one path southward from New York to southern Pennsylvania, where they separated, and the Warrior Branch crossed Cheat river at McFarland's; took a southwesterly direction through the state and entered southern Ohio and passed into Kentucky. Neither was this trail much used in attacking the early settlements in this state. It is highly probable that both this and the Catawba path were followed by the Mohawks in their wars against the Hurons in West Virginia; but there is no positive proof that such was the case. Indian villages



were always on or near large trails, and by following these, and their branches, the invaders would be led directly to the homes of the native tribe which they were bent on exterminating.

There were other trails in the state, some of them apparently very old, as if they had been used for many generations. There was one, sometimes called the Eastern Path, which came from Ohio, crossed the northern part of West Virginia, through Preston and Monongalia counties, and continued eastward to the South branch of the Potomac. This path was made long before the Ohio Indians had any occasion to wage war upon white settlers; but it was used in their attacks upon the frontiers. Over it the Indians traveled who harassed the settlements on the South branch, and, later, those on the Monongahela and Cheat rivers. The settlers whose homes happened to lie near this trail were in constant danger of attack. During the Indian wars, after 1776, it was the custom for scouts to watch some of the leading trails near the crossing of the Ohio, and when a party of Indians were advancing, to outrun them and report the danger in time for the settlers to take refuge in forts. Many massacres were averted in this way.

The arms and ammunition with which the Indians fought the pioneers of this state were obtained from white traders; or, as from 1776 to 1783, or later, were often supplied by British agents. The worst depredations which West Virginia suffered from the Indians were committed with arms and ammunition obtained from the British in Canada. This was during the Revolutionary war, when the British made allies of the Indians and urged them to harass the western frontiers, while the British regular army fought the Colonial army in the eastern states.



## CHAPTER III.

—206—

### THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR

For the first twenty-five years after settlements were commenced in the present territory of West Virginia there was immunity from Indian depredations. There was no occasion for trouble. No tribe occupied the South branch when the first colony was made; and the outposts of the white man could have been pushed across the state until the Ohio river was reached without taking lands claimed or occupied by Indians, except perhaps in the case of two or three very small camps; and this most likely would have been done without conflict with Indians, had not Europeans stirred up these unfortunate children of the forest and sent them against the colonists. This was done by two European nations, first by France, and afterwards by England. There were four Indian wars waged against West Virginia; the war of 1755 and Pontiac's war of 1763, the Dunmore war of 1774 and the Revolutionary war of 1776. In the war beginning in 1755 the French incited and assisted Indians against the English settlements along the whole western border. In the Revolutionary war the British took the place of the French as allies of the Indians, and armed these savages and sent them against the settlers on the western border. For at least a part of the time the British paid the Indians a bounty on every scalp taken, making no distinction between man, woman and child.

It is proper that the causes bringing about the French and Indian war be briefly recited. No state was more deeply concerned than West Virginia. Had the plan out-



lined by the French been successfully executed, West Virginia would have been French instead of English, and the settlements by the Virginians would not have been carried west of the Alleghany mountains. The coast of America, from Maine to Georgia, was colonized by English. The French colonized Canada and Louisiana. About the middle of the eighteenth century the design, probably formed long before, of connecting Canada and Louisiana by a chain of forts and settlements, began to be put into execution by the king of France. The cordon was to descend the Alleghany river from Lake Erie to the Ohio, down that stream to the Mississippi and thence to New Orleans. The purpose was to confine the English to the strip of country between the Alleghanies and the Atlantic ocean, which would include New England, the greater part of New York, New Jersey, Delaware, Eastern Pennsylvania, the greater part of Maryland, seven eastern counties of West Virginia, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia. The French hoped to hold everything west of the Alleghany mountains. The immediate territory to be secured was the Ohio valley. Missionaries of the Catholic church were the first explorers, not only of the Ohio, but of the Mississippi valley, almost to the head springs of that river. The French took formal possession of both banks of the Ohio in the summer of 1749, when an expedition under Captain Celeron descended that stream and claimed the country in the name of France.

The determination of the Virginians to plant settlements in the Ohio valley was speedily observed by the French, who set to work to counteract the movement. They began the erection of a fort on one of the upper tributaries of the Alleghany river, and no one doubted that they intended to move south as rapidly as they could erect their cordon of forts. Governor Dinwiddie of Virginia decided to send a messenger to the French who already were in the Ohio



valley, asking for what purpose they were there, and informing them that the territory belonged to England. It was a mere diplomatic formality, not expected to do any good. This was in the autumn of 1753, and George Washington, then twenty-one years of age, was commissioned to bear the dispatch to the French commander on the Alleghany river. Washington left Williamsburg, Virginia, November 14, to travel nearly six hundred miles through a trackless wilderness in the dead of winter. When he reached the settlement on the Monongahela where Christopher Gist and twelve families had planted a colony, Mr. Gist accompanied him as a guide. The message was delivered to the French commandant, and the reply having been written, Washington and Gist set out upon their return, on foot. The boast of the French that they would build a fort the next summer on the present site of Pittsburg seemed likely to be carried out. Washington counted over two hundred canoes at the French fort on the Alleghany river, and he rightly conjectured that a descent of that stream was contemplated. After many dangers and hardships, Washington reached Williamsburg and delivered to Governor Dinwiddie the reply from the French commandant.

It was now evident that the French intended to resist by force all attempts by the English to colonize the Ohio valley, and were resolved to meet force with force. Governor Dinwiddie called the assembly together, and troops were sent into the Ohio valley. Early in April, 1754, Ensign Ward, with a small detachment, reached the forks of the Ohio, where Pittsburg now stands, and commenced the erection of a fort. Here began the conflict which raged for several years along the border. The French soon appeared in the Alleghany with one thousand men and eighteen cannon and gave the English one hour in which to leave. Resistance was out of the question, and Ward retreated. The French built a fort which they called Duquesne, in honor of the governor of Canada.



The English were not inclined to submit so tamely. Virginia and Pennsylvania took steps to recover the site at the forks of the Ohio, and to build a fort there. Troops were raised and placed in command of Colonel Fry, while Washington was made lieutenant colonel. The instructions from Governor Dinwiddie were explicit, and directed that all persons, not the subjects of Great Britain, who should attempt to take possession of the Ohio river or any of its tributaries, be killed, destroyed or seized as prisoners. When the troops under Washington reached the Great Meadows, near the present site of Brownsville, Pennsylvania, it was learned that a party of about fifty French were prowling in the vicinity, and had announced their purpose of attacking the first English they should meet. Washington, at the head of fifty men, left the camp and went in search of the French, came upon their camp early in the morning, fought them a few minutes, killed ten, including the commander, Jumonville, and took twenty-two prisoners, with the loss of one killed and two or three wounded. The prisoners were sent to Williamsburg, and, at the same time, an urgent appeal for more troops was made. It was correctly surmised that as soon as news of the fight reached Fort Duquesne, a large force of French would be sent out to attack the English. Considerable reinforcements were raised and were advanced as far as Winchester; but, with the exception of an independent company from South Carolina under Captain Mackay, none of the reinforcements reached the Great Meadows where the whole force under Colonel Fry amounted to less than four hundred men.

The Indians had been friendly with the settlers on the western border up to this time; but the French having supplied them bountifully with presents, induced them to take up arms against the English, and henceforward the colonists had to fight both the French and the Indians. Of the two, the Indians were the more troublesome. They



had a natural hatred for the English, who had dispossessed the tribes east of the Alleghanies of their land, and were now invading the territory west of that range. But it is difficult to see wherein they hoped to better their condition by assisting the French to gain possession of the country; for the French were as greedy for land as were the English. However, the majority of the natives could not reason far enough to see that point; and without much investigation they took up arms in aid of the French. One sachem, however, wiser than the rest, is reported to have stated the case thus: "If the French claim all the land on one side of the river, and the English claim all on the other side, where is the Indians' land?" His countrymen were too busily engaged in preparation for war to give any answer, and they joined the French and marched against the English.

After the brush with Jumonville's party, it was expected that the French in strong force would march from Fort Duquesne to drive back the English. Washington built Fort Necessity about fifty miles west of Cumberland, Maryland, and prepared for a fight. News was brought to him that large reinforcements from Canada had reached Fort Duquesne; and within a few days he was told that the French were on the road to meet him. Expected reinforcements from Virginia had not arrived, and Washington, who had advanced a few miles toward the Ohio, fell back to Fort Necessity. There, on the third of July, 1754, was fought a long and obstinate battle. Many Indians were with the French. Washington offered battle in the open ground, but the offer was declined, and the English withdrew within the entrenchments. The enemy fought from behind trees, and some climbed to the top of trees in order to get aim at those in the trenches. The French were in superior force and better armed than the English. A rain dampened the ammunition and rendered many of the guns of the English useless. Washington surrendered upon



honorable terms which permitted his soldiers to retain their arms and baggage, but not the artillery. This capitulation occurred July 4, 1754, just twenty-two years before the signing of the Declaration of Independence. The French and Indians numbered seven hundred men. Their loss in killed was three or four. The loss of the English was thirty.

When Washington's defeated army retreated from the Ohio valley, the French were in full possession, and no attempt was made that year to renew the war in that quarter, but the purpose on the part of the English of driving the French out was by no means abandoned. It was now understood that nothing less than a general war could settle the question, and both sides prepared for it. It was with some surprise, in January, 1755, that a proposition was received from France that the portion of the Ohio valley between that river and the Alleghanies be abandoned by both the French and the English. The latter, believing that the opportunity had arrived for driving a good bargain, demanded that the French destroy all their forts as far as the Wabash, raze Niagara and Crown Point, surrender the peninsula of Nova Scotia, and a strip of land sixty miles wide along the Bay of Fundy and the Atlantic, and leave the intermediate country as far as the St. Lawrence a neutral desert. France rejected this proposition, and understanding the designs of the English, sent three thousand men to Canada. General Braddock was already on his way to America with two regiments; yet no war had been declared between England and France. The former announced that it would act only on the defensive and the latter affirmed its desire for peace.

When General Braddock arrived in America he prepared four expeditions against the French, yet still insisting that he was acting only on the defensive. One was against Nova Scotia, one against Niagara, one against Crown Point, and the fourth against the Ohio valley, to be led by Brad-



dock in person. This last is the only one that immediately concerns West Virginia, and it only will be spoken of somewhat at length. In it Braddock lost his life.

Much was expected of Braddock's campaign. He promised that he would be beyond the Alleghanies by the end of April; and after taking Fort Duquesne, which he calculated would not detain him above three days, he would invade Canada by ascending the Alleghany river. He expressed no concern from attacks by Indians, and showed contempt for American soldiers who were in his own ranks. He expected his British regulars to win the battles. Never had a general gone into the field with so little understanding of what he was undertaking. He paid for it with his life. He set out upon his march from Alexandria, in Virginia, and in twenty-seven days reached Cumberland with about two thousand men, some of them Virginians. Here Washington joined him as one of his aids. From Cumberland to Fort Duquesne the distance was one hundred and thirty miles. The army could not march five miles a day. Everything went wrong. Wagons broke down, horses and cattle died, Indians harrassed the flanks. On June 19, 1755, the army was divided, and a little more than half of it pushed forward in hope of capturing Fort Duquesne before the arrival of reinforcements from Canada. The progress was yet slow, although the heaviest baggage had been left with the rear division. Not until July 8 were the forks of the Monongahela reached. This river was forded, and marching on its southern bank, Braddock decided to strike terror to the hearts of his enemies by a parade. He drew his men up in line and spent an hour marching to and fro, believing that the French were watching his every movement from the bluff beyond the river. He wished to impress them with his power. The distance to Fort Duquesne was less than twelve miles. He recrossed the river at noon. This was July 9. The troops pushed forward toward the fort, and while cutting a road through



the woods, were assailed by French and Indians in ambush. The attack was as unexpected as it was violent. It is not necessary to enter fully into the details of the battle which was disastrous in the extreme. The regular soldiers were panic stricken. They could do nothing against a concealed foe which numbered eight hundred and sixty-seven, of which only two hundred and thirty were French. About the only fighting on the side of the English was done by the Virginians under Washington. They prevented the slaughter of the whole army. Of the three companies of Virginians, scarcely thirty remained alive. The battle continued two hours. Of the eighty-six officers in the army, twenty-six were killed, and thirty-seven were wounded. One-half the army was killed or wounded. Washington had two horses killed under him and four bullets passed through his coat; yet he was not wounded. The regulars, when they had wasted their ammunition in useless firing, broke and ran like sheep, leaving everything to the enemy. The total loss of the English was seven hundred and fourteen killed and wounded. The French and Indians lost about sixty in killed and wounded. Braddock had five horses shot under him, and was finally mortally wounded and carried from the field.

The battle was over. The English were flying toward Cumberland, throwing away whatever impeded their retreat. The dead and wounded were abandoned on the field. Braddock was borne along in the rout, conscious that his wound was mortal. He spoke but a few times. Once he said: "Who would have thought it!" and again: "We shall know better how to deal with them another time." He no doubt was thinking of his refusal to take Washington's advice as to guarding against ambuscades. Braddock died, and was buried in the night about a mile west of Fort Necessity. Washington read the funeral service at the grave.

When the fugitives reached the division of the army un-



der Dunbar, which had been left behind and was coming up, the greatest confusion prevailed. General Dunbar destroyed military stores to the value of half a million dollars and did not cease to retreat until he reached Philadelphia, where he went into winter quarters. The news of the defeat spread rapidly, and the frontier from New York to North Carolina prepared for defense, for it was well known that the French, now flushed with victory, would arm the Indians and send them against the exposed settlements. Even before the defeat of Braddock a taste of Indian warfare was given many outposts. With the repulse of the army at Braddock's field there was no protection for the frontiers of Virginia except such as the settlers themselves could provide. One of the first settlements to receive a visit from the savages was in Hampshire county. Braddock's defeated army had scarcely withdrawn when the savages appeared near the site of Romney and fired at some of the men near the fort, and the fire was returned. One man was wounded, and the Indians, about ten in number, were driven off. Early the next spring a party of fifty Indians, under the leadership of a Frenchman, again invaded the settlements on the Potomac, and Captain Jeremiah Smith with twenty men went in pursuit of them. A fight occurred near the source of the Capon, and the Frenchman and five of his savages were killed. Smith lost two men. The Indians fled. A few days later a second party of Indians made their way into the country, and were defeated by Captain Joshua Lewis with eighteen men. The Indians separated into small parties and continued their depredations for some time, appearing in the vicinity of the Evans fort, two miles from Martinsburg; and later they made an attack on Neally's fort, and in that vicinity committed several murders. A Shawnee chief named Killbuck, whose home was probably in Ohio, invaded what is now Grant and Hardy counties in the spring of 1756, at the head of sixty or seventy savages. He killed several



settlers and made his escape. He appeared again two years later in Pendleton county, where he attacked and captured Fort Seybert, twelve miles west of the present town of Franklin, and put to death over twenty persons who had taken refuge in the fort. The place no doubt could have made a successful resistance had not the inmates trusted to the promise of safety made by the Indians, who thus were admitted into the fort, and at once massacred the settlers. In 1758 the Indians again invaded Hampshire county and killed a settler near the forks of Capon. This same year eight Indians came into the country on the South branch of the Potomac, near the town of Petersburg, and attacked the cabin of a man named Bingaman. They had forced their way into the house at night, and being at too close quarters for shooting, Bingaman clubbed his rifle and beat seven of them to death. The eighth made his escape. In 1759 the Indians committed depredations on the Monongahela river near Morgantown.

The settlement on the Roanoke river in Virginia, between the Blue Ridge and the Alleghany mountains, was the theater of much bloodshed in 1756, by Indians from Ohio who made their way, most probably, up the Kanawha and New River, over the Alleghanies. An expedition against them was organized in the fall of 1756, under Andrew Lewis who eighteen years later commanded the Virginians at the battle of Point Pleasant. Not much good came of the expedition which marched, with great hardship, through that part of West Virginia south of the Kanawha, crossed a corner of Kentucky to the Ohio river where an order came for them not to cross the Ohio nor invade the country north of that river. They returned in dead of winter, and suffered extremely from hunger and cold. This is notable from the fact that it was the first military expedition by an English speaking race to reach the Ohio river south of Pittsburg.



During the three years following Braddock's defeat, the frontier was exposed to danger. Virginia appointed George Washington commander in chief of all forces raised or to be raised in that state. He traveled along the whole frontier of his state, inspecting the forts and trying to bring order out of chaos. His picture of the distress of the people and the horrors of the Indian warfare is summed up in these words, addressed to the Governor of Virginia: "The supplicating tears of the women, and the moving petitions of the men, melt me with such deadly sorrow that I solemnly declare, if I know my own mind, I would offer myself a willing sacrifice to the butchering enemy, provided that would contribute to the people's ease." He found no adequate means of defense. Indians butchered the people and fled. Pursuit was nearly always in vain. Washington insisted at all times that the only radical remedy for Indian depredation was the capture of Fort Duquesne. So long as that rallying point remained, the Indians would be armed and would harass the frontiers. But, in case the reduction of Fort Duquesne could not be undertaken, Washington recommended the erection of a chain of twenty-two forts along the frontier, to be garrisoned by two thousand soldiers.

In 1756 and again in 1757 propositions were laid before the government of Virginia, and also before the commander-in-chief of the British forces in America, by Washington for the destruction of Fort Duquesne. But in neither of these years was his proposition acted upon. However, the British were waging a successful war against the French in Canada, and by this were indirectly contributing to the conquest of the Ohio valley. In 1758 all was in readiness for striking a blow at Fort Duquesne with the earnest hope that it would be captured and that rallying point for savages ultimately destroyed.

General Joseph Forbes was given command of the army destined for the expedition against Fort Duquesne. This



was early in 1758. He had twelve hundred Highlanders; two thousand seven hundred Pennsylvanians; nineteen hundred Virginians, and enough others to bring the total to about six thousand men. Washington was leader of the Virginians. Without him, General Forbes would never have seen the Ohio. The old general was sick, and his progress was so slow that but for the efforts of Washington in pushing forward, the army could not have reached the Ohio that year. A new road was constructed from Cumberland, intended as a permanent highway to the west. When the main army had advanced about half the distance from Cumberland to Fort Duquesne, Major Grant with eight hundred Highlanders and Virginians, went forward to reconnoitre. Intelligence had been received that the garrison numbered only eight hundred, of whom three hundred were Indians. But a reinforcement of four hundred men from Illinois had arrived unknown to Major Grant, and he was attacked and defeated with heavy loss within a short distance of the fort. Nearly three hundred of his men were killed or wounded, and Major Grant was taken prisoner.

On November 5, 1758, General Forbes arrived at Loyal Hanna and decided to advance no further that year, but seven days later it was learned that the garrison of Fort Duquesne was in no condition for resistance. Washington and twenty-five hundred men were sent forward to attack it. General Forbes, with six thousand men, had spent fifty days in opening fifty miles of road, and fifty miles remained to be opened. Washington's men, in five days from the advance from Loyal Hanna, were within seventeen miles of the Ohio. On November 25 the fort was reached. The French gave it up without a fight, set fire to it and fled down the Ohio.

The power of the French in the Ohio valley was broken. When the despairing garrison applied the match which blew up the magazine of Fort Duquesne, they razed their



last stronghold in the valley of the west. The war was not over; the Indians remained hostile, but the danger that the country west of the Alleghanies would fall into the hands of France was past. Civilization, progress and religious liberty were safe. The gateway to the great west was secured to the English race, and from that day there was no pause until the western border of the United States was washed by the waters of the Pacific. West Virginia's fate hung in the balance until Fort Duquesne fell. The way was then cleared for colonization, which speedily followed. Had the territory fallen into the hands of France, the character of the inhabitants would have been different, and the whole future history of that part of the country would have been changed. A fort was at once erected on the site of that destroyed by the French, and in honor of William Pitt was named Fort Pitt. The city of Pittsburg has grown up around the site. The territory now embraced in West Virginia was not at once freed from Indian attacks, but the danger was greatly lessened after the rendezvous at Fort Duquesne was broken up. The subsequent occurrences of the French and Indian war, and Pontiac's war, as they affected West Virginia, remain to be given.

The French and Indian war closed in 1761, but the Pontiac war soon followed. The French had lost Canada and the Ohio valley, and the English had secured whatever real or imaginary right the French ever had to the country. But the Indians rebelled against the English, who speedily took possession of the territory acquired from France. There is no evidence that the French gave assistance to the Indians in this war; but much proof that more than one effort was made by the French to restrain the savages. Nor is the charge that the French supplied the Indians with ammunition well founded. The savages bought their ammunition from traders, and these traders were French, English and American. In November, 1760, Rogers, an



English officer, sailed over lake Erie to occupy French posts further west. While sailing on the lake he was waited upon by Pontiac, who may justly be regarded as the ablest Indian encountered by the English in America. He was a Delaware captive who had been adopted by the Ottawas, and became their chief. He hailed Rogers on Lake Erie and informed him that the country belonged neither to the French nor English, but to the Indians, and told him to go back. This Rogers refused to do, and Pontiac set to work forming a confederacy of all the Indians between Canada on the north, Tennessee on the south, the Mississippi on the west and the Alleghanies on the east. His object was to expell the English from the country west of the Alleghany mountains.

The superiority of Pontiac as an organizer was seen, not so much in his success in forming the confederacy as in keeping it secret. He struck in a moment, and the blow fell almost simultaneously from Illinois to the frontier of Virginia. In almost every case the forts were taken by surprise. Detroit, Fort Pitt and Fort Ligonier were almost the only survivors of the fearful onset of the savages. Detroit had warning from an Indian girl who betrayed the plans of the savages; and when Pontiac, with hundreds of his warriors, appeared in person and attempted to take the fort by surprise, he found the English ready for him. He besieged the fort nearly a year. The siege began May 9, 1763, and the rapidity with which blows were struck over a wide expanse of country shows how thorough were his arrangements, and how well the secret had been kept. Fort Sandusky, near Lake Erie, was surprised and captured May 16, seven days after Detroit was besieged. Nine days later the fort at the mouth of St. Joseph's was taken; two days later Fort Miami, on the Maumee river, fell, also taken by surprise. On June 1 Fort Ouatamon in Indiana was surprised and captured. Machilimackinac, far north in Michigan, fell also. This was on June 2.



Venango in Pennsylvania, near Lake Erie, was captured, and not one of the garrison escaped to tell the tale. Fort Le Boeuf, in the same part of the country, fell June 18. On June 22 Presque Isle, now Erie, Pennsylvania, shared the fate of the rest. On June 21 Fort Ligonier was attacked and the siege persecuted with vigor, but the place held out. It was situated on the road between Fort Pitt and Cumberland. On June 22 the savages appeared before the walls of Fort Pitt, but were unable to take the place by surprise, although it was in poor condition for defense. The fortifications had never been finished, and a flood had opened three sides. The commandant raised a rampart of logs round the fort and prepared to fight till the last. The garrison numbered three hundred and thirty men. More than two hundred women and children from the frontiers had taken refuge there.

Despairing of taken the fort by force, the savages tried treachery, and asked for a parley. When it was granted, the chief told the commandant of the fort that resistance was useless; that all the forts in the north and west had been taken, and that a large Indian army was on its march to Fort Pitt, which must fall. But, said the chief, if the English would abandon the fort and retire east of the Alleghanies, they would be permitted to depart in peace, provided they would set out at once. The reply given by the commandant was, that he intended to stay where he was, and that he had provisions and ammunition sufficient to enable him to hold out against all the savages in the woods for three years, and that English armies were at that moment on their march to exterminate the Indians. This answer apparently discouraged the savages, and they did not push the siege vigorously. But in July the attack was renewed with great fury. The savages made numerous efforts to set the fort on fire by discharging burning arrows against it; but they did not succeed. They made holes in the river bank and from that hiding place kept up



an incessant fire, but the fort was too strong for them. On the last day of July, 1763, the Indians raised the siege and disappeared. It was soon learned what had caused them to depart so suddenly. General Bouquet was at that time marching to the relief of Fort Pitt with five hundred men and a large train of supplies. The Indians had gone forward to meet him and give battle. As Bouquet marched west from Cumberland he found the settlements broken up, the houses burned, the grain unharvested, and desolation on every hand, showing how relentless the savages had been in their determination to break up the settlements west of the Alleghanies.

On August 2, 1763, General Bouquet arrived at Fort Ligonier, which had been besieged, but the Indians had departed. He left part of his stores there, and hastened forward toward Fort Pitt. On August 5 the Indians who had been besieging Fort Pitt attacked the troops at Bushy run. A desperate battle ensued. The troops kept the Indians off by using the bayonet, but the loss was heavy. The next day the fight was resumed, the Indians completely surrounding the English. The battle was brought to a close by Bouquet's stratagem. He set an ambush and then feigned a retreat. The Indians fell into the trap and were routed. Bouquet had lost one-fourth of his men in killed and wounded; and so many of his pack horses had been killed that he was obliged to destroy a large part of his stores because he could not move them. After a march of four days the army reached Fort Pitt.

The effect of this sudden and disastrous war was widespread. The settlers fled for protection from the frontiers to the forts and towns. The settlements on the Greenbrier were deserted. The colonists hurried east of the Alleghanies. Indians prowled through all the settled portions of West Virginia, extending their raids to the South branch of the Potomac. More than five hundred families from the frontiers took refuge at Winchester. Amherst,



commander-in-chief of the British forces in America, was enraged when he learned of the destruction wrought by the Indians. He offered a reward of five hundred dollars to any person who would kill Pontiac, and he caused the offer of the reward to be proclaimed at Detroit. "As to accommodation with these savages," said he, "I will have none until they have felt our just revenge." He urged every measure which could assist in the destruction of the savages. He classed the Indians as "the vilest race of beings that ever infested the earth, and whose riddance from it must be esteemed a meritorious act for the good of mankind." He declared them not only unfit for allies, but unworthy of being respected as enemies. He sent orders to the officers on the frontiers to take no prisoners, but kill all who could be caught.

Bouquet's force was not large enough to enable him to invade the Indian country in Ohio at that time; but he collected about two thousand men, and the next summer carried the war into the enemy's country, and struck directly at the Indian towns, assured that by no other means could the savages be brought to terms. The army had not advanced far west of Pittsburg when the tribes of Ohio became aware of the invasion and resorted to various devices to retard its advance and thwart its purpose. But General Bouquet proceeded rapidly, and with such caution and in such force, that no attack was made on him by the Indians. The alarm among them was great. They foresaw the destruction of their towns; and when all other resources had failed, they sent a delegation to Bouquet to ask for peace. He signified his willingness to negotiate peace on condition that the Indians surrender all white prisoners in their hands. He did not halt however in his advance to wait for a reply. The Indians saw that the terms must be accepted and be complied with without delay if they would save their towns. The army was now within striking distance. The terms were therefore ac-



cepted, and more than two hundred prisoners, a large number of whom were women and children were given up. Other prisoners remained with the Indians in remote places, but the most of them were sent to Fort Pitt the next spring, according to promise. Thus closed Pontiac's war.

An agency had been at work for some time to bring about peace, but unknown to the English. It was the French, and without their co-operation and assistance it is probable the Indians would not have consented to the peace. DeNeyon, the French officer at Fort Chartres, wrote a letter to Pontiac advising him to make peace with the English, as the war between the French and English was over and there was no use of further bloodshed. This letter reached Pontiac in November while he was conducting the siege of Detroit, and its contents becoming known to his Indian allies, greatly discouraged them; for it seems that up to this time they believed they were helping the French and that the French would soon appear in force and fight as of old. When the Indians discovered that no help from France was to be expected, they became willing to make peace with Bouquet, and for ten years the western frontiers enjoyed immunity from war.



## CHAPTER IV.

—«0»—

### THE DUNMORE WAR.

The progress of the settlement of West Virginia from 1764 to 1774 has been noticed elsewhere in this volume. There were ten years of peace; but in the year 1774 war with the Indians broke out again. Peace was restored before the close of the year. The trouble of 1774 is usually known as Dunmore's war, so called from Lord Dunmore who was at that time Governor of Virginia, and who took personal charge of a portion of the army operating against the Indians. There has been much controversy as to the origin or cause of hostilities, and the matter has never yet been settled satisfactorily to all. It has been charged that emissaries of Great Britain incited the Indians to take up arms, and that Dunmore was one of the moving spirits in this disgraceful conspiracy against the colony of Virginia. It is further charged that Dunmore hoped to see the army under General Andrew Lewis defeated and destroyed at Point Pleasant, and that Dunmore's failure to form a junction with the army under Lewis according to agreement, was intentional, premeditated and in the hope that the southern division of the army would be crushed.

This is a charge so serious that no historian has a right to put it forward without strong evidence for its support—much stronger evidence than has yet been brought to light. The charge may be neither wholly true nor wholly false. There is not a little evidence against Dunmore in this campaign, especially when taken in connection with the state of feeling entertained by Great Britain



against the American colonies at that time. In order to present this matter somewhat clearly, yet eliminating many minor details, it is necessary to speak of Great Britain's efforts to annoy and intimidate the colonies, as early as 1774, and of the spirit in which these annoyances were received by the Americans.

Many people, both in America and England, saw, in 1774, that a revolution was at hand. The thirteen colonies were arriving very near the formation of a confederacy whose avowed purpose was resistance to Great Britain. Massachusetts had raised ninety thousand dollars to buy powder and arms; Connecticut provided for military stores and had proposed to issue seventy thousand dollars in paper money. In fact, preparations for war with England were going steadily forward, although hostilities had not begun. Great Britain was getting ready to meet the rebellious colonies, either by strategy or force, or both. Overtures had been made by the Americans to the Canadians to join them in a common struggle for liberty. Canada belonged to Great Britain, having been taken by conquest from France in the French and Indian war. Great Britain's first move was regarding Canada; not only to prevent that country from joining the Americans, but to use Canada as a menace and a weapon against them. England's plan was deeply laid. It was largely the work of Thurlow and Wedderburn. The Canadians were to be granted full religious liberty and a large share of political liberty in order to gain their friendship. They were mostly Catholics, and with them England, on account of her trouble with her thirteen colonies, took the first step in Catholic emancipation. Having won the Canadians to her side, Great Britain intended to set up a separate empire there, and expected to use this Canadian empire as a constant threat against the colonies. It was thought that the colonists would cling to England through fear of Canada.



The plan having been matured, its execution was attempted at once. The first step was the emancipation of the Canadian Catholics. The next step was the passage of the Quebec Act, by which the province of Quebec was extended southward to take in western Pennsylvania and all the country belonging to England north and west of the Ohio river. The king of England had already forbidden the planting of settlements between the Ohio river and the Alleghany mountains in West Virginia; so the Quebec Act was intended to shut the English colonies out of the west and confine them east of the Alleghany mountains. Had this plan been carried into execution as intended, it would have curtailed the colonies, at least Pennsylvania and Virginia, and prevented their growth westward. The country beyond the Ohio would have become Canadian in its laws and people; and Great Britain would have had two empires in America, one Catholic and the other Protestant; or, at least, one composed of the thirteen colonies, and the other of Canada extended southward and westward, and it was intended that these empires should restrain, check and threaten each other, thus holding both loyal to and dependent upon Great Britain.

Some time before the passage of the Quebec Act a movement was on foot to establish a new province called Vandalia, west of the Alleghanies, including the greater part of West Virginia and a portion of Kentucky. Benjamin Franklin and George Washington were interested in it. The capital was to be at the mouth of the Kanawha. The province was never formed. Great Britain was not inclined to create states west of the mountains at a time when efforts were being made to confine the settlements east of that range. To have had West Virginia and a portion of Kentucky neutral ground, and vacant, between the empire of Canada and the empire of the thirteen colonies, would have pleased the authors of the Quebec Act. But acts of parliament and proclamations by the king had little effect



on the pioneers who pushed into the wilderness of the west to find new homes.

Before proceeding to a narrative of the events of the Dunmore war, it is not out of place to inquire concerning Governor Dunmore and whether, from his past acts and general character, he would be likely to conspire with the British and the Indians to destroy the western settlements of Virginia. Whether the British were capable of an act so savage and unjust as inciting savages to harass the western frontier of their own colonies is not a matter for controversy. It is a fact that they did do it during the Revolutionary war. Whether they had adopted this policy so early as 1774, and whether Governor Dunmore was a party to the scheme, is not so certain. Therefore let us ask, who was Dunmore? He was a needy, rapacious Scotch earl, of the House of Murray, who came to America to amass a fortune and who at once set about the accomplishment of his object with little regard for the rights of others or the laws of the country. He was governor of New York a short time; and, although poor when he came, he was the owner of fifty thousand acres of land when he left; and was preparing to decide, in his own court, in his own favor, a large and unfounded claim which he had preferred against the lieutenant-governor. When he assumed the office of governor of Virginia his greed for land and for money knew no bounds. He recognized no law which did not suit his purpose. He paid no attention to positive instructions from the crown, which forbade him to meddle with lands in the west. These lands were known to be beyond the borders of Virginia, as fixed by the treaties of Fort Stanwix and Lochaber, and therefore were not in his jurisdiction. He had soon acquired two large tracts in southern Illinois, and also held lands where Louisville, Kentucky, now stands, and in Kentucky opposite Cincinnati. Nor did his greed for wealth and power stop with appropriating wild lands to his own use; but, without any



warrant in law, and in violation of all justice, he extended the boundaries of Virginia northward to include much of western Pennsylvania, Pittsburg in particular; and he made that the county seat of Augusta county, and moved the court from Staunton to that place. He even changed the name Fort Pitt to Fort Dunmore. He appointed forty-two justices of the peace. Another appointment of his as lieutenant of militia was Simon Girty, afterwards notorious and infamous as a deserter and a leader of Indians in their war against the frontiers. He appointed John Connolly, a physician and adventurer, commandant of Fort Pitt and its dependencies, which were supposed to include all the western country. Connolly was a willing tool of Dunmore in many a questionable transaction. Court was held at Fort Pitt until the spring of 1776. The name of Pittsburg first occurs in the court records on August 20, 1776. When Connolly received his appointment he issued a proclamation, setting forth his authority. The Pennsylvanians resisted Dunmore's usurpation, and arrested Connolly. The Virginia authorities arrested some of the Pennsylvania officers, and there was confusion, almost anarchy, so long as Dunmore was governor.

Dunmore had trouble elsewhere. His domineering conduct, and his support of some of Great Britain's oppressive measures, caused him to be hated by the Virginians, and led to armed resistance. Thereupon he threatened to make Virginia a solitude, using these words: "I do enjoin the magistrates and all loyal subjects to repair to my assistance, or I shall consider the whole country in rebellion, and myself at liberty to annoy it by every possible means, and I shall not hesitate at reducing houses to ashes, and spreading devastation wherever I can reach. With a small body of troops and arms, I could raise such a force from among Indians, negroes and other persons as would soon reduce the refractory people of the colony to obedience." The patriots of Virginia finally rose in arms



and drove Governor Dunmore from the country. Some of these events occurred after the Dunmore war, but they serve to show what kind of man the governor was.

Perhaps the strongest argument against the claim that Dunmore was in league with Indians, backed by Great Britain, to push back the frontier of Virginia to the Alleghanies, is the fact that Dunmore at that time was reaching out for lands, for himself, in Illinois, Kentucky and Ohio; and his land grabbing would have been cut off in that quarter had the plan of limiting Virginia to the Alleghanies been successful. He could not have carried out his schemes of acquiring possessions in the west, had the Quebec Act been sustained. Dunmore did more to nullify the Quebec Act than any one else. He exerted every energy to extend and maintain the Virginia frontier as far west as possible. By this he opposed and circumvented the efforts of Great Britain to shut Virginia off from the west. He and the government at home did not work together, nor agree on the frontier policy; and, in the absence of direct proof sustaining the charge that he was in conspiracy with the British government and the Indians to assail the western frontier, the doubt as to his guilt on the charge must remain in his favor.

From the time of the treaty made by General Bouquet with the Indians, 1764, to the year 1773, there was peace on the frontiers. War did not break out in 1773, but murders were committed by Indians which excited the frontier settlements, and were the first in a series which led to war. The Indians did not comply with the terms of the treaty with General Bouquet. They had agreed to give up all prisoners. It was subsequently ascertained that they had not done so. Some captives were still held in bondage. But this in itself did not lead to the war of 1774. The frontiers, since Bouquet's treaty, had been pushed to the Ohio river, in West Virginia, and into Kentucky. Although Indians had no right by occupation to



either West Virginia or Kentucky, and although they had given up by treaty any right which they claimed, they yet looked with anger upon the planting of settlements in those countries. The first act of hostility was committed in 1773, not in West Virginia, but further south. A party of emigrants, under the leadership of a son of Daniel Boone, were on their way to Kentucky when they were set upon and several were killed, including young Boone. There can be no doubt that this attack was made to prevent or hinder the colonization of Kentucky. Soon after this, a white man killed an Indian at a horse race. This is said to have been the first Indian blood shed on the frontier of Virginia by a white man since Pontiac's war. In February 1774 the Indians killed six white men and two negroes; and in the same month, on the Ohio, they seized a trading canoe, killed the men in charge and carried the goods to the Shawnee towns. Then the white men began to kill also. In March, on the Ohio, a fight occurred between settlers and Indians, in which one was killed on each side, and five canoes were taken from the Indians. John Connolly wrote from Pittsburg on April 21, to the people of Wheeling to be on their guard, as the Indians were preparing for war. On April 26, two Indians were killed on the Ohio. On April 30, nine Indians were killed on the same river near Steubenville. On May 1, another Indian was killed. About the same time an old Indian named Bald Eagle was killed on the Monongahela river; and an Indian camp on the Little Kanawha, in the present county of Braxton, was broken up, and the natives were murdered. A party of white men with Governor Dunmore's permission destroyed an Indian village on the Muskingum river. The frontiers were alarmed. Forts were built in which the inhabitants could find shelter from attacks. Expresses were sent to Williamsburg entreating assistance. The Virginia assembly in May discussed the dangers from Indians on the frontier, and intimated that



the militia should be called out. Governor Dunmore ordered out the militia of the frontier counties. He then proceeded in person to Pittsburg, partly to look after his lands, and partly to take charge of the campaign against the Indians. The Delawares and Six Nations renewed their treaty of peace in September, but the Shawnees, the most powerful and warlike tribe in Ohio, did not. This tribe had been sullen and unfriendly at Bouquet's treaty, and had remained sour ever since. Nearly all the captives yet in the hands of the Indians were held by this fierce tribe, which defied the white man and despised treaties. These savages were ruled by Cornstalk, an able and no doubt a good man, opposed to war, but when carried into it by the headstrong rashness of his tribe, none fought more bravely than he. The Shawnees were the chief fighters on the Indian side in the Dunmore war, and they were the chief sufferers.

After arranging his business at Pittsburg, Governor Dunmore descended the Ohio river with twelve hundred men. Daniel Morgan, with a company from the valley of Virginia, was with him. A second army was being organized in the southwestern part of Virginia, and Dunmore's instructions were that this army, after marching down the Great Kanawha, should join him on the Ohio where he promised to wait. The Governor failed to keep his promise, but crossed into Ohio and marched against the Shawnee towns which he found deserted. He built a fort and sat down to wait.

In the meantime the army was collecting which was to descend the Kanawha. General Andrew Lewis was commander. The pioneers on the Greenbrier and New River formed a not inconsiderable part of the army which rendezvoused on the site of Lewisburg in Greenbrier county. In this army were fifty men from the Watauga, among whom were Evan Shelby, James Robertson and Valentine Sevier, names famous in history. Perhaps an army com-



posed of better fighting material than that assembled for the march to Ohio, never took the field anywhere. The distance from Lewisburg to the mouth of the Great Kanawha was about one hundred and sixty miles. At that time there was not so much as a trail, if an old Indian path, hard to find, is excepted. At the mouth of Elk river the army made canoes and embarking in them, proceeded to Point Pleasant, the mouth of the Kanawha, which they reached October 6, 1774. A halt was here made. Four days later the Indian army under Cornstalk arrived, about one thousand in number. The Virginians were encamped on the narrow point of land formed by the meeting of the Kanawha and Ohio. The Indians crossed the Ohio the evening before, or during the night, and went into camp on the West Virginia side, and about two miles from the Virginians. They were discovered at daybreak, October 10, by two young men who were hunting. The Indians fired and killed one of them; the other escaped and carried the news to the army.

This was the first intelligence the Virginians had that the Indians had come down from their towns in Ohio to give battle. By what means the savages had received intelligence of the advance of the army in time to collect their forces and meet it before the Ohio river was crossed, has never been ascertained; but it is probable that Indian scouts had watched the progress of General Lewis from the time he took up his march from Greenbrier. Cornstalk laid well his plans for the destruction of the Virginian army at Point Pleasant. He formed his line across the neck of land, from the Ohio to the Kanawha, and enclosed the Virginians between his line and the two rivers. He posted detachments on the farther banks of the Ohio and the Kanawha to cut off General Lewis should he attempt to retreat across either river. Cornstalk meant not only to defeat the army, but to destroy it. The Virginians numbered eleven hundred.



When the news of the advance of the Indian army reached General Lewis, he prepared for battle, and sent three hundred men to the front to meet the enemy. The fight began at sunrise. Both armies were soon engaged over a line a mile long. Both fought from behind trees, logs and whatever would offer protection. The lines were always near each other; sometimes twenty yards, sometimes less; occasionally near enough to use the tomahawk. The battle was remarkable for its obstinacy. It raged six hours, almost hand to hand. Then the Indians fell back a short distance and took up a strong position, and all efforts to dislodge them by attacks in front failed. Cornstalk was along his whole line, and above the din of battle his powerful voice could be heard: "Be strong! Be strong!" The loss was heavy among the Virginians, and perhaps equally heavy among the Indians. Late in the afternoon General Lewis discovered a way to attack the Indians in flank. A small stream with high banks empties into the Kanawha at that point, and he sent a detachment up this stream, the movement being concealed from the Indians, and when an advantageous point was reached, the soldiers emerged and attacked the Indians. Taken by surprise, the savages retreated. This movement decided the day in favor of the Virginians. The Indians fled a short distance up the Ohio and crossed to the western side, the most of them on logs and rude rafts, probably the same on which they had crossed the stream before the battle. The Virginians lost sixty men killed and ninety-six wounded. The loss of the Indians was not ascertained. They left thirty-three dead on the field, and were seen to throw others into the Ohio river. All their wounded were carried off,

The battle of Point Pleasant was the most stubbornly contested of all frontier battles with the Indians; but it was by no means the bloodiest. Several others could be named in which the loss of life was much greater; notably



Braddock's defeat, and the defeat of General St. Clair. The battle of Point Pleasant was also remarkable from the number of the men who took part in it who afterwards became noted. Among them may be mentioned Isaac Shelby, the first governor of Kentucky; William Campbell, the hero of King's mountain, and who died on the battle field of Eutaw Springs; Colonel John Steele, afterward governor of Mississippi; George Mathews, afterward governor of Georgia; Colonel William Fleming, governor of Virginia, and many others. Nearly all the men who were in that battle and afterward returned to their homes, were subsequently soldiers of the American army in the war for independence.

The day following the battle, Colonial Christian arrived with three hundred soldiers from Fincastle. Fort Randolph was built at Point Pleasant; and after leaving a garrison there, General Lewis crossed the Ohio and marched nearly a hundred miles to the Scioto river to join Governor Dunmore. Before he arrived at Fort Charlotte, where Dunmore was, he received a message from the governor, ordering him to stop, and giving as a reason that he was about to negotiate a treaty with the Indians. General Lewis and his men refused at first to obey this order. They had no love for Dunmore, and they did not regard him as a friend of Virginia. Not until a second express arrived did General Lewis obey.

After the fight at Point Pleasant, Cornstalk, Logan and Red Eagle, the three principal chiefs who had taken part in the battle, retreated to their towns with their tribesmen. Seeing that pursuit was swift and vigorous, Cornstalk called a council and asked what should be done. No one had any advice to offer. He then proposed to kill the old men, women and children; and the warriors then should go out to meet the invaders and fight till every Indian had met his death on the field of battle. No reply was made to this proposition. Thereupon Cornstalk said that since



his men would not fight, he would go and make peace; and he did so. Thus ended the war. Governor Dunmore had led an army of Virginia into Ohio, and assumed and exercised authority there, thus setting aside and nullifying the act of parliament which extended the jurisdiction of Quebec to the Ohio river.



## CHAPTER V.

—«0»—

### WEST VIRGINIA IN THE REVOLUTION.

The territory of the present state of West Virginia was not invaded by a British army, except one company of fifty, during the war for American independence. Its remote position made it safe from attack from the east; but this very remoteness rendered it doubly liable to invasion from the west where Great Britain had made allies of the Indians, and had armed and supplied them, and had sent them against the frontiers from Canada to Florida, with full license to kill man, woman and child. No part of America suffered more from the savages than West Virginia. Great Britain's purpose in employing Indians on the frontiers was to harrass the remote country, and not only keep at home all the inhabitants for defense of their settlements, but also to make it necessary that soldiers be sent to the west who otherwise might be employed in opposing the British nearer the sea coast. Notwithstanding West Virginia's exposed frontier on the west, it sent many soldiers to the Continental army. West Virginians were on almost every battlefield of the revolution. The portion of the state east of the Alleghanies, now forming Jefferson, Berkeley, Morgan, Hampshire, Hardy, Grant, Mineral and Pendleton counties, was not invaded by Indians during the revolution, and from this region large numbers of soldiers joined the armies under Washington, Gates, Greene and other patriots.

As early as November 5, 1774, an important meeting was held by West Virginians in which they clearly indicated under which banner they would be found fighting,



if Great Britain persisted in her course of oppression. This was the first meeting of the kind west of the Alleghanies, and but few similar meetings had then been held anywhere. It occurred during the return of Dunmore's army from Ohio, twenty-five days after the battle of Point Pleasant. The soldiers had heard of the danger of war with England; and, although they were under the command of Dunmore, a royal governor, they were not afraid to let the country know that neither a royal governor nor any one else could swerve them from their duty as patriots and lovers of liberty. The meeting was held at Fort Gower, north of the Ohio river, while on the homeward march from the Indian country. The soldiers passed resolutions which had the right ring. They recited that they were willing and able to bear all hardships of the woods; to get along for weeks without bread or salt, if necessary; to sleep in the open air; to dress in skins if nothing else could be had; to march further in a day than any other men in the world; to use the rifle with skill and with bravery. They affirmed their zeal in the cause of right, and promised continued allegiance to the king of England, provided that he would reign over them as a brave and free people. "But," they continued "as attachment to the real interests and just rights of America outweigh every other consideration, we resolve that we will exert every power within us for the defence of American liberty, when regularly called forth by the unanimous voice of our countrymen." It was such spirit as this, manifested on every occasion during the revolution, which prompted Washington in the darkest year of the war to exclaim that, if driven from every point east of the Blue ridge, he would retire west of the mountains and there raise the standard of liberty and bid defiance to the armies of Great Britain.

At two meetings held May 16, 1775, one at Fort Pitt, the other at Hannastown, several West Virginians were present and took part in the proceedings. Resolutions



were passed by which the people west of the mountains pledged their support to the Continental congress, and expressed their purpose of resisting the tyranny of the mother country. In 1775 a number of men from the valley of the Monongahela joined Washington's army before Boston; but how many and from what part of the valley they came is not known. The number of soldiers who went forward from the eastern part of the state was large.

There were a few persons in West Virginia who adhered to the cause of England; and who from time to time gave trouble to the patriots; but the promptness with which their attempted risings were crushed is proof that traitors were in a hopeless minority. The patriots considered them as enemies and dealt harshly with them. There were two attempted uprisings in West Virginia, one in the Monongahela valley, which the inhabitants of that region were able to suppress, the other uprising was on the South branch of the Potomac, in what is now Hardy and Grant counties, and troops were sent from the Shenandoah valley to put it down. In the Monongahela valley several of the tories were arrested and sent to Richmond. It is recorded that the leader was drowned in Cheat river while crossing under guard on his way to Richmond. Two men of the Morgan family were his guard. The boat upset while crossing the river. It was the general impression of the citizens of the community that the upsetting was not accidental. The guards did not want to take the long journey to Richmond while their homes and the homes of their neighbors were exposed to attacks from Indians. The tory uprising on the South branch was much more serious. The first indication of trouble was given by their refusal to pay their taxes, or to furnish their quota of men for the militia. Complaint was made by the sheriff of Hampshire county, and Colonel Vanmeter with thirty men was sent to enforce the collection of taxes. The tories armed themselves, to the num-



ber of fifty, for resistance, and placed themselves under the leadership of John Brake, a German whose house was above Petersburg, in what is now Grant county. These enemies of their country had made his place their rendezvous. They met the militia from Hampshire, but no fight took place. Apparently each side was afraid to begin. There was a parley in which Colonel Vanmeter pointed out to the tories the consequence which must follow, if they persisted in their present course. He advised them to disperse, go to their homes and conduct themselves as law abiding citizens. He left them and marched home.

The disloyal element grew in strength and insolence. They imagined that the authorities were afraid and would not again interfere with them. They organized a company, elected John Claypole their captain, and prepared to march off and join the British forces. General Morgan was at that time at his home in Frederick county, and he collected militia to the number of four hundred, crossed the mountain and fell on the tories in such dead earnest that they lost all their enthusiasm for the cause of Great Britain. Claypole was taken prisoner, and William Baker, who refused to surrender, was shot, but not killed. Later a man named Mace was killed. Brake was overawed; and after two days spent in the neighborhood, the militia, under General Morgan, returned home. The tories were crushed. A number of them were so ashamed of what they had done that they joined the American army and fought as patriots till the close of the war, thus endeavoring to redeem their lost reputations.

The contrast between the conduct of the tories on the South branch and the patriotic devotion of the people on the Greenbrier is marked. Money was so scarce that the Greenbrier settlers could not pay their taxes, although willing to do so. They fell delinquent four years in succession and to the amount of thirty thousand dollars. They



were willing to perform labor, if arrangements could be made to do it. Virginia agreed to the proposition, and the people of Greenbrier built a road from Lewisburg to the Kanawha river in payment of their taxes.

The chief incidents in West Virginia's history during the revolutionary war were connected with the Indian troubles. The state was invaded three times by forces large enough to be called armies; and the incursions by smaller parties were so numerous that the mere mention of them would form a list of murders, ambuscades and personal encounters of tedious and monotonous length.

The first invasion occurred in 1777 when Fort Henry, now Wheeling, was attacked; the second, 1778, when Fort Randolph, now Point Pleasant, was besieged for one week, the Indians moving as far east as Greenbrier county, where Donnolly's fort was attacked; the third invasion was in 1782, when Fort Henry was again attacked by Indians under the leadership of Simon Girty. The multitude of incursions by Indians must be passed over briefly. The custom of the savages was to make their way into a settlement, and either lie in wait along paths and shoot those who attempted to pass, or break into houses and murder the inmates, or take them prisoner, and then make off hastily for the Ohio river. Once across that stream, pursuit was not probable.

The custom of the Indians to take prisoners, and their great exertion to accomplish that purpose, is a difficult thing to explain. Prisoners were of little or no use to them. They did not make slaves of them. If they sometimes received money as ransom for captives, the hope of ransom money seems seldom or never to have prompted them to carry prisoners to their towns. They sometimes showed a liking, if not affection, for captives adopted into their tribes and families; but this kindly feeling was shallow and treacherous; and Indians would not hesitate to burn at the stake a captive who had been treated as one of



their family for months, if they should take it into their heads that revenge for injuries received from others called for a sacrifice. The Indians followed no rule or precedent as to which of their captives they would kill and which carry to their towns. They sometimes killed children and spared adults, and sometimes the reverse.

The year 1777 is called in border history the "bloody year of the three sevens." The British sent against the frontiers every Indian who could be prevailed upon to go. Few settlements from New York to Florida escaped. In this state the most harm was done on the Monongahela and along the Ohio in the vicinity of Wheeling. Monongalia county was visited twice by the savages that year, and a number of persons were killed. A party of twenty invaded what is now Randolph county, killed a number of settlers, took several prisoners and made their escape. It was on November 10 of this year that Cornstalk, the Shawnee chief, was assassinated at Point Pleasant by militiamen who assembled there from Greenbrier and elsewhere for the purpose of marching against the Indian towns. Earlier in the year Cornstalk had come to Fort Randolph, at Point Pleasant, on a visit, and also to inform the commandant of the fort that the British were inciting the Indians to war, and that his own tribe, the Shawnees, would likely be swept along with the current, in spite of his efforts to keep them at home. Under these circumstances the commandant of the fort thought it best to detain Cornstalk as a hostage to insure the neutrality of his tribe. It does not seem that the venerable chief was unwilling to remain. He wanted peace. Some time after that his son came to see him, and crossed the Ohio, after making his presence known by hallooming from the other side. The next day two of the militiamen crossed the Ohio to hunt, and one was killed by an Indian. The other gave the alarm, and the militiamen crossed the river and brought in the body of the dead man. The soldiers believed that



the Indian who had committed the deed had come the day before with Cornstalk's son, and had lain concealed until an opportunity occurred to kill a man. The soldiers were enraged, and started up the river bank toward the cabin where Cornstalk resided, announcing that they would kill the Indians. There were with Cornstalk his son and another Indian, Red Eagle. A sister of Cornstalk, known as the Grenadier Squaw, had lived at the fort sometime as interpreter. She hastened to the cabin and urged her brother to make his escape. He might have done so, but refused, and admonished his son to die like a man. The soldiers arrived at that time and fired. All three Indians were killed. The leaders of the men who did it were afterwards given the semblance of a trial in Virginia, and were acquitted.

It is the opinion of those acquainted with border history that the murder of Cornstalk brought more suffering upon the West Virginia frontier than any other event of that time. Had he lived, he would perhaps have been able to hold the Shawnees in check. Without the cooperation of that blood-thirsty tribe the border war of the succeeding years would have been different. Four years later Colonel Crawford, who had been taken prisoner, was put to death with extreme torture in revenge for the murder of Cornstalk.

Fort Henry was besieged September 1, 1777, by four hundred Indians. General Hand, of Fort Pitt, had been informed that the Indians were preparing for an attack in large numbers upon some point of the frontier, and the settlements between Pittsburg and Point Pleasant were placed on their guard. Scouts were sent out to discover the advance of the Indians in time to give the alarm. But the scouts discovered no Indians. It is now known that the savages had advanced in small parties, avoiding trails, and had united near Wheeling, crossed the Ohio a short distance below that place, and on the night of the last day of August approached Fort Henry, and setting ambus-



cadets near it, waited for daylight. Fort Henry was made of logs set on end in the ground, in the manner of pickets, and about seventeen feet high. There were port holes through which to fire. The garrison consisted of less than forty men, the majority of whom lived in Wheeling and the immediate vicinity. Early in the morning of September 1 the Indians decoyed Captain Samuel Mason with fourteen men into the field some distance from the fort, and killed all but three. Captain Mason alone reached the fort, and two of his men succeeded in hiding, and finally escaped. When the Indians attacked Mason's men, the firing was heard at the fort, together with the yells of the savages. Captain Joseph Ogle with twelve men sallied out to assist Mason. He was surrounded and nine of his men were killed. There were only about a dozen men remaining in the fort to resist the attack of four hundred Indians, flushed with victory. There were perhaps one hundred women and children in the stockade.

In a short time the Indians advanced against the fort, with drum and fife, and the British flag waving over them. It is not known who was leader. He was a white man, or at least there was a white man among them who seemed to be leader. Many old frontier histories, as well as the testimony of those who were present, united in the assertion that the Indians at this siege were led by Simon Girty. It is strange that this mistake could have been made, for it was a mistake. Simon Girty was not there. He was at that time, and for nearly five months afterwards, at Fort Pitt, serving in garrison duty, and did not desert till February, 1778, when with Elliott, McKee and two or three others, he ran away and proceeded at once to the Indian towns in Ohio where he soon became a leader of the savages.

The commander of the Indian army posted himself in the window of a house within hearing of the fort, and read the proclamation of Governor Hamilton, of Detroit, offer-



ing Great Britain's protection in case of surrender, but massacre it case of resistance. Colonel Shepherd, commandant of the fort, replied that the garrison would not surrender. The leader was insisting upon the impossibility of holding out, when his words were cut short by a shot fired at him from the fort. He was not struck. The Indians began the assault with a rush for the fort gate. They tried to break it open; and failing in this, they endeavored to push the posts of the stockade down. They could make no impression on the wall. The fire of the garrison was deadly, and the savages recoiled. They charged again and again, some times trying to break down the walls with battering rams, attempting to set them on fire; and then sending their best marksman to pick off the garrison by shooting through the port holes. In course of time the deadly aim of those in the fort taught the savages a wholesome caution. Women fought as well as men. The battle raged two nights and two days; but all attempts of the Indians to burn the fort or break into it were unavailing. They killed many of the cattle about the settlement, partly for food, partly from wantonness. They burned nearly all the houses and barns in Wheeling. The savages were preparing for another assault when Colonel Andrew Swearengen with fourteen men landed near the fort and gained an entrance. Shortly afterwards Major Samuel McColloch at the head of forty men arrived, and after a severe fight, all reached the fort except McColloch who was cut off, but made his escape. The Indians now despaired of success, and raised the siege. No person in the fort was killed. The loss of the Indians was estimated at forty or fifty.

In September of this year, 1777, Captain William Foreman, of Hampshire county, with about twenty men of that county, who had gone to Wheeling to assist in fighting the savages, was ambushed and killed at Grave creek, below



Wheeling by Indians supposed to have been a portion of those who had besieged Fort Henry.

The next year, 1778, was one of intense excitement on the frontier. An Indian force, of about two hundred, attacked Fort Randolph, at the mouth of the Kanawha, in May, and besieged the place one week. The enemy made several attempts to carry it by storm. But they were unsuccessful. They then moved off, up the Kanawha, in the direction of Greenbrier. Two soldiers from Fort Randolph eluded the savages; overtook them within twenty miles of the Greenbrier settlement; passed them that night, and alarmed the people just in time for them to flee to the blockhouses. Donnally's fort stood within two miles of the present village of Frankfort in Greenbrier county. Twenty men with their families took shelter there. At Lewisburg, ten miles distant, perhaps one hundred men had assembled with their families. The Indians apparently knew which was the weaker fort, and accordingly proceeded against Donnally's upon which they made an attack at daybreak. One of the men had gone out for kindling wood and had left the gate open. The Indians killed this man, and made a rush for the fort, and crowded into the yard. While some crawled under the floor, hoping to gain an entrance by that means, others climbed to the roof. Still others began hewing the door which had been hurriedly closed. All the men in the fort were asleep, except one white man and a negro slave. As the savages were forcing open the door, the foremost was killed with a tomahawk by the white man, and the negro discharged a musket loaded with heavy shot into the faces of the Indians. The men in the fort were awakened and fired through the port holes. Seventeen savages were killed in the yard. The others fell back, and contented themselves with firing at longer range. In the afternoon sixty six men arrived from Lewisburg, and the Indians were forced to raise the siege. Their expedition to Green-



brier had been a more signal failure than the attempt on Fort Randolph.

The country along the Monongahela was invaded three times in the year 1778, and once the following year. Few settlements within one hundred miles of the Ohio river escaped. In 1780 Greenbrier was again paid a visit by the savages; and in this year their raids extended eastward into Randolph county, and to Cheat river in Tucker county, to the very base of the Alleghany mountains. The Monongahela valley, as usual, did not escape, and ten settlers were killed. Governor Hamilton of Detroit, known as the "hair buyer," had encouraged the Indians by paying as high as thirty dollars bounty for scalps of men, women and children, but no bounty for prisoners. The savages killed their prisoners in large numbers for the bounty on scalps. This made the war terrible in its fierceness. In 1778 and 1779 General Roger Clarke, at the head of a small but excellent army, mostly Virginians, carried the war into the enemy's country, and struck at British forts in Illinois and Indiana, believing that if the British were driven out of that country, Indians would have more difficulty in obtaining arms, ammunition and supplies, and their raids on the settlements would be less frequent. Kaskaskia and Cahokia, in Illinois, were captured, and then, after a memorable march in midwinter, Clarke fell upon Vincennes, Indiana, and after a severe fight captured the place, released nearly one hundred white prisoners, chastised the Indians, captured stores worth fifty thousand dollars, cleared the whole country of British from the Mississippi to Detroit; and, most important of all, captured Governor Hamilton himself, and sent him in chains to Richmond. This victory secured to the United States the country as far as the Mississippi; and it greatly dampened the ardor of the Indians. They saw for the first time that the British were not able to protect them.

In 1781 Colonel David Broadhead crossed the Ohio at



Wheeling with eight hundred men; and, after a rapid march to the Miami, destroyed Indian villages and inflicted severe punishment upon the savages. The year 1782 is memorable on the border on account of the massacre of the Moravian Indians in Ohio, and the second siege of Fort Henry at Wheeling. The Moravian Indians, or Christianized Indians, with their missionaries, lived at peace with the white people; but it was suspected that they harbored hostile savages who harrassed the frontiers. An expedition was sent against them; their towns were destroyed, and a revolting massacre almost exterminated the unfortunate people. The occurrence forms a dark page of border history.

The second siege of Fort Henry occurred in September, 1782. There were fewer than twenty men in the fort when the Indians appeared. The commandant, Captain Boggs, had gone to warn the neighboring settlements of danger. The Indians numbered several hundred, under command, as is said, of Simon Girty. In addition, there was a company of British soldiers commanded by Captain Pratt; and the whole force marched under the British flag, and appeared before the fort September 11. Just before the attack commenced, a boat, in charge of a man named Sullivan, arrived from Pittsburg, loaded with cannon balls for the garrison at Louisville, Kentucky. Mr. Sullivan and his party seeing the danger, tied the boat and made their way to the fort and assisted in the defense. The besiegers demanded an immediate surrender, which was declined. The attack was delayed till night. The experience gained by the Indians in the war had taught them that little is gained by a wild rush against the walls of a stockade. No doubt Captain Pratt advised them also what course to pursue. When night came they made their assault. More than twenty times did they pile hemp against the walls of the fort and attempt to set the structure on fire. But the hemp was damp and burned slowly. No harm



was done. Colonel Zane's cabin stood near the stockade. His house had been burned at the siege in 1777; and when the Indians again appeared he resolved to defend it. He remained in the cabin with two or three others, among them a negro slave. That night an Indian crawled up with a chunk of fire to burn the house, but a shot from the negro's gun crippled him and he gave up his incendiary project. Attempts were made to break down the gates, but they did not succeed. A small cannon mounted on one of the bastions was occasionally discharged among the savages, much to their discomfiture. On one occasion when a number of Indians had gathered in a loft of one of the nearest cabins and were dancing and yelling in defiance of the garrison, the cannon was turned on them, and a solid shot cutting one of the joists, precipitated the savages to the floor beneath and put a stop to their revelry.

The Indians captured the boat with the cannon balls, and decided to use them. They procured a hollow log, plugged one end, and wrapped it with chains stolen from a neighboring blacksmith shop. They loaded the piece with powder and ball, and fired it at the fort. It is to be wondered at that the British officer would have permitted his allies to make such a blunder, for he must have known that the wooden cannon would burst. Its pieces flew in all directions, killing and maiming several Indians, but did not harm the fort. The savages were discouraged, and when a force of seventy men, under Captain Boggs, approached, the Indians fled. They did not, however, leave the country at once, but made an attack on Rice's fort, where they lost four warriors and accomplished nothing.

The siege of Fort Henry is remarkable from the fact that the flag under which the army marched to the attack, and which was shot down during the fight, was the last British flag to float over an army in battle, during the revolution, within the limits of the United States. West Virginia was never again invaded by a large Indian force, but



small parties continued to make incursions till 1795. The war with England closed by a treaty of peace in 1783. After that date the Indians fought on their own account, although the British still held posts in the northwest, under the excuse that the Americans had not complied with the terms of the treaty of peace. It was believed, and not without evidence, that the savages were still encouraged by the British, if not directly supplied with arms, to wage war against the frontiers. The United States government took vigorous measures to suppress the Indian depredations, and bring the savages to terms. General Harmar invaded the country north of the Ohio at the head of a strong force in 1790. He suffered his army to be divided and defeated. The next year General St. Clair led an army into the Indian country, and met with one of the most disastrous defeats in the annals of Indian warfare. He lost nearly eight hundred men in one battle. General Wayne now took charge of the campaign in the Indian country, and in 1794 gave battle to the Indians on the Maumee river near the Ohio and Indiana line, at a place called Fallen Timber, and utterly crushed the Indian confederacy. The savages never recovered from that defeat, and the frontiers were not again molested for nearly twenty years, and West Virginia was never again invaded by Indians.



## CHAPTER VI.



### COUNTIES AND BOUNDARIES OF THE STATE.

West Virginia's boundaries coincide, in part, with the boundaries of five other states, Ohio, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia and Kentucky. Some of these lines are associated with events of considerable historical interest, and for a number of years were subjects of controversy, not always friendly. It is understood, of course, that all boundary lines of the territory now embraced in West Virginia, except the line between this state and Virginia, were agreed to and settled before West Virginia became a separate state. That is, the lines between this state and Pennsylvania, Maryland, Kentucky and Ohio were all settled more than one hundred years ago. To speak briefly of each, the line separating West Virginia from Ohio may be taken first.

At the time the Articles of Confederation were under discussion in congress, 1778, Virginia's territory extended westward to the Mississippi river. The government of the United States never recognized the Quebec Act, which was passed by the English parliament before the Revolutionary war, and which extended the province of Quebec south to the Ohio river. Consequently, after the Declaration of Independence was signed, Virginia's claim to that territory was not disputed by the other colonies; but when the time came for agreeing to the Articles of Confederation which bound the states together in one common country, objection was raised to Virginia's extensive territory, which was nearly as large as all the other states together. The fear was expressed that Virginia would be-



## COUNTIES AND BOUNDARIES OF THE STATE. 75

come so powerful and wealthy, on account of its extent, that it would possess and exercise an influence in the affairs of government too great for the well being of the other states.

Maryland appears to have been the first state to take a decided stand that Virginia should cede its territory north and west of the Ohio to the general government. It was urged in justification of this course that the territory had been conquered from the British and the Indians by the blood and treasure of the whole country, and that it was right that the vacant lands should be appropriated to the use of the citizens of the whole country. Maryland took this stand June 22, 1778. Virginia refused to consent to the ceding of her western territory; and from that time till February 2, 1781, Maryland refused to agree to the Articles of Confederation. On November 2, 1778, New Jersey formally filed an objection to Virginia's large territory; but the New Jersey delegates finally signed the Articles of Confederation, expressing at the same time the conviction that justice would in time remove the inequality in territories as far as possible. On February 22, 1779, the delegates from Delaware signed, but also remonstrated, and presented resolutions setting forth that the United States congress ought to have power to fix the western limits of any state claiming territory to the Mississippi or beyond. On May 21, 1779; the delegates from Maryland laid before congress instructions received by them from the general assembly of Maryland. The point aimed at in these instructions was that those states having almost boundless western territory had it in their power to sell lands at a very low price, thus filling their treasuries with money, thereby lessening taxation; and at the same time the cheap lands and the low taxes would draw away from adjoining states many of the best inhabitants. Congress was, therefore, asked to use its influence with those states having extensive territory, to the end that they would not place



their lands on the market until the close of the Revolutionary war. Virginia was not mentioned by name, but it was well known that reference was made to that state. Congress passed, October 30, 1779, a resolution requesting Virginia not to open a land office till the close of the war. On March 7, 1780, the delegates from New York announced that state ready to give up its western territory; and this was formally done on March 1, 1781. New York having thus opened the way, other states followed the example and ceded to the United States their western territories or claims as follows: Virginia, March 1, 1784; Massachusetts, April 19, 1785; Connecticut, September 14, 1786; South Carolina, August 9, 1787; North Carolina, February 25, 1790; Georgia, April 24, 1802.

Within less than two months after Virginia ceded her northwest territory to the United States, congress passed an ordinance for the government of the territory. The deed of cession was made by Thomas Jefferson, Arthur Lee, Samuel Hardy and James Monroe, delegates in congress from Virginia. The boundary line between Virginia and the territory ceded to the general government was the northwest bank of the Ohio river at low water, The islands in the stream belonged to Virginia. When West Virginia became a separate state, the boundary remained unchanged.

The line between West Virginia and Kentucky remains the same as that formerly separating Virginia from Kentucky. The general assembly of Virginia, December 18, 1789, passed an act authorizing a convention to be held in the district of Kentucky to consider whether it was expedient to form that district into a separate state. The convention decided to form a state, and Kentucky was admitted into the union in 1792. Commissioners were appointed to adjust the boundary line between Virginia and Kentucky, and agreed that the line separating the two states should remain the same as that formerly separating



## BOUNDARIES AND COUNTIES OF THE STATE. 77

Virginia from the district of Kentucky. The line is as follows so far as West Virginia and Kentucky are contiguous: Beginning at the northwestern point of McDowell county, thence down Big Sandy river to its confluence with the Ohio.

The line dividing the northern limits of West Virginia from the southern limits of Pennsylvania was for many years a matter of dispute. Maryland and Pennsylvania had nearly a century of bickering concerning the matter before Virginia took it up in earnest. It is not necessary at this time to give the details of the controversy. A few facts will suffice. Pennsylvania and Maryland having contended for a long time over their common boundary line, two eminent astronomers, Charles Mason and Jeremiah Dixon, of England, were employed to mark a line five degrees west from the Delaware river at a point where it is crossed by the parallel of north latitude 39 degrees, 43 minutes, 26 seconds. They commenced work in the latter part of 1763, and completed it in the latter part of 1767. This line called Mason and Dixon's line, was accepted as the boundary between Pennsylvania and Maryland, and the controversy was at an end. But beyond the west line of Maryland, where Virginia's and Pennsylvania's possessions came in contact, a bitter dispute arose, almost leading to open hostilities between the people of the two states. Virginia wanted Pittsburg, and boldly and stubbornly set up a claim to the territory, at least as far north as the fortieth degree of latitude. This would have given Virginia part of Fayette and Greene counties, Pennsylvania. On the other hand, Pennsylvania claimed the country south to the thirty ninth degree, which would have extended its jurisdiction over the present territory of West Virginia included in the counties of Monongalia, Preston, Marion, Taylor, parts of Tucker, Barbour, Upshur, Lewis, Harrison, Wetzel and Randolph. The territory in dispute was



about four times as large as the state of Rhode Island. It was finally settled by a compromise. It was agreed that Mason and Dixon's line be extended west five degrees from the Delaware river. The commissioners appointed to adjust the boundary were Dr. James Madison and Robert Andrews on the part of Virginia, and David Rittenhouse, John Ewing and George Bryan on the part of Pennsylvania. They met at Baltimore in 1779 and agreed on a line. The next year the agreement was ratified, by Virginia in June and Pennsylvania in September. A line was then run due north from the western end of Mason and Dixon's line, till it reached the Ohio river. This completed the boundary lines between Virginia and Pennsylvania; and West Virginia's territory is bounded by the same lines.

The fixing of the boundary between Virginia and Maryland was long a subject of controversy. It began in the early years of the colony, long before the Revolutionary war, and has continued, it may be said, almost till the present day, for occasionally the agitation is revived. West Virginia inherited most of the subject of dispute when it set up a separate government. The controversy began so early in the history of the country, when the geography of what is now West Virginia was so imperfectly understood, that boundaries were stated in general terms, following certain rivers; and in after time these general terms were differently understood. Nearly two hundred years ago the Potomac river was designated as the dividing line between lands granted by Maryland and lands granted by Virginia; but at that time the upper tributaries of that river had never been explored, and as no one knew what was the main stream and what were tributary streams, Lord Fairfax had the stream explored, and the explorers decided that the main river had its source at a point where the Fairfax stone was planted, the present corner of Tucker, Preston and Grant counties, in West Virginia.



## BOUNDARIES AND COUNTIES OF THE STATE. 79

It also was claimed as the southwestern corner of Maryland. It has so remained to this day, but not without much controversy on the part of Maryland.

The claim was set up by Maryland, in 1830, that the stream known as the South branch of the Potomac is the main Potomac river, and that all territory north of that stream and south of Pennsylvania, belonged to Maryland. A line drawn due north from the source of the South branch to the Pennsylvania line was to be the western boundary of Maryland. Had that state succeeded in establishing its claim and extending its jurisdiction, the following territory would have been transferred to Maryland: Part of Highland county, Virginia; portions of Randolph, Tucker, Preston, Pendleton, Hardy, Grant, Hampshire and all of Mineral counties, West Virginia. The claim of Maryland was resisted, and Governor Floyd, of Virginia, appointed Charles J. Faulkner, of Martinsburg, to investigate the whole matter, and ascertain, if possible, which was the main Potomac, and to consult all available early authorities on the subject. Mr. Faulkner filed his report November 6, 1832, and in this report he showed that the South branch was not the main Potomac, and that the line as fixed by Lord Fairfax's surveyors remained the true and proper boundary between Virginia and Maryland. The line due north from the Fairfax stone to the Pennsylvania line remains the boundary in that quarter between West Virginia and Maryland, but the latter state is still disputing it.

When West Virginia separated from Virginia and took steps to set up a government for itself, it was at one time proposed to call the state Kanawha; and its eastern boundary was indicated so as to exclude some of the best counties now in the state. The counties to be excluded were Mercer, Greenbrier, Monroe, Pocahontas, Pendleton, Hardy, then including Grant; Hampshire, then including Mineral; Morgan, Berkeley and Jefferson. It was pro-



vided that any adjoining county of Virginia on the east might become a part of the state of West Virginia whenever a majority of the people of the county expressed a willingness to enter the new state. But, before the state was admitted the boundary line was changed and was as follows: Beginning at the Tug fork of the Big Sandy river at the western corner of Wyoming county, thence following the dividing line between McDowell and Buchanan and Tazewell counties to Mercer, thence along the southern line of Mercer to Monroe, along the southern line of Monroe to Greenbrier, thence following the crest of the Alleghanies on the eastern boundaries of Greenbrier and Pocahontas to the corner of Pendleton, thence following the southern and eastern lines of Pendleton and Hardy, along the southern and eastern boundary of Hardy to Hampshire, along Hampshire's eastern line to Morgan, thence following the southwestern boundaries of Morgan, Berkeley and Jefferson to the Loudoun county line, thence following the Loudoun and Jefferson county lines to the Potomac river.



## COUNTIES OF THE STATE.

As is well known, the territory which now forms West Virginia was a portion of Virginia from the first explorations of the country until separated from that state during the civil war, in 1863. For a quarter of a century after the first settlement was planted in Virginia there were no counties; but as the country began to be explored, and when the original settlement at Jamestown grew, and others were made, it was deemed expedient to divide the state into counties, although the entire population at that time was scarcely enough for one respectable county. Accordingly, Virginia was divided into eight counties in 1634. The western limits were not clearly defined, except that Virginia claimed the land from the Atlantic to the Pacific, and it was no doubt intended that the counties on the west should embrace all her territory in that direction. The country beyond the Blue Ridge was unexplored, and only the vaguest ideas existed concerning it. There was a prevailing belief that beyond the Blue Ridge the country sloped to the Pacific, and that a river would be found with its source in the Blue Ridge and its mouth in that ocean.

The eastern portion of West Virginia, lying along the Potomac and its tributaries, was no longer an unbroken wilderness, but settlements existed in several places. In 1738 it was urged that there were people enough in the territory to warrant the formation of a new county. Accordingly, that portion of Orange west of the Blue Ridge was formed into two counties, Augusta and Frederick. Thus Orange county no longer embraced any portion of the territory now in this state. Frederick county embraced the lower, or northern part of the Shenandoah valley, with Winchester as the county seat, and Augusta the southern, or upper valley, with Staunton as the seat of justice. Augusta then included almost all of West Virginia,



and extended to the Mississippi river, including Ohio, Kentucky, Michigan, Indiana and Illinois. From its territory all the counties of West Virginia, except Jefferson, Berkeley and part of Morgan, have been formed, and its subdivision into the counties will be the subject of this chapter. No part of West Virginia retains the name of Augusta, but the county still exists in Virginia, part of the original county of that name, and its county seat is the same as at first—Staunton.

In 1769 Botetourt county was formed from Augusta and included the territory now embraced in McDowell, Wyoming, Mercer, Monroe, Raleigh and portions of Greenbrier, Boone and Logan. No county in West Virginia now has the name Botetourt. It is thus seen that no one of the first counties in the territory of West Virginia retains any name in it. Spotsylvania, Orange, Augusta and Botetourt, each in its turn, embraced large parts of the state, but all the territory remaining under the original names is found in old Virginia, where the names are preserved. There was another county formed within the limits of West Virginia which has been sub-divided until none of it exists under the original name. This was West Augusta. It was called a district, but it seems to have been as much a county as some of the others although the matter never was fully settled, as to just what West Augusta was. It was formed in 1776 and included the following territory: Wetzel, Marshall, Ohio, Brooke, Hancock counties, parts of Randolph, Tucker, Taylor, Preston, Marion, Monongalia, Harrison, Doddridge, Tyler, and all of Washington and Greene counties Pennsylvania, and parts of Alleghany and Beaver counties. Following are the counties of West Virginia.

**HAMPSHIRE.** Area 630 square miles; formed 1754 from Augusta; county seat Romney; population in 1790, 7,346; in 1800, 8,348; in 1810, 9,784; in 1820, 10,889; in 1830, 11,279; in 1840, 12,295; in 1850, 14,036; in 1860, 13,913; in 1870,



## COUNTIES AND BOUNDARIES OF THE STATE. 83

7,613; in 1880, 10,336; in 1890, 11,419; settled about 1730.

**BERKELEY.** Area 320 square miles; county seat Martinsburg; formed 1772 from Frederick; population 1790, 19,713; in 1800, 22,006; in 1810, 11,479; in 1820, 11,211; in 1830, 10,518; in 1840, 10,972; in 1850, 11,771; in 1860, 12,525; in 1870, 14,900; in 1880, 17,380; in 1890, 18,702; settled about 1730.

**MONONGALIA.** Area 360 square miles; county seat Morgantown; formed from West Augusta 1776; population 1790, 4,768; in 1800, 8,540; in 1810, 12,793; in 1820, 11,060; in 1830, 14,056; in 1840, 17,368; in 1850, 12,357; in 1860, 13,048; in 1870, 13,547; in 1880, 14,985; in 1890, 15,705, settled about 1758.

**OHIO.** Area 120 square miles; county seat Wheeling; formed in 1776 from West Augusta; population 1790, 5,212; in 1800, 4,740; in 1810, 8,175; in 1820, 9,182; in 1830, 15,584; in 1840, 13,357; in 1850, 18,006; in 1860, 22,422; in 1870, 28,831; in 1880, 37,457; in 1890, 41,557; settled about 1770.

**GREENBRIER.** Area 1,000 square miles; formed 1777 from Botetourt; county seat Lewisburg; settled about 1750; population in 1790, 6,015; in 1800, 4,345; in 1810, 5,914; in 1820, 7,041; in 1830, 9,006; in 1840, 8,695; in 1850, 10,022, in 1860, 12,211; in 1870, 11,417; in 1880, 15,060; in 1890, 18,034.

**HARRISON.** Area 450 square miles; county seat Clarksburg; formed 1784 from Monongalia; settled about 1770; population in 1790, 2,080; in 1800, 4,848; in 1810, 9,958, in 1820, 10,932; in 1830, 14,722; in 1840, 17,669; in 1850, 11,728; in 1860, 13,790; in 1870, 16,714, in 1880, 20,181; in 1890, 21,919.

**HARDY.** Area 700 square miles; county seat Moorefield; formed in 1785 from Hampshire; settled about 1740; population in 1790, 7,336; in 1800, 6,627; in 1810, 5,525; in 1820, 5,700; in 1830, 6,798; in 1840, 7,622; in 1850, 9,543; in 1860, 9,864; in 1870, 5,518; in 1880, 6,794; in 1890, 7,567.

**RANDOLPH.** Area 1,080 square miles, the largest county in the state; county seat Beverly; formed in 1786 from



Harrison; settled about 1754; population in 1790, 951, in 1800, 1,826; in 1810, 2,854; in 1829, 3,357; in 1830, 5,000; in 1840, 6,208; in 1850, 5,243; in 1860, 4,990; in 1870, 5,563; in 1880, 8,102; in 1890, 11,633.

PENDLETON. Area 650 square miles; county seat Franklin; formed in 1787 from Augusta, Hardy and Rockingham; settled about 1750; population in 1790, 2,452; in 1800, 3,962; in 1810, 4,239; in 1820, 4,846; in 1830, 6,271; in 1840, 6,940; in 1850, 5,797; in 1860, 6,164; in 1870, 6,455; in 1880, 8,022; in 1890, 8,711.

KANAWHA. Area 980 square miles; county seat Charleston; formed in 1789 from Greenbrier and Montgomery; settled about 1774; population in 1800, 3,239; in 1810, 3,866; in 1820, 6,399; in 1830, 9,326; in 1840, 13,567; in 1850, 15,353; in 1860, 16,150; 1870, 22,349; 1880, 32,466; 1890, 42,756.

BROOKE. Area 80 square miles, the smallest county in the state; formed in 1796 from Ohio; county seat Wellsburg; population in 1800, 4,706; in 1810, 5,843; in 1820, 6,631; in 1830, 7,041; in 1840, 7,948; in 1850, 5,054; in 1860, 5,494; in 1870, 5,464; in 1880, 6,013; in 1890, 6,660; settled about 1772.

WOOD. Area 375; county seat Parkersburg; formed in 1798 from Harrison; settled about 1773; population in 1800, 1,217; in 1810, 3,036; in 1820, 5,860; in 1830, 6,429; in 1840, 7,923; in 1850, 9,450; in 1860, 11,046; in 1870, 19,000; in 1880, 25,006; in 1890, 28,612.

MONROE. Area 460 Square miles; county seat Union; settled about 1760; formed in 1799 from Greenbrier; population in 1800, 4,188; in 1810, 5,444; in 1820, 6,580; in 1830, 7,798; in 1840, 8,422; in 1850, 10,204; in 1860, 10,757; in 1870, 11,124; in 1880, 11,501; in 1890, 12,429.

JEFFERSON. Area 250 square miles; formed 1801 from Berkeley; county seat, Charlestown; settled about 1730; population in 1810, 11,851; in 1820, 13,087; in 1830, 12,927; in 1840, 14,082; in 1850, 15,357; in 1860, 14,535; in 1870, 13,219; in 1880, 15,005; in 1890, 15,553.



## COUNTIES AND BOUNDARIES OF THE STATE. 85

**MASON.** Area 430 square miles; county seat Point Pleasant; settled about 1774; formed in 1804 from Kanawha; population in 1810, 1,991; in 1820, 4,868; in 1830, 6,534; in 1840, 6,777; in 1850, 7,539; in 1860, 9,173; in 1870, 15,978; in 1880, 22,296; in 1890, 22,863.

**CABELL.** Area 300 square miles; county seat Huntington; settled about 1790; formed in 1809 from Kanawha; population in 1810, 2,717; in 1820, 4,789; in 1830, 5,884; in 1840, 8,163; in 1850, 6,299; in 1860, 8,020; in 1870, 6,429; in 1880, 13,744; in 1890, 23,598.

**TYLER.** Area 300 square miles; county seat Middlebourne; settled about 1776; formed in 1814 from Ohio county; population in 1820, 2,314; in 1830, 4,104; in 1840, 6,954; in 1850, 5,498; in 1860, 6,517; in 1870, 7,832; in 1880, 11,073; in 1890, 11,962.

**LEWIS.** Area, 400 square miles, county seat Weston; formed in 1816 from Harrison; population in 1820, 4,247; in 1830, 6,241; in 1840, 8,151; in 1850, 10,031 in 1860, 7,999; in 1870, 10,175; in 1880, 13,269; in 1890, 15,895. Settled prior to 1784.

**NICHOLAS.** Area 720 square miles; county seat Summersville; formed in 1818 from Kanawha, Greenbrier and Randolph; population in 1820, 1,853, in 1830, 3,346; in 1840, 2,255; in 1850, 3,963; in 1860, 4,627; in 1870, 4,458; in 1880, 7,223; in 1890, 9,307.

**PRESTON.** Are 650 square miles; county seat Kingwood; formed 1818 from Monongalia; population in 1820, 3,422; in 1830, 5,144; in 1840, 6,866; in 1850, 11,708; in 1860, 13,312; in 1870, 14,555; in 1880, 19,091; in 1890, 20,335.

**MORGAN.** Area, 300 square miles; county seat, Berkeley Springs; formed in 1820 from Hampshire and Berkeley; population in 1820, 2,500; in 1830, 2,694; in 1840, 4,253; in 1850, 3,557; in 1860, 3,732; in 1870, 4,315; in 1880, 5,777; in 1890, 6,774.

**POCAHONTAS.** Area 820 square miles; county seat Huntersville; settled about 1749; formed 1821 from Bath,



Pendleton and Randolph; population in 1830, 2,542; in 1840, 2,922; in 1850, 3,598; in 1860, 3,958; in 1870, 4,069, in 1880, 5,591; in 1890, 6,814.

LOGAN. Area about 400 square miles; county seat Lownsville; formed in 1824 from Kanawha, Giles, Cabell and Tazewell; population in 1830, 3,680, in 1840, 4,309, in 1850, 3,620; in 1860, 4,938; in 1870, 5,124; in 1880, 7,329; in 1890, 11,101.

JACKSON. Area 400 square miles; county seat Ripley; settled about 1796; formed in 1831; population in 1840, 4,890; in 1850, 6,544; in 1860, 8,306; in 1870, 10,300; in 1880, 16,312; in 1890, 19,021.

FAYETTE. Area 750 square miles; county seat Fayetteville; formed in 1831 from Logan, Kanawha, Greenbrier and Nicholas; population in 1840, 3,924; in 1850, 3,955; in 1860, 5,997; in 1870, 6,647; in 1880, 11,560; in 1890, 20,542.

MARSHALL. Area 240 square miles; county seat Moundsville; settled about 1769; formed in 1835 from Ohio; population in 1840, 6,937; in 1850, 10,138; in 1860, 12,937; in 1870, 14,941; in 1880, 18,840; in 1890, 20,735.

BRAXTON. Area 620 square miles; county seat Sutton; settled prior to 1796; formed 1836, from Kanawha, Lewis and Nicholas; population in 1840, 2,575; in 1850, 4,212; in 1860, 4,992; in 1870, 6,480, in 1880, 9,787; in 1890, 13,928.

MERCER. Area 400 square miles; county seat Princeton; formed in 1837 from Giles and Tazewell; population in 1840, 2,233; in 1850, 4,222; in 1860, 6,819; in 1870, 7,064; in 1880, 7,467; in 1890, 16,002.

MARION. Area 300 square miles; county seat Fairmont; formed in 1842 from Harrison and Monongalia; population in 1850, 10,552; in 1860, 12,722; in 1870, 12,107; in 1880, 17,198; in 1890, 20,721.

WAYNE. Area 440 square miles; county seat Trout's hill; settled about 1796; formed in 1841 from Cabell; population in 1850, 4,760; in 1860, 6,747; in 1870, 7,852; in 1880, 14,739; in 1890, 18,652.



## COUNTIES AND BOUNDARIES OF THE STATE. 87

**TAYLOR.** Area 150 square miles; county seat Grafton; formed in 1844 from Harrison, Barbour and Marion; population in 1850, 5,367; in 1860, 8,463; in 1870, 9,367; in 1880, 11,455; in 1890, 12,147.

**DODDRIDGE.** Area 300 square miles; county seat West Union; formed in 1845 from Harrison, Tyler, Ritchie and Lewis; population in 1850, 2,750; in 1860, 5,203; in 1870, 7,076; in 1880, 10,552; in 1890, 12,183.

**GILMER.** Area 360 square miles; county seat Glenville; formed in 1845 from Kanawha and Lewis; population in 1850, 3,475; in 1860, 3,759; in 1870, 4,338; in 1880, 7,108; in 1890, 9,746.

**WETZEL.** Area 440 square miles; county seat New Martinsville; formed in 1846 from Tyler; population in 1850, 4,284; in 1860, 6,703; in 1870, 8,559; in 1880, 13,896; in 1890, 16,841.

**BOONE.** Area 500 square miles; county seat Madison; formed in 1847 from Kanawha, Cabell and Logan; population in 1850, 3,237; in 1860, 4,840; in 1870, 4,553; in 1880, 5,824; in 1890, 6,885.

**PUTNAM.** Area 320 square miles; county seat Winfield; settled 1775; formed in 1848 from Kanawha, Cabell and Mason; population in 1850, 5,335; in 1860, 6,301; in 1870, 7,794; in 1880, 11,375; in 1890, 14,342.

**BARBOUR.** Area 360 square miles; county seat Philippi; formed in 1843 from Harrison, Lewis and Randolph, population in 1850, 9,005; in 1860, 8,958; in 1870, 10,312; in 1880, 11,870; in 1890, 12,702.

**RITCHIE.** Area 400 square miles; county seat Harrisville; formed in 1844 from Harrison, Lewis and Wood; population in 1850, 3,902; in 1860, 6,847; in 1870, 9,055; in 1880, 13,474; in 1890, 16,621.

**WIRT.** Area 290 square miles; county seat Elizabeth; settled about 1796; formed in 1848 from Wood and Jackson; population in 1850, 3,353; in 1860, 3,751; in 1870, 4,804; in 1880, 7,104; in 1890, 9,411.



**HANCOCK.** Area 100 square miles; county seat New Cumberland; settled about 1776; formed in 1848 from Brooke; population in 1850, 4,050; in 1860, 4,445; in 1870, 4,363; in 1880, 4,882; in 1890, 6,414.

**RALEIGH,** Area 680 square miles; county seat Beckleyville; formed in 1850 from Fayette; population in 1850, 1,765; in 1860, 3,367; in 1870, 3,673; in 1880, 7,367; in 1890, 9,597.

**WYOMING.** Area 660 square miles; county seat Oceana; formed in 1850 from Logan; population in 1850, 1,645; in 1860, 2,861; in 1870, 3,171; in 1880, 4,322; in 1890, 6,247.

**PLEASANTS.** Area 150 square miles; county seat St. Mary's; formed in 1851 from Wood, Tyler and Ritchie; population in 1860, 2,945; in 1870, 3,012; in 1880, 6,256; in 1890, 7,539.

**UPSHUR.** Area 350 square miles; county seat Buckhannon; formed in 1851 from Randolph, Barbour and Lewis, settled about 1775; population in 1860, 7,292; in 1870, 8,023, in 1880, 10,249; in 1890, 12,714.

**CALHOUN.** Area 260 square miles; county seat Grantsville; formed in 1856 from Gilmer; population in 1860, 2,502; in 1870, 2,930; in 1880, 6,072; in 1890, 8,155.

**ROANE.** Area 350 square miles; county seat Spencer; settled about 1791; formed in 1856 from Kanawha, Jackson and Gilmer; population in 1860, 5,381; in 1870, 7,232; in 1880, 12,184; in 1890, 15,303.

**TUCKER.** Area 340 square miles; county seat Parsons; settled about 1774; formed in 1856 from Randolph; population in 1860, 1,428; in 1870, 1,907; in 1880, 3,151; in 1890, 6,459.

**CLAY.** Area 390 square miles; county seat Clay Court House; formed in 1858 from Braxton and Nicholas; population in 1860, 1,787; in 1870, 2,196; in 1880, 3,460; in 1890, 4,659.

**MCDOWELL.** Area 860 square miles; county seat Perrysville; formed in 1858 from Tazewell; population in



## COUNTIES AND BOUNDARIES OF THE STATE. 89

1860, 1,535; in 1870, 1,952; in 1880, 3,074; in 1890, 7,300.

**WEBSTER.** Area 450 square miles; county seat Addison; formed in 1860 from Braxton, Nicholas and Randolph; population in 1860, 1,555; in 1870, 1,730; in 1880, 3,207; in 1890, 4,783. This was the last county formed while West Virginia was a part of Virginia.

**MINERAL.** Area 300 square miles; county seat Keyser; population in 1870, 6,332; in 1880, 8,630; in 1890, 12,085. This was the first county formed after West Virginia became a state. Grant county was formed fourteen days later, in 1866.

**GRANT.** Area 620 square miles; county seat Petersburg; settled about 1740; population in 1870, 4,467; in 1880, 5,542; in 1890, 6,802.

**LINCOLN.** Area 460 square miles; county seat Hamlin; settled about 1799; formed in 1867 from Kanawha, Cabell Boone and Putnam; population in 1870, 5,053; in 1880, 8,739; in 1890, 11,246.

**SUMMERS.** Area 400 square miles; county seat Hinton, formed in 1871 from Monroe, Mercer, Greenbrier and Fayette; population in 1880, 9,033; in 1890, 13,117.

**MINGO.** Area about 400 square miles; formed in 1895 from Logan.

Nearly all the counties of West Virginia are named after well-known men, as follows: Barbour—James Barbour, governor of Virginia in 1812; Berkeley—William Berkeley, governor of Virginia in 1641; Boone—Daniel Boone, the pioneer of Kentucky; Braxton—Carter Braxton, signer of the Declaration of Independence; Brooke—Robert Brooke, governor of Virginia in 1794; Cabell—William H. Cabell, governor of Virginia in 1805; Calhoun—the statesman J. C. Calhoun; Clay—Henry Clay; Doddridge—Philip Doddridge of Virginia; Fayette—General La Fayette; Gilmer—Thomas W. Gilmer, governor of Virginia in 1849; Grant—Ulysses S. Grant; Greenbrier—because many briers grew on the banks of the river; Hampshire—from



a shire of that name in England; Hancock—John Hancock, the first signer of the Declaration of Independence; Hardy—Samuel Hardy of Virginia; Harrison—Benjamin Harrison, governor of Virginia in 1781; Jackson—President Andrew Jackson; Jefferson—Thomas Jefferson; Kanawha—an Indian word meaning River of the Woods; Lewis—Charles Lewis, who was killed at Point Pleasant in 1774; Lincoln—Abraham Lincoln; Logan—an old Indian chief of the Mingoes; Marion—General Marion of the revolution; Marshall—John Marshall of Virginia, chief justice of the United States; Mason—George Mason of Virginia; Mercer—General Hugh Mercer, killed at the battle of Princeton; Mineral—named from its coal; Monongalia—an Indian name meaning a river with crumbling banks; Monroe—James Monroe of Virginia, governor in 1799; Morgan—General Daniel Morgan of the revolution; McDowell—James McDowell, governor of Virginia in 1843; Nicholas—W. C. Nicholas, governor of Virginia in 1843; Ohio—an Indian word meaning the Beautiful river; Pendleton—Edmund Pendleton, of Virginia; Pleasants—James Pleasants governor of Virginia in 1822; Pocahontas—an Indian girl; Preston—James P. Preston governor of Virginia in 1816; Putnam—General Israel Putnam of the revolution; Raleigh—Sir Walter Raleigh; Randolph—Edmund Randolph, governor of Virginia in 1786; Ritchie—Thomas Ritchie of Virginia; Roane—Judge Roane of Virginia; Summers—Lewis and George W. Summers of Kanawha county; Taylor—John Taylor of Virginia; Tucker—Judge St. George Tucker; Tyler—John Tyler, governor of Virginia in 1808; Upshur—Judge A. P. Upshur, secretary of state under President Tyler; Wayne—General Anthony Wayne of the revolution; Webster—Daniel Webster; Wetzel—Lewis Wetzel the Indian fighter; Wirt—William Wirt of Virginia; Wood—James Wood, governor of Virginia in 1796; Wyoming—supposed to be an Indian name; Mingo—a tribe of Indians.



## CHAPTER VII.



### CONSTITUTIONAL HISTORY.

The territory now embraced in the state of West Virginia has been governed under five state constitutions, three of Virginia and two of West Virginia. The first was adopted in 1776,, the second in 1830, the third in 1851, the fourth in 1863, the fifth in 1872. The first constitution was passed by the Virginia convention, June 29, 1776. five days before the signing of the Declaration of Independence. Virginia had taken the lead in declaring the United States independent and capable of self government; and it also took the lead in preparing a system of government for itself. The constitution passed by its convention in 1776 was one of the first documents of the kind in the world, and absolutely the first in America. Its aim was lofty. It had in view greater liberty than men had ever before enjoyed. The document is a masterpiece of statesmanship; yet its terms are extremely simple. It was the foundation on which nearly all the state constitutions have been based. It was in force nearly fifty years, and not until experience had shown wherein it was defective was there any disposition to change it or form a new constitution. Viewed now in the light of nearly a century and a quarter of progressive government, there are features seen in it which do not conform to the ideas of statesmen of today. But it was so much better, at the time of its adoption, than anything gone before, that it was entirely satisfactory.

A Bill of Rights preceded the first constitution. On May 15, 1776, the Virginia convention instructed its dele-



gates in congress to propose to that body to declare the united colonies independent; and at the same time the convention appointed a committee to prepare a declaration of rights and a plan of government for Virginia. On June 12 the Bill of Rights was passed. The document was written by George Mason, member of the committee. This state paper is of interest, not only as being one of the earliest of the kind in America, but because it contains inconsistencies which in after years clung to the laws of Virginia, carrying injustice with them, until West Virginia, when it became a state, refused to allow them to become part of the laws of the new commonwealth. The chief of these inconsistencies is found in the declaration at the outset of the Bill of Rights "that all men are by nature equally free and independent;" and yet further on it paves the way for restricting the privilege of suffrage to those who own property, thereby declaring in terms, if not in words, that a poor man is not as free and independent as a rich one. Here was the beginning of the doctrine so long held in Virginia by its law makers that a man without property should not have a voice in the government. In after years this doctrine was combatted by the people of the territory now forming West Virginia. The inhabitants west of the Blue Ridge, and especially west of the Alleghanies, were the champions of universal suffrage; and they labored to attain that end, but with little success, until they were able to set up a government for themselves, in which government men were placed above property. Further on in this chapter something more will be found on this subject.

The Bill of Rights declares that the freedom of the press is one of the chief bulwarks of liberty. This is in marked contrast with and a noticeable advance beyond the doctrine held by Sir William Berkeley, one of Virginia's royal governors, who solemnly declared: "I thank God we have not free schools or printing, and I hope we shall not have these hundred years; for learning has brought disobedience and



heresy and sects into the world, and printing has divulged them and libels against the government. God keep us from both." This solemn protest of Virginia's governor was made nearly forty years after the founding of Harvard university in Massachusetts. It has been sometimes cited as an illustration of the difference between the Puritan civilization in Massachusetts and the cavalier civilization of Virginia. But the comparison is unfair. It was no test of Virginia's civilization, because the governor was carrying out instructions from England to suppress printing, and he did not consult the people of the colony whether they wanted printing presses or not. But when a printer, John Buckner by name, ten years after Governor Berkeley asked divine protection against schools and printing, ventured into Virginia with a press, he was promptly brought before the governor and was compelled to give bond that he would print nothing until the king of England gave consent.

In view of this experience it is not to be wondered at that the Virginians were prompt in declaring in their Bill of Rights, that the press should be free. But they did not embrace that excellent opportunity to say a word in favor of schools. Nor could they, at one sweep, bring themselves to the broad doctrine that property does not round off and complete the man, but that "a man's a man a' for that," and capable, competent and trustworthy to take full part in the affairs of government. This Bill of Rights was brought into existence in the early part of the Revolutionary war; and at that very time the bold, patient, patriotic and poor back woodsmen from the frontiers were in the American armies, fighting and dying in the cause of liberty, and equal rights; and yet, by laws then being enacted, these same men were denied the right to take part in the management of the government which they were fighting to establish. It was for no other reason than that they were not assessed with enough property to



give "sufficient evidence of permanent common interest with and attachment to the community." This notion had been brought from England, and had been fastened upon the colony of Virginia so firmly that it could not be shaken off when that state severed the political bonds which bound it to the mother country. The idea clung to the constitution passed in 1776; to that of 1830; to that of 1851; but sentiment against the property qualification for suffrage constantly grew, and particularly among the people of Western Virginia, until it manifested itself in striking the obnoxious clause from the constitution when the new state of West Virginia came into separate existence.

If the war of the revolution did not teach the statesmen of Virginia that the poor man can be a patriot; and if the thirty-five or more years intervening between the adoption of the constitution of 1776 and the second war with England had not sufficed to do so, it might be supposed that the new experience of the war of 1812 would have made the fact clear. But it did not convince the law maker. Virginia was speedily invaded by the British after the declaration of war, and some of the most valuable property in the state was destroyed, and some of the best territory was overrun by the enemy. The capital at Washington, just across the Potomac from Virginia, was captured and burned. An ex-president of the United States was compelled to hide in the woods to avoid capture by the enemy. In this critical time no soldiers fought more valiantly, none did more to drive back the invader, than the men from Western Virginia, where lived most of those who were classed too poor to take part in the affairs of government. It is said that sometimes half the men in a company of soldiers had never been permitted to vote because they did not own enough property.

The people of Western Virginia felt the injustice keenly. They never failed to respond promptly to a call



when their services were needed in the field; but in time of peace they sought in a lawful and decent manner the redress of their grievances. They could not obtain this redress under the constitution then in force; and the war of 1812 had scarcely come to a close when the subject of a new constitution began to be spoken of. It was agitated long in vain. Nor was the restriction of suffrage the only wrong the people of Western Virginia endured, somewhat impatiently, but always with full respect for the laws then in force.

The eastern part of Virginia had the majority of inhabitants and the largest part of the property, and this gave that portion of the state the majority in the assembly. This power was used with small respect for the rights of the people in the western part of the state. Internal improvements were made on a large scale in the east; but none were made west of the mountains, or very few. Men in the western counties had little encouragement to aspire to political distinction. The door was shut on them. The state offices were filled by men from the wealthy eastern districts. At length the agitation of the question of a new constitution ripened into results. The assembly of Virginia in 1828 passed a bill submitting to a vote of the people whether they would have a constitutional convention called. At the election there were 38,542 votes cast, of which 21,896 were in favor of a constitutional convention. By far the heaviest vote favoring the convention was cast west of the Blue Ridge. The wealthy slave owners of the lower counties wanted no change. The constitution had been framed to suit them, and they wanted nothing better. They feared that any change would give them something less suitable. Nevertheless, when the votes were counted and it was ascertained that a new constitution was inevitable, the representatives of the wealth of the state set to work to guard against any invasion of the privileges they had so long enjoyed.



The delegates from what is now West Virginia elected to this convention were: E. M. Wilson and Charles S. Morgan of Monongalia county; William McCoy, of Pendleton county; Alexander Campbell and Philip Doddridge of Brooke county; Andrew Beirne of Monroe county; William Smith of Greenbrier county; John Baxter of Pocahontas; H. L. Opie and Thomas Griggs of Jefferson; William Naylor and William Donaldson of Hampshire; Philip Pendleton and Elisha Boyd of Berkeley; E. S. Duncan of Harrison; John Laidley of Cabell; Lewis Summers of Kanawha; Adam See of Randolph. The leader of the western delegates in the convention was Philip Doddridge who did all in his power to have the property quantification clause omitted from the new constitution.

The convention met at Richmond, October 5, 1829. From the very first meeting the western members were slighted. No western man was named in the selection of officers of the convention. It was seen at the outset that the property qualification for suffrage would not be given up by the eastern members without a struggle, and it was soon made plain that this qualification would have a majority. It was during the debates in this convention that Philip Doddridge, one of West Virginia's greatest men, came to the front in his full stature. His opponents were Randolph, Leigh, Upshur, Tazewell, Standard and others, who supported the doctrine that a voter should be a property owner. One of Doddridge's colleagues was Alexander Campbell, the founder of the church of the Disciples of Christ, sometimes known as the Christian church, and again called, from its founder, the Campbellite church. Here were two powerful intellects, Doddridge and Campbell, and they championed the cause of liberty in a form more advanced than was then allowed in Virginia. Doddridge himself had followed the plow, and he felt that the honest man does not need a certain number of acres before he can be trusted with the right of suffrage. He had



served in the Virginia legislature and knew from observation and experience the needs of the people in his part of the state. He was born on the bank of the Ohio river two years before the backwoodsmen of Virginia annulled the Quebec Act, passed by the parliament of England; and he had grown to manhood in the dangers and vicissitudes of the frontiers. He was but five years old at the first siege of Fort Henry; and was ten years old at the second siege; and the shot which brought down the last British flag that floated above the soil of Virginia during the Revolutionary war, was fired almost within hearing of his home. Among his neighbors were Lewis Wetzel, Ebenezer Zane, Samuel Brady and the men who fought to save the homes of the frontier settlers during the long and anxious years of Indian warfare. Although Doddridge died two years after this convention, while serving in congress, he had done enough to give West Virginia reason for remembering him. The work of Campbell does not stand out in so conspicuous a manner in the proceedings of the convention; but his influence for good was great; and if the delegates from west of the mountains labored in vain for that time, the result was seen in later years.

The work of the convention was brought to close in 1830, and a new constitution was given to the voters of the state for their approval or rejection. The western members had failed to strike out the distasteful property qualification. They had all voted against it, except Doddridge, who was unable to attend that session on account of sickness, no doubt due to overwork. His vote, however, would have changed nothing, as the eastern members had a large majority and carried every measure they wanted. In the dissatisfaction consequent upon the failure of the western counties to secure what they considered justice, began the movement for a new state. More than thirty years elapsed before the object was attained; and it was brought about by means and from causes which not the wisest statesman



foresaw in 1830; yet the sentiment had been growing all the years. The old state of Virginia was never forgiven the offense and injury done the western district in the constitutional convention of 1829-1830. If the injustice was partly removed by the enlarged suffrage granted in the constitution adopted twenty years after, it was then too late for the atonement to be accepted as a blotting out of past wrongs; and in 1861 the people of West Virginia replied to the old state's long years of oppression and tyranny.

The constitution of 1830 adopted the Bill of Rights of 1776 without amendment or change. Then followed a long preamble reciting the wrongs under which Virginia suffered, prior to the Revolutionary war, before independence was secured. Under this constitution the Virginia house of delegates consisted of one hundred and thirty-four members, of which twenty-six were chosen by the counties lying west of the Alleghenies; twenty-five by the counties between the Blue Ridge and the Alleghenies; forty-two by the counties between the Blue Ridge and tidewater, and thirty-six by the tidewater counties. The senate consisted of thirty-two members, of which thirteen were from the counties west of the Blue Ridge. No priest or preacher was eligible to the legislature. The right of suffrage was based on a property qualification. The ballot was forbidden and all voting was viva voce. Judges of the supreme court and of the superior courts were not elected by the people, but by the joint vote of the senate and house of delegates. The attorney general was chosen in the same way. Sheriffs and coroners were nominated by the county courts and appointed by the governor. Justices of the peace were appointed by the governor, and the constables were appointed by the justices. Clerks were appointed by the courts. The state treasurer was elected by the joint vote of the senate and house of delegates. It is thus seen that the only state officers for which people could vote directly



were senators and members of the house of delegates. Such an arrangement would be very unsatisfactory at the present day among people who have become accustomed to select their officers, almost without exception, from the highest to the lowest. The growth of the republican principle of government has been gradual. It was not all grasped at once; nor has it reached its fullest development yet. The Bill of Rights and the first constitution of Virginia were a great step forward from the bad government under England's colonial system; but the gathered wisdom of more than a century has discovered and corrected many imperfections.

It is noticable that the constitution of 1830 contains no provisions for public schools. It may be stated generally that the early history of Virginia shows little development of the common school idea. The state which was satisfied for seventy-five years with suffrage denied the poor would not be likely to become famous for its zeal in the cause of popular education. The rich, who voted, could afford schools for their children; and the father who was poor could neither take part in the government nor educate his children. Virginia was behind most of the old states in free schools. At the very time that Governor Berkeley thanked God that there were neither free schools nor printing presses in Virginia, Connecticut was devoting to education one fourth of its revenue from taxation. As late as 1857 Virginia with a population of nearly a million and a half, had only 41,608 children in common schools. When this is compared with other states, the contrast is striking. Massachusetts with a smaller population had five times as many children in the free schools; New Hampshire with one-fifth the population had twice as many; Illinois had nearly eight times as many, yet a smaller population; Ohio with a population a little larger had more than fourteen times as many children in public schools as Virginia. The following additional states in



1857 had more children attending common schools than Virginia had in proportion to their population: Maine, Vermont, Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Delaware, Indiana, Michigan, Iowa, Wisconsin, Missouri, Kentucky, Maryland, Louisiana, Tennessee, North Carolina, Georgia, Alabama. The states with a smaller percentage of children in the common schools than Virginia's, were South Carolina, California and Mississippi. For the remainder of the states, the statistics for that year were not compiled.

The showing is bad for Virginia. Although the lack of provision for popular education in the convention of 1830 does not appear to have caused opposition from the western members, yet the promptness with which the new state of West Virginia provided for public schools as soon as it had a chance, is evidence that the sentiment west of the Alleghanies was strong in favor of popular education.

When the western delegates returned home after completing their labors in the convention of 1829-1830, they found that their constituents were much dissatisfied with the constitution. The chief thing contended for, less restriction on suffrage, had been refused; and the new constitution, while in some respects better than the old, retained the most objectionable feature of the old. At the election held early in 1830 for ratifying or rejecting the new constitution, 41,618 votes were cast, of which 26,055 were for ratification and 15,563 against. The eastern part of the state voted strongly for ratification; the western part against it. Only two counties in what is now West Virginia gave a majority for it; and only one east of the Blue Ridge voted against it. The vote by counties in West Virginia was as follows: Berkeley, for 95, against 161; Brooke, the home of Doddridge and Campbell, for 0, against 371; Cabell, for 5, against 334; Greenbrier, for 34, against 464; Hampshire, for 241, against 211; Hardy, for 63, against 120; Harrison, for 8, against 1,112; Jefferson, for



243, against 53; Kanawha, for 42, against 266; Lewis, for 10, against 546; Logan, for 2, against 255; Mason, for 31, against 369; Monongalia, for 305, against 460; Monroe, for 19, against 451; Morgan, for 29, against 156; Nicholas, for 28, against 325; Ohio, for 3, against 643; Pendleton, for 58, against 219; Pocahontas, for 9, against 288; Preston, for 121, against 357; Randolph, for 4, against 567; Tyler, for 5, against 299; Wood, for 28, against 410. Total, for 1,383, against 8,375.

Although the constitution of 1830 was unsatisfactory to the people of the western counties, and they had voted to reject it, it had been fastened upon them by the vote of the eastern counties. However, the matter was not to end there. In a republican government the way to reach a redress of grievances is to keep the proposed reform constantly before the people. If right, it will finally prevail. In all reform movements or questions, the right is nearly always in the minority at first; perhaps it is always so. The western Virginians had been voted down, but they at once began to agitate the question of calling another constitutional convention. They kept at it for twenty years. Finally a legislature was chosen which called an election on the subject of a constitutional convention. The majority of the legislature was in favor of the convention, and in May, 1850, an election was held to choose delegates. Those elected from the country west of the Alleghanies, and from districts partly east and partly west of those mountains, were John Kenney, A. M. Newman, John Lionberger, George E. Deneale, G. B. Samuels, William Seymour, Giles Cook, Samuel C. Williams, Allen T. Caperton, Albert G. Pendleton, A. A. Chapman, Charles J. Faulkner, William Lucas, Dennis Murphy, Andrew Hunter, Thomas Sloan, James E. Stewart, Richard E. Byrd, Charles Blue, Jefferson T. Martin, Zachariah Jacob, John Knote, Thomas Gally, Benjamin H. Smith, William Smith, Samuel Price, George W. Summers, Joseph John-



son, John F. Snodgrass, Gideon D. Camden, Peter G. Van Winkle, William G. Brown, Waitman T. Willey, Edward J. Armstrong, James Neeson, Samuel L. Hayes, Joseph Smith, John S. Carlisle, Thomas Bland, Elisha W. McComas, Henry J. Fisher, and James H. Ferguson.

One of these delegates, Joseph Johnson, of Harrison county, was the only man up to that time ever chosen governor from the district west of the Alleghanies; and in the three-quarters of a century since the adoption of Virginia's first constitution, no man from west of the Alleghanies had ever been sent to the United States senate; and only one had been elected from the country west of the Blue Ridge. Eastern property had out-voted western men. Still the people west of the mountains sought their remedy in a new constitution, just as they had sought in vain nearly a generation before.

The constitutional convention met and organized for work. The delegates from the eastern part of the state at once showed their hand. They insisted from the start that there should be a property qualification for suffrage. This was the chief point against which the western people had been so long contending; and the members from west of the Alleghanies were there to resist such a provision in the new constitution, and to fight it to the last. Lines were drawn upon this issue. The contending forces were at once arrayed for the fight. It was seen that the western members and the members who took sides with them were not in as hopeless a minority as they had been in the convention of 1830. Still they were not so strong as to assure victory; and the battle was to be long and hard-fought. If there was one man among the western members more conspicuous as a leader than the others, that man was Waitman T. Willey, of Monongalia county. An unswerving advocate of liberty in its widest interpretation, and with an uncompromising hatred of tyranny and oppression, he had prepared himself to fight in the front when



the question of restriction of suffrage should come up. The eastern members forced the issue, and he met it. He denied that property is the true source of political power; but, rather, that the true source should be sought in wisdom, virtue, patriotism; and that wealth, while not bad in itself, frequently becomes a source of political weakness. The rights of persons are above the rights of property. Mr. Scott, a delegate from Fauquier county, declared that this movement by the western members was simply an effort to get their hands on the pocket books of the wealthy east. Mr. Willey repelled this impeachment of the integrity of the west. Other members in sympathy with the property qualification took up the cue, and the assault upon the motives of the people of the west became severe and unjust. But the members from that part of the state defended the honor of its people with a vigor and a success which defeated the property qualification in the constitution.

It was not silenced however. It was put forward and carried in another form, by a proviso that members of the assembly and senate should be elected on an arbitrary basis until the year 1865, and at that time the question should be submitted to a vote of the people whether their delegates in the legislature should be apportioned on what was called the "white basis," or the "mixed basis." The first provided that members of the legislature should be apportioned according to the number of white inhabitants; the second, that they should be apportioned according to both property and inhabitants. The eastern members believed that in 1865 the vote of the state would favor the mixed basis, and thus the property qualification would again be in force, although not in exactly the same form as before.

The proceedings of the convention had not advanced far when it became apparent that a sentiment in that body was strong in favor of electing many or all of the county



and state officers. The sentiment favoring electing judges was particularly strong. Prior to that time the judges in Virginia had been chosen by the legislature or appointed by the governor who was a creature of the legislature. The members from western Virginia, under the leadership of Mr. Willey, were in favor of electing the judges. It was more in conformity with the principles of republican government that the power which selected the makers of laws should also select the interpreters of those laws, and also those whose duty it is to execute the laws. The power of the people was thus increased; and with increase of power, there was an increase also in their responsibility. Both are wholesome stimulants for the citizens of a commonwealth who are rising to new ideas and higher principles. The constitution of 1850 is remarkable for the general advance embodied in it. The experience of nearly half a century has shown that many improvements could be made; but at the time it was adopted, its landmarks were set on higher ground. But, as yet, the idea that the state is the greatest beneficiary from the education of the people, and that it is the duty of the state to provide free schools for this purpose, had not gained sufficient footing to secure so much as an expression in its favor in the constitution of 1850.

The work of the convention was completed, and at an election held for the purpose in 1852 it was ratified and became the foundation for state government in Virginia. The Bill of Rights, passed in 1776, and adopted without change as a preamble or introduction to the constitution of 1830, was amended in several particulars and prefixed to the constitution of 1850. The constitution of 1830 required voting by viva voce, without exception. That of 1850 made an exception in favor of deaf and dumb persons. But for all other persons the ballot was forbidden. The property qualification for suffrage was not placed in the constitution. Although a provision was made to foist a



property clause on the state in 1865, the great and unexpected change made by the civil war before the year 1865, rendered this provision of no force. The leading features of the "mixed basis," and "white basis," as contemplated by the constitution, were: In 1865 the people, by vote, were to decide whether the members of the state senate and lower house should be apportioned in accordance with the number of voters, without regard to property; or, whether, in such apportionment, property should be represented. The former was called the white basis or suffrage basis, the latter, mixed basis. Under the mixed basis the apportionment would be based on a ratio of the white inhabitants and of the amount of state taxes paid. Provision was made for the apportionment of senators on one basis and members of the lower house on the other, if the voters should so decide. The members of the convention from West Virginia did not like the mixed basis, but the clause making the provision for it went into the constitution in spite of them. They feared that the populous and wealthy eastern counties would out-vote the counties beyond the Alleghanies, and fasten the mixed basis upon the whole state. But, West Virginia had separated from the old state before 1865, and never voted on that measure. There was a clause which went so far as to provide that the members of the senate might be apportioned solely on the basis of taxation, if the people so decided by vote.

Under the constitution, free negroes were not permitted to reside in Virginia, unless free at the time the constitution went into effect. Slaves thereafter manumitted forfeited their freedom by remaining twelve months in the state. Provision was made for enslaving them again.

For the first time in the history of the state, the governor was to be elected by the people. He had before been appointed by the legislature. County officers, clerks, sheriff, prosecuting attorney and surveyor, were now to



be elected by the people. The county court, composed of not less than three or more than five justices of the peace, held sessions monthly, and had enlarged jurisdiction. This arrangement was not consistent with the advance made in other branches of county and state government as provided for in the constitution. That county court was not satisfactory; and, even after West Virginia became a state, it did not at first rid itself of the tribunal which had out-lived its usefulness. But after a number of years, a satisfactory change was made by the new state. Under Virginia's constitution of 1850, the auditor, treasurer and secretary were selected by the legislature.

The first constitution of West Virginia was a growth, rather than a creation by a body of men in one convention. The history of that constitution is a part of the history of the causes leading up to and the events attending the creation of a new state from the counties in the western part of Virginia, which had refused to follow the old state when it seceded from the union of states and joined the coalition of rebellious states forming the Southern Confederacy. Elsewhere in this volume will be found a narrative of the acts by which the new state was formed. The present chapter will consider only those movements and events directly related to the first constitution.

The efforts of the northern states to keep slavery from spreading to new territory, and the attempts of the south to introduce it into the west; the passage of laws by northern states by which they refused to deliver runaway slaves to their masters; decisions of courts in conflict with the wishes of one or the other of the great parties to the controversy; and other acts or doctrines favorable to one or the other; all entered into the presidential campaign of 1860, and gave that contest a bitterness unknown before or since in the history of American politics. For many years the south had been able to carry its points by the ballot box or by statesmanship; but in 1860 the power was slip-



ping away, and the north was in the ascendancy with its doctrines of no further extension of slavery. Aware of this, the threat came from the south that the southern states would not abide by the result if a republican president should be elected. There were four candidates in the field; and the republicans elected Abraham Lincoln. The south lost no time in putting into execution its threat that it would not submit to the will of the majority. Had the southern states accepted the result; acquiesced in the limitation of slavery within those states wherein it already had an undisputed foothold, the civil war would not have occurred at that time, and perhaps never. Slavery would have continued years longer. But the rashness of the southern states, and their disregard of law and order, hastened the crisis, and in its result, slavery was stamped out. South Carolina led the revolt by a resolution December 20, 1860, by which that state seceded from the Union. Other southern states followed; formed "The Confederate States of America," and elected Jefferson Davis president.

Virginia, as a state, went with the south; but the people of the western part when confronted with the momentous question: "Choose ye this day whom ye will serve," chose to remain citizens of the United States. Governor Letcher of Virginia called an extra session of the legislature to meet January 7, 1861, to consider public affairs. The legislature passed a bill calling a convention of the people of Virginia, whose delegates were to be elected February 4, to meet in Richmond, February 13, 1861. A substitute for this bill offered in the lower house of the legislature, providing that a vote of the people of the state should be taken, on the question of calling the convention, was defeated. The convention was thus convened without the consent of the people; a thing which had never before been done in Virginia.

Delegates were chosen for Western Virginia. They were nearly all opposed to secession, and worked to defeat



it in the convention. Finding their efforts in vain, they returned home, some of them escaping many dangers and overcoming much difficulty on the way. The action of the Virginia convention was kept secret for sometime, while state troops, and troops from other states, were seizing United States arsenals and other government property in Virginia. But when the delegates returned to their homes in Western Virginia with the news that Virginia had joined the Southern Confederacy, there was much excitement, and a widespread determination among the people not to be transferred to the confederacy. Meetings were held; delegates were chosen to a convention in Wheeling to meet June 11 for the purpose of reorganizing the government of Virginia. The government which had existed there had gone over to the Southern Confederacy. The chief purpose was to save as much of Virginia as possible from joining the south, and to take such measures for the public safety as might be deemed necessary.

Owing to the peculiar circumstances in which the state of Virginia was placed, part in and part out of the Southern Confederacy, the constitution of 1850 did not apply to the case, and certainly did not authorize the reorganization of the state government in the manner in which it was about to be done. No constitution and no statute had ever been framed to meet such an emergency. The proceeding undertaken by the Wheeling convention was authorized by no written law, and so far as the statutes of the state contemplated such a condition, they forbade it. But, as the gold which sanctified the Temple was greater than the Temple, so men who make the law are greater than the law. The principle is dangerous when acted upon by bad men; but patriots may, in a crisis which admits of no delay, be a law unto themselves. The people of Western Virginia saw the storm; saw the only salvation, and with promptness and wisdom they seized the helm and made for the harbor.



The constitution of Virginia did not apply. The Wheeling convention passed an ordinance for the government of the reorganized state. This ordinance could scarcely be called a constitution, yet it was a good temporary substitute for one. It authorized the convention to appoint a governor and lieutenant governor to serve until their successors were elected and qualified. They were to administer the existing laws of Virginia. The general assembly was called to meet in Wheeling, where it was to provide for the election of a governor and lieutenant governor. The capital of Virginia was thus changed from Richmond to Wheeling, so far as this convention could change it. The senators and assemblymen who had been chosen at the preceeding election were to constitute the legislature. A council of five was appointed by the convention to assist the governor in the discharge of his duties. An allusion to the state constitution, made in this ordinance, shows that the convention considered the Virginia constitution of 1850 still in force, so far as it was applicable to the changed conditions. There was no general and immediate change of county and district officers provided for; but an oath was required of them that they would support the constitution of the United States. Provision was made for removing from office such as refused to take the oath, and for appointing others in their stead.

Under and by virtue of this ordinance the convention elected Francis H. Pierpont governor of Virginia, Daniel Polsley lieutenant governor, and James S. Wheat attorney general. Provision having been made by the general assembly which met in Wheeling for an election of delegates to frame a constitution for the new state of West Virginia, provided a vote of the people should be in favor of a new state, and the election having shown that a new state was desired, the delegates to the constitutional convention assembled in Wheeling November 26, 1861. The purpose at first had not been to form a new state, but to



reorganize and administer the government of Virginia. But the sentiment in favor of a new state was strong, and resulted in the assembling of a convention to frame a constitution. The list of delegates were, Gordon Batelle, Ohio county; Richard L. Brooks, Upshur; James H. Brown, Kanawha; John J. Brown, Preston; John Boggs, Pendleton; W. W. Brumfield, Wayne; E. H. Caldwell, Marshall; Thomas R. Carskadon, Hampshire; James S. Cassady, Fayette; H. D. Chapman, Roane; Richard M. Cooke, Mercer; Henry Dering, Monongalia; John A. Dille, Preston; Abijah Dolly, Hardy; D. W. Gibson, Pocahontas; S. F. Griffith, Mason; Stephen M. Hansley, Raleigh; Robert Hogar, Boone; Ephaim B. Hall, Marion; John Hall, Mason; Thomas W. Harrison, Harrison; Hiram Haymond, Marion; James Hervey, Brooke; J. P. Hoback, McDowell; Joseph Hubbs, Pleasants; Robert Irvine, Lewis; Daniel Lamb, Ohio; R. W. Lauck, Wetzel; E. S. Mahon, Jackson; A. W. Mann, Greenbrier; John R. McCutcheon, Nicholas; Dudley S. Montague, Putnam; Emmett J. O'Brien, Barbour; Granville Parker, Cabell; James W. Parsons, Tucker; J. W. Paxton, Ohio; David S. Pinnell, Upshur; Joseph S. Pomeroy, Hancock; John M. Powell, Harrison; Job Robinson, Calhoun; A. F. Ross, Ohio; Lewis Ruffner Kanawha; Edward W. Ryan, Fayette; George W. Sheets, Hampshire; Josiah Simmons, Randolph; Harmon Sinsel Taylor; Benjamin H. Smith, Logan; Abraham D. Soper, Tyler; Benjamin L. Stephenson, Clay; William E. Stevenson, Wood; Benjamin F. Stewart, Wirt; Chapman J. Stewart, Doddridge; G. F. Taylor, Braxton; M. Titchenell, Marion; Thomas H. Trainer, Marshall; Peter G. Van Winkle, Wood; William Walker, Wyoming; William W. Warder, Gilmer; Joseph S. Wheat, Morgan; Waitman T. Willey, Monongalia; A. J. Wilson, Ritchie; Samuel Young, Pocahontas.

There were two sessions of this convention, the first in the latter part of 1861; the second beginning February 12,



1863. The constitution was completed at the first session, as was supposed; but when the question of admitting the state into the Union was before congress, that body required a change of one section regarding slavery, and the convention was reconvened and made the necessary change.

When the convention assembled November 15, 1861, it set about its task. The first intention was to name the new state Kanawha, but there being objections to this, the name of Augusta was suggested. Then Alleghany, Western Virginia, and finally the name West Virginia was chosen. Selecting a name for the new state was not the most difficult matter before the convention. Very soon the question of slavery came up. The sentiment against that institution was not strong enough to exclude it from the state. No doubt a majority of the people would have voted to exclude it, but there was a strong element not yet ready to dispense with slavery, and a division on that question was undesirable at that time. Accordingly, the constitution dismissed the slavery question with the provision that no slave should be brought into the state, nor free negroes come into the state after the adoption of the constitution. Before the constitution was submitted to a vote of the people, it was changed to provide for the emancipation of slaves.

The new constitution had a provision which was never contained in the constitutions of Virginia; it affirmed that West Virginia shall remain a member of the United States. When this constitution was framed, it did not regard Hampshire, Hardy, Pendleton, and Morgan as parts of the state, but provided that they might become parts of West Virginia if they voted in favor of adopting the constitution. They so voted, and thus came into the state. The same provision was made in regard to Frederick county, but it chose to remain a portion of Virginia. It was declared that there should be freedom of the press and of speech,



and the law of libel was given a liberal interpretation, and was rendered powerless to curtail the freedom of the press. It was provided that in suits of libel, the truth could be given in evidence, and if it appeared that the matter charged as libellous was true, and was published with good intentions, the judgment should be for the defendant in the suit. The days of viva voce voting were past. The constitution provided that all voting should be by ballot. The legislature was required to meet every year.

A clause was inserted declaring that no persons who had aided or abetted the Southern Confederacy should become citizens of the state, unless such persons had subsequently volunteered in the army or the navy of the United States. This measure seems harsh when viewed from afteryears when the passions kindled by the civil war have cooled, and the prejudice and hatred have become things of the past. It must be remembered that the constitution came into existence during the war. The better judgment of the people at a later day struck out that clause. But at the worst, the measure was only one of retaliation, in remembrance of the tyranny recently shown within this state toward loyal citizens and office holders by sympathizers of the Southern Confederacy. The overbearing spirit of the politicians of Richmond found its echo west of the Alleghanies. Horace Greeley had been deterred from delivering a lecture in Wheeling on the issues of the day, because his lecture contained references to the slavery question. In Ohio county at that time, those who opposed slavery were in the majority, but not in power. There were not fifty slave holders in the county. Horace Greeley was indicted in Harrison county because he had caused the Tribune, his newspaper, to be circulated there. The agent of the Tribune fled from the state to escape arrest. Postmasters, acting as they claimed under the laws of Virginia, refused to deliver to subscribers such papers as the New York Tribune and the



New York Christian Advocate. A Baptist minister who had taught colored children in Sunday school was for that act ostracized, and he left Wheeling. Newsdealers in Wheeling were afraid to keep on their shelves a statistical book written by a North Carolinian, because it treated of slavery in its economic aspect. Dealers were threatened with indictment if they handled the book. Cassius Clay of Kentucky was threatened with violence for coming to Wheeling to deliver a lecture which he had delivered in his own state. The newspapers of Richmond reproached Wheeling for permitting such a paper as the *Intelligencer* to be published there.

These instances of tyranny from southern sympathizers are given, not so much for their value as simple history, as to show the circumstances under which West Virginia's first constitution was made, and to give an insight into the partisan feeling which led to the insertion of the clause disfranchising those who took part against the United States. Those who upheld the union had in the meantime come into power, and in turn had become the oppressors. Retaliation is never right as an abstract proposition, and seldom best so as a political measure. An act of injustice should not be made a precedent or an excuse for a wrong perpetrated upon the authors of the unjust act. Time has done its part in committing to oblivion the hatred and the wrong which grew out of the civil war. Under West Virginia's present constitution, no man has lesser or greater political powers because he wore the blue or the grey.

Representation in the state senate and house of delegates was in proportion to the number of people. The question of the "white basis," or the "mixed basis," as contained in the Virginia constitution of 1850, no longer troubled West Virginia. Suffrage was extended until the people elected their officers, state county and district, including all judges.

The constitution provided for free schools, and author-



ized the setting apart of an irreducible fund for that purpose. The fund is derived from the sale of delinquent lands; from grants and devises, the proceeds of estates of persons who die without will or heirs; money paid for exemption from military duty; such sums as the legislature may appropriate, and from other sources. This is invested in United States or state securities, and the interest is annually appropriated to the support of the schools. The principal must not be expended.

The constitution was submitted to the people for ratification in April, 1863, and the vote in favor of it was 18,862, and against it 514. Jefferson and Berkeley counties did not vote. They had not been represented in the convention which formed the constitution. With the close of the war, Virginia claimed them, and West Virginia claimed them. The matter was finally settled by the supreme court of the United States in 1870, in favor of West Virginia. It was at one time considered that the counties of Northampton and Accomack on the eastern shore of Virginia belonged to the new state of West Virginia because they had sent delegates to the Wheeling convention for the reorganization of the state government. It was once proposed that these two counties be traded to Maryland in exchange for the two western counties in that state which were to be added to West Virginia; but the trade was not consummated.

Under the constitution of 1863 the state of West Virginia was governed nine years, and there was general prosperity. But experience demonstrated that many of the provisions of the constitution were not perfect. Amendments and improvements were suggested from time to time, and there gradually grew up a strong sentiment in favor of a new constitution. On February 23, 1871, a call was issued for an election of delegates to a constitutional convention. The election was held in August of that year, and in January, 1872, the delegate met in Charleston and began the work.



They completed it in a little less than three months.

The following delegates were elected by the various senatorial and assembly districts of the state: Brooke county, Alexander Campbell, William K. Pendleton; Boone, William D. Pate; Braxton, Homer A. Holt; Berkeley, Andrew W. McCleary, C. J. Faulkner, John Blair Hoge; Barbour, Samuel Woods, J. N. B. Crim; Clay, B. W. Byrne; Calhoun, Lemuel Stump; Cabell, Evermont Ward, Thomas Thornburg; Doddridge, Jephtha F. Randolph; Fayette, Hudson M. Dickinson; Greenbrier, Henry M. Mathews, Samuel Price; Harrison, Benjamin Wilson, Beverly H. Lurty, John Bassel; Hampshire, J. D. Armstrong, Alexander Monroe; Hardy, Thomas Maslin; Hancock, John H. Atkinson; Jefferson, William H. Travers, Logan Osburn, William A. Morgan; Jackson, Thomas R. Park; Kanawha, John A. Warth, Edward B. Knight, Nicholas Fitzhugh; Lewis, Mathew Edmiston, Blackwell Jackson; Logan, M. A. Staton; Morgan, Lewis Allen; Monongalia, Waitman T. Willey, Joseph Snider, J. Marshall Hagans; Marion, U. N. Arnett, Alpheus F. Haymond, Fountain Smith; Mason, Charles B. Waggener, Alonzo Cushing; Mercer, Isaiah Bee, James Calfee; Mineral, John A. Robinson, John T. Pearce; Monroe, James M. Byrnsides, William Haynes; Marshall, James M. Pipes, J. W. Gallaher, Hanson Criswell; Ohio, George O. Davenport, William W. Miller, A. J. Pawnell, James S. Wheat; Putnam, m John J. Thompson; Pendleton, Charles D. Boggs; Pocahontas, George H. Moffett; Preston, William G. Brown, Charles Kantner; Pleasants, W. G. H. Care; Roane, Thomas Ferrell; Ritchie, Jacob P. Strickler; Randolph, J. F. Harding; Raleigh, William Price, William McCreery; Taylor, A. H. Thayer, Benjamin F. Martin; Tyler, Daniel D. Johnson, David S. Pugh; Upshur, D. D. T. Farnsworth; Wirt, D. A. Roberts, David H. Leonard; Wayne, Charles W. Ferguson; Wetzel, Septimius Hall; Wood, James M. Jackson, Okey Johnson.



The new constitution of West Virginia enters much more fully into the ways and means of government than any other constitution Virginia or West Virginia had known. It leaves less for the courts to interpret and decide than any of the former constitutions. The details are elaborately worked out, and the powers and duties of the three departments of state government, the legislative, judicial and executive, are stated in so precise terms that there can be little ground for controversy as to what the constitution means. The terms of the state officers were increased to four years, and the legislature's sessions were changed from yearly to once in two years. A marked change in the tone of the constitution regarding persons who took part in the civil war, against the government, is noticeable. Not only is the clause in the former constitution disfranchising those who took part in the rebellion, not found in the new constitution, but in its stead is a clause which repudiates, in express terms, the sentiment on this subject in the former constitutions. It is stated that "political tests, requiring persons, as a prerequisite to the enjoyment of their civil and political rights, to purge themselves, by their own oaths, of past alleged offenses, are repugnant to the principles of free government, and are cruel and oppressive." The ex-confederates and those who sympathized with and assisted them in their war against the United States, could have been as effectively restored to their rights by a simple clause to that effect, as by the one employed, which passess judgment upon a part of the former constitution. The language on this subject in the new constitution may, therefore, be taken as the matured judgment, and as an expression of the purer conception of justice by the people of West Virginia when the passions of the war had subsided, and when years had given time for reflection. It is provided, also, that no person who aided or participated in the rebellion shall be liable to any proceedings, civil or



criminal, for any act done by him in accordance with the rules of civilized warfare. It was provided in the constitution of Virginia that ministers and priests should not be eligible to seats in the legislature. West Virginia's new constitution broke down the barrier against a worthy and law-abiding class of citizens. It is provided that "all men shall be free to profess, and, by argument, to maintain their opinions in matters of religion; and the same shall, in no wise, affect, diminish, or enlarge their civil capacities."

A change was made in the matter of investing the state school fund. The first constitution authorized its investment in United States or West Virginia state securities only. The new constitution provided that it might be invested in other solvent securities, provided United States or this state's securities cannot be had. The provision for courts did not meet general approval as left by the constitution, and this dissatisfaction at length led to an amendment which was voted upon October 12, 1880, and was ratified by a vote of 57,941 for to 34,270 against. It provides that the supreme court of appeals shall consist of four judges who shall hold office twelve years; and they and all other judges and justices in the state shall be elected by the people. There shall be thirteen circuit judges, and they must hold at least three terms of court in every county of the state each year. Their tenure of office is eight years. The county court was remodeled. It no longer consists of justices of the peace, nor is its powers as large as formerly. It is composed of three commissioners whose term of office is six years. Four regular terms of court are held yearly. The powers and duties of the justices of the peace are clearly defined. No county shall have fewer than three justices nor more than twenty. Each county is divided into districts, not fewer than three nor more than ten in number. Each district has one justice, and if its population is more than twelve



hundred, it is entitled to two. They hold office four years.

There is a provision in the constitution that any county may change its county court if a majority of the electors vote to do so, after the forms laid down by law have been complied with. It is left to the people, in such a case, to decide what shall be the nature of the tribunal which takes the place of the court of commissioners.

The growth of the idea of liberty and civil government in a century, as expressed in the Bill of Rights and the Virginia constitution of 1776, and as embodied in the subsequent constitutions of 1830, 1850, 1863 and 1872, shows that the most sanguine expectations of the statesmen of 1776 have been realized and surpassed in the present time. The right of suffrage has been extended beyond anything dreamed of a century ago; and it has been demonstrated that the people are capable of understanding and enjoying their enlarged liberty. The authors of Virginia's first constitution believed that it was unwise to entrust the masses with the powers of government. Therefore, the chief part taken by the people in their own government was in the selection of their legislature. All other state, county and district officers were filled by appointments or by elections by the legislature. Limited as was the exercise of suffrage, it was still further restricted by a property qualification which disfranchised a large portion of the people. Yet this liberty was so great in comparison with that enjoyed while under England's colonial government, that the people were satisfied for a long time. But finally they demanded enlarged rights, and obtained them. When they at length realized that they governed themselves, and were not governed by others, they speedily advanced in the science of government. The property qualification was abolished. The doctrine that wealth was the true source of political power was relegated to the past. From that it was but a



step for the people to exercise a right which they had long suffered others to hold — that of electing all their officers. At first they did not elect their own governor; and as late as 1850 they acquiesced, though somewhat reluctantly, in the doctrine that they could not be trusted to elect their own judges. But they have thrown all this aside now, and their officers are of their own selection; and no man, because he is poor, if capable of self support, is denied an equal voice in government with that exercised by the most wealthy. Men, not wealth, intelligence, not force, are the true sources of our political power.



## CHAPTER VIII.



### JOHN BROWN'S RAID.

The attempt of John Brown to free the slaves; his seizure of the United States armory at Harper's Ferry; his capture, trial and execution, form a page in West Virginia's history in which the whole country, and in a lesser degree the whole civilized world, felt an interest at the time of its occurrence; and that interest will long continue. The seizure of the government property at that place by an ordinary mob would have created a stir; but the incident would have lost its interest in a short time, and at a short distance from the scene of disturbance. But Brown's accomplices were no ordinary mob; and the purpose in view gave his attempt its great importance. In fact, much more importance was attached to the raid than it deserved. Viewed in the light of history, it is plain that Brown could not have freed many slaves, nor could he have caused any wide-spread uprising among them. The military resources of the government, or even of the state of Virginia, were sufficient to stamp out in short order any attempted insurrection at that time. There were not enough people willing and ready to assist the attempt. There were too many willing and ready to put it down. Brown achieved about as much success as he could reasonably expect, and his attempt at emancipating slaves ran its logical course. But the extreme sensitiveness of the slave holders and their fears that abolitionists would incite an uprising, caused Brown's bold dash to be given an importance at the time far beyond what it deserved.

John Brown was a man of great courage; not easily ex-



cited; cool and calculating; not bloodthirsty, but willing to take the life of any one who stood between him and the accomplishment of his purpose. He has been very generally regarded as a fanatic, who had followed an idea until he became a monomaniac. It is difficult to prove this view of him to be incorrect; yet, without doubt, his fanaticism was of a superior and unusual kind. The dividing line between fanatics and the highest order of reformers, those who live before their time, who can see the light touching the peaks beyond the valleys and shadows in which other men are walking, is not always clearly marked. It is not for us to say to which class of men Brown belonged; and certainly it is not given us to set him among the blind fanatics. If he must be classified, we run less risk of error if we place him with those whose prophetic vision outstrips their physical strength; with the sentinel on the watch tower of Sier, of whom Isaiah speaks.

What he hoped to accomplish, and died in an attempt to accomplish, was brought about in less than five years from his death. If he failed to free the slaves, they were speedily freed by that sentiment of which he was an extreme representative. It cannot be said that Brown's efforts were the immediate, nor even the remote, cause which emancipated the black race in the United States; but beyond doubt the affair at Harper's Ferry had a powerful influence in two directions, either of which worked toward emancipation. The one influence operated in the North upon those who desired emancipation, stimulating them to renewed efforts; the other influence had its effect among the Southern slave owners, kindling their anger and their fear, and urging them to acts by which they hoped to strengthen their grip upon the institution of slavery, but which led them to war against the government, and their hold on slavery was shaken loose forever. John Brown was born in Connecticut, went to Kansas with his family and took part in the civil war in that state which



raged between the slave faction and those opposed to the spread of slavery. Brown affiliated with the latter, and fought in more than one armed encounter. He was one of the boldest leaders, fearless in fight, stubborn in defense, and relentless in pursuit. He hated slavery with an inappeasable hatred. He belonged to the party in the North called abolitionists, whose avowed object was to free the slaves. He was perhaps more radical than the majority of that radical party. They hoped to accomplish their purpose by creating a sentiment in its favor. Brown appears to have been impatient at this slow process. He believed in uniting force and argument, and he soon became the leader of that wing of the ultra abolitionists. On May 8, 1858, a secret meeting was held in Chatham, Canada, which was attended by delegates from different states, and from Canada. The object was to devise means of freeing the slaves. It is not known exactly what the proceedings of the meeting were, except that a constitution was outlined for the United States, or for such states as might be taken possession of. Brown was commander-in-chief; one of his companions named Kagi was secretary of war. Brown issued several military commissions.

Harper's Ferry was selected as the point for the uprising. It was to be seized and held as a place of rendezvous for slaves from Maryland and Virginia, and when a sufficient number had assembled there they were to march under arms across Maryland into Pennsylvania and there disperse. The negroes were to be armed with tomahawks and spears, they not being sufficiently acquainted with firearms to use them. It was believed that the slaves would eagerly grasp the opportunity to gain their freedom, and that the movement, begun at one point, would spread and grow until slavery was stamped out. Brown no doubt incorrectly estimated the sentiment in the North in favor of emancipation by force of arms. In company with his two sons, Watson and Oliver, Brown rented a farm near Sharps-



burg, in Maryland, from Dr. Kennedy. This was within a few miles of Harper's Ferry, and was used as a gathering point for Brown's followers, and as a place of concealment for arms. Brown represented that his name was Anderson. He never had more than twenty-two men about the farm. From some source in the east, never certainly ascertained, arms were shipped to Brown, under the name of J. Smith & Son. The boxes were double, so that no one could suspect their contents. In this manner he received two hundred and ninety Sharp's rifles, two hundred Maynard revolvers and one thousand spears and tomahawks. Brown expected from two thousand to five thousand men, exclusive of slaves, to rise at his word and come to his assistance. In this he was mistaken. He knew that twenty-two men could not hold Harper's Ferry, and without doubt he calculated, and expected even to the last hour before capture, that his forces would rally to his assistance. When he found that they had not done so, he concluded that the blow had been struck too soon.

About ten o'clock on the night of October 16, 1859, with seventeen white men and five negroes, Brown proceeded to Harper's Ferry, overpowered the sentry on the bridge, seized the United States arsenal, in which were stored arms sufficient to equip an army, took several persons prisoner and confined them in the armory; visited during the night some of the farmers in the vicinity, took them prisoner and declared freedom to their slaves; cut the telegraph wires leading from Harper's Ferry; seized an eastbound train on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, but subsequently let it proceed, after announcing that no other train would be permitted to pass through Harper's Ferry.

The people in the town knew nothing of what was taking place until daybreak. At that time a negro porter at the railroad station was shot and killed because he refused to join the insurgents, and an employe at the armory was shot at when he refused to be taken prisoner. A merchant



witnessed the shooting, and fired from his store at one of Brown's men. He missed, but was shot dead in return. When workmen belonging to the armory appeared at the hour for beginning their daily labors, they were arrested and confined in one of the government buildings as a prison. The village was now alarmed. The mayor of the town, Fontaine Beckham, and Captain George Turner, formerly of the United States army, appeared on the scene, and were fired upon and killed. The wires having been cut, news of the insurrection was slow in reaching the surrounding country; but during the forenoon telegrams were sent from the nearest offices. The excitement throughout the south was tremendous. The people there believed that a gigantic uprising of the slaves was at hand. The meagre information concerning the exact state of affairs at Harper's Ferry caused it to be greatly overestimated. At Washington the sensation amounted to a shock. General Robert E. Lee was ordered to the scene at once with one hundred marines.

Military companies began to arrive at Harper's Ferry from neighboring towns. The first upon the scene was Colonel Baylor's company from Charlestown. Shortly afterwards two companies arrived from Martinsburg. A desultory fire was kept up during the day, in which several persons were killed. An assault on one of the buildings held by Brown was successfully made by the militia. Four of the insurgents were killed and a fifth was made prisoner. Brown and the remainder of his men took refuge in the engine house at the armory, except four who fled and escaped to Pennsylvania. Two of them were subsequently captured. Two of Brown's men came out to hold a parley and were shot and taken prisoner. One was killed in revenge for the death of Mayor Beckham; the other was subsequently tried, convicted and hanged. About three o'clock in the afternoon of October 17, about twenty railroad men made a dash at the engine house,



broke down the door and killed two of Brown's men. But they were repulsed with seven of their number wounded.

Before sunset there were more than one thousand men in Harper's Ferry under arms, having come in from the surrounding country; but no further assault was made on Brown's position that day for fear of killing the men whom he held prisoner in the building with him. That night R. E. Lee arrived from Washington with one hundred marines and two pieces of artillery. Lieutenant J. E. B. Stuart was with him. Early Tuesday morning, October 18, Stuart was sent to demand an unconditional surrender, promising only that Brown and his men should be protected from immediate violence, and should have a trial under the laws of the country. Brown refused to accept these terms, but demanded that he and his men be permitted to march out with their prisoners, cross the Potomac unpursued. They would then free their prisoners and would escape if they could; if not, they would fight. Of course Stuart did not accept this offer. Preparations were made for an attack. The marines brought up a heavy ladder, and using it as a battering ram, broke open the door of the engine house and rushed in. Brown and his men fought till killed or overpowered. The first man who entered, named Quinn, was killed. Brown was stabbed twice with bayonets and then cut down by a sabre stroke. All his men but two were killed or wounded. These were taken prisoner. Of the whole band of twenty-two, ten white men and three negroes were killed; three white men were wounded; two had made their escape; all the others were captured.

It was believed that Brown's injuries would prove fatal in a few hours, but he rallied. Within the next few days he was indicted for murder, and for treason against the United States. In his case the customary interval did not elapse between his indictment and his trial. He was captured October 18, and on October 26 his case was called for trial in the county court at Charlestown, in Jefferson



county. Brown's attorneys asked for a continuance on the ground that the defendant was physically unable to stand trial. The motion for a continuance was denied, and the trial proceeded. Brown reclined on a cot, being unable to sit. The trial was extremely short, considering the importance of the case. Within less than three days the jury had brought in a verdict of guilty, and Brown was sentenced to be hanged December 16. Executive clemency was sought. Under the law of Virginia at that time the governor was forbidden to grant pardon to any one convicted of treason, except with the consent of the assembly. Governor Henry A. Wise notified the assembly of Brown's application for pardon. That body passed a resolution, December 7, by which it refused to interfere in Brown's behalf, and he died on the scaffold at the appointed time. Six of his companions were executed, four on the same day with their leader, and two in the following March.

The remains of Brown were taken to North Elba, New York, where Wendell Phillips pronounced a eulogy. Perhaps Brown contributed more to the emancipation of slaves by his death than by his life.



# CHAPTER IX.



## THE ORDINANCE OF SECESSION

Although West Virginia at the time was a part of Virginia, it refused to go with the majority of the people of that state in seceding from the United States and joining the Southern Confederacy. The circumstances attending that refusal constitute an important chapter in the history of West Virginia. Elsewhere in this book, in speaking of the constitution of this and the mother state, reference is made to the differences in sentiment and interests between the people west of the Alleghanies and those east of that range. The ordinance of secession was the rock upon which Virginia was broken in twain. It was the occasion of the west's separating from the east. The territory which ought to have been a separate state at the time Kentucky became one, seized the opportunity of severing the political ties which had long bound it, somewhat unwillingly, to the Old Dominion. Virginia, after the war, invited the new state to reunite with it, but a polite reply was sent, that West Virginia preferred to retain its statehood. The sentiment in favor of separation did not spring up at once. It had been growing for three quarters of a century. Before the close of the Revolutionary war the subject had attracted such attention that a report on the subject was made by a committee in congress. But many years before that time a movement for a new state west of the Alleghanies had been inaugurated by George Washington, Benjamin Franklin and others, some of whom were interested in land on the Kanawha and elsewhere. The new state was to be named Vandalia, and the capital



was to be at the mouth of the Great Kanawha. The movement for a new state really began there, and never afterwards slept; and finally, in 1863, it was accomplished, after no less than ninety-three years of agitation.

The legislature of Virginia met in extra session January 7, 1861. The struggle had begun. The rebels had not yet opened their batteries on Fort Sumpter, but the South had plainly spoken its defiance. The Southern Confederacy was forming. The elements of resistance were getting together. The storm of war was about to break upon the country. States further south had seceded or had decided to do so. Virginia had not yet decided. Its people were divided. The state hesitated. If it joined the confederacy, it would be the battle ground in the most gigantic war the world ever saw. It was the gateway by which the armies of the north would invade the south. Some affected to believe, perhaps some did believe, that there would be no war; that the south would not be invaded; that the north would not go beyond argument. But the people of better judgment foresaw the storm, and they knew where it would break. The final result, no man foresaw. Many hoped; many doubted; but at that time no man saw what four years would bring forth. Thus, Virginia hesitated long before she cast her fortunes with the states already in rebellion. When she took the fatal step; when she fought as only the brave can fight; when she was crushed by weight rather than vanquished, she accepted the result, and emerged from the smoke of battle, still great; and like Carthage of old, her splendor seemed only the more conspicuous by the desolation which war had brought.

The Virginia legislature called a convention to meet at Richmond February 13, 1861. The time was short, but the crisis was at hand. The flame was kindling. Meetings were being held in all the eastern part of the state, and the people were nearly unanimous in their demand



that the state join the Confederacy. At least, few opposed this demand; but at that time it is probable that one-half of the people of the state opposed secession. But rebellion was in the saddle and it held the reins. Richmond had gone mad. It was the center of a whirlpool of insurrection. West of the Alleghany mountains the scene was different. The mass of the people did not at once grasp the situation. They knew the signs of the times were strange; that currents were drifting to a center; but that war was at hand of gigantic magnitude, and that the state of Virginia was "choosing that day whom she would serve," were not clearly understood at the outset. But, as the great truth dawned, and as its lurid light became brighter, West Virginia was not slow in choosing whom she would serve. The people assembled in their towns, and a number of meetings were held, even before the convening of the special session of the legislature, and there was but one sentiment expressed, and that was loyalty to the government. Preston county held the first meeting, November 12, 1860; Harrison county followed the twenty-sixth of the same month; two days later the people of Monongalia assembled to discuss and take measures; a similar gathering took place in Taylor county, December 4; and another in Wheeling ten days later; and on the seventh of the January following there was a meeting in Mason county.

On January 21 the Virginia legislature declared by resolution that, unless the differences between the two sections of the country could be reconciled, it was Virginia's duty to join the confederacy. That resolution went side by side with the call for an election of delegate to the Richmond convention, which was to "take measures." The election was held February 4, 1861, and nine days later the memorable convention assembled. Little time had been given for a campaign. Western Virginia sent men who were the peers of any from the eastern part of the state. The following delegates were chosen from the territory



now forming West Virginia: Barbour county, Samuel Woods; Braxton and Nicholas, B. W. Byrne; Berkeley, Edmund Pendleton and Allen C. Hammond; Brooke, Campbell Tarr; Cabell, William McComas; Doddridge and Tyler, Chapman J. Stuart; Fayette and Raleigh, Henry L. Gillespie; Greenbrier, Samuel Price; Gilmer and Wirt, C. B. Conrad; Hampshire, David Pugh and Edmund M. Armstrong; Hancock, George M. Porter; Harrison, John S. Carlisle and Benjamin Wilson; Hardy, Thomas Maslin; Jackson and Roane, Franklin P. Turner; Jefferson, Alfred M. Barbour and Logan Osburn; Kanawha, Spicer Patrick and George W. Summers; Lewis, Caleb Boggess; Logan, Boone and Wyoming, James Lawson; Marion, Ephriam B. Hall and Alpheus S. Haymond; Marshall, James Burley; Mason, James H. Crouch; Mercer, Napoleon B. French; Monongalia, Waitman T. Willey and Marshall M. Dent; Monroe, John Echols and Allen T. Caperton; Morgan, Johnson Orrick; Ohio, Chester D. Hubbard and Sherard Clemens; Pocahontas, Paul McNeil; Preston, William G. Brown and James C. McGrew; Putnam, James W. Hoge; Ritchie, Cyrus Hall; Randolph and Tucker, J. N. Hughes; Taylor, John S. Burdette; Upshur, George W. Berlin; Wetzel, L. S. Hall; Wood, General John J. Jackson; Wayne, Burwell Spurlock.

When the convention met, it was doubtful if a majority were in favor of secession. At any rate, the leaders in that movement, who had caused the convention to be called for that express purpose, appeared afraid to push the question to a vote, and from that day began the work which ultimately succeeded in winning over enough delegates, who at first were opposed to secession, to carry the state into the confederacy.

There were forty-six delegates from the counties now forming West Virginia. Nine of these voted for the ordinance of secession, seven were absent, one was excused, and twenty-nine voted against it. The principal leaders



among the West Virginia delegates who opposed secession, were J. C. McGrew, of Preston county; George W. Summers of Kanawha county; General John J. Jackson of Wood county; Chester D. Hubbard of Ohio county, and Waitman T. Willey of Monongalia county. Willey was the leader of the leaders. He employed all the eloquence of which he was master, and all the reason and logic he could command to check the rush into what he clearly saw was disaster. No man of feeble courage could have taken the stand which he took in that convention. The agents from the states already in rebellion were in Richmond urging the people to cry out for secession, and the people were not unwilling agents in pushing the designs of the Southern Confederacy. The convention held out for a month against the clamor, and so fierce became the populace that delegates who opposed secession were threatened with personal assault and were in danger of assassination. The peril and the clamor induced many delegates who had been loyal to go over to the confederacy. But the majority held out in spite of threats, insults and dangers. In the front was General John J. Jackson, one of West Virginia's most venerable citizens. He was of the material which never turns aside from danger. A cousin of Stonewall Jackson, he had seen active service in the field before Stonewall was born. He had fought the Seminoles in Florida, and had been a member of General Andrew Jackson's staff. He had been intrusted by the government with important and dangerous duties before he was old enough to vote. He had traversed the wilderness on horseback and alone, between Florida and Kentucky, performing in this manner a circuitous journey of three thousand miles, much of it among the camps and over the hunting grounds of treacherous Indians. Inured to dangers and accustomed to peril, he was not the man to flinch or give ground before the clamor and threats of the Richmond populace, aided and backed by the most fiery spirits of the south. He



stood up for the union; spoke for it; urged the convention to pause on the brink of the abyss before taking the leap. He risked his life for the honor of his state and country in those days of peril, and he stood to his guns until he saw that Virginia had taken the leap into the dark. Another heroic worker in the famous convention was Judge G. W. Summers of Charleston. He was in the city of Washington attending a "Peace Conference" when he received news that the people of Kanawha county had elected him a delegate to the Richmond convention. He hurried to Richmond and opposed with all his powers the ordinance of secession. A speech which he delivered against that measure has been pronounced the most powerful heard in the convention.

On March 2 Mr. Willey made a remarkable speech in the convention. He announced that his purpose was not to reply to the arguments of the disunionists, but to defend the right of free speech which Richmond, out of the halls of the convention and in, was trying to stifle by threats and derision. He warned the people that when free speech is silenced liberty is no longer a reality, but a mere mockery. He then took up the secession question, although he had not intended to do so when he began speaking, and he presented in so forcible a manner the arguments against secession that he made a profound impression upon the convention. During the whole of that month the secessionists were baffled. They could not break down the opposition. Arguments had failed; threats had not succeeded. But on the other hand, the loyal members of the convention could not carry their point, and it was thus a deadlock until late in April. Secession then carried the day and Virginia, on April 17, 1861, took the plunge into the abyss, from which she was not to extricate herself until the flood of war, with all its horrors and ruin, had swept over her and left her fields untilled, her prosperity crushed and her homes desolate.



The next day, April 18, a number of delegates from Western Virginia declared that they would not abide by the action of the convention. Amid the roar of Richmond run mad, they began to consult among themselves what course to pursue. They were watched by the secessionists, and it was evident that their season of usefulness in Virginia's capital was at an end. On April 20 several of the West Virginians met secretly in a bed room of the Powhatan hotel and decided that nothing more could be done by them at Richmond to hinder or defeat the secession movement. They agreed to return home and urge their constituents to vote against the ordinance of secession at the election set for May 24. They began to depart for their homes. Some had gotten safely out of Richmond and beyond the reach of the confederates before it became known that the western delegates were leaving. Others were still in Richmond, and a plan was formed to keep them prisoners in the city; not in jail, but they were required to obtain passes from the governor before leaving the city. It was correctly surmised that the haste shown by these delegates in taking their departure was due to their determination to stir up opposition to the ordinance of secession in the western part of the state. But when it was learned that most of the western delegates had already left Richmond, it was deemed unwise to detain the few who yet remained, and they were permitted to depart, which they did without loss of time.

The passage of the ordinance of secession was a farce, so far as the leaders who pushed it through the convention were concerned. They intended to drag or drive Virginia into the Southern Confederacy, no matter whether the ordinance carried or not. They laid great stress on being constitutional in what they did in seceding from the union; but they violated both the letter and the spirit of their state constitution when they called a convention for purposes of secession; when they kept that ordinance a secret



for many days after its passage; when they acted upon it as though it had been ratified by the people, not only before it had been voted upon, but before the people of Virginia knew that such a thing as an ordinance of secession was in existence. It was passed in secret session. It was kept secret for several days, There are crises in human affairs when men may act contrary to the strict letter of the law, when the end clearly justifies the means, and when the end can be reached by no other means. Every individual man may at some time in his life be called upon, in a sudden and momentous emergency, to become a law unto himself; and bodies of men may meet similar emergencies; and if they are right, no injustice will result. But the emergency had not come to the state of Virginia which justified the dragging of that state into the Southern Confederacy without the knowledge or consent of the people.

Before the people knew that an ordinance of secession had passed, the convention began to levy war upon the United States. Before the seal of secrecy had been removed from the proceedings of that body, large appropriations for military purposes had been made. Officers were appointed, troops were armed; forts and arsenals belonging to the general government had been seized. The arsenal at Harper's Ferry and that at Norfolk had fallen before attacks of Virginia troops before the people of that state knew that they were no longer regarded as citizens of the United States. Nor was this all. The convention, still in secret session, without the knowledge or consent of the people of Virginia, had annexed that state to the Southern Confederacy. It was all done with the presumption that the people of the state would sustain the ordinance of secession when they had learned of its existence and when they were given an opportunity to vote upon it. In fact, it was a part of the conspiracy that the convention should see to it that the ordinance was sustained at the



polls. Every precaution was taken to that end. The election came May 24, 1861; and before that day there were thirty thousand soldiers in the state east of the Alleghanies, and troops had been pushed across the mountains into Western Virginia. The majority of votes cast in the state were in favor of ratifying the ordinance of secession; but West Virginia voted against it. Eastern Virginia was carried by storm. The excitement was intense. The cry was for war, if any attempt should be made to hinder Virginia's going into the Southern Confederacy. Many men whose sober judgment was opposed to secession, were swept into it by their surroundings. That portion of the state of Virginia lying east of the Alleghanies would probably have voted for secession had no troops come up from the south to assist by their presence the spread of disloyalty. As it was, few men cared to vote against that measure while confederate bayonets were gleaming around the polls. Before the day of election the general government had taken steps to invade Virginia. The President had called for seventy-five thousand volunteers. Federal troops had crossed, or were preparing to cross, the Potomac to seize Arlington heights and Alexandria; and when the time came for voting, the war had begun, and Virginia became one of the states of the Southern Confederacy.



# CHAPTER X.



## THE REORGANIZED GOVERNMENT.

The officers and visible government of Virginia abdicated when they joined the Southern Confederacy. The people reclaimed and resumed their sovereignty after it had been abdicated by their regularly constituted authorities. This right belongs to the people and can not be taken from them. A public servant is elected to keep and exercise this sovereignty in trust; but he can do no more. When he ceases doing this, the sovereignty returns, whence it came,—to the people. When Virginia's public officials seceded from the United States and joined the Southern Confederacy, they carried with them their individual persons, and nothing more. The loyal people of the state were deprived of none of the rights of self-government; but their government was left, for the time being, without officers to execute it and give it form. In brief, the people of Virginia had no government, but had a right to a government, and they proceeded to create one by choosing officers to take the place of those who had abdicated. This is all there was in the reorganization of the government of Virginia; and it was done by citizens of the United States, proceeding under that clause in the constitution of the United States which declares: "The United States shall guarantee to every state in this union a Republican form of government."

The government of Virginia was reorganized; the state of West Virginia was created; and nothing was done in violation of the strictest letter and spirit of the United States constitution. The steps were as follows, stated briefly



here, but more in detail elsewhere in this book. The loyal people of Virginia reclaimed and resumed their sovereignty and reorganized their government. This government, through its legislature, gave its consent for the creation of West Virginia from a part of Virginia's territory. Delegates elected by the people of the proposed new state prepared a constitution. The people of the proposed new state adopted this constitution. Congress admitted the state. The President issued a proclamation declaring West Virginia to be one of the United States. This state came into the union in the same manner and by the same process and on the same terms as all other states. The details of the reorganization of the Virginia state government will now be set forth more in detail.

When Virginia passed the ordinance of secession, the territory now forming West Virginia refused to acquiesce in that measure. The vote on the ordinance in West Virginia was about ten to one against it, or forty thousand against to four thousand for. In some of the counties there were more than twenty to one against secession. The sentiment was very strong, and it soon took shape in the form of mass meetings which were largely attended. When the delegates from West Virginia arrived home from the Richmond convention, and laid before their constituents the true state of affairs, there was an immediate movement having for its object the nullification of the ordinance. Although the people of Western Virginia had long wanted a new state, and although a very general sentiment favored an immediate movement toward that end, yet a conservative course was pursued. Haste and rashness gave way to mature judgment; and the new state movement took a course strictly constitutional. The Virginia government was first reorganized. That done, the constitution of the United States provided a way for creating the new state; for when the reorganized government was recognized by the United States, and when a legislature



had been elected, that legislature could give its consent to the formation of a new state from a portion of Virginia's territory, and the way was thereby provided for the accomplishment of the object.

On the day the ordinance of secession was passed, April 17, 1861, and before the people knew what had been done, a mass meeting was held at Morgantown which adopted resolutions declaring that Western Virginia would remain in the union. A division of the state was suggested in case the eastern part should vote to join the confederacy. A meeting in Wetzel county, April 22, voiced the same sentiment; and similar meetings were held in Taylor, Wood, Jackson, Mason and elsewhere. But the movement took definite form at a mass meeting of the citizens of Harrison county held at Clarksburg, April 22, which was attended by twelve hundred men. Not only did this meeting protest against the course which was hurrying Virginia out of the union, but a line of action was suggested for checking the secession movement, at least in the western part of the state. A call was sent out for a general meeting to be held in Wheeling, May 13. The counties of Western Virginia were asked to elect their wisest men to this convention. Its objects were stated in general terms to be the discussion of ways and means for providing for the state's best interests in the crisis which had arrived.

Twenty-five counties responded, and the delegates who assembled in Wheeling on May 13 were representatives of the people, men who were determined that the portion of Virginia west of the Alleghany mountains should not be dragged into a war against the union without the consent and against the will of the people. Hampshire and Berkeley counties, east of the Alleghanies, sent delegates. Many of the men who attended the convention were the best known west of the Alleghanies, and in the subsequent history of West Virginia their names have become household words. The roll of the convention was as follows:



Barbour county—Spencer Dayton, E. H. Manafee, J. H. Shuttleworth.

Berkeley county—J. W. Dailey, A. R. McQuilkin, J. S. Bowers.

Brooke county—M. Walker, Bazael Wells, J. D. Nichols, Eli Green, John G. Jacob, Joseph Gist, Robert Nichols, Adam Kuhn, David Hervy, Campbell Tarr, Nathaniel Wells, J. R. Burgoine, James Archer, Jesse Edgington, R. L. Jones, James A. Campbell.

Doddridge county—S. S. Kinney, J. Cheverout, J. Smith, J. P. F. Randolph, J. A. Foley.

Hampshire county—George W. Broski, O. D. Downey, Dr. B. B. Shaw, George W. Sheetz, George W. Rizer.

Hancock county—Thomas Anderson, W. C. Murray, William B. Freeman, George M. Porter, W. L. Crawford, L. R. Smith, J. C. Crawford, B. J. Smith, J. L. Freeman, John Gardner, George Johnston, J. S. Porter, James Stevenson, J. S. Pomeroy, R. Breneman, David Donahoo, D. S. Nicholson, Thayer Melvin, James H. Pugh, Ewing Turner, H. Farnsworth, James G. Marshall, Samuel Freeman, John Mahan, Joseph D. Ailison, John H. Atkinson, Jonathan Al-lison, D. C. Pugh, A. Moore, William Brown, William Hewitt, David Jenkins.

Harrison county—W. P. Goff, B. F. Shuttleworth, William Duncan, L. Bowen, William E. Lyon, James Lynch, John S. Carlisle, Thomas L. Moore, John J. Davis, S. S. Fleming, Felix S. Sturm.

Jackson county—G. L. Kennedy, J. V. Rowley, A. Flesher, C. M. Rice, D. Woodruff, George Leonard, J. F. Scott.

Lewis county—A. S. Withers, F. M. Chalfant, J. W. Hudson, P. M. Hale, J. Woofter, J. A. J. Lightburn, W. L. Grant.

Marshall county—Thomas Wilson, Lot Enix, John Wilson, G. Hubbs, John Ritchie, J. W. Boner, J. Alley, S. B. Stidger, Asa Browning, Samuel Wilson, J. McCondell, A.



Bonar, D. Price, D. Roberts, G. W. Evans, Thomas Dowler, R. Alexander, E. Conner, John Withers, Charles Snediker, Joseph McCombs, Alexander Kemple, J. S. Riggs, Alfred Gaines, V. P. Gorby, Nathan Fish, A. Francis, William Phillips, S. Ingram, J. Garvin, Dr. Marshman, William Luke, William Baird, J. Winders, F. Clement, James Campbell, J. B. Hornbrook, John Parkinson, John H. Dickey, Thomas Morrissa, W. Alexander, John Laughlin, W. T. Head, J. S. Parriott, W. J. Purdy, H. C. Kemple, R. Swan, John Reynolds, J. Hornbrook, William McFarland, G. W. Evans, W. R. Kimmons, William Collins, R. C. Holliday, J. B. Morris, J. W. McCarriher, Joseph Turner, Hiram McMechen, E. H. Caldwell, James Garvin, L. Gardner, H. A. Francis, Thomas Dowler, John R. Morrow, William Wasson, N. Wilson, Thomas Morgan, S. Dorsey, R. B. Hunter.

Monongalia county—Waitman T. Willey, William Lazier, James Evans, Leroy Kramer, W. E. Hanaway, Elisha Coombs, H. Dering, George McNeeley, H. N. Mackey, E. D. Fogle, J. T. M. Laskey, J. T. Hess, C. H. Burgess, John Bly, William Price, A. Brown, J. R. Boughner, W. B. Shaw, P. L. Rice, Joseph Jolliff, William Anderson, E. P. St. Clair, P. T. Lashley, Marshall M. Dent, Isaac Scott, Jacob Miller, D. B. Dorsey, Daniel White, N. C. Vandervort, A. Derranet, Amos S. Bowlsby, Joseph Snyder, J. A. Wiley, John McCarl, A. Garrison, E. B. Taggart, E. P. Finch.

Marion county—F. H. Pierpont, Jesse Shaw, Jacob Streams, Aaron Hawkins, James C. Beatty, William Beatty, J. C. Beeson, R. R. Brown, J. Holman, Thomas H. Bains, Hiram Haymond, H. Merryfield, Joshua Carter, G. W. Joliff, John Chisler, Thomas Hough.

Mason county—Lemuel Harpold, W. E. Wetzel, Wyatt Willis, John Goodley, Joseph McMachir, William Harper, William Harpold, Samuel Davies, Daniel Polsley, J. N. Jones, Samuel Yeager, R. C. M. Lovell, Major Brown,



John Greer, A. Stevens, W. C. Starr, Stephen Comstock, J. M. Phelps, Charles B. Waggener, Asa Brigham, David Rossin, B. J. Rollins, D. C. Sayre, Charles Bumgardner, E. B. Davis, William Hopkins, A. A. Rogers, John O. Butler, Timothy Russell, John Hall.

Ohio county—J. C. Orr, L. S. Delaplain, J. R. Stifel, G. L. Cranmer, A. Bedillion, Alfred Caldwell, John McClure, Andrew Wilson, George Forbes, Jacob Berger, John C. Hoffman, A. J. Woods, T. H. Logan, James S. Wheat, George W. Norton, N. H. Garrison, James Paull, J. M. Bickel, Robert Crangle, George Bowers, John K. Botsford, L. D. Waitt, J. Hornbrook, S. Waterhouse, A. Handlan, J. W. Paxton, S. H. Woodward, C. D. Hubbard, Daniel Lamb, John Stiner, W. B. Curtis, A. F. Ross, A. B. Caldwell, J. R. Hubbard, E. Buchanon, John Pierson, T. Witham, E. McCaslin.

Pleasants county—Friend Cochran, James Williamson, Robert Parker, R. A. Cramer.

Preston county—R. C. Crooks, H. C. Hagans, W. H. King, James W. Brown, Summers McCrum, Charles Hooten, William P. Fortney, James A. Brown, G. H. Kidd, John Howard, D. A. Letzinger, W. B. Linn, W. J. Brown, Reuben Morris.

• Ritchie county—D. Rexroad, J. P. Harris, N. Rexroad, A. S. Cole.

Roane county—Irwin C. Stump.

Taylor county—J. Means, J. M. Wilson, J. Kennedy, J. J. Warren, T. T. Monroe, G. R. Latham, B. Bailey, J. J. Allen, T. Cather, John S. Burdette.

Tyler county—Daniel Sweeney, V. Smith, W. B. Kerr, D. D. Johnson, J. C. Parker, William Pritchard, D. King, S. A. Hawkins, James M. Smith, J. H. Johnson, Isaac Davis.

Upshur county—C. P. Rohrbaugh, W. H. Williams.

Wayne county—C. Spurlock, F. Moore, W. W. Brumfield, W. H. Copley, Walter Queen.



Wirt county—E. T. Graham, Henry Newman, B. Ball.

Wetzel county—Elijah Morgan, T. E. Williams, Joseph, Murphy, William Burrows, B. T. Bowers, J. R. Brown, J. M. Bell, Jacob Young, Reuben Martin, R. Reed, R. S. Sayres, W. D. Welker, George W. Bier, Thomas McQuown, John Alley, S. Stephens, R. W. Lauck, John McClaskey, Richard Cook, A McEldowney, B. Vancamp.

Wood county—William Johnston, W. H. Baker, A. R. Dye, V. A. Dunbar, G. H. Ralston, S. M. Peterson, S. D. Compton, J. L. Padgett, George Loomis, George W. Henderson, E. Deem, N. H. Colston, A. Hinckley, Bennett Cook, S. S. Spencer, Thomas Leach, T. E. McPherson, Joseph Dagg, N. W. Warlow, Peter Riddle, John Paugh, S. L. A. Burche, J. J. Jackson, J. D. Ingram, A. Laughin, J. C. Rathbone, W. Vroman, G. E. Smith, D. K. Baylor, M. Woods, Andrew Als, Jesse Burche, S. Ogden, Sardis Cole, P. Reed, John McKibben, W. Athey, C. Hunter, R. H. Burke, W. P. Davis, George Compton, C. M. Cole, Roger Tiffins, H. Rider, B. H. Bukey, John W. Moss, R. B. Smith, Arthur Drake, C. B. Smith, A. Mather, A. H. Hatcher, W. E. Stevenson, Jesse Murdock, J. Burche, J. Morrison, Henry Cole, J. G. Blackford, C. J. Neal, T. S. Conley, J. Barnett, M. P. Amiss, T. Hunter, J. J. Neal, Edward Hoit, N. B. Caswell, Peter Dils, W. F. Henry, A. C. McKinsey, Rufus Kinnard, J. J. Jackson Jr.

The convention assembled to take whatever action might seem proper, but no definite plan had been decided upon, further than that Western Virginia should not go into secession with Virginia. The majority of the members looked forward to the formation of a new state as the ultimate and chief purpose of the convention. Time and care were necessary for the accomplishment of this object. But there were several, chief among whom was John S. Carlisle, who boldly proclaimed that the time for forming the new state was at hand. There was a sharp division in the convention as to the best method for attaining that end.



While Carlisle led those who were for immediate action, Waitman T. Willey was among the foremost of those who insisted that the business must be conducted in a business-like way, first by reorganizing the government of Virginia, and then obtaining the consent of the legislature to divide the state. Mr. Carlisle actually introduced a measure providing for a new state at once, and it met with much favor. But Mr. Willey and others pointed out that precipitate action would defeat the object in view, because congress would never recognize the state so created. After much controversy, there was a compromise reached, which was not difficult where all parties aimed at the greatest good, and differed only as to the best means of attaining it.

At that time the ordinance of secession had not been voted upon. Virginia had already turned over to the Southern Confederacy all its military supplies, public property, troops and materials, stipulating that, in case the ordinance of secession should be defeated at the polls, the property should revert to the state. The Wheeling convention took steps, pending the election, recommending that, in case secession carried at the polls, a convention be held for the purpose of deciding what to do—whether to divide the state or simply reorganize the government. This was the compromise measure which was satisfactory to both parties of the convention. Until the ordinance of secession had been ratified by the people, Virginia was still, in law, if not in fact, a member of the Federal union, and any step was premature looking to a division of the state or a reorganization of its government before the election. F. H. Pierpont, afterwards governor, introduced the resolution which provided for another convention in case the ordinance of secession was ratified at the polls. The resolution provided that the counties represented in the convention, and all other counties of Virginia disposed to act with them, appoint on June 4, 1861, delegates to a convention to meet June 11. This conven-



tion would then be prepared to proceed to business, whether that business was the reorganization of the government of Virginia or the dividing of the state, or both. Having finished its work, the convention adjourned. It had saved the state from anarchy. It had organized a nucleus around which a stable and adequate government was built. It made a good beginning. Had it rashly attempted to divide the state at that time the effort must have failed, and the bad effects of the failure, and the consequent confusion, would have been far reaching. No man can tell whether such a failure would not have defeated for all time the creation of West Virginia from Virginia's territory.

The vote on the ordinance of secession took place May 23, 1861, and the people of eastern Virginia voted to go out of the Union, but the part now comprising West Virginia gave a large majority against seceding. Delegates to the assembly of Virginia were elected at the same time. Great interest was now manifested west of the Alleghanies in the subject of a new state. Delegates to the second Wheeling convention were elected June 4, and met June 11, 1861. The members of the first convention had been appointed by mass meetings and otherwise; but those of the second convention had been chosen by the suffrage of the people. Thirty counties were represented as follows:

Barbour county—N. H. Taft, Spencer Dayton, John H. Shuttleworth.

Brooke county—W. H. Crothers, Joseph Gist, John D. Nichols, Campbell Tarr.

Cabell county—Albert Laidly was entered on the roll but did not serve.

Doddridge county—James A. Foley.

Gilmer county—Henry H. Withers.

Hancock county—George M. Porter, John H. Atkinson, William L. Crawford.



Harrison county—John J. Davis, Chapman J. Stewart, John C. Vance, John S. Carlisle, Solomon S. Fleming, Lot Bowers, B. F. Shuttleworth.

Hardy county—John Michael.

Hampshire county—James Carskadon, Owen J. Downey, James J. Barracks, G. W. Broski, James H. Trout.

Jackson county—Daniel Frost, Andrew Flesher, James F. Scott.

Kanawha county—Lewis Ruffner, Greenbury Slack.

Lewis county—J. A. J. Lightburn, P. M. Hale.

Monongalia county—Joseph Snyder, Leroy Kramer, R. L. Berkshire, William Price, James Evans, D. B. Dorsey.

Marion county—James O. Watson, Richard Fast, Fountain Smith, Francis H. Pierpont, John S. Barnes, A. F. Ritchie.

Marshall county—C. H. Caldwell, Robert Morris, Remembrance Swan.

Mason county—Lewis Wetzel, Daniel Polsley, C. B. Waggener.

Ohio county—Andrew Wilson, Thomas H. Logan, Daniel Lamb, James W. Paxton, George Harrison, Chester D. Hubbard.

Pleasant county—James W. Williamson, C. W. Smith.

Preston county—William Zinn, Charles Hooten, William B. Crane, John Howard, Harrison Hagans, John J. Brown.

Ritchie county—William H. Douglass.

Randolph county—Samuel Crane.

Roane county—T. A. Roberts.

Tucker county—Solomon Parsons.

Taylor county—L. E. Davidson, John S. Burdette, Samuel B. Todd.

Tyler county—William I. Boreman, Daniel D. Johnson.

Upshur county—John Love, John L. Smith, D. D. T. Farnsworth.

Wayne county—William Radcliff, William Copley, W. W. Brumfield.



Wetzel county—James G. West, Reuben Martin, James P. Ferrell.

Wirt county—James A. Williamson, Henry Newman, E. T. Graham.

Wood county—John W. Moss, Peter G. VanWinkle, Arthur I. Boreman.

James T. Close and H. S. Martin of Alexandria, and John Hawxhurst and E. E. Mason of Fairfax, were admitted as delegates, while William F. Mercer of Loudoun, and Jonathan Roberts of Fairfax, were rejected because of the insufficiency of their credentials. Arthur I. Boreman was elected president of the convention, G. L. Cranmer, secretary, and Thomas Hornbrook, sergeant-at-arms.

On June 13, two days after the meeting of the convention, a committee on order of business reported a declaration by the people of Virginia. This document set forth the acts of the secessionists of Virginia, declared them hostile to the welfare of the people, done in violation of the constitution, and therefore null and void. It was further declared that all offices in Virginia, whether legislative, judicial or executive, under the government set up by the convention which passed the ordinance of secession, were vacant. The next day the convention began the work of reorganizing the state government on the following lines: A governor, lieutenant governor and attorney general for the state of Virginia were to be appointed by the convention to hold office until their successors should be elected and qualified, and the legislature was required to provide by law for the election of a governor and lieutenant governor by the people. A council of state, consisting of five members, was to be appointed to assist the governor; their term of office to expire at the same time as that of the governor. Delegates elected to the legislature on May 23, 1861, and senators entitled to seats under the laws then existing, and who would take the oath as required, were to constitute the reorganized legislature, and were required



to meet in Wheeling on the first day of the following July. A test oath was required of all officers, whether state, county or municipal.

On June 20 the convention proceeded to choose officers. Francis H. Pierpont was elected governor of Virginia; Daniel Polsley was elected lieutenant governor; James Wheat was chosen attorney general. The governor's council consisted of Daniel Lamb, Peter G. VanWinkle, William Lazier, William A. Harrison and J. T. Paxton. The legislature was required to elect an auditor, treasurer and secretary of state as soon as possible. This closed the work of the convention, and it adjourned the same day to meet again August 6.

A new government existed for Virginia. The legislature which was to assemble in Wheeling in ten days could complete the work.

This legislature of Virginia, consisting of thirty-one members, began its labors immediately upon organizing, July 1. A message from Governor Pierpont laid before that body the condition of affairs and indicated certain measures which ought to be carried out. On July 9 the legislature elected L. A. Hagans of Preston county, secretary of Virginia; Samuel Crane of Randolph county, auditor; and Campbell Tarr of Brooke county, treasurer. Waitman T. Willey and John S. Carlisle were elected to the United States senate.

The convention which had adjourned June 20 met again August 6 and took up the work of dividing Virginia, whose government had been reorganized and was in working order. The people wanted a new state and the machinery for creating it was set in motion. On July 20 an ordinance was passed calling for an election to take the sense of the people on the question, and to elect members to a constitutional convention at the same time. In case the vote favored a new state, the men elected to the constitutional



convention were to meet and frame a constitution. The convention adjourned August 2, 1861. Late in October the election was held, with the result that the vote stood about twenty-five to one in favor of a new state.



# CHAPTER XI.

—«0»—

## FORMATION OF WEST VIRGINIA.

The reorganized government of Virginia made all things ready for the creation of the new commonwealth. The people of Western Virginia had waited long for the opportunity to divide the state. The tyranny of the more powerful eastern part had been borne half a century. When at last the war created the occasion, the people were not slow to profit by it, and to bring a new state into existence. The work began in earnest August 20, 1861, when the second Wheeling convention called upon the people to vote on the question; and the labor was completed June 20, 1863, when the officers of the new state took charge of affairs. One year and ten months were required for the accomplishment of the work; and this chapter gives an outline of the proceedings relative to the new state during that time. It was at first proposed to call the state Kanawha; but the name was changed in the constitutional convention at Wheeling on December 3, 1861, to West Virginia. On February 18, 1862, the constitutional convention adjourned, subject to the call of the chairman. In April of that year the people of the state voted upon the ratification of the constitution; and the vote in favor of ratification was 18,852, and against it, 514. Governor Pierpont issued a proclamation announcing the result, and at the same time called an extra session of the Virginia legislature to meet in Wheeling May 6. That body met, and six days later passed an act by which it gave its consent to a division of the state of Virginia and the creation of a new state. This was done in order that the constitution



might be complied with; for, before the state could be divided, the legislature must give its consent. It yet remained for West Virginia to be admitted into the union by an act of congress and by the president's proclamation. Had there been no opposition and had there not been such a press of other business this might have been accomplished in a few weeks. As it was there was a long and bitter contest in the senate. The opposition did not come so much from outside the state as from the state itself. John S. Carlisle, one of the senators elected by the legislature of the reorganized government of Virginia at Wheeling, was supposed to be friendly to the cause of the new state; but when he was put to the test it was found that he was strongly opposed to it, and he did all in his power to defeat the movement, and almost accomplished his purpose. The indignation in Western Virginia was great. The legislature, in session at Wheeling, on December 12, 1862, by a resolution, requested Carlisle to resign the seat he held in the senate. He refused to do so. He had been one of the most active advocates of the movement for the new state while a member of the first Wheeling convention, in May, 1861, and had been a leader in the new state movement before and after that date. Why he changed, and opposed the admission of West Virginia by congress has never been satisfactorily explained.

One of the reasons given for his opposition, and one which he himself put forward, was that congress attempted to amend the state constitution on the subject of slavery, and he opposed the admission of the state on that ground. He claimed that he would rather have no new state than have it saddled with a constitution, a portion of which its people had never ratified. But this could not have been the sole cause of Carlisle's opposition. He tried to defeat the bill after the proposed objectionable amendment to the constitution had been satisfactorily arranged. He fought it in a determined manner till the last. He had hindered



the work of getting the bill before congress before any change in the state constitution had been proposed.

The members in congress from the reorganized government of Virginia were William G. Brown, Jacob B. Blair and K. V. Waley; in the senate, John S. Carlisle and Waitman T. Willey. In addition to these gentlemen, the legislature appointed as commissioners to bring the matter before congress, Ephraim B. Hall of Marion county, Peter VanWinkle of Wood county, John Hall of Mason county, and Elbert H. Caldwell of Marshall county. These commissioners reached Washington May 22, 1862. There were several other well-known West Virginians who also went to Washington on their own account to assist in securing the new state. Among them were Daniel Polsley, lieutenant governor of West Virginia; Granville Parker and Harrison Hagans. There were members of congress and senators from other states who performed special service in the cause. The matter was laid before the United States Senate May 29, 1862, by Senator Willey, who presented the West Virginia constitution recently ratified, and also the act of the legislature giving its consent to the creation of a new state within the jurisdiction of Virginia, and a memorial requesting the admission of the new state. In presenting these documents, Senator Willey addressed the senate and denied that the movement was simply to gratify revenge upon the mother state for seceding from the union and joining the Southern Confederacy; but, on the contrary, the people west of the Alleghanies had long wanted a new state, and had long suffered in consequence of Virginia's neglect, and of her unconcern for their welfare. Mr. Willey's address was favorably received, and the whole matter regarding the admission of West Virginia was laid before the committee on territories, of which Senator John S. Carlisle was a member. It had not at that time been suspected that Carlisle was hostile to the movement. He was expected to prepare the bill. He neglected



to do so until nearly a month had passed and the session of congress was drawing to a close. But it was not so much the delay that showed his hostility as the form of the bill. Had it been passed by congress in the form proposed by Carlisle the defeat of the new state measure must have been inevitable. No one acquainted with the circumstances and conditions had any doubt that the bill was prepared for the express purpose of defeating the wishes of the people by whom Mr. Carlisle had been sent to the senate. It included in West Virginia, in addition to the counties which had ratified the constitution, Alleghany, Augusta, Berkeley, Bath, Botetourt, Craig, Clark, Frederick, Highland, Jefferson, Page, Rockbridge, Rockingham, Shenandoah and Warren counties. The hostility in most of these counties was very great. The bill provided that these counties, in conjunction with those west of the Alleghanies, should elect delegates to a constitutional convention and frame a constitution which should provide that all children born of slaves after 1863 should be free. This constitution was then to go back to the people of the several counties for ratification. Then, if the Virginia legislature should pass an act giving its consent to the creation of a new state from Virginia's territory, and the governor of Virginia certify the same to the president of the United States, he might make proclamation of the fact, and West Virginia would become a state without further proceedings by congress.

Senator Carlisle knew that the counties he had added east of the Alleghanies were opposed to the new state on any terms, and that they would oppose it the more determinedly on account of the gradual emancipation clause in it. He knew that they would not appoint delegates to a constitutional convention, nor would they ratify the constitution should one be submitted to them. In short, they were strong enough in votes and sentiment to defeat the movement for a new state. All the work done for the



creation of West Virginia would have been thrown away had this bill prevailed.

Three days later, June 26, the bill was called up, and Charles Sumner proposed an amendment regarding slavery. He would have no slavery at all. All indications were that the bill would defeat the measure for the new state, and preparations were made to begin the fight in a new quarter. Congressman William G. Brown of Preston county, proposed a new bill to be presented in the lower house. But the contest went on. In July Senator Willey submitted an amendment, which was really a new bill. It omitted the counties east of the Alleghanies, and provided that all slaves under twenty-one years of age on July 4, 1863, should be free on arriving at that age. It now became apparent to Carlisle that his bill was dead, and that West Virginia was likely to be admitted. As a last resort, he proposed a postponement till December, in order to gain time, but his motion was lost. Carlisle then opposed the bill on the grounds that if passed, it would impose upon the people of the new state a clause of the constitution not of their making and which they had not ratified. But this argument was deprived of its force by offering to submit the proposed amendment to the people of West Virginia for their approval. Fortunately the constitutional convention had adjourned subject to the call of the chair. The members were convened; they included the amendment in the constitution, and the people approved it. However, before this was done, the bill took its course through congress. It passed the senate July 14, 1862, and was immediately sent to the lower house. But congress being about to adjourn, further consideration of the bill went over till the next session in December, 1862, and on the tenth of that month it was taken up in the house of representatives and after a discussion continuing most of the day, it was passed by a vote of ninety-six to fifty-five.

The friends of the new state now felt that their efforts



had been successful; but one more step was necessary, and the whole work might yet be rendered null and void. It depended on President Lincoln. He might veto the bill. He requested the opinion of his cabinet. Six of the cabinet officers complied, and three favored signing the bill and three advised the president to veto it. Mr. Lincoln took it under advisement. It was believed that he favored the bill, but there was much anxiety felt. Nearly two years before Mr. Lincoln, through one of his cabinet officers, had promised Governor Pierpont to do all he could, in a constitutional way, for the reorganized government of Virginia; and that promise was construed to mean that the new state would not be opposed by the president. Mr. Lincoln was evidently undecided for some time what course to pursue, for he afterwards said that a telegram received by him from A. W. Campbell, editor of the *Wheeling Intelligencer*, largely influenced him in deciding to sign the bill. On December 31, 1862, Congressman Jacob B. Blair called on the president to see if any action had been taken by the executive. The bill had not yet been signed, but Mr. Lincoln asked Mr. Blair to come back the next day. Mr. Blair did so, and was given the bill admitting West Virginia into the Union. It was signed January 1, 1863.

However, there was yet something to be done before West Virginia became a state. The bill passed by congress and signed by President Lincoln went no further than to provide that the new state should become a member of the Union when a clause concerning slavery, contained in the bill, should be made a part of the constitution and be ratified by the people. The convention which had framed the state constitution had adjourned to meet at the call of the chairman. The members came together on February 12, 1863. Two days later John S. Carlisle, who had refused to resign his seat in the senate when asked by the Virginia legislature to do so, made another effort to



defeat the will of the people whom he was sent to congress to represent. He presented a supplementary bill in the senate providing that President Lincoln's proclamation admitting West Virginia be withheld until certain counties of West Virginia had ratified by their votes the clause regarding slavery contained in the bill. Mr. Carlisle believed that those counties would not ratify the constitution. But his bill was defeated in the senate by a vote of 28 to 12.

The clause concerning slavery, as adopted by the constitutional convention on reassembling at Wheeling, was in these words: "The children of slaves, born within the limits of this state after the fourth day of July, 1863, shall be free, and all slaves within the said state who shall, at the time aforesaid, be under the age of ten years, shall be free when they arrive at the age of twenty-one years; and all slaves over ten and under twenty-one years, shall be free when they arrive at the age of twenty-five years; and no slave shall be permitted to come into the state for permanent residence therein." The people ratified the constitution at an election held for that purpose. The majority in favor of ratification was seventeen thousand.

President Lincoln issued his proclamation April 20, 1863, and sixty days thereafter, that is June 20, 1863, West Virginia was to become a state without further legislation. In the meantime, May 9, a state convention assembled in Parkersburg to nominate officers. A confederate force under General Jones advanced within forty miles of Parkersburg, and the convention hurried through with its labors and adjourned. It nominated Arthur I. Boreman of Wood county for governor; Campbell Tarr of Brooke county for treasurer; Samuel Crane of Randolph county for auditor; Edgar J. Boyers of Tyler county, for secretary of state; A. B. Caldwell of Ohio county, attorney general; for judges of the supreme court of appeals, Ralph L. Berkshire of Monongalia county, James H. Erown of



Kanawha county, William A. Harrison of Harrison county. These were all elected late in the month of May, and on June 20, 1863, took the oath of office and West Virginia was a state. Thus was fulfilled the prophecy of Daniel Webster in 1851 when he said that, if Virginia took sides with a secession movement, the result would be the formation of a new state from Virginia's transallegany territory.

The creation of the new state of West Virginia did not put an end to the reorganized government of Virginia. The officers who had held their seat of government at Wheeling, moved to Alexandria, and in 1865, moved to Richmond where they held office until their successors were elected. Governor Pierpont filled the gubernatorial chair of Virginia about seven years.



## CHAPTER XII



### ORGANIZING FOR WAR.

In a work of this sort it should not be expected that a full account of the civil war, as it affected West Virginia, will be given. It must suffice to present only an outline of events as they occurred in that great struggle, nor is any pretence made that this outline shall be complete. In dealing with the military operations within the particular county under consideration, no effort has been spared to make the account as complete as possible; but, for the state at large, as the events concerned all the counties in general, only a synopsis can be given. Elsewhere in this volume will be found a narrative of the events leading to and culminating in the passage of the ordinance of secession; the formation of the provisional government of Virginia, and the creation of the new state of West Virginia and its admission into the Union. The vote on the ordinance of secession showed that a large majority of the people in this state were opposed to a separation from the United States. This vote, while it could not have been much of a surprise to the politicians in the eastern part of Virginia, was a disappointment. It did not prevent Virginia, as a state, from joining the Southern Confederacy; but the result made it plain that Virginia was divided against itself, and that all the part west of the Alleghany mountains, and much of that west of the Blue Ridge, would not take up arms against the general government in furtherance of the interests of the Southern Confederacy,

It, therefore, became necessary for Virginia, backed by the other southern states, to conquer its own transmon-



tane territory. The commencement of the war in what is now West Virginia was due to an invasion by troops in the service of the Southern Confederacy, in an effort to hold the territory as a part of Virginia. It should not be understood, however, that there was no sympathy with the south in this state. As nearly as can be estimated, the number who took sides with the south, in proportion to those who upheld the union, was as one to six. The people generally were left to choose. Efforts were made at the same time to raise soldiers for the south and for the north, and those who did not want to go one way were at liberty to go the other. In the eastern part of the state considerable success was met in enlisting volunteers for the confederacy; but in the western counties there were hardly any who went south. That the government at Richmond felt the disappointment keenly is evidenced by the efforts put forth to organize companies of volunteers, and the discouraging reports of the recruiting officers.

Robert E. Lee was appointed commander-in-chief of the military and naval forces of Virginia, April 23, 1861; and on the same day he wrote to Governor Letcher accepting the office. Six days later he wrote Major A. Loring at Wheeling, urging him to muster into the service of the state all the volunteer companies in that vicinity, and to take command of them. Loring was asked to report what success attended his efforts. On the same day Lieutenant-Colonel John McCausland, at Richmond, received orders from General Lee to proceed at once to the Kanawha valley and muster into service the volunteer companies in that quarter. General Lee named four companies already formed, two in Kanawha and two in Putnam counties, and he expressed the belief that others would offer their services. McCausland was instructed to organize a company of artillery in the Kanawha valley. On the next day, April 30, General Lee wrote to Major Boykin at Weston, in Lewis county, ordering him to muster in the the volunteer com-



panies in that part of the state, and to ascertain how many volunteers could be raised in the vicinity of Parkersburg. General Lee stated in the letter that he had sent two hundred flint lock muskets to Colonel Jackson (Stonewall) at Harper's Ferry, for the use of the volunteers about Weston. He said no better guns could be had at that time. The next day, May 1, Governor Letcher announced that arrangements had been made for calling out fifty thousand Virginia volunteers, to assemble at Norfolk, Richmond, Alexandria, Fredericksburg, Harper's Ferry, Grafton, Parkersburg, Kanawha, and Moundsville. On May 4, General Lee ordered Colonel George A. Porterfield to Grafton to take charge of the troops in that quarter, those already in service and those who were expected to volunteer. Colonel Porterfield was ordered, by authority of the governor of Virginia, to call out the volunteers in the counties of Wood, Wirt, Roane, Calhoun, Gilmer, Ritchie, Pleasants and Doddridge, to rendezvous at Parkersburg; and in the counties of Braxton, Lewis, Harrison, Monongalia, Taylor, Barbour, Upshur, Tucker, Marion, Randolph and Preston, to rendezvous at Grafton. General Lee said he did not know how many men could be enlisted, but he supposed five regiments could be mustered into service in that part of the state.

In these orders sent out, General Lee expressed a desire to be kept informed of the success attending the call for volunteers. Replies soon began to arrive at Richmond, and they were uniformly discouraging to General Lee and the officers of the Southern Confederacy. It was very soon apparent that the people of Western Virginia were not tumbling over one another in their eagerness to take up arms for the Southern Confederacy. Major Boykin wrote General Lee that the call for volunteers was not meeting with success. To this letter General Lee replied on May 11, and urged Major Boykin to persevere, and call out the companies for such counties as were not so hostile to the



south, and to concentrate them at Grafton. He stated that four hundred rifles had been forwarded from Staunton to Beverly, in Randolph county, where Major Goff would receive and hold them until further orders. It appears that Major Boykin had requested that companies from other parts of the state be sent to Grafton to take the places of companies which had been counted upon to organize in the vicinity of Grafton, but which had failed to materialize. To this suggestion General Lee replied that he did not consider it advisable to do so; as the presence of outside companies at Grafton would tend to irritate the people, instead of conciliating them.

On May 16 Colonel Porterfield had arrived at Grafton and had taken a hasty survey of the situation, and his conclusion was that the cause of the Southern Confederacy in that vicinity was not promising. On that day he made a report to R. S. Garnett, at Richmond, adjutant general of the Virginia army, and stated that the rifles ordered to Beverly from Staunton had not arrived, nor had they been heard from. It appears from this report that no volunteers had yet assembled at Grafton; but Colonel Porterfield said a company was organizing at Pruntytown, in Taylor county; one at Weston, under Captain Boggess; one at Philippi, another at Clarksburg, and still another at Fairmont. Only two of these companies had guns, flintlocks, and no ammunition. At that time all of these companies had been ordered to Grafton. Colonel Porterfield said, in a tone of discouragement, that these companies, almost destitute of guns and ammunition, were all he had to depend upon, and he considered the force very weak compared with the strength of those in that vicinity who were prepared to oppose him. He said he had found much diversity of opinion and "rebellion" among the people, who did not believe that the state was strong enough to contend against the general government. "I am, too, credibly informed," said he, "to entertain doubt that they



have been and will be supplied with the means of resistance. \* \* \* \* Their efforts to intimidate have had their effect, both to dishearten one party and to encourage the other. Many good citizens have been dispirited, while traitors have seized the guns and ammunition of the state to be used against its authority. The force in this section will need the best rifles. \* \* \* \* There will not be the same use for the bayonet in these hills as elsewhere, and the movements should be of light infantry and rifle, although the bayonet, of course, would be desirable."

About this time, that is, near the middle of May, 1861, General Lee ordered one thousand muskets sent to Beverly for the use of the volunteer companies organizing to the northward of that place. Colonel Heck was sent in charge of the guns, and General Lee instructed him to call out all the volunteers possible along the route from Staunton to Beverly. If the authorities at Richmond had learned by the middle of May that Western Virginia was not to be depended upon for filling with volunteers the ranks of the southern armies, the truth was still more apparent six weeks later. By that time General Garnett had crossed the Alleghanies in person, and had brought a large force of confederate troops with him and was entrenched at Laurel Hill and Rich Mountain, near Beverly. It had been claimed that volunteers had not joined the confederate companies because they were afraid to do so in the face of the stronger union companies organizing in the vicinity, but if a confederate army were in the country to overawe the advocates of the union cause, then large numbers of recruits would organize to help the south. Thus Garnett marched over the Alleghanies and called for volunteers. The result was deeply mortifying to him as well as discouraging to the authorities at Richmond. On June 25, 1861, he wrote to General Lee, dating his letter at Laurel Hill, between Beverly and Philippi. He complained that he could not find out what the movements of the union forces were



likely to be, and added that the union men in that vicinity were much more active, numerous and zealous than the secessionists. He said it was like carrying on a campaign in a foreign country, as the people were nearly all against him, and never missed an opportunity to divulge his movements to McClellan, but would give him no information of what McClellan was doing. "My hope," he wrote to Lee, "of increasing my force in this region has, so far, been sadly disappointed. Only eight men have joined me here, and only fifteen at Colonel Heck's camp—not enough to make up my losses by discharges. The people are thoroughly imbued with an ignorant and bigoted union sentiment."

If more time was required to ascertain the sentiment in the Kanawha valley than had been necessary in the northern and eastern part of the state, it was nevertheless seen in due time that the Southern Confederacy's supporters in that quarter were in a hopeless minority. General Henry A. Wise, ex-governor of Virginia, had been sent into the Kanawha valley early in 1861 to organize such forces as could be mustered for the southern army. He was one of the most fiery leaders in the Southern Confederacy, and an able man, and of great influence. He had, perhaps, done more than any other man in Virginia to swing that state into the Southern Confederacy. He it was, when the ordinance of secession was in the balance in the Richmond convention, rose in the convention, drew a horsepistol from his bosom, placed it upon the desk before him, and proceeded to make one of the most impassioned speeches ever heard anywhere. The effect of his speech was tremendous, and Virginia wheeled into line with the other confederate states. General Wise hurried to the field, and was soon in the thick of the fight in the Kanawha valley. He failed to organize an army there, and in his disappointment and anger he wrote to General Lee, August 1, 1861 saying: "The Kanawha valley is wholly



disaffected and traitorous. It was gone from Charleston to Point Pleasant before I got there. Boone and Cabell are nearly as bad, and the state of things in Braxton, Nicholas and part of Greenbrier is awful. The militia are nothing for warlike uses here. They are worthless who are true, and there is no telling who is true. You cannot persuade these people that Virginia can or will reconquer the northwest, and they are submitting, subdued and debased." General Wise made an urgent request for more guns, ammunition and clothing.

It may be stated as a matter of history that one of the first companies to uphold the cause of the Southern Confederacy in this state, was at Clarksburg, under the captaincy of Uriel M. Turner. It was organized in January, 1861, and at the fight at Philippi contained one hundred men. This company killed the first union soldier in the state, at Fetterman, Taylor county, May 24, 1861. It was in the whole war; fought in more than thirty hard battles; and of the one hundred men who received their baptism of fire at Philippi in 1861, only six surrendered at Appomattox in 1865. The town of Clarksburg contributed more toward the success of the south than any town in the whole country, in proportion to size. Not only did it furnish Stonewall Jackson, but it gave the confederacy twenty-six other officers, of lower rank. It may be said that Clarksburg was the war center of West Virginia. The strongest advocates of the union, and the most zealous adherents of the south came from that town and vicinity.

While the confederates were doing their utmost to organize and equip forces in Western Virginia, and were meeting discouragements and failure nearly everywhere; the people who upheld the union were also at work, and success was the rule and failure almost unknown. As soon as the fact was realized that Virginia had joined the Southern Confederacy; had seized upon the government arsenals and other property within the state, and had



commenced war upon the government, and was preparing to continue the hostilities, the people of Western Virginia, who had long suffered from the injustice and oppression of the eastern part of the state, began to prepare for war. They did not long halt between two opinions, but at once espoused the cause of the United States. Companies were organized everywhere. The spirit with which the cause of the union was upheld was one of the most discouraging features of the situation, as viewed by the confederates who were vainly trying to raise troops in this part of the state. The people in the Kanawha valley who told General Wise that they did not believe Virginia could reconquer Western Virginia, had reasons for their conclusions. The people along the Ohio, the Kanawha, the Monongahela; in the interior, among the mountains, were everywhere drilling and arming. Sometimes a company was organizing for the confederate service and one for the union service in the same vicinity at the same time. Occasionally there were collisions; usually not. This was particularly the case early in the war. At Clarksburg in May, 1861, a company had drilled and armed for the confederate service, and was about to take the field. A union company was also organizing and drilling there, and they occupied the court house night about with the confederates. Finally, however, as the war grew more furious in the east, the two Clarksburg companies could not occupy the same town without collision. The union company was the stronger, and compelled the confederates to surrender their arms. But on the next day the arms were restored to them on condition that they would leave the town at once. They did so, and marched to Grafton. This is the company above spoken of which surrendered the six men at Appomattox.

There was some delay and disappointment in securing arms for the union troops as they were organized in West Virginia. Early in the war, while there was yet hope en-



tertaincd by some that the trouble could be adjusted without much fighting, there was hesitation on the part of the government about sending guns into Virginia to arm one class of the people. Consequently, some of the first arms received in Western Virginia did not come directly from the government arsenals, but were sent from Massachusetts. As early as May 7, 1861, a shipment of two thousand stands of arms was made from the Watervleit arsenal, New York, to the northern panhandle of West Virginia, above Wheeling. These guns armed some of the first soldiers from West Virginia that took the field. An effort had been made to obtain arms from Pittsburg, but it was unsuccessful. Campbell Tarr, of Brooke county, and others, went to Washington as a committee, and it was through their efforts that the guns were obtained. The government officials were very cautious at that time lest they should do something without express warranty in law. But Edwin M. Stanton advised that the guns be sent, promising that he would find the law for it afterwards. Governor Pierpont had written to President Lincoln for help, and the reply had been that all help that could be given under the constitution would be furnished.



## CHAPTER XIII.



### COLONEL PORTERFIELD'S RETREAT.

It has been seen what success attended the efforts of the Southern Confederacy to beat up recruits in West Virginia. It has also been pointed out what other purpose prompted the early occupation of this state by the southern forces. It now remains to relate the first clash of arms west of the Alleghanies. Colonel Porterfield at Grafton was doing all in his power to collect a rebel army at that point, and was sending urgent appeals to Richmond for arms and ammunition, when the government of the United States set in motion its army recently organized in Ohio and Indiana. Up to this time, May, 1861, no heavy fighting had been done, and the war had only commenced. A synopsis of the chief events up to that time will show that the occupation of West Virginia by McClellan's army was the principal movement made by the government up to that time.

April 17, 1861, ordinance of secession adopted by the Richmond convention.

April 18, United States armory at Harper's Ferry seized by the confederates, after having been set on fire and abandoned by the union troops.

April, 19, A mob in Baltimore attacked union troops on their way to the defense of Washington.

April 20, General Butler's command arrived at Annapolis, ready to march upon Baltimore.

April 23, General Robert E. Lee was appointed to the command of the land and naval forces of Virginia.

April 27, Stonewall Jackson, of Clarksburg, was sent to



## COLONEL PORTERFIELD'S RETREAT. 167

Harper's Ferry to command the Virginia troops in that vicinity.

May 1, The governor of Virginia called for volunteers to make war upon the United States.

May 3, An additional call for volunteers was made by the governor of Virginia, and sent to all the commanding officers in Western Virginia.

May 4, Colonel G. A. Porterfield was assigned to the command of the state forces in northwestern Virginia, by the government at Richmond.

May 5, The Virginia troops abandoned Alexandria.

May 9. Fight between the confederate batteries of Gloucester point, Virginia, and the United States steamer "Yankee."

May 13, General Butler and United States troops occupied Baltimore.

May 13, General McClellan was appointed to the command of the Ohio, including West Virginia.

May 14, Seizure of a train of cars at Harper's Ferry by the Virginia troops.

May 15. General Joseph E. Johnston, of the confederate army, appointed to the command of the troops near Harper's Ferry.

May 18, Fight at Sewell's Point.

May 24, United States troops crossed the Potomac near Washington and took possession of Alexandria and Arlington Heights.

May 26 to 30, Colonel Kelley with troops from Wheeling, and McClellan's army from Ohio and Indiana moved upon Grafton.

The first order from McClellan to Kelley was, that he should fortify the hills about Wheeling. This was on May 26, 1861. This appears to have been thought necessary as a precaution against an advance on the part of the confederates; but McClellan did not know how weak they were in West Virginia at that time. Colonel Porterfield



could not get together men and ammunition enough to encourage him to hold Grafton, much less to advance to the Ohio river. It is true that on the day that Virginia passed the ordinance of secession, Governor Letcher made an effort to hold Wheeling, but it signally failed. He wrote to Mayor Sweeney of that city to seize the post office, the custom house, and all government property in that city, hold them in the name of the state of Virginia. Mayor Sweeney replied: "I have seized upon the custom house, the post office and all public buildings and documents, in the name of Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States, whose property they are."

Colonel Kelley, when he received the order to fortify the hills about Wheeling, replied that he did not believe such a step was necessary, but that the proper thing to do was to advance to Grafton and drive the rebels out of the country. McClellan accepted the suggestion, and ordered Kelley to move to Grafton with the force under his orders. These troops had enlisted at Wheeling and had been drilled for service. They were armed with guns sent from Massachusetts. They carried their ammunition in their pockets, as they had not yet been fully equipped with the accoutrements of war. They were full of enthusiasm, and were much gratified when the orders came for an advance. While Kelley's troops were setting out from Wheeling an independent movement was in progress at Morgantown to drive the confederates out of Grafton. A number of companies had been organized on the Monongahela, and they assembled at Morgantown, where they were joined by three companies from Pennsylvania, and were about to set out for Grafton on their own responsibility, to drive Colonel Porterfield out, when they learned that Colonel Kelley had already advanced from Wheeling, and that the confederates had retreated. Colonel Porterfield learned of the advance from Wheeling and saw that he would be attacked before his looked-for reinforcements and arms could arrive.



The poorly-equipped force under his command would be unable to successfully resist an attack, and he prepared to retreat southward. He ordered two railroad bridges burned, between Fairmont and Mannington, hoping thereby to delay the arrival of the Wheeling troops.

At daybreak on May 27 Colonel Kelley's troops left Wheeling on board the cars for Grafton. When they reached Mannington they stopped long enough to rebuild the burnt bridges, which delayed them only a short time. While there Kelley received a telegram from McClellan informing him that troops from Ohio and Indiana were on their way to his assistance. When the Wheeling troops reached Grafton the town had been deserted by the confederates, who had retreated to Philippi, about twenty-five miles south of Grafton. Colonel Kelley at once planned pursuit. On June 1 a considerable number of soldiers from Ohio and Indiana had arrived. Colonel R. H. Milroy, Colonel Irvine and General Thomas A. Morris were in command of the troops from beyond the Ohio. They were the van of General McClellan's advance into West Virginia. When General Morris arrived at Grafton he assumed command of all the forces in that vicinity. Colonel Kelley's plan of pursuit of Colonel Porterfield was laid before General Morris and was approved by him, and preparations were immediately commenced for carrying it into execution. It appears that Colonel Porterfield did not expect pursuit. He had established his camp at Philippi and was waiting for reinforcements and supplies which failed to arrive. Since assuming command of the confederate forces in West Virginia he had met one disappointment after another. He had come to fill a want not extensively felt by the people of that part of the state. His force at Philippi was stated at the time to number two thousand, but it is not believed to have been so large. General Morris and Colonel Kelley prepared to attack him with three



thousand men, advancing at night by two routes to fall upon him by surprise.

Colonel Kelley was to march about six miles east from Grafton on the morning of June 2, and from that point march across the mountains during the afternoon and night, and so regulate his movements as to reach Philippi at four o'clock the next morning. Colonel Dumont, who had charge of the other column, was ordered to repair to Webster, a small town on the Parkersburg branch of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, four miles west from Grafton, and to march from that point toward Philippi so that he would appear before the town exactly at four o'clock on the morning of June 3. Colonel Kelley's task was the more difficult, for he followed roads that were very **poor**. General Morris suspected that spies in and about Grafton would discover the movement and would carry the news to Colonel Porterfield at Philippi, and that he would hurriedly retreat, either toward Beverly or eastward to St. George, on Cheat river. Colonel Kelley was therefore ordered, in case he received positive intelligence that the rebels had retreated eastward, to follow as fast as possible and endeavor to intercept them; at the same time he was to notify Colonel Dumont of the retreat of the enemy and of the movement to intercept them.

Colonel Kelley left Grafton in the morning. It was generally supposed he was on his way to Harper's Ferry. Colonel Dumont's column left Grafton after dark on the evening of June 2. The march that night was through rain and in pitch darkness. This delayed Dumont's division, and it seemed that it would not be able to reach Philippi by the appointed time; but the men marched the last five miles in an hour and a quarter, and so well was everything managed that Kelley's and Dumont's forces arrived before Philippi within fifteen minutes of each other. The confederates had not learned of the advance and were off their guard. The pickets fired a few



shots and fled. The union artillery opened on the camp and the utmost confusion prevailed. Colonel Porterfield ordered a retreat, and succeeded in saving the most of his men, but lost a considerable portion of the small supply of arms he had. He abandoned his camp and stores. This action was called the "Philippi Races," because of the haste with which the confederates fled and the union forces pursued. Colonel Kelley while leading the pursuit was shot through the breast and was supposed to be mortally wounded, but he subsequently recovered and took an active part in the war until near its close, when he and General Crook were surprised and taken prisoner at Cumberland, Maryland. General McClellan, who had not yet crossed the Ohio, was much encouraged by this victory, small as it appears in comparison with the momentous events later in the war. The loyal people of West Virginia were also much encouraged, and the southern sympathizers were correspondingly depressed.

Colonel Porterfield's cup of disappointment was full when, five days after his retreat from Philippi, he learned that he had been superseded by General Robert S. Garnett, who was on his way from Richmond to assume command of the confederate forces in West Virginia. Colonel Porterfield had retreated to Huttonville, in Randolph county, above Beverly, and there turned his command over to his successor. A court of inquiry was held to examine Colonel Porterfield's conduct. He was censured by the Richmond people who had sent him into West Virginia, had neglected him, had failed to supply him with arms or the adequate means of defense, and when he suffered defeat, they threw the blame on him when the most of it belonged to themselves. Little more than one month elapsed from that time before the confederate authorities had occasion to understand more fully the situation beyond the Alleghanies; and the general who took Colonel Porterfield's place, with seven or eight times his force of men and arms,



conducted a far more disastrous retreat, and was killed while bringing off his broken troops from a lost battle.

Previous to General McClellan's coming into West Virginia, he issued a proclamation to the people, in which he stated the purpose of his coming, and why troops were about to be sent across the Ohio river. This proclamation was written in Cincinnati, May 26, 1861, and sent by telegraph to Wheeling and Parkersburg, there to be printed and circulated. The people were told that the army was about to cross the Ohio as friends to all who were loyal to the government of the United States; to prevent the destruction of property by the rebels; to preserve order; to cooperate with loyal Virginians in their efforts to free the state from the confederates; and to punish all attempts at insurrection among slaves, should they rise against their masters. This last statement was no doubt meant to allay the fears of many that as soon as a union army was upon the soil, there would be a slave insurrection, which, of all things, was most dreaded by those who lived among slaves. On the same day General McClellan issued an address to his soldiers, informing them that they were about to cross the Ohio, and acquainting them with the duties to be performed. He told them they were to act in concert with the loyal Virginians in putting down the rebellion. He enjoined the strictest discipline and warned them against interfering with the rights or property of the loyal Virginians. He called on them to show mercy to those captured in arms, for many of them were misguided. He stated that, when the confederates had been driven from northwestern Virginia, the loyal people of that part of the state would be able to organize and arm, and would be competent to take care of themselves; and then the services of the troops from Ohio and Indiana would be no longer needed, and they could return to their homes. He little understood what the next four years would bring forth.

Three weeks had not elapsed after Colonel Porterfield



retreated from Philippi before General McClellan saw that something more was necessary before Western Virginia would be pacified. The confederates had been largely reinforced at Huttonville, and had advanced northward within twelve miles of Philippi and had fortified their camp. Philippi was at that time occupied by General Morris, and a collision between his forces and those of the confederates was likely to occur at any time. General McClellan thought it advisable to be nearer the scene of operations, and on June 22, 1861, he crossed the Ohio with his staff and proceeded to Grafton where he established his headquarters. He had at this time about twenty thousand soldiers in West Virginia, stationed from Wheeling to Grafton, from Parkersburg to the same place, and in the country round about.



## CHAPTER XIV.

—«0»—

### GENERAL GARNETT'S RETREAT.

Colonel Porterfield was relieved of his command by General Garnett, June 14, 1861, and the military affairs of northwestern Virginia were looked after by Garnett in person. The Richmond government and the Southern Confederacy had no intention of abandoning the country beyond the Alleghanies. On the contrary, it was resolved to hold it at all hazards; but subsequent events showed that the confederates either greatly underestimated the strength of McClellan's army, or greatly overestimated the strength of their own forces sent against him. Otherwise, Garnett, with a force of only eight thousand, would not have been pushed forward against the lines of an army of twenty thousand; and that, too, in a position so remote that Garnett was practically isolated from all assistance from the south and east. Reinforcements numbering about two thousand men were on the way from Staunton to Beverly, at the time of Garnett's defeat; but had these troops reached him in time to be of service, he would still have had only half as large a force as that of McClellan opposed to him. Military men have severely criticised General Lee for what they regard as a blunder in thus sending an army to almost certain destruction, with little hope of performing any service to the confederacy.

Had the confederates been able to hold the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, the disaster attending General Garnett's campaign would probably not have occurred. With that road in their hands, they could have thrown soldiers and supplies into Grafton and Clarksburg within ten hours



from Harper's Ferry. They would thus have had quick communication with their base of supplies, and an open way to fall back when compelled to do so. But they did not hold the Baltimore and Ohio road, and their only practicable route into western Virginia, north of the Kanawha was by wagon roads across the Alleghanies, by way of the Valley of Virginia. This was a long and difficult route by which to transport supplies for an army; and in case that army was compelled to retreat, the line of retreat was liable to be cut by the enemy, as it actually was in the case of Garnett.

On July 1, 1861. General Garnett had about four thousand five hundred men. The most of them were from eastern Virginia and the states further south. A considerable part of them were Georgians who had recently been stationed at Pensacola, Florida. Reinforcements were constantly arriving over the Alleghanies, and by July 10, he had eight thousand men. He moved northward and westward from Beverly and fortified two points on Laurel hill, one named Camp Rich Mountain, five miles west of Beverly, the other fifteen miles north by west, near Belington, in Barbour county. These positions were naturally strong, and their strength was increased by fortifications of logs and stones. They were only a few miles from the outposts of McClellan's army. Had the confederate positions been attacked from the front, it is probable that they could have held out a considerable time. But, there was little in the way of flank movements, and when McClellan made his attack, it was by flanking. General Garnett was not a novice in the field. He had seen service in the Mexican war; had taken part in many of the hardest battles; had fought Indians three years on the Pacific coast, and at the outbreak of the civil war he was traveling in Europe. He hastened home; resigned his position in the United States army, and joined the confederate army, and was almost immediately sent into West Virginia to be sacrificed.



While the confederates were fortifying their positions in Randolph and Barbour counties, the union forces were not idle. On June 22 General McClellan crossed the Ohio river at Parkersburg. The next day at Grafton he issued two proclamations, one to the citizens of West Virginia, the other to his soldiers. To the citizens he gave assurance again that he came as a friend, to uphold the laws, to protect the lawabiding, and to punish those in rebellion against the government. In the proclamation to his soldiers he told them that he had entered West Virginia to bring peace to the peaceable and the sword to the rebellious who were in arms; but mercy to disarmed rebels. He soon began to concentrate his forces for an attack on Garnett. He moved his headquarters to Buckhannon on July 2, to be near the center of operations. Clarksburg was his base of supplies, and he constructed a telegraph line as he advanced, one of the first, if not the very first military telegraph line in America. From Buckhannon he could move in any desired direction by good roads. He had fortified posts at Webster, Clarksburg, Parkersburg and Grafton. Eight days later he had moved his headquarters to Middle Fork, between Buckhannon and Beverly, and in the meantime his forces had made a general advance. He was now within sight of the confederate fortifications on Rich mountain. General Morris, who was leading the advance against Laurel Hill, was also within sight of the confederates. There had already been some skirmishing, and all believed that the time was near when a battle would be fought. Lieutenant John Pegram, with thirteen hundred confederates, was in command at Rich Mountain; and at Laurel Hill General Garnett, with between four thousand and five thousand men, was in command. There were about two thousand more confederates at various points within a few miles.

After examining the ground McClellan decided to make the first attack on the Rich Mountain works, but in order



to divert attention from his real purpose, he ordered General Morris, who was in front of General Garnett's position, to bombard the confederates at Laurel Hill. Accordingly shells were thrown in the direction of the confederate works, some of which exploded within the lines, but doing little damage. On the afternoon of July 10 General McClellan prepared to attack Pegram at Rich Mountain, but upon examination of the approaches he saw that an attack in front would probably be unsuccessful. General Rosecrans, who was in charge of one wing of the forces in front of the confederate position, met a young man named Hart, whose father lived two miles in the rear of the rebel fortifications, and he said he could pilot a force, by an obscure road, round the southern end of the confederate lines and reach his father's farm, from which an attack on Pegram in the rear could be made. The young man was taken to General McClellan and consented to act as a guide. Thereupon General McClellan changed his plan from attacking in front to an attack in the rear. He moved a portion of his forces to the western face of Rich Mountain, ready to support the attack when made, and he then dispatched General Rosecrans, under the guidance of young Hart, by the circuitous route, to the rear of the confederates. General Rosecrans reached his destination and sent a messenger to inform General McClellan of the fact, and that all was in readiness for the attack. This messenger was captured by the confederates, and Pegram learned of the new danger which threatened him, while McClellan was left in doubt whether his troops had been able to reach the point for which they had started. Had it not been for this perhaps the fighting the next day would have resulted in the capture of the confederates.

Colonel Pegram, finding that he was to be attacked from the rear, sent three hundred and fifty men to the point of danger, and built the best breastworks possible in the short time at his disposal. When Rosecrans advanced to



the attack he was stubbornly resisted, and the fight continued two or three hours, and neither side could gain any advantage. Pegram was sending down reinforcements from the mountain when the union forces made a charge, and swept the confederates from the field. Colonel Pegram went up the mountain and collected several companies and prepared to renew the attack. It was now late in the afternoon of July 11. The men were panic stricken, but they moved forward, and were led around the mountain within musket range of the union forces that had remained on the battle ground. But the confederates became alarmed and fled without making an attack. Their forces were scattered all over the mountain, and night was coming on. Colonel Pegram saw that all was lost, and determined to make his way to Garnett's army, if possible, about fifteen miles distant, through the woods. He commenced collecting his men and sending them forward. It was after midnight when he left the camp on the summit of Rich mountain, and set forward with the last remnants of his men in an effort to reach the confederate forces on Laurel Hill. The loss of the confederates in the battle had been about forty-five killed and about twenty wounded. All their baggage and artillery fell into the hands of the union army. Sixty-three confederates were captured. Rosecrans lost twelve killed and forty-nine wounded.

The retreat from Rich mountain was disastrous. The confederates were eighteen hours in groping their way twelve miles through the woods in the direction of Garnett's camp. Near sunset on July 12, they reached the Tygart river, three miles from the Laurel Hill camp, and there learned from the citizens that Garnett had already retreated and that the union forces were in hot pursuit. There seemed only one possible avenue of escape open for Pegram's force. That was a miserable road leading across the mountains into Pendleton county. Few persons lived near the road, and the outlook was that the men would



starve to death if they attempted to make their way through. They were already starving. Accordingly, Colonel Pegram that night sent a flag of truce to Beverly, offering to surrender, and at the same time stating that his men were starving. Early the next morning General McClellan sent several wagon loads of bread to them, and met them on their way to Beverly. The number of prisoners surrendered was thirty officers and five hundred and twenty-five men. The remainder of the force at Rich Mountain had been killed, wounded, captured and scattered.

It now remains to be told how General Garnett fared. The fact that he had posted the greater part of his army on Laurel Hill is proof that he expected the principal attack to be made on that place. He was for a time deceived by the bombardment directed against him, but he was undeceived by the sound of cannon at Rich Mountain, and later he learned that Colonel Pegram had been defeated, and that General McClellan had thrown troops across Rich Mountain and had successfully turned the flank of the confederate position. All that was left for Garnett was to withdraw his army while there was yet time. His line of retreat was the pike from Beverly to Staunton, and the union forces were pushing forward to occupy that and to cut him off in that direction. On the afternoon of July 12, 1861, Garnett retreated, hastening to reach Beverly in advance of the union forces. On the way he met fugitives from Pegram's army and was told by them that McClellan had already reached Beverly, and that the road in that direction was closed. Thereupon Garnett turned eastward into Tucker county, over a very rough road. It is now believed that the union forces had not reached Beverly at that time, and that Colonel Pegram's fugitives had mistaken retreating confederate cavalry for union troops. In Captain A. J. Smith's history of the 31st Virginia (confederate) regiment, it is stated that the reason why Garnett



turned eastward was because confederate cavalry had blockaded the Beverly pike. Whether this was the case or whether McClellan had reached Beverly, retreat in that direction had been cut off. General Morris pursued the retreating confederates over the mountain to Cheat river, skirmishing on the way. General Garnett remained in the rear directing his skirmishers; and on July 14, at Corrick's Ford, where Parsons, the county seat of Tucker county, has since been located, he found that he could no longer avoid giving battle. With a few hundred men he opened fire on the advance of the pursuing army and checked the pursuit. But in bringing off his skirmishers from behind a pile of driftwood, Garnett was killed and his men were seized with panic and fled, leaving his body on the field, with a score or more of dead.

Up to this point the retreat had been orderly, but it soon became a rout. The roads were narrow and rough, and the excessive rains had rendered them almost impassible. Wagons and stores were abandoned, and when Horse Shoe run, a long and narrow defile leading to the Red House, in Maryland, was reached information was received that union troops from Rowlesburg and Oakland were at the Red House, cutting off retreat in that direction. The artillery was sent to the front. A portion of the cavalry was piloted by a mountaineer along a narrow path across the Backbone and Alleghany mountains. The main body continued its retreat to the Red House. A union force had reached that point, but retreated as the confederate front came within hearing about two o'clock on the morning of July 15. The army pursued its way unmolested across the Alleghanies and proceeded to Monterey. Two regiments marching in haste to reinforce Garnett at Laurel Hill, had reached Monterey when news of Garnett's retreat was received. The regiments halted there, and as Garnett's stragglers came in they were reorganized.

The union army made no pursuit beyond Corrick's Ford,



except that detachments followed to the Red House to pick up the stores abandoned by the confederates. Garnett's body fell into the hands of the union forces and was prepared for burial and sent to Richmond. It was carried in a canoe to Rowlesburg, on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad thirty miles below, on Cheat river, in charge of Whitelaw Reid, who had taken part in the battle at Corrick's Ford. Reid was acting in the double capacity of correspondent for the Cincinnati Gazette and an aid on the staff of General Morris. When Rowlesburg was reached Garnett's body was sent by express to Governor Letcher, at Richmond.

This closed the campaign in that part of West Virginia for 1861. The confederates had failed to hold the country. On July 22 General McClellan was transferred to Washington to take charge of military operations there. In comparison with the greater battles and more extensive campaign later in the war, the affairs in West Virginia were small. But they were of great importance at the time. Had the result been different, had the rebels held their ground at Grafton, Philippi, Rich Mountain and Laurel Hill, and had the union forces been driven out of the state, across the Ohio, the outcome would have changed the history of the war, but probably not the result.



## CHAPTER XV.



### GENERAL LEE'S WEST VIRGINIA CAMPAIGN.

After Garnett's retreat in July, 1861, there were few confederates in West Virginia, west of the Alleghanies, except in the Kanawha valley. But the government at Richmond, and the confederate government, were not inclined to give up so easily the part of Virginia west of the mountains; and, in a short time, preparations were made to send an army from the east to reconquer the territory beyond the Alleghanies. A large part of the army with which McClellan had defeated Garnett had been sent to other fields; the terms of enlistment of many of the soldiers had expired. When the confederates crossed the mountains late in the summer of 1861 they were opposed by less than ten thousand federals stationed in that mountainous part of West Virginia about the sources of the Greenbrier, the Tygart Valley river, Cheat, and near the source of the Potomac. In that elevated and rugged region a remarkable campaign was made. It was not remarkable because of hard fighting, for there was no pitched battle; but because in this campaign the confederates were checked in their purpose of reconquering the ground lost by Garnett and of extending their conquest at least as far north and west as Clarksburg and Grafton. This campaign has also an historical interest because it was General Lee's first work in the field after he had been assigned the command of Virginia's land and sea forces. The outcome of the campaign was not what might be expected of a great and calculating general as Lee undoubtedly was. Although he had a larger army than his opponents in the field, and had at



least as good ground, and although he was able to hold his own at every skirmish, yet, as the campaign progressed he constantly fell back. In September he fought at Elk-water and Cheat Mountain, in Randolph county; in October he fought at Greenbrier river, having fallen back from his first position. In December he had fallen back to the summit of the Alleghanies, and fought a battle there. It may be stated, however, that General Lee, although in command of the army, took part in person only in the skirmishing in Randolph county. The importance of this campaign entitles it to mention somewhat more in detail.

General Reynolds succeeded General McClellan in command of this part of West Virginia. He advanced from Beverly to Huttonsville, a few miles above, and remained in peaceful possession of the country two months after Garnett's retreat, except that his scouting parties were constantly annoyed by confederate irregulars, or guerillas, usually called bushwhackers. Their mode of attack was, to lie concealed on the summits of cliffs, overhanging the roads, or in thickets on the hillsides, and fire upon the union soldiers passing below. They were justly dreaded by the union troops. These bushwhackers were usually citizens of that district who had taken to the woods after their well-known southern sympathies had rendered it unsafe or unpleasant to remain at home while the country was occupied by the union armies. They were excellent worksmen, minutely acquainted with all the ins and outs of the mountains and woods; and, from their manner of attack and flight, it was seldom that they were captured or killed. They hid about the outposts of the union armies; picked off sentinels; waylaid scouts; ambushed small detachments, and fled to their mountain fastnesses where pursuit was out of the question. A war is considered severe in loss of life in which each soldier, taken as an average, kills one soldier on the other side, even though the war is prolonged for years. Yet, these

•



bushwhackers often killed a dozen or more each, before being themselves killed; and, a case is recorded, in Pendleton county, in which a bushwhacker, named William Harper, was captured and shot after he had killed thirty-five union soldiers. It can be readily understood why small detachments dreaded bushwhackers more than confederate troops in pitched battle. Nor, did the bushwhackers confine their attacks to small parties. They often fired into the ranks of armies on the march with deadly effect. While in the mountains of West Virginia General Averell's cavalry often suffered severely from these hidden guerrillas who fired and vanished.

General Reynolds, with headquarters at Beverly, spent the summer of 1861 in strengthening his position, and in attempting to clear the country of guerrillas. Early in September he received information that large numbers of confederates were crossing the Alleghanies. General Loring established himself at Huntersville, in Pocahontas county, with eight thousand five hundred men. He it was who had tried in vain to raise recruits in West Virginia for the confederacy, even attempting to gain a foothold in Wheeling before McClellan's army crossed the Ohio river. He had gone to Richmond, and early in September had returned with an army. General H. R. Jackson was in command of another confederate force, six thousand strong, at Greenbrier river where the pike from Beverly to Staunton crosses that stream, in Pocahontas county. General Robert E. Lee was sent by the government at Richmond to take command of both these armies, and he lost no time in doing so. He concentrated his force at Big Spring, on Valley mountain, and prepared to march north to the Baltimore and Ohio road at Grafton. His design was nothing less than to drive the union army out of northwestern Virginia. When the matter is viewed in the light of subsequent history, it is to be wondered at that General Lee did not succeed in his purpose. He had nearly fifteen.



thousand men, and only nine thousand were opposed to him. Had he defeated General Reynolds; driven his army back; occupied Grafton, Clarksburg and other towns, it can be readily seen that the seat of war might have been changed to West Virginia. The United States government would have sent an army to oppose Lee; and the Confederate government would have pushed strong reinforcements across the mountains; and some of the great battles of the war might have been fought on the Monongahela river. The campaign in the fall of 1861, about the headwaters of the principal rivers of West Virginia, therefore, derives its chief interest, not from battles, but from the accomplishment of a great purpose—the driving back of the confederates—without a pitched battle. Virginia, as a state, made no determined effort after that to hold Western Virginia. By that time the campaign in the Kanawha valley was drawing to a close and the rebels were retiring. Consequently, Virginia's, and the Southern Confederacy's efforts west of the Alleghanies in this state were defeated in the fall of 1861.

On September 13, General Reynolds sent a regiment to Elkwater, and soon afterwards occupied Cheat Mountain. This point was the highest camp occupied by soldiers during the war. The celebrated "battle above the clouds," on Lookout Mountain, was not one-half so high. The whole region, including parts of Pocahontas, Pendleton and Randolph counties, has an elevation above three thousand feet, while the summits of the knobs and ridges rise to heights of more than four thousand, and some nearly five thousand feet. General Reynolds fortified his two advanced positions, Elkwater and Cheat Mountain. They were seven miles apart, connected by only a bridle path, but a circuitous wagon road, eighteen miles long, led from one to the other, passing around in the direction of Huttonsville. No sooner had the United States troops established themselves at Elkwater and Cheat Mountain than



General Lee advanced, and skirmishing began. The confederates threw a force between Elkwater and Cheat Mountain, and posted another force on the road in the direction of Huttonsville. They were attacked, and for three days there was skirmishing, but no general engagement. On September 13, Colonel John A. Washington, in the confederate service, was killed near Elkwater. He was a relative of President Washington, and also a relative of General R. E. Lee, whose family and the Washingtons were closely connected. General Lee sent a flag of truce and asked for the body. It was sent to the confederate lines on September 14. That day the confederates concentrated ten miles from Elkwater, and the next day again advanced, this time threatening Cheat Mountain; but their attack was unsuccessful. In this series of skirmishes the union forces had lost nine killed, fifteen wounded and about sixty prisoners. The result was a defeat for the confederates, who were thwarted in their design of penetrating northward and westward.

The confederates were not yet willing to give up West Virginia. They fell back to the Greenbrier river, thirteen miles from the union position on Cheat Mountain, and fortified their position. They were commanded by General H. A. Jackson, and their number was believed to be about nine thousand. On October 3, 1861, General Reynolds advanced at the head of five thousand troops. During the first part of the engagement the union forces were successful, driving the confederates nearly a mile; but here several batteries of artillery were encountered, and reinforcements arriving to the support of the confederates, the battle was renewed, and General Reynolds was forced to fall back, with a loss of nine killed and thirty-five wounded. On December 10, General Reynolds was transferred to other fields, and the command of the union forces in the Cheat Mountain district was given to General R. H. Milroy. Within three days after he assumed command he



## GEN. LEE'S CAMPAIGN IN WEST VIRGINIA. 187

moved forward to attack the confederate camp on the summit of the Alleghanies. The confederates had gone into winter quarters there; and, as the weather was severe, and as the union forces appeared satisfied to hold what they had without attempting any additional conquests in midwinter, the rebels were not expecting an attack. However, on December 13, 1861, General Milroy moved forward and assaulted the confederates' position. The fighting was severe for several hours, and finally resulted in the retreat of the union forces. The confederates made no attempt to follow. General Milroy marched to Huntersville, in Pocahontas county, and went into winter quarters. The rebels remained on the summit of the Alleghanies till spring, and then went over the mountains, out of West Virginia, thus ending the attempt to reconquer northwestern Virginia.

It may not be amiss to speak here of Virginia's relation as a state to the Southern Confederacy. It is the more necessary to do so because the military undertakings of Virginia and those of the Southern Confederacy often appeared independent of each other, or in conflict with each other, during the operations in West Virginia. General Lee at that time was commander-in-chief of the Virginia land and sea forces—not of the confederate forces. But this was a distinction without a difference, for the Virginians under him were all confederates. The theory of State's Rights, the chief corner-stone of the Southern Confederacy, required each state in the confederacy to retain, maintain and insist upon its separate existence, even when all had banded together in a desperate struggle. Thus Virginia soldiers were impressed with the belief that their first and chief service was to the state, and after that to the confederacy. During the occupation of Western Virginia, before McClellan crossed the Ohio, General Lee's and Governor Letcher's orders to their officers in the northwest were to seize and hold railroads, custom houses and



other property for the state of Virginia. Yet at that time Virginia, or rather the secession convention at Richmond, had placed all its military forces and property at the disposal of the Southern Confederacy. It is therefore seen that the painful efforts of the Richmond government, always to draw a hair-breadth distinction between the state and the confederacy, were far-fetched. When Virginia's soldiers were sent by the Richmond authorities across the Alleghanies, under the impression that their mission concerned the state alone, and that their duty consisted in holding the country beyond the mountains in its allegiance to the eastern part of the state, they must have been surprised to find soldiers from Georgia and other southern states already in West Virginia by thousands. It must have dawned upon them that they were not fighting for state rights, but that all state rights had been in fact, if not in name, swallowed up by the Southern Confederacy. There was no difference, so far as state's rights were concerned, between the soldiers from the north and from the south. Those from Georgia, Florida, Texas, Virginia, or any other seceding state, may have been told that they were fighting for their respective states, but they knew they were fighting for the Southern Confederacy, and that alone. The soldiers from the north, not matter what their states, knew that they were fighting for the preservation of the union. Even the state militias, called out to repel an invasion, and not mustered into the United States armies, knew that they were battling for the whole country.



## CHAPTER XVI



### CONTEST FOR THE KANAWHA.

It has been seen that the efforts of the confederates to hold northwestern Virginia met with little success on the tributaries of the Monongahela, about Grafton, Philippi, Beverly and about the headwaters of the Greenbrier. They had been driven from that region by the close of the year 1861. It now remains to be seen what success attended their efforts to gain and retain control of the Kanawha valley. Their campaign in West Virginia for the year 1861 was divided into two parts, in the northwest, and in the Kanawha valley. General Henry A. Wise was ordered to the Kanawha, June 6, two days before General Garnett was ordered to take command of the troops which had been driven south from Grafton. Colonel Tompkins was already in the Kanawha valley in charge of confederate forces. The authorities at Richmond at that time believed that a general, with the nucleus of an army in the Kanawha valley could raise all the troops necessary among the people there. On April 29. General Lee had ordered Major John McCausland to the Kanawha to organize companies for the confederacy. Only five hundred flintlock muskets could be had at that time to arm the troops in that quarter. General Lee suggested that the valley could best be held by posting the force below Charleston. Very poor success attended the efforts at raising volunteers; and the arms found in the district were insufficient to equip the men. Supplies were sent as soon as possible from eastern Virginia.

When General Wise arrived, and had collected all his



forces, he had eight thousand men, of whom two thousand were militia from Raleigh, Fayette and Mercer counties. With these he was expected to occupy the Kanawha valley, and resist invasion, should union forces attempt to penetrate that part of the state. General John B. Floyd, who had been secretary of war under President Buchanan, was guarding the railroad leading from Richmond into Tennessee, and was posted south of the present limits of West Virginia, but within supporting distance of General Wise. In case a union army invaded the Kanawha valley, it was expected that General Floyd would unite his forces with these of General Wise, and that they would act in concert, if not in conjunction. General Floyd was the older officer, and in case their forces were consolidated, he would be the commander-in-chief. But General Floyd and General Wise were enemies. Their hatred for the yankees was less than their hatred for each other. They were both Virginia politicians, and they had crossed each other's paths too often in the past to be reconciled now. General Lee tried in vain to induce them to work in harmony. They both fought the union troops bravely; but never in concert. When Wise was in front of General Cox, General Floyd was elsewhere. When Floyd was pitted in battle against General Rosecrans, General Wise was absent. Thus the union troops beat these quarreling Virginian brigadier generals in detail, as will be seen in the following narrative of the campaign during the summer and fall of 1861 in the Kanawha valley.

When Generals Wise and Floyd were sent to their districts in the west it was announced in their camps that they would march to Clarksburg, Parkersburg and Wheeling. This would have brought them in conflict with General McClellan's army. On July 2 McClellan put troops in motion against the confederates in the Kanawha valley. On that date he appointed General J. D. Cox to the command of regiments from Kentucky and Ohio, and ordered



him to cross the Ohio at Gallipolis and take possession of Point Pleasant, at the mouth of the Kanawha. On July 23 General Rosecrans succeeded McClellan in command of the department of Ohio. Rosecrans pushed the preparation for a vigorous campaign, which had already been commenced. He styled the troops under General Cox the brigade of Kanawha. On July 17, in Putnam county, a fight occurred between detachments of union and confederate forces, in which the latter appeared for the time victorious, but soon retreated eastward. From that time until September 10 there was constant skirmishing between the armies, the advantage being sometimes on one side, sometimes on the other; but the union forces constantly advanced and the confederates fell back. On August 1 General Wise was in Greenbrier county, and in a report made to General Lee on that date, he says he fell back not a moment too soon. He complains that his militia are worthless as soldiers, and urges General Lee to send him guns and other arms, and clothing and shoes, as his men are ragged and barefooted. On August 20 General Rosecrans was at Clarksburg preparing to go in person to lead reinforcements into the Kanawha. He issued a proclamation to the people of West Virginia, calling on them to obey the laws, maintain order and co-operate with the military in its efforts to drive the armed confederates from the state.

Prior to that time, Colonel E. B. Tyler with a union force had advanced to the Gauley river, and on August 13 he took up a position at Cross Lanes. He thus covered Carnifex Ferry. General Cox was at that time on the Gauley river, twenty miles lower down, near the mouth of that stream, nearly forty miles above Charleston. General Floyd advanced, and on August 26 crossed the Gauley at Carnifex Ferry with twenty-five hundred men, and fell upon Colonel Tyler at Cross Lanes with such suddenness that the union troops were routed, with fifteen killed and



fifty wounded. The latter fell into the hands of the confederates, who took fifty other prisoners also. The remainder of Tyler's force made its retreat to Charleston; and General Floyd fortified the position just gained, and prepared to hold it. On September 3, General Wise made an attack on General Cox at Gauley Bridge, near the mouth of the river, twenty miles below Carnifex Ferry. The attack failed, the confederates were beaten and were vigorously pursued. Had Wise held Gauley Bridge, Floyd already being in possession of Carnifex Ferry, they would have been in positions to dispute the further advance of the union forces up the Kanawha valley.

General Rosecrans left Clarksburg September 3 with reinforcements, and after a march of seven days reached Carnifex Ferry, and that same evening began an attack upon the confederates under General Floyd, who were entrenched on the top of a mountain on the west bank of the Gauley river, in Nicholas county. This proved to be the severest battle fought in West Virginia west of the Alleghanies during the war. General Floyd had about four thousand men and sixteen cannon, and his position was so well protected by woods, that assault, with chance of success, was considered exceedingly difficult. He had fortified this naturally strong position, and felt confident that it could not be captured by any force the union general could bring against him. The fight began late in the afternoon, General Rosecrans having marched seventeen miles that day. It was not his purpose to bring on a general engagement that afternoon, and he directed his forces to advance cautiously and find where the enemy lay; for the position of the confederates was not yet known. While thus advancing, a camp was found in the woods, from which the confederates had evidently fled in haste. Military stores and private property were scattered in confusion. From this fact, it was supposed that the enemy was in retreat, and the union troops pushed on, through



thickets and over ridges. Presently they discovered that they had been mistaken. They were fired upon by the confederate army in line of battle. From that hour until darkness put a stop to the fighting, the battle continued. The union troops had not been able to carry any of the rebel works; and General Rosecrans withdrew his men for the night, prepared to renew the battle next morning. But during the night General Floyd retreated. He had grown doubtful of his ability to hold out if the attack was resumed with the same impetuosity as on the preceding evening. But he was more fearful that the union troops would cut off his retreat if he remained. So, while it was yet time, he withdrew in the direction of Lewisburg, in Greenbrier county, destroying the bridge over the Gauley, and also the ferry across that stream. General Rosecrans was unable to pursue because he could not cross the river. It is a powerful, turbulent stream, and at this place flows several miles down a deep gorge, filled with rocks and cataracts. Among spoils which fell into the hands of the victors was General Floyd's hospital, in which were fifty wounded union soldiers who had been captured when Colonel Tyler was driven from this same place on August 26. General Rosecrans lost seventeen killed and one hundred and forty-one wounded. The confederate loss was never ascertained.

After a rest of a few days the union army advanced to Big Sewell mountain. The weather was wet, and the roads became so muddy that it was almost impossible to haul supplies over them. For this reason it was deemed advisable to fall back. On October 5 General Rosecrans began to withdraw his forces to Gauley Bridge, and in the course of two weeks had transferred his command to that place, where he had water communication with his base of supplies.

On November 10 another action was fought between General Floyd and General Rosecrans, in which the con-



federates were defeated. This virtually closed the campaign for the year 1861 in that quarter, and resulted in the occupation of all the lower Kanawha valley and the greater part of the upper valley. The confederates were finally driven out, and never again obtained a foothold in that part of the state, although large bodies were at times in the valley of the Kanawha, and occasionally remained a considerable time.



## CHAPTER XVII.



### SCHEMES THAT FAILED.

The confederate government, and the state of Virginia as a member of that government, had an object in view when they sent their forces into West Virginia at the commencement of the civil war. Virginia as a state was interested in retaining the territory between the Alleghany mountains and the Ohio river and did not believe she could do so without force and arms, because her long neglect and oppression had alienated the western counties. Virginia correctly judged that they would seize the first opportunity and organize a separate state. To prevent them from doing so, and to retain that large part of her domain lying west of the Alleghanies, were the chief motives which prompted Virginia, as a state, to invade the western part of her own territory, even before open war was acknowledged to exist between the Southern Confederacy and the general government. The purpose which prompted the Southern Confederacy to push troops across the Alleghanies in such haste was to obtain possession of the country to the borders of Ohio and Pennsylvania, and to fortify the frontiers against invasion from the north and west. It was well understood at the headquarters of the Southern Confederacy that the thousands of soldiers already mustering beyond the Ohio river, and the tens of thousands who would no doubt soon take the field in the same quarter, would speedily cross the Ohio, unless prevented. The bold move which the south undertook was to make the borders of Ohio and Pennsylvania the battle ground. The southern leaders did not at that time appreciate the magnitude of



the war which was at hand. If they had understood it, and had had a military man in the place of Jeff Davis, it is probable that the battle ground would have been different from what it was. Nevertheless, to rightly understand the early movements of the confederates in West Virginia, it is necessary to consider that their purpose was to hold the country to the Ohio river. Their effort was weak, to be sure, but that was partly due to their miscalculation as to the assistance they would receive from the people of West Virginia. If they could have organized an army of forty thousand West Virginians and reinforced them with as many more men from the south, it can be readily seen that McClellan could not have crossed the Ohio as he did. But the scheme failed. The West Virginians not only would not enlist in the confederate army, but they enlisted in the opposing force; and when Garnett made his report from Laurel Hill he told General Lee that, for all the help he received from the people, he might as well carry on a campaign in a foreign country. From that time it was regarded by the rebels as the enemy's country; and when, later in the war, Jones, Jackson, Imboden and others made raids into West Virginia they acted toward persons and property in the same way as when raids were made in Ohio and Pennsylvania.

The Baltimore and Ohio railroad, crossing West Virginia from Harper's Ferry to Wheeling, and from Grafton to Parkersburg, was considered of the utmost importance by both the north and the south. It was so near the boundary between what was regarded as the Southern Confederacy and the north that during the early part of the war neither the one side nor the other felt sure of holding it. The management of the road was strongly in sympathy with the north, but an effort was made to so manage the property as not to give cause for hostility on the part of the south. At one time the trains were run in accordance with a time table prepared by Stonewall Jackson, even as



far as Baltimore and Washington. This fact is detailed more fully in another part of this book. It is mentioned here only to show that the road attempted to avoid the hostility of the south. But the road did all in its power to assist the federal government. It was a part of the confederate scheme in West Virginia to obtain possession and control, in a friendly way if possible, of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad. The possession of it would not only help the confederacy in a direct way, but it would cripple the federal government and help the south in an indirect way. Within six days after General Lee was appointed commander-in-chief of the Virginia armies he instructed Major Loring, at Wheeling, to direct his military operations for the protection of the terminus of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad on the Ohio river, and also to protect the road elsewhere. Major Boykin was ordered to give protection to the road in the vicinity of Grafton. General Lee insisted that the peaceful business of the road must not be interfered with. The branch to Parkersburg was also to be protected. Major Boykin was told to "hold the road for the benefit of Maryland and Virginia." He was advised to obtain the co-operation of the officers of the road and afford them every assistance. When Colonel Porterfield was ordered to Grafton, on May 4, 1861, among the duties marked out for him by General Lee was the holding of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, and to prevent its being used to the injury of Virginia.

No one has ever supposed that the Southern Confederacy wanted the Baltimore and Ohio road protected because of any desire to befriend that company. The leaders of the confederacy knew that the officers of the road were not friendly to secession. As soon as Western Virginia had slipped out of the grasp of the confederacy, and when the railroad could no longer help the south to realize its ambition of fortifying the banks of the Ohio, the confederacy threw off the mask and came out in open hostility. George



Deas, inspector general of the confederate army, urged that the railroad be destroyed, bridges burned along the line, and the tunnels west of the Alleghanies blown up so that no troops could be carried east from the Ohio river to the Potomac. This advice was partly carried out on June 13, 1861, after Colonel Porterfield had retreated from Grafton and had been driven from Philippi. But the damage to the road had not been so great but that repairs were speedily made. Governor Letcher of Virginia had recommended to the legislature a short time before that, the Baltimore and Ohio road ought to be destroyed. He said: "The Baltimore and Ohio railroad has been a positive nuisance to this state, from the opening of the war till the present time. And, unless the management shall hereafter be in friendly hands, and the government under which it exists be a part of our confederacy, it must be abated. If it should be permanantly destroyed, we must assure our people of some other communication with the seaboard." From that time till the close of the war the confederacy inflicted every damage possible upon the road, and in many instances the damage was enormous. When the raids under Jones, Imboden and Jackson were made into West Virginia, the officers had special orders to strike that road wherever possible. The high trestles on the face of Laurel hill between Rowlesburg and Grafton were named for destruction, but for some reason they escaped, although the rebels were within a mile of them.

It is proper to state here that an effort was made, after fighting had commenced, to win the West Virginians over to the cause of the south by promising them larger privileges than they had ever before enjoyed. On June 14, 1861, Governor Letcher issued a proclamation, which was published at Huttonsville, in Randolph county, and addressed to the people of Northwestern Virginia. In this proclamation he promised them that the injustice from unequal taxation of which they had complained in the past,



should exist no longer. He said that the eastern part of the state had expressed a willingness to relinquish exemptions from taxation, which it had been enjoying, and was willing to share all the burdens of government. The governor promised that in state affairs, the majority should rule; and he called upon the people beyond the Alleghanies, in the name of past friendship and of historic memories, to espouse the cause of the Southern Confederacy. It is needless to state that this proclamation fell flat. The people of Western Virginia would have hailed with delight a prospect of redress of grievances, had it come earlier. But its coming was so long delayed that they doubted both the sincerity of these who made the promise and their ability to fulfill. Twenty thousand soldiers had already crossed the Ohio, and had penetrated more than half way from the river to the Alleghanies, and they had been joined by thousands of Virginians. It was a poor time for governor Letcher to appeal to past memories, or to promise justice in the future which had been denied in the past. Coming as the promise did at that time, it looked like a death bed repentance. The Southern Confederacy had postponed fortifying the bank of the Ohio until too late; and Virginia had held out the olive branch to her neglected and long suffering people beyond the mountains when it was too late. They had already cast their lot with the north; and already a powerful army had crossed the Ohio to their assistance. Virginia's day of dominion west of the Alleghanies was nearing its close; and the Southern Confederacy's hope of empire there was already doomed.



## CHAPTER XVIII.

### MISCELLANEOUS WAR NOTES.

The campaign undertaken by McClellan to drive Garnett and the other confederates out of West Virginia; the movement of Lee to reoccupy the lost territory; and the campaign in the valley of the Kanawha against Wise and Floyd, were military movements undertaken with design and persecuted with systematic strategy and tactics, and with definite objects in view. They have been written of somewhat in detail elsewhere in this book. There were many other military movements on the soil of West Virginia, not perhaps to be classed as regularly organized campaigns, but rather as incidents and episodes in other campaigns having their chief centers outside of this state. Some were raids, occasionally small, again of so large proportions as to cover many counties. Again, there were raids starting on West Virginia soil, but having their principal developments elsewhere. In a local history, such as this book is, and professing to deal chiefly with the events of a single county, it is impossible to enter into a detailed account of the military occurrences in this state. But, in order to understand the history of even one county, it is necessary to speak, although in the briefest manner, of circumstances of the war taking place in neighboring counties. Otherwise, the meaning and sequence of occurrences in one locality could not be appreciated. So dependent and inter-related are the facts of history that it is often necessary to step, temporarily, outside the immediate territorial limits under consideration, in order to see the beginning or the ending of movements or occurrences.



which seem, at first glance, to be local. This chapter will be devoted to an account of various and sundry military movements within West Virginia, or partly within it. Many of these have no direct connection with one another; but when taken, as a group, they give a tolerable idea of the war in West Virginia. It is necessary to be brief. Nor will any attempt be made to include all the occurrences within the state that deserve to be recorded as features of the civil war.

*Harper's Ferry.*—At the mouth of the Shenandoah river, where the Potomac has cut its way through the Blue Ridge, Harper's Ferry is situated. On account of its location it was contended for by both the north and the south. It is the gateway to the valley of Virginia. The Baltimore and Ohio railroad, the chief military road of the war, passed that place. The confederates wanted the town, because when they held it, they could cut the road at will. The surroundings are picturesque, amounting almost to the sublime. The river at that place is the lowest point in the state, being two hundred and sixty feet above sea level. The summits of the mountains, almost overhanging the village, are about eight hundred feet higher. At the beginning of the war the Baltimore and Ohio railroad had a branch line up the Shenandoah to Winchester, about thirty miles. Harper's Ferry was one of the first places seized by the confederates after Virginia passed the ordinance of secession and joined the confederacy. Lieutenant R. Jones, of the United States army, was in command when the Virginia troops approached. Believing that he would not be able to hold it, he set the armory on fire and retreated into Pennsylvania. The arsenal contained fifteen thousand stands of arms. The guns were badly damaged, but some of them were subsequently repaired and were used by the confederates in future battles. Harper's Ferry was held by the southern forces for some time. Stonewall Jackson was placed in command there. He at



once began to regulate traffic on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, and finally carried off a large number of cars and engines. This was regarded as a great feat by the confederates. In General J. D. Imboden's history of the war he speaks of it as follows: "From the very beginning of the war the confederacy was greatly in need of rolling stock for the railroads. We were particularly short of locomotives, and were without the shops to build them. Jackson, appreciating this, hit upon a plan to obtain a good supply from the Baltimore and Ohio road. Its line was double tracked, at least from Point of Rocks to Martinsburg, a distance of twenty-five or thirty miles. We had not interfered with the running of trains, except on the occasion of the arrest of General Harvey. The coal traffic from Cumberland was immense. The Washington government was accumulating supplies of coal on the seaboard. These coal trains passed Harper's Ferry at all hours of the day and night, and thus furnished Jackson with a pretext for arranging a brilliant scoop. When he sent me to Point of Rocks, he sent Colonel Harper to Martinsburg. He then complained to President Garrett, of the Baltimore and Ohio, that the night trains, east bound, disturbed the repose of his camp, and requested a change of schedule that would pass all east bound trains by Harper's Ferry between eleven and one o'clock in the daytime. Mr. Garrett complied. But, since the 'empties' were sent up the road at night, Jackson again complained that the nuisance was as great as ever; and, as the road had two tracks, said that he must insist that the west bound trains should pass during the same two hours as those going east. Mr. Garrett promptly complied. One night, as soon as the schedule was working at its best, Jackson sent me an order to take a force of men across to the Maryland side of the river the next day at eleven o'clock, and, letting all west bound trains pass till twelve o'clock, to allow none to go east, and at twelve o'clock to obstruct the road so



that it would require several day to repair it. He ordered the reverse to be done at Martinsburg. Thus he caught all the trains that were going east or west between these points. He ran them up to Winchester, thirty-two miles, on the branch road, where they were safe, and whence they were removed by horse power to the railroad at Strasburg. I do not remember the number of trains captured, but the loss crippled the Baltimore and Ohio road seriously for some time, and the gain to our scantily-stocked Virginia roads of the same gauge was invaluable."

Harper's Ferry remained in possession of the confederates until May 14, 1861. General Patterson, in command of a large union force, crossed the Potomac near Martinsburg, defeated Stonewall Jackson at Falling Waters, and was moving upon Harper's Ferry when the confederates evacuated the place. General Banks succeeded General Patterson in command of the forces in that part of Virginia. The defeat of the union army soon after rendered the abandonment of the south bank of the Potomac necessary, and Harper's Ferry again fell into the hands of the confederates. They held it till March, 1862, when the retreat of their armies up the Shenandoah made it impossible for them longer to hold the town which, for the second time, was evacuated by the confederates, and was at once occupied by the union forces. The rebels had destroyed the Baltimore and Ohio bridge at that place. On August 15, 1862, Colonel Miles, who was holding Harper's Ferry, received orders from General Wool to fortify Maryland Heights. It was at that time believed that a large confederate army was preparing to move in that direction. Colonel Miles neglected to fortify, as instructed, although in the latter part of August it was positively known that the confederates were coming.

On September 4 the confederate army began to cross the Potomac and invade Maryland. The next day Colonel T. H. Ford, who was in charge of the union forces on the



heights overlooking Harper's Ferry, sent an urgent request for reinforcements and tools for erecting fortifications. He received the reinforcements, but not the tools. He borrowed a few axes and built breastworks by cutting down trees. He was engaged in this work when the confederates appeared, commanded by Stonewall Jackson, who had been detached from Lee's invading army. As soon as the rebels appeared fire was opened upon them from the heights. The federals were reinforced by troops from Martinsburg under General Julius White. This raised the force in and about Harper's Ferry to thirteen thousand. The confederates were stronger. The only defensive position fortified by Colonel Miles was Bolivar Heights, behind the town, and this was commanded by Maryland Heights, and by Loudon Heights on the Virginia side of the Potomac. The confederates attacked and captured Maryland Heights September 13, and on the same day the rebels occupied Loudon Heights and advanced directly toward the town along the Charlestown pike. Colonel Miles saw that he would be cut off and he sent a message to McClellan for reinforcements. The confederates opened fire September 14. About two thousand five hundred union cavalry, under Colonel Davis, cut their way out and escaped into Pennsylvania. The next morning Colonel Miles surrendered. Eleven thousand prisoners fell into the hands of the victors. Colonel Miles was mortally wounded by a confederate shell fired half an hour after the white flag had been raised. A special commission was appointed to investigate the circumstances attending the surrender of Harper's Ferry. The result was that Colonel Ford and other officers were dismissed from the service; the conduct of Colonel Miles was stated in the report to have exhibited "an incapacity amounting almost to imbecility," and General Wool was censured for placing Colonel Miles in so important a place. It was also stated that "General McClellan could and should have relieved and protected Harper's



Ferry." Jackson occupied the place one day and then proceeded into Maryland to join Lee's invading army on the march to Antietam.

Figures have been compiled, showing that the Baltimore and Ohio road, east and west from Harper's Ferry, lost in the year's 1862 and 1863, forty-two engines, three hundred and eighty-six cars; twenty-three bridges, thirty-six miles of track; all the waterstations and telegraph offices for one hundred miles; and the machine shops and engine houses at Martinsburg.

*General Schenck's Defeat:* After the campaign, during which the battles of Elkwater, Cheat mountain, Greenbrier and Camp Alleghany were fought, the union army went into winter quarters among the mountains, and early in the spring of 1862 began to move toward Staunton. The confederates had been driven out of West Virginia, and it was the plan to push them into the valley of Virginia. This plan was thwarted by the result of the battle at McDowell, May 8, 1862. This fight did not take place within the present limits of West Virginia, but in the adjoining county of Highland, in Virginia. But it is not improper to speak of the occurrence, for the movement was made from West Virginia, largely by West Virginia troops, and after the repulse, the union force retreated into West Virginia. General John C. Fremont was at that time in command of the mountain department, which included the forces designed for the descent on Staunton. General Milroy had immediate command of the troops, until the arrival of General Schenck, who then took command.

The confederates were not slow to learn of the advance of Melroy, and they prepared to repulse him. While he was at Monteray, the county seat of Highland county, on April 12, he was attacked by a force of one thousand. The attacking party was repulsed. About two weeks later, Milroy marched to McDowell, twelve miles distant, on the

•



road to Staunton. Some days later, about May 7, a forward movement was made; but the confederates began to mass their forces for battle. Stonewall Jackson had come up with reinforcements for the confederates. He had seven thousand men; but he was badly in need of artillery. Milroy's troops numbered thirty-seven hundred, and were strong in artillery. The next day a hard battle was fought, beginning at 3:30 p. m. and ending after dark. In some places the fighting was exceedingly severe. A company of confederates and a company of union troops, all from Clarksburg, and all acquainted, were pitted against each other. They were so near they could speak from one line to the other. They fought face to face with unflinching bravery. Portions of the two armies were sometimes not one hundred yards apart, and maintained their positions in these close quarters a considerable time. At length, about nine o'clock in the evening, it became apparent that the ground could not be held, and General Schenck ordered a retreat in the direction of Franklin, in Pendleton county. He succeeded in saving nearly all his stores, and reached Franklin, closely pursued by the confederates, who kept at a safe distance. They made demonstrations, as if to attack General Schenck's forces at Franklin; but no attack was made, and Jackson soon withdrew in the direction of Staunton.

*Confederate Raids.*—At intervals, after the confederates were pushed over the Alleghanies by McClellan, and driven from the Kanawha by Rosecrans, they made raids into West Virginia until near the close of the war. These incursions were sometimes military movements of considerable magnitude, on one occasion extending entirely across the state east and west, to the Ohio river, and across that stream into Ohio; and at another time penetrating within cannon shot of the borders of Pennsylvania near the Monongahela. Other incursions were of less extent; some being no more than the dash of large scouting



parties to pick up plunder and to destroy property. No complete record of all these raids has ever been made; and from the nature of the case, perhaps it would be impossible to make a full list. After the confederates saw that West Virginia would not willingly join the confederacy, and that they could not force it to join, they regarded it as the enemy's country, and as legitimate plunder. The citizens of West Virginia lost thousands of horses, carried off by raiders to replenish the decimated ranks of confederate cavalry. A brief account of a few of these raids is here given.

In May, 1862, General Henry Heth, in command of a confederate force of twenty-five hundred men, advanced from New River Narrows upon the union forces at Lewisburg, in Greenbrier county, under Colonel George Crook. On the morning of May 23 the confederates arrived in front of the town, on a hill to the east, and planting guns, were ready for battle. Colonel Crook had prepared for the attack, and made an impetuous charge with both infantry and cavalry. The fight was over in thirty minutes. The confederates were swept from the hill, and driven across the Greenbrier river, losing eighty killed, one hundred wounded, one hundred and fifty-seven prisoners, four guns, twenty-five horses, three hundred stands of small arms. The union forces lost thirteen killed, fifty wounded and six prisoners.

In September of this year, 1862, a raid of far greater dimensions was made into the valley of the Kanawha by General Loring, with a force estimated at nine thousand men. A raid to Guyandotte, on the Ohio river, was made by another confederate force about the same time. Colonel J. A. J. Lightburn was the chief officer in charge of union forces in the Kanawha valley. He fell back as Loring advanced. The confederates made a tolerably clean sweep of the whole valley from the mountains to the Ohio river. At one o'clock in the morning of September 14 Lightburn



retreated from Charleston and burned vast quantities of government stores to prevent their falling into the hands of the confederates. He then formed a line of battle, and Loring promptly replied, and an artillery engagement continued for some time. The battle was not decisive, but the union forces continued their retreat and the confederates were slow to follow. Colonel Lightburn had twenty-five killed and ninety-five wounded. The confederates lost nearly the same number. They remained in Charleston to procure salt for their armies. In the meantime the rebel force which had appeared near Guyandotte had been attacked and defeated by Colonel Paxton. Union forces gathered at Point Pleasant in large numbers and proceeded to reoccupy the Kanawha valley. The confederates did not attempt to hold it, but withdrew to the east. Before the close of the year all the country to the base of the Alleghanies was again in possession of the union forces.

In November, 1862, a remarkable feat was accomplished in the mountains of Greenbrier county by General W. H. Powell. General George Crook, in command of the Kanawha division, learned that about five hundred confederates were spending the winter in an obscure camp in Sinking creek valley. He sent an ample force for their capture; but the march was a hard one; there was a heavy snowstorm; the infantry gave out and could not proceed, and the cavalry was divided. General Powell was in charge of the advance party of twenty men. When near the camp four confederates were encountered; two were captured and two escaped. Knowing that they would alarm the camp, if allowed to reach it, Powell made a charge. The rebels, not doubting that an army was upon them, surrendered. Thus, a force of twenty-two men, without firing a gun or losing a man, captured a camp of five hundred confederates. Congress presented General Powell with a medal on account of this achievement.

In September, 1862, General A. G. Jenkins, at the head



of a confederate cavalry force, crossed the Alleghanies from the head of the Shenandoah river, and made a descent upon Beverly in Randolph county. Not meeting with much opposition, he continued to Buchannon, Weston, westward through Roane county, thence to the Ohio river which he crossed. The confederate flag was then seen for the first time in a northern state. He recrossed the Ohio and made his way back to Virginia by way of the Kanawha valley.

In the latter part of March, 1863, General Jenkins, with eight hundred confederates, made another raid into West Virginia, this time coming from Dublin, a small town on the Virginia and Tennessee railroad. He soon appeared in Putnam county, and an encounter took place between his force and a body of union troops at Hurricane Bridge. The battle continued five hours, when the confederates withdrew. They continued their raid, and the next day attacked a steamer on the Kanawha, but failed to capture it. The next day, March 30, they reached Point Pleasant, on the Ohio. A small union force stationed there took refuge in the court house, and fought the besiegers four hours. News of the fight had reached Gallipolis, on the opposite side of the Ohio, a short distance above, and a force was sent down the river, and planting a battery on the opposite bank of the Ohio, were about to open fire, when the confederates retreated.

The most disastrous raid experienced by West Virginia during the war, occurred in April and May, 1863. Three dashing confederate leaders took part in it, Imboden, Jones and H. L. Jackson. Their combined forces amounted to four thousand men. They drove the union forces before them wherever encountered, except at Clarksburg and West Union. They did not attack either place. Their first attack was made upon Colonel George R. Latham's force of nearly nine hundred men at Beverly. Latham retreated to Buckhannon, and later to Clarksburg. The



union forces at Sutton, in Braxton county, hurried to Clarksburg, as did those at Bulltown, Birch, Weston, and other points in that part of the state. General B. S. Roberts was in command of the union forces in that part of the state. He was urged to hold Clarksburg at all hazards, and the forces, hurriedly concentrated there, were sufficient to deter the confederates from making an attack. The raiders reached the Baltimore and Ohio railroad at Cranberry Summit, in Preston county, and at Rowlesburg, Independence and other points. Major Showalter with two hundred and twenty men had fortified the mountain above Rowlesburg. He was attacked by General W. E. Jones with one thousand cavalry on Sunday, April 23. After a short resistance, Major Showalter retreated into Pennsylvania. General Lee had instructed General Jones to destroy the trestles on the Baltimore and Ohio road between Rowlesburg and Tunnelton, but he failed to do so. The confederates occupied Kingwood, and marched to Morgantown where they looted stores, killed two citizens, and wounded a third, claiming that these citizens had attacked them. They burnt bridges as they went, and captured horses and cattle in large numbers. It was believed that they were striking at Wheeling, and troops for its defense were hastily concentrated there; but no attack was made. They marched to Fairmont, and overrun that country. They advanced almost within sight of Parkersburg; and at Burning Springs, on the Little Kanawha, they burned one hundred thousand barrels of crude petroleum at the oil wells. This was on May 9. Soon after this the invaders began to withdraw, and by May 14 the most of them recrossed the Alleghanies. They carried away fifteen hundred horses, more than three thousand cattle, and destroyed or carried away property to the value of millions of dollars. As soon as the confederates had left the country General Roberts returned with his forces. But his failure to stop the raid led to his re-



moval from the command, and General W. W. Averell was sent to take charge of the troops. Confederate raids into his territory were unsuccessful, for he was as quick in movement as they, as able in planning and as fearless in execution.

A confederate raid had been made into Pennsylvania, and Chambersburg had been burnt because the inhabitants had refused to pay a ransom of half a million dollars. The rebels fled into West Virginia, crossed the Baltimore and Ohio railroad at New Creek, and reached Moorefield on the South branch of the Potomac, and there rested in fancied security within a day's march of the valley of Virginia. But, Averell pursued them, and just before day came up with them. An impetuous charge swept the confederates from one bank of the river; and Averell crossed immediately, drove them from a wheat field where they had formed for battle; broke their lines in the timber where they had prepared an ambushade, and put the army to flight in a few minutes.

On January 1, 1864, a fight took place a short distance from Moorefield between a strong confederate force, and a detachment of union soldiers under Colonel Joseph Snider, guarding a supply train on the road from New Creek to Petersburg, in Grant county. The union force was outnumbered and defeated with the loss of the train, and five killed and thirty-four wounded. In this skirmish General Nathan Goff, of Clarksburg, was taken prisoner. His horse was shot, and falling upon him, held him until the confederates came up.

On November 28, 1864, a confederate raid, under General Rosser, penetrated to New Creek, captured the place, and tore up the railroad. A number of prisoners were taken, and the force hastily retired to the valley of Virginia. A small raid was made about the same time on Beverly, in Randolph county, but not much damage was done.



*An Unpopular Policy.*—On March 28, 1863, the "Fourth Separate Brigade" was created, and the command was given to General Benjamin S. Roberts, who fixed his headquarters at Weston. His jurisdiction embraced the greater part of West Virginia, north of the Kanawha. Perhaps five out of six of the inhabitants of this district were supporters of the union cause; but many favored the confederacy, and General Roberts soon began a war upon them. He was determined to drive them out of the country. The majority of the men who sympathized with the south were at that time in the confederate armies; but their wives and children remained at home. One of General Roberts' orders was, that all those whose natural protectors were engaged in war against the United States should be sent beyond the union lines. In obedience to this order, numbers of women and children from Lewis, Upshur, Harrison and adjoining counties were sent south into the confederate lines. This policy made General Roberts very unpopular, not only with the inhabitants, both southern and northern, in their sentiments, but also with his subordinate officers and the soldiers. The latter spoke their sentiments freely, and said they had joined the army for the purpose of fighting armed men, not to make war upon women and children.

When the confederate raid, under Jones, Jackson and Imboden was made into General Roberts' territory, and he abandoned the country to pillage, the authorities over him decided it was time to make a change, and he was sent to Milwaukee, Wisconsin, and General W. W. Averell was given command of the Fourth brigade. His orders were dated May 18, 1863, and he was told to proceed to Weston, "or wherever else you may find Brigadier General B. S. Roberts, and relieve him of his command." General Averell was ordered to protect from raids the territory between the Baltimore and Ohio railroad and the Kanawha, and to guard well the passes through the Cheat mountains.



He was given liberty to pursue the confederates, even into the valley of Virginia, should occasion require. He was ordered to transform his infantry into cavalry. By a system of persistent drilling he soon had a force of three thousand cavalry, equal, perhaps, to the best the world has ever seen. It was said of him that his cavalry moved like a whirlwind and struck like a thunderbolt. He soon became the terror of the confederate outposts from Winchester to the Tennessee line. The rapidity of his movements overcame resistance and baffled pursuit.

At the time General Averell took command in West Virginia he was about thirty years of age. A native of the state of New York, he graduated at West Point at the age of twenty-two, the head of a class in cavalry. He was a man of fine literary taste and culture. He was instructor in the government cavalry school, first at Jefferson, Missouri, and subsequently at Carlisle, Pennsylvania. At this school Fitzhugh Lee, W. H. Jackson, D. H. Maury and C. H. Tyler were his pupils; and their subsequent history shows that he instructed them well. General Averell was sent to New Mexico, and there fought Indians until wounded. He was a cripple two years, and was on crutches when the civil war began. He was sent upon a perilous mission to carry dispatches to the few United States posts in Texas and Arkansas, which were still holding out against the attacks of the confederates. His journey, after crossing the Mississippi, was one of dangers, hardships and desperate escapes. The country was in the hands of the confederates. He was pursued and captured; he escaped and swam rivers; he crossed the plains; he made his way through barren deserts and over pathless mountains, and at last reached the farthest United States post in Texas, and found it surrounded and hard pressed by the confederates. He conducted the garrison northward to Kansas, and then hurried to Washington and was at once sent to the field in charge of cavalry. His success



attracted notice at once, and when the need of an efficient cavalry officer in West Virginia was seen, he was sent here. It was desirable that such raids as Jones, Jackson and Imboden had made should not be repeated; and they were not repeated within Averell's territory.

*Expedition to Rocky Gap.*—General Averell withdrew his forces from West Virginia to assist in the campaign against Lee in Pennsylvania. He did not arrive in time to take part in the battle of Gettysburg, but he fought portions of Lee's army while it was retreating. He hastened to Moorefield, which he reached August 6. It became desirable to clear the country of confederates, if possible, along the borders of West Virginia and Virginia, from Pendleton county to Greenbrier. Imboden and Jones were in that country, and it was surmised and was subsequently ascertained that they were contemplating a descent into the valley of the South branch. There were saltpeter works in Pendleton and Alleghany counties, which the confederates were operating in manufacturing gunpowder, and Averell wished to destroy them. His command was short of ammunition, having only thirty-five cartridges to the man. It was short of horse shoes and nails, also. He ordered these supplies and waited for them some days, but they did not arrive. He could delay no longer, and set forward on the march to Pendleton county, part of his force ascending the South branch and part the North fork. The saltpeter works five miles from Franklin were destroyed. He pushed on to Monterey in Highland county, Virginia. He came near surprising the confederate Generals Jones and Imboden. They had been there the day before, consulting whether they should march into the South branch valley. It was probably there learned that Averell was on the march, and Jones, Jackson and Imboden prepared for battle; but they misunderstood Averell's purpose. They supposed he was aiming at Staunton, and laid their plans accordingly. He proceeded



to Huntersville, routing three hundred confederates on August 21, and on the next day another detachment was driven from a ravine near Huntersville, utterly routed, losing nearly everything in the way of arms and stores. Two days later Jackson was met, defeated, and driven out of Pocahontas county. Averell proceeded to Jackson river, where other saltpeter works were destroyed: also those near Covington.

The battle of Rocky Gap, near White Sulphur Springs, in Greenbrier county, was at hand. General Jones, with two thousand five hundred confederates, accidentally found himself in front of Averell, whose force at that time was thirteen hundred, but other union troops came up later. The battle was a surprise to both sides, but they went at it like veterans. It took place in a defile, and for a time the artillery played the chief part, and the cannonade was terrific. Averell's ammunition began to run short before sunset, but he held his ground all night. The confederates ran short of ammunition also, but during the night they received a fresh supply, and they likewise received reinforcements from the direction of Lewisburg. Averell expected reinforcements from General Scammon, in the Kanawha valley, and looked in vain for them all night. Although he had more than held his own since ten o'clock in the morning, having pushed the confederates back, he knew that he could not maintain his position without cartridges. During the night he brought up all the ammunition in the wagons and distributed it among his troops, and sent every available man to the front. In speaking of his situation, Averell afterwards said: "Two chances remained, first, the enemy might retreat; and second, Scammon might arrive. The morning showed us that both chances had failed." Every arrangement had been made for retreat; but as soon as it was light, the battle was renewed and Averell held his ground till after ten o'clock, and then withdrew, and after some skirmishing, reached



Beverly on August 31. His loss in killed and wounded was about one hundred and fifty. The loss of the confederates was a little larger. Among Averell's officers who fell was Captain Paul Von Koenig. It is said he was killed by his own men in revenge for his having struck several of them during the march from Moorefield. It is also said that those who killed him did not know Averell by sight, and supposed that Koenig was Averell.

*Droop Mountain.*—In November, 1863, occurred the Droop Mountain campaign, so named from the place where an important battle was fought, November 6, between General Averell and a force of four thousand confederates under Major Echols. Averell's campaign into Greenbrier county, terminating at Rocky Gap, had not resulted in clearing that region of confederates. He prepared for another advance and set forward from Beverly November 1. He was promised support from the Kanawha valley, under General Duffie. He no doubt remembered that he had been promised support from the same source on the former campaign into that region, and had been disappointed. On the present occasion he provided himself with plenty of ammunition, so that, in case assistance again failed him, he could fight to a finish.

There was skirmishing all the way to Huntersville, and small parties of rebels were killed, captured or dispersed. The first considerable force of confederates was encountered near Huntersville, under command of Colonel Thompson, but it fell back on the main body without a fight. A few miles further a larger confederate force was met, but it also retreated without a fight. The union forces were now within thirty-four miles of Lewisburg. The confederates took position on Droop mountain and offered battle. They were advantageously placed, and a direct attack was believed by Averell to be difficult. He prepared a flank movement, and also purposely delayed the attack till the next day in hope that General Duffie's expected reinforce-



ments would arrive. They did not arrive, and the next morning General Averell began the battle. He sent a force to gain the flank and rear of the confederate position and he moved up in front. In the meantime reinforcements arrived for the enemy, and their coming was announced by loud yells and by a band of music. Colonel Moor, with more than one thousand men, had been entrusted with the flanking movement. The guides who went with him proved worthless, and he was obliged to proceed the best he could; and the result was he did not reach his destination till nearly two o'clock in the afternoon, having marched nine miles through woods and over hills.

General Averell's practiced eye detected the confusion in the ranks of the confederates on the mountain when they discovered Colonel Moor's advance upon their flank. An attack from the front was at once ordered, and the union troops moved up the mountain. In the meantime the artillery poured a fire upon the confederates. They held their ground an hour and a quarter and then gave way everywhere and fled. The pursuit was vigorous, and the confederates were scattered. A portion of them passed through Lewisburg the next morning in a deplorable condition. They lost in killed and wounded two hundred and fifty; one gun was abandoned on the field and two more in the retreat. This left Echols only four guns.

Averell proceeded to Lewisburg and found the promised reinforcements there under General Duffie. It was ascertained that the confederates had retreated in the direction of Dublin, on the Virginia and Tennessee railroad. It was also learned that General Lee had promised to send ample reinforcements to Major Echols at or near that point. This information induced Averell to march for that place in hope of capturing or scattering the forces there. He set forward on November 8 with his entire command, including Duffie's reinforcements. The confederates had blockaded the road and much labor was required to cut it out. Gen-



eral Duffie reported his troops unfit for service, as they had no rations and were tired. The march to Dublin was therefore given up and Averell returned to Beverly, defeating Imboden on the road. While in Greenbrier county Averell went to White Sulphur Springs and recaptured his wounded prisoners who had fallen into the hands of the rebels at the battle of Rocky Gap in the preceding August. Averell's loss at Droop mountain is not stated, except that he had fifty-five wounded. On November 17 his command arrived at New Creek.

*The Salem Raid.*—The memorable raid to Salem, in Roanoke county, Virginia, sixty miles west of Lynchburg, followed. This was Averell's crowning feat. No general ever performed a greater, taking into account the numbers engaged, the difficulties of the way, and the dangers through which he passed. It can be fittingly compared to Xenophon's "Retreat of the Ten Thousand" through Persia, although, of course, on a much smaller scale, both as to numbers engaged and distance traveled. The government at Washington fully realized the dangers when it sent Averell upon the raid, nor was any effort made to conceal from him the fact that he was probably about to march into the jaws of death. He was ordered to cut the Virginia and Tennessee railroad at Salem at all hazards, even at the cost of the destruction of his whole army. A momentous issue was at stake. General Burnside was besieged at Knoxville, Tennessee, by General Longstreet, and it was feared that no help could reach him in time to save him. The only hope lay in cutting Longstreet's line of supplies and compelling him to raise the siege. This line was the railroad from Richmond to Knoxville, passing through Salem. Four confederate armies, any one of them larger than Averell's, lay between him and the railroad marked for destruction. But when the order was given, his veteran cavalry, stationed at New Creek, now Keyser, West Virginia, went forward, moving in a course almost



as straight as an arrow; rode five days and nights; struck a blow at Salem which was felt throughout the Southern Confederacy; and out-rode, out-ran, outgeneraled and out-fought twelve thousand rebels that tried to hem them in, and they returned in triumph. The story is worth a statement more in detail. His force was largely West Virginians, and many of the old veterans still live, and not a few of them attribute their broken constitutions to the terrible hardships endured during the twenty days occupied in that raid; now drenched with rain; now climbing mountains and dragging cannon by hand in cold so intense that cattle froze to death in the fields.

General Averell's force reached New Creek November 18, from the Droop mountain campaign. On December 6, 1863, he was notified that hard service was ahead of him, and to prepare for it. That night he went to Cumberland to consult with the department commander concerning the proposed raid. Averell asked that movements be made from several quarters against the confederates near his line of march, to confuse them as to the real object of the raid, and also to assist him in making his escape after leaving Salem. He knew that confederate troops would be rushing from all sides to intercept him. His line of march was from New Creek, through Petersburg, Franklin, Monterey, Back Creek, Gatewood's, Callaghan's, Sweet Sulphur Springs, New Castle to Salem; much of the way following the generalline of the summit of the Alleghanies. In order to distract attention from him he asked that General Scammon advance from the Kanawha to Greenbrier and Monroe counties; Colonel Moor to march into Pocahontas county; Colonel Sullivan to threaten Staunton from the direction of Woodstock in the Shenandoah valley; Colonel Thoburn was to threaten Staunton from the direction of Monterey.

The march began December 8. Sufficient time was not given to shoe all the horses before starting, and the



soldiers had to finish it on the road whenever an opportunity was presented; and these opportunities did not come often. The command of about thirty-three hundred men reached Monterey December 11. Colonel Thoburn with seven hundred men was sent to threaten Staunton, and Averell moved on in a terrible rain which swelled the mountain streams to torrents. In the eastern part of Pocahontas county he had a fight with confederates under Jackson, dispersed them, destroyed their wagons, and hurried on, following an obscure road through incessant rains. On December 14 he was opposite Greenbrier county, but east of the Alleghanies, and here learned that forces of confederates under Echols were in Monroe county, almost ahead of him, having been driven there by General Scammon who had advanced from the Kanawha valley. In order to deceive these confederates, Averell made a false movement in the direction of Covington; then, at two o'clock on the morning of December 15, pushed forward up Dunlap creek, in a night as dark as dungeon.

A ride of eight hours brought the squadron to Sweet Sulphur valley where a halt was made of two hours to feed the horses and make coffee, preparing for the dash into Salem which they hoped to reach by daylight the next morning. At one o'clock in the afternoon of December 15, the advance was made. From the top of Sweet Springs mountain a splendid view was opened before them. Averell, in his official report speaks of it thus: "Seventy miles to the eastward the Peaks of Otter reared their summits above the Blue Ridge, and all the space between was filled with a billowing ocean of hills and mountains; while behind us the great Alleghanies, coming from the north with the grandeur of innumerable tints, swept past, and faded in the southern horizon." Newcastle was passed during the night. Averell's advance guard were mounted on fleet horses, and carried repeating rifles. They allowed no one to go ahead of them. They cap-



tured a squad of confederates now and then, and learned from these that Averell's advance was as yet unknown in that quarter. It was, however, known at that time at Salem, but it was not known at what point he was striking. Valuable military stores were at Salem, and at that very time a trainload of soldiers was hurrying up from Lynchburg to guard the place. When within four miles of Salem a troop of confederates were captured. They had come out to see if they could learn anything of Averell, and from them it was ascertained that the soldiers from Lynchburg were hourly expected at Salem. Averell saw that no time was to be lost. From this point it became a race between Averell's cavalry and the Lynchburg train loaded with confederates, each trying to reach Salem first. The whistling of the engine in the distance was heard, and Averell saw that he would be too late if he advanced with his whole force. So, he set forward with three hundred and fifty horsemen, and two rifled cannon, and went into Salem on a dead run; people on the road and streets parting right and left to let the squadron pass. The train loaded with confederates was approaching the depot. Averell wheeled a cannon into position and fired three times in rapid succession, the first ball missing, but the next passing through the train almost from end to end, and the third following close after. The locomotive was uninjured, and it reversed, and backed up the road in a hurry, disappearing in the direction whence it had come. Averell cut the telegraph wires. The work of destroying the railroad was begun. When the remainder of the force came up, detachments were sent four miles east and twelve miles west to destroy the railroad and bridges.

Among the stores destroyed were one hundred thousand bushels of shelled corn; ten thousand bushels of wheat; two thousand barrels of flour; fifty thousand bushels of oats; one thousand sacks of salt; one hundred wagons, and large quantities of clothing, leather, cotton, harness, shoes,



saddles, tools, and many other things. The depot, water station, turntables, a large pile of bridge timber, and other stores were burned. Five bridges were destroyed and the track torn up as much as possible for sixteen miles, and the rails twisted to render them useless. Private property was untouched. Six hours were spent in the work of destruction.

It was now 4 p. m., December 16, and Averell set out upon his return. Word had been given out that he would take the road to Buchanan; but this was a ruse, and it subsequently proved that the confederates had been deceived by it and had marched toward that point, expecting to head Averell off. But he was many miles away. He had started back over the way by which he came. Seven miles from Salem a halt was made for the night. The troops were exhausted, and a rest was absolutely necessary. That night it rained heavily, and for the following twenty-four hours. It looked as if Averell's force was doomed. He had performed the work which he was sent to do, and all that remained for him was to save himself if he could. The confederates were closing in on all sides. Fitzhugh Lee, Jackson, Early, Echols, each had an army, and smaller forces were on all sides. Averell was hemmed in, and practically surrounded by more than twelve thousand rebels; and that, too, while rain fell in torrents; creeks overflowed their banks; rivers deluged the country; bridges were broken down or destroyed; nearly every avenue of escape was held by the enemy in overwhelming numbers. Averell's troops dared everything, endured everything, rain, cold, hunger, fatigue, assaults of enemies seen and unseen. In crossing the raging torrents, heavy caissons were swept away and men and horses were drowned. But there was no rest. The only escape from destruction was to push on; and on Averell went. He captured confederate scouts and learned something of the positions of their forces. There was little comfort in this. Fitzhugh



Lee was ahead of him and Jones was ready to fall on his flank, while Echols, Jackson and Early were uncomfortably near. Averell was trying to cross into West Virginia in Monroe, Greenbrier or Pocahontas county. Echols was in Monroe, shutting off escape in that quarter.

Drenched with rain, muddy and hungry, the force reached Newcastle about sunset December 18. The ammunition was wet, and Averell did not know whether it could be used in battle. At nine o'clock that night the column again took the road to Sweet Springs. About two o'clock in the morning of December 19, confederate pickets were encountered. These fled. As soon as the confederate pickets were driven away, Averell halted and built fires to deceive the enemy whom he knew to be near. He left the fires burning and set forward toward the Covington and Fincastle pike. The night was exceedingly dark and cold. He marched thirty miles through the forest, and about noon reached the Fincastle pike, fifteen miles from the bridge below Covington, across the James. The river was reported unfordable, on account of high water and floating ice. Averell carefully calculated his chances of reaching this bridge in advance of the confederates. He had his doubts; but there was no other avenue of escape, and he set forward toward the bridge. After proceeding seven miles a confederate force appeared in the road ahead between him and the bridge. An attack on the confederates was immediately made. They broke and fled, and Averell's cavalry after them. For eight miles it was a desperate race. Averell knew that the rebels were trying to reach the bridge to set it on fire before he could cross; and he was determined they should have no time to strike a match. Down the pike went the rebels in a headlong run for the bridge, and Averell at their heels. At nine o'clock at night the bridge was reached. The confederates had kindling wood piled ready for firing, but they were not given time to apply the match, Averell



captured the bridge. Five miles beyond was another, across the same river, and the rebels proceeded to that, and the union cavalry followed. Fagots had been piled on it also for firing, but the union cavalry was in time to save it.

Before Averell could get his forces across the bridges the confederates under Jackson were upon him. They took position upon the bluff above the river and cut his army in two. Part was on one side of the river and part on the other. The confederates made desperate efforts to capture the bridge, but failed. The battle continued all night, and Averell lost one hundred and twenty-four men, besides some drowned while trying to cross the river. Finding that Jackson could not be dislodged while the bridges remained, Averell, who had tried unsuccessfully all night to bring the remainder of his forces across, ordered the bridges to be set on fire. He sent word to his men still on the other side to swim the river. This they did, but some of the ambulances and wagons were lost.

While hemmed in on all sides, and when apparently every avenue of escape was closed, Averell intercepted a dispatch from General Jones to General Early, dated December 19. From this dispatch he learned the positions of the various forces of the confederates around him. The outlook was gloomy, but by knowing what routes were impassable he could gain some advantage. He relied on help from the forces which he supposed had been sent to Greenbrier and Pocahontas counties, according to orders, to render him assistance on his return. But by some blunder these forces had been withdrawn, although he did know it at that time. The demonstrations against Staunton had also failed to be of any service to him. Thus, cut off from all hope of help, he was left in the mountains to struggle against four or five times his own number. But the brave never despair. From the intercepted dispatch he learned that the rebel post at Callighan's, near the summit of the



Alleghanies, was held by only a small force, if at all, and he pushed for that place, and was in possession of it while the bridges across the James river were still burning. A formal demand for his surrender was received from General Early, but he made no reply to it. He took an obscure road across the Alleghanies to Hillsboro, in Pocahontas county, and reached the base of Droop mountain, his recent battlefield. The confederates made almost superhuman efforts to capture him, but they usually took wrong roads. The citizens of the country, who knew the roads best, considered Averell's escape impossible. After reaching Pocahontas county and crossing the Greenbrier river, several attacks on the rear were made by the confederates, but they were generally repulsed with small loss.

The weather had now grown intensely cold. The roads were sheets of ice. The horses could not pull the artillery up the hills, and men performed this service. Nor could the heavy guns be held back, going down hill. Trees were tied behind the cannon to act as brakes while descending the mountains. For two days men dragged the cannon. News had reached Beverly that Averell was returning, hungry, freezing and almost exhausted. Reinforcements, with supplies were sent to meet him. Beverly was reached after a march of four hundred miles in sixteen days. Many of the men were frozen. Averell's feet were swollen and were wrapped in sacks. Fearing that the confederates would retaliate by sending a force on a raid into the South branch valley, Averell did not stop at Beverly, but proceeded to the railroad in Taylor county, and moved his command by rail to Martinsburg, arriving there just in time to confront and drive back the rebels who were advancing upon that place. The United States government, in consideration of the services rendered by Averell's force, presented each man with a new suit of clothes and a new pair of shoes to replace those worn out on the march.



*The Dublin Raid.*—In May, 1864, an important movement was made against the Virginia and Tennessee railroad, in the vicinity of the village of Dublin, in Pulaski county. The cavalry was under the command of General Averell, while General George Crook was in command of all the forces. On May 9 occurred a desperate battle on Cloyd mountain, near the boundary between Giles and Pulaski counties, Virginia. General Crook commanded the union forces, and the confederates were under General Albert G. Jenkins. For a long time the issue of the battle was doubtful; but at length General Jenkins fell, and his army gave way. He was mortally wounded, and died soon after. His arm had been amputated at the shoulder by a federal surgeon. In the meantime General Averell, with a force of cavalry, two thousand strong, advanced by wretched roads and miserable paths through Wyoming county, West Virginia, into Virginia, hoping to strike at Saltville, or Wytheville before the confederates could concentrate for defense. When the troops entered Tazewell county they had numerous skirmishes with small parties of confederates. When Tazewell court house was reached it was learned that between four and five thousand confederates, commanded by Generals W. E. Jones and John H. Morgan, had concentrated at Saltville, having learned of Averell's advance. The defences north of that town were so strongly fortified that the union troops could not attack with hope of success. Averell turned, and made a rapid march toward Wytheville, in order to prevent the confederates from marching to attack General Crook. Arriving near Wytheville on May 10, he met Jones and Morgan, with five thousand men, marching to attack General Crook. Averell made an attack on them, or they on him, as both sides appeared to begin the battle about the same time. Although out-numbered and out-flanked, the union forces held their ground four hours, at which time the vigor of the confederate fighting began to slack. After dark the



confederates withdrew. The union loss was one hundred and fourteen in killed and wounded. Averell made a dash for Dublin, and the confederates followed as fast as possible. The bridge across New river, and other bridges, were destroyed, and the railroad was torn up. Soon after crossing New river on the morning of May 12, the confederates arrived on the opposite bank, but they could not cross the stream. They had been unable to prevent the destruction of the railroad property, although their forces out-numbered Averell's. The union cavalry rejoined General Crook, and the army returned to the Kanawha valley by way of Monroe county.

*Notes.*—West Virginia furnished 36,530 soldiers for the union armies, and about 7,000 for the confederate armies.

The first union regiment recruited in the state was Colonel Kelley's, at Wheeling. It took the field May 25, 1861.

The first armed confederate killed in the state, and also said to be the first killed in the war, was Captain Christian Roberts. His death occurred on the morning of May 27, 1861, at Glover's Gap, on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, between Wheeling and Grafton. He fell in a fight with a squad of union soldiers under Lieutenant Oliver R. West, Company A, Second Virginia Infantry, afterwards the Fifth West Virginia Cavalry.

The first enlisted union soldier killed in the state, and also said to be the first killed in the war, was Bailey Brown, of Company B, Second Virginia Infantry, afterwards Fifth West Virginia Cavalry. He was killed at Fetterman, near Grafton, on the night of May 22, 1861. The shot was fired from a flintlock musket in the hands of Daniel W. S. Knight, of Captain Robinson's company, Twenty-fifth Virginia confederate regiment.

The first regiment to enlist for the three years service in the state was the Second West Virginia infantry.

The last gun ever put into position by General Lee was



silenced by General Thomas S. Harris, of West Virginia, on the day of the surrender at Appomattox; and the last bugle command given the union troops prior to Lee's surrender, was given by Nathaniel Sisson, also a West Virginian.



## CHAPTER XIX.



### THE NEWSPAPERS OF WEST VIRGINIA.

Newspaper history commenced in the territory now forming West Virginia, nearly one hundred years ago; that is, in 1803. . The beginning was small, but ambitious; and although the first journal to make its appearance in the state, ceased to pay its visits to the pioneers generations ago; yet, from that small beginning has grown a press which will rank with that of any state in the union, if population and other conditions are taken into account. West Virginia has no large city, and consequently has no paper of metropolitan pretensions; but its press fulfills every requirement of its people; faithfully represents every business interest; maintains every honorable political principle; upholds morality; encourages education, and has its strength in the good will of the people. This chapter can do little more than present an outline of the growth of journalism in this state, together with facts and figures relating to the subject.

The first paper published in West Virginia was the *Monongalia Gazette*, at Morgantown in 1803. The *Farmer's Register*, printed at Charlestown, Jefferson county, was the next. These were the only papers in the state in 1810. The oldest paper still being published in West Virginia is the *Virginia Free Press*, printed at Charlestown, Jefferson county. It was founded in 1821. The *Monongalia Gazette* was perhaps an up-to-date journal in its day; but it would be unsatisfactory at the present time. It was in four page form, each page sixteen inches long and ten inches wide. There were four columns to the page. Its



editors were Campbell & Britton; its subscription rate was six cents a copy, or two dollars a year. It was impossible that a weekly paper so small could efficiently cover the news, even though the news of that day was far below the standard set for the present time. Yet, had such a paper been edited in accordance with modern ideas, it could have exerted a much wider influence than it did exert. No other paper was near enough to make inroads upon its field of circulation and influence; and it might have had the whole region to itself. But it did not expand, as might have been expected; on the contrary, within three years it reduced its size about one-half. More space in it was given to foreign news than to the happenings of county, state and nation. Before the days of railroads, steamboats and telegraphing, it may readily be understood that the events recorded from foreign countries were so stale at the date of their publication in the backwoods paper that they almost deserved classification as ancient history. The domestic news, particularly that relating to distant states, was usually several weeks old before it found place in the Gazette. County occurrences, and happenings in the neighboring counties, were given little attention. Many a valuable scrap of local history might have been permanently preserved in that pioneer journal; but the county historian looks through the crumpled and yellow files in vain. But, on the other hand, he encounters numerous mentions of Napoleon's movements; the emperor of Russia's undertakings, and England's achievements; all of which would be of value as history were it not that Guizot, Rambaud and Knight have given us the same things in better style; so that it is labor thrown away to search for them in the circumscribed columns of a pioneer paper printed on the forest-covered banks of the Monongahela. Joseph Campbell, one of the editors and proprietors of the Gazette, had learned the printing trade in Philadelphia. It is not known at what date the paper suspended publica-



tion. It was customary in early times, as well as at the present day, to incorporate two or more papers into one, drop the name of one and continue the publication. The Gazette may thus have passed quietly out of its individual existence.

Monongalia county fostered the first newspaper west of the Alleghenies in the state, and it also has had perhaps as many papers as any county of West Virginia. The full list, from the first till the present time, numbers between thirty and forty. The list compiled by Samuel T. Wiley, the historian of Monongalia, shows that the county had thirty-one papers prior to 1880. Nearly all of these suspended after brief careers. It would be difficult to compile a list of all the papers established in this state from the earliest times till the present. It would perhaps be impossible to do so, for some of them died in their infancy, and a copy cannot now be found. There were, no doubt, many whose very names are not now remembered. It would not be an extravagant estimate to place the total number of papers published in this state, both those still in existence and those which are dead, at five hundred. It would be a surprise to many persons to learn how ephemeral is the average newspaper. It comes and goes. It has its beginning, its prosperity, its adversity, its death. Another follows in its path. Few can be called relatively permanent. There are now more than one hundred newspapers published in West Virginia. Only nine of these were in existence in 1863, when the state was admitted into the union. These nine are the Wheeling Intelligencer, Wheeling Register, Clarksburg Telegram, Charlestown Free Press, Charlestown Spirit of Jefferson, Shepherdstown Register, Barbour County Jeffersonian, Wellsburg Herald and Point Pleasant Register. Of the papers in existence in this state in 1870 only sixteen have come down to the present day. The cause of the early death of so many papers which begin life in such earnest hope is that the



field is full. Two newspapers try to exist where there is room for only one. It does not require an evolutionist to foretell the result. Both must starve or one must quit. If one quits there is always another anxious to push in and try its luck.

West Virginia's does not differ from experiences elsewhere. Journalism in country towns is much the same the country over. In cities the business is more stable, because conducted on business principles. Men with experience and business training accustom themselves to look before they leap. The inexperienced man who is ambitious to crowd some one else out of the newspaper business in the interior towns is too prone to leap first and do his looking afterwards. There is no scarcity of good newspaper men outside the cities, and West Virginia has its share; but at the same time, there are too many persons who feel themselves called upon to enter the arena, although unprepared for the fray, and who cannot hold their own in competition with men of training in the profession. To the efforts and failures of these latter persons is due the ephemeral character of the lives of newspapers, taken as a whole. Country journalism comes to be looked upon as a changing, evanescent, uncertain thing, always respectable; only moderately and occasionally successful; inaugurated in hope; full of promise as the rainbow is full of gold; sometimes materializing into things excellent; now and then falling like Lucifer, but always to hope again. There is something sublime in the rural journalist's faith in his ability to push forward. Though failures have been many, country journalism has builded greater than it knew. West Virginia's development and the rural press have gone hand in hand. Every railroad pushing into the wilderness has carried the civilizing editor and his outfit. He goes with an unfaltering belief in printer's ink and confidence in its conquering power. He is ready to do and suffer all things. The mining town and the latest county



seat; the lumber center and the oil belt; the manufacturing village and the railroad terminus; these are the fields in which he casts his lot. Here he sets up his press; he issues his paper; he booms the town; he records the births, marriages and deaths with a monotonous faithfulness; he expresses his opinion freely and generously. In return he expects the town and the surrounding country to support his enterprise as liberally as he has given his time, talent and energy in advancing the interests of the town. Sometimes his expectations are realized; sometimes not. If not, perhaps he packs his worldly assets and sets out for another town, richer in experience but poorer in cash. There are men in West Virginia who have founded a number of newspapers, usually selling out after a year or two in order to found another journal.

This is the class of editors who blaze the way into the woods. They bear the same relation to the journalism which follows as the "tomahawk right" bore, in early days, to the plantations and estates which succeeded them. After the adventurous and restless journalist has passed on, then comes the newspaper man who calculates before he invests. He does not come in a hurry. He is not afraid some one will get ahead of him. He does not locate before he has carefully surveyed the field, and has satisfied himself that the town and the surrounding country are able to support such a journal as he proposes establishing. His aim is to merit and receive the patronage of the people. This becomes the solid, substantial paper, and its editor wields a permanent influence for good. Such papers and such editors are found all over West Virginia.

Journalism among businesses is like poetry among the fine arts—the most easily dabbled in but the most difficult to succeed in. It may not appear to the casual observer that the newspaper business is nearly always unsuccessful, or, at least, that nearly all the papers which come into existence meet untimely death in the very blossom of their



youth. An examination of the history of newspapers in nearly any old town will show that ten have failed where one has succeeded. The history of journalism in Monongalia county, already alluded to, differs little from the history of the papers in any county of equal age and population.

In 1851 when Horace Greeley was asked by a parliamentary committee from England "at what amount of population of a town in America do they first begin the publication of a weekly newspaper?" he replied that every county will have one, and a county of twenty thousand population usually has two weekly papers; and when a town has fifteen thousand people it usually has a daily paper. This rule does not state the case in West Virginia today. The average would probably show one newspaper for each six thousand people. In the small counties the average is sometimes as low as one paper to two thousand people; and not one fourth of these people subscribe for a paper. It is not difficult to see that the field can be easily oversupplied; and among newspapers there must be a survival of the fittest.

The early journals published in this state, as well as those published elsewhere at that time, say seventy or eighty years ago, were very different in appearance from those of today. The paper on which the printing was done was rough, rugged and discolored, harsh to the touch, and of a quality inferior to wrapping paper of the present time. Some of them advertised that they would take clean rags at four cents a pound in payment of subscriptions. At that time paper was made from rags. It is now mostly made from wood. The publishers no doubt shipped the rags to the paper mills and received credit on their paper accounts. Some of these early journals clung to the old style of punctuation and capitalization; and some, to judge by their appearance, followed no style at all, but were as outlandish as possible, particularly in the use of



capital letters. They capitalized all nouns, and as many other words as they could, being limited, apparently, only by the number of capital letters in their type cases.

As late as 1835 all the printing presses in the United States were run by hand power. On the earliest press the pressure necessary was obtained by means of a screw. Fifty papers an hour was fast work. The substitution of the lever for the screw increased the capacity of the press five fold. This arrangement reached its greatest development in the Washington hand press, patented in 1829 by Samuel Rust. This press is still the standby in many small offices. The printing done with it is usually good; but the speed is slow, and two hundred and fifty impressions an hour is a high average. Printers call this press "The Man Killer," because its operation requires so much physical exertion.

The early newspapers in backwoods towns attempted to pull neck and neck with the city journals. They tried to give the news from all over the world; and the result was, they let the home news go. They were long in learning that a small paper's field should be small, and that the readers of a local paper expect that paper to contain the local news. Persons who desired national and foreign news subscribed for metropolitan papers. This was the case years ago the same as now. In course of time the lesson was learned; the local papers betook themselves to their own particular fields with the result that the home paper has become a power at home. The growth of journalism has a tendency to restrict the influence of individual great papers to smaller and smaller geographical limits. All round the outer borders of their areas of circulation, other papers are taking possession of their territory, and limiting them. No daily paper now has a general and large circulation farther away from the place of publication than can be reached in a few hours. This is not so much the case with small papers. When once



firmly established they can hold their small circulation and local influence much more securely than large circulation and large influence can be held by metropolitan papers. The trouble with the country papers is that the most of them die before they can establish themselves.

Some of the earlier statesmen feared danger from what they termed a newspaper aristocracy, formed by the concentration of the influence of the press about a comparatively few journals advantageously located in commercial centers. This danger is feared no more. The power of the press has been infinitesimally divided; among the metropolitan papers first; then among those in the smaller cities; lastly, among those in the smaller towns, until all fear of concentration is a thing of the past. The fundamental law of evolution, which rules the influence of the press as it rules the destinies of nations, or the growth and decline of commerce and political power, renders it impossible that any aggregate of newspapers, acting in concert, can long wield undisputed influence over wide areas. They must divide into smaller aggregates, and subdivide again, each smaller aggregate exercising its peculiar power in its own appropriated sphere, and not trespassing upon the domains of others. The lowest subdivision is the country paper; and so secure is it from the inroads of the city journals that it can hold its ground as securely as the metropolition journal can hold its field against the paper of the interior.



## CHAPTER XX.



### GEOGRAPHY, GEOLOGY AND CLIMATE.

In this chapter will be presented facts concerning West Virginia geography, climate, soil and geology. Its geography relates to the surface of the state as it exists now; its geology takes into account, not only the present surface, but all changes which have affected the surface in the past, together with as much of the interior as may be known and understood. The climate, like geography, deals chiefly with present conditions; but the records of geology sometimes give us glimpses of climates which prevailed ages ago. The soil of a state, if properly studied, is found to depend upon geography, geology and climatology. The limits prescribed for this chapter render impossible any extended treatise; an outline must suffice.

Reference to the question of geology naturally comes first, as it is older than our present geography or climate. We are told that there was a time when the heat of the earth was so great that all substances within it or upon its surface were in a molten state. It was a white-hot globe made of all the minerals. The iron, silver, gold, rock, and all else were liquid. The earth was then larger than it is now, and the days and nights were longer. After ages of great length had passed, the surface cooled and a crust or shell was formed on the still very hot globe. This was the first appearance of "rock," as we understand the word now. The surface of the earth was no doubt very rough, but without high mountains. The crust was not thick enough to support high mountains, and all underneath of it was still melted. Probably for thousands of



years after the first solid crust made its appearance, there was no rain, although the air was more filled with moisture then than now. The rocks were so hot that a drop of water upon touching them was instantly turned to steam. But they gradually cooled, and rains fell. Up to this point in the earth's history we are guided solely by inductions from the teachings of astronomy, assisted to some extent by well-known facts of chemistry. Any description of our world at that time must be speculative, and as applicable to one part as to another. No human eye ever saw, and recognized as such, one square foot of the original crust of the earth, in the form in which it cooled from the molten state. Rains, winds, frosts and fire have broken up and worn away some parts, and with the sand and sediment thus formed, buried the other parts. But that it was exceedingly hot is not doubted; and there is not wanting evidence that only the outer crust has yet reached a tolerable degree of coolness, while all the interior surpasses the most intense furnace heat. Upheavals and depressions affecting large areas, so often met with in the study of geology, are supposed to be due to the settling down of the solid crust in one place and the consequent upheaval in another. Could a railroad train run thirty minutes, at an ordinary speed, toward the center of the earth, it would probably reach a temperature to melt iron. And, it may be stated parenthetically, could the same train run at the same speed for the same time away from the center of the earth, it would reach a temperature so cold that the hottest day would show a thermometer one hundred degrees below zero. So narrow is the sphere of our existence—below us is fire; above us “the measureless cold of space.” In a well on Bogg's run, near Wheeling, the temperature at 4,462 feet was one hundred and ten degrees. A descent of less than a mile raised the temperature sixty degrees. A well five thousand feet deep near Pittsburg had a temperature of one hundred and twenty degrees. A well in



Germany five thousand seven hundred and forty feet deep gave a temperature of one hundred and thirty-five degrees. The rate of increase in heat is nearly the same in distant parts of the world, and gives us strong evidence that only the outer crust is cool, and that intense heat lies below.

When we look out upon our quiet valleys, the Kanawha, the Potomac, the Monongahela, or contemplate our mountains, rugged and near, or robed in distant blue, rising and rolling, range beyond range, peak above peak; cliffs overhanging gorges and ravines; meadows, uplands, glades beyond; with brooks and rivers; the landscape fringed with flowers or clothed with forests; we are too apt to pause before fancy has had time to call up that strange and wonderful panorama of distant ages when the waves of a vast sea swept over all; or when only broken and angular rocks thrust their shoulders through the foam of the ocean as it broke against the nearly submerged ledges where since have risen the highest peaks of the Alleghanies and the Blue Ridge. Here where we now live have been strange scenes. Here have been beauty, awfulness and sublimity, and also destruction. There was a long age with no winter. Gigantic ferns and rare palms, enormous in size, and delicate leaves and tendrils, flourished over wide areas and vanished. And there was a time when for ages there was no summer. But we know of this from records elsewhere; for its record in West Virginia has been blotted out. Landscapes have disappeared: Fertile valleys and undulating hills, with soil deep and fruitful, have been washed away, leaving only a rocky skeleton; and in many places even this has been ground to powder and carried away, or buried under sands and drift from other regions.

An outline of some of the changes which have affected the little spot in the earth's surface, now occupied by West Virginia, will be presented, not by any means complete, but sufficient to convey an idea of the agencies which enter into the workings of geology. It is intended for the young,



into whose hands this book will come; not for those whose maturer years and greater opportunities have already made them acquainted with this sublime chapter in the book of creation.

When the crust of the earth had cooled sufficiently, rains washed down the higher portions, and the sands and sediment thus collected were spread over the lower parts. This sand, when it had become hardened, formed the first layers of rock, called strata. Some of these very ancient formations exist yet and have been seen; but whether they are the oldest of the layer rocks, no man knows. Some of the ancient layers, of great thickness, after being deposited at the sea bottoms, were heated from the interior of the earth, and were melted. In these cases the stratified appearance has usually disappeared, and they are called metamorphic rocks. Some geologists regard granite as a rock of this kind.

As the earth cooled more and more, it shrank in size, and the surface was shriveled and wrinkled in folds, large and small. The larger of these wrinkles were mountains. Seas occupied the low places; and the first brooks and rivers began to appear, threading their way wherever the best channels could be found. Rains, probably frost also, attacked the higher ridges and rocky slopes, almost destitute of soil, and the washings were carried to the seas, forming other layers of rocks on the bottoms; and thus the accumulation went on, varying in rate at times, but never changing the general plan of rock building from that day to the present. All rock, or very nearly all, in West Virginia were formed at the bottom of the ocean, of sand, mud and gravel, or of shells, or a mixture of all, the ingredients of which were cemented together with silica, iron, lime, or other mineral substance held in solution in water. They have been raised up from the water, and now form dry land, and have been cut and carved into valleys, ridges, gorges and the various inequalities seen within our state.



These rocks are sometimes visible, forming cliffs and the bottoms and banks of streams and the tops of peaks and barren mountains; but for the greater part of West Virginia, the underlying rocks are hidden by soil. This soil, however, at the deepest, is only a few feet thick, and were it all swept off we should have visible all over the state a vast and complicated system of ledges and bowlders, carved and cut to conform to every height and depression now marking the surface. The aggregate thickness of these layers, as they have been seen and measured in this state, is no less than four miles. In other words, sand and shells four miles deep (and perhaps more) were in past time spread out on the bottom of a sea which then covered West Virginia, and after being hardened into rock, were raised up and then cut into valleys and other inequalities as we see them today. The rockbuilding was not all done during one uninterrupted period; nor was there only one upheaval. West Virginia, or a portion of it, has been several times under and above the sea. The coast line has swept back and forth across it again and again. We read this history from the rocks themselves. The skilled geologist can determine, from an examination of the fossil shells and plants in a stratum, the period of the earth's history when the stratum was formed. He can determine the oldest and the youngest in a series of strata. Yet, not from fossils alone may this be determined. The position of the layers with regard to one another is often a sure guide in discovering the oldest and youngest. The sands having been spread out in layers, one above the other, it follows that those on top are not so old as those below; except in cases, unusual in this state, where strata have been folded so sharply that they have been broken and turned over. Thus the older rocks may lie above the newer.

Unmeasured as are the ages recorded in the mountains and cliffs of West Virginia, yet the most ancient of our ledges are young in comparison with those of other parts



of the world, or even of neighboring provinces. North of us is a series of rocks, the Laurentian of Canada, more than five miles thick, formed, like ours, of the slow accumulation of sand. Yet that series was finished and was probably partly worn away before the first grain of sand or the first shell, of which we have any record, found a resting place on the bottom of the Cambrian sea which covered West Virginia. If the inconceivable lapse of years required for accumulating shell and sand four miles deep in the sea bottom, where we now live, amazes us, what must we say of that vaster period reaching back into the cycles of the infant world, all of which were past and gone before the foundations of our mountains were laid! Nor have we reached the beginning yet. No man knows whether the Laurentian rocks are oldest of the layers; and if they are, still back of them stretches that dim and nebulous time, unrecorded, uncharted, penetrated only by the light of astronomy, when the unstratified rocks were taking form, from whose disintegrated material all subsequent formations have been built.

Let us begin with the Cambrian age, as geologists call it. Within the limits of our state we have little, if any, record of anything older. Were a map made of eastern United States during that early period it would show a mass of land west of us, covering the middle states, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois and beyond. Another mass of land would lie east of us, occupying the Atlantic coastal plain, from New England to South Carolina, and extending to an unknown distance eastward, where the Atlantic ocean now is. Between these two bodies of land spread a narrow arm of the sea, from the Gulf of St. Lawrence to Alabama. West Virginia was at the bottom of that sea, whose eastern coast line is believed to have occupied nearly the position, and to have followed the general direction, of what is now the Blue Ridge. Sand washed from this land east of us was spread upon the bottom of the sea and now forms the



lowest layers of rocks met with in West Virginia, the foundations of our mountains. But this rock is so deep that it is seen only in a few places where it has been brought up by folds of the strata, and where rivers have cut deep. For the most part of the state these Cambrian rocks lie buried, under subsequent formations, thousands of feet deep.

There were mountains of considerable magnitude in that land east of the sea. The country west of the sea must have been low. During the immense time, before the next great change, the eastern mountains were worn down and carried, as sand and mud, into the sea. The Silurian age followed, and as it drew near, the region began to sink. The sea which had covered the greater part of West Virginia, or at least the eastern part of it, began to overflow the country both east and west. The waters spread westward beyond the present Mississippi. The land to the eastward had become low and not much sediment was now coming from that direction. The washings from the rounded hills were probably accumulating as a deep soil in the low plains and widening valleys. Over a large part of West Virginia, during the Silurian age, thick beds of limestone were formed of shells, mixed with more or less sediment. Shell-fish lived and died in the ocean, and when dead their skeletons sank to the bottom. It is thus seen that the origin of limestone differs from that of sandstone in this, that the former is a product of water and the material for the latter is washed into water from land.

The character of rocks usually tells how far from land they were formed, and if sandstone, what kind of country furnished the material. The coarsest sandstones were deposited near shore, back of which the country was usually high and steep. Fine-grained sandstones, or shales, were probably laid down along flat shores, above which the land had little elevation. Or they may have been deposited from fine sediment which drifted a considerable distance



from land. If limestone is pure, it is proof that little sediment from the land reached it while being formed. The limestone deposited over a considerable part of West Virginia during the closing of the Cambrian and the beginning of the Silurian age forms beds from three thousand to four thousand feet thick. During the vast period required for the accumulation of this mass of shells the land to the east remained comparatively flat or continued slowly to sink. We know this, because there is not much sediment mixed with the limestone, and this would not be the case had large quantities been poured into the sea from the land.

Another great change was at hand. The land area east of us began to rise, and the surface became steep. What perhaps had been for a long time low, rounding hills, and wide, flat valleys, with a deep accumulation of soil, was raised and tilted; and the stronger and more rapid currents of the streams, and the rush of the rain water down the more abrupt slopes, sluiced off the soil into the sea. The beds of limestone were covered two thousand feet deep beneath sand and mud, the spoils from a country which must have been fertile and productive. The land was worn down. Ages on ages passed, and the work of grinding went on; the rains fell; the winds blew; the floods came; the frost of winter and the heat of summer followed each other through years surpassing record. Near the close of the Silurian time the shore of the continent to the east rose and sank. The vertical movements were perhaps small; they may have been just enough to submerge the coastal plain, then raise it above water; repeating the operation two or more times. The record of this is in the alternating coarse and fine sediments and sand composing the rocks formed during that time. At the close of the Silurian period the continent east of us was worn down again and had become low. The sea covering West Virginia had been cut off from the Gulf of St.



Lawrence by an upheaval in the state of New York. The uplift of the land seems to have been much greater during this time north of us than south. The Devonian age followed, which was a great rock-builder in the north. The aggregate thickness of the Devonian rocks in Pennsylvania is no less than nine thousand feet. From there to southward it thins out, like a long, sloping wedge, until it disappears in Alabama, after thinning to twenty-five feet in southern Tennessee. In some parts of West Virginia the Devonian rocks are seven thousand feet thick. The sediments of which these strata were made were usually fine-grained forming shales and medium sandstones, with some limestones here and there. The long, dreary Devonian age at last drew to a close, and an epoch, strange and imperfectly understood, dawned upon the earth. It was during this age that the long summer prevailed; the winterless climate over the northern hemisphere; the era of wonderful vegetation; the time of plant growth such as was perhaps never on earth before, nor will be again. It is known as the Carboniferous age.

During that period our coal was formed. The rocks deposited on the sea bottom in the Carboniferous age ranged in thickness from two thousand to eight thousand feet in different parts of West Virginia. During this time there is evidence of the breaking up and redistribution of a vast gravel bar which had lain somewhere out of reach of the waves since earlier ages. This bar, or this aggregation whether a bar or not, was made up of quartz pebbles, varying in size from a grain of sand to a cocoanut, all worn and polished as if rolled and fretted on a beach or in turbulent mountain streams for centuries. By some means the sea obtained possession of them, and they were spread out in layers, in some places hundreds of feet thick, and were cemented together, forming coarse, hard rocks. We see them along the summits of the Alleghanies, and the outlying spurs and ridges, from the southern



borders of our state, to the Pennsylvania line, and beyond. The formation is called conglomerate; and the popular names are "bean rock," "millstone grit," etc. A heavy stratum of this stone forms the floor of the coal measures. The pebbles probably represent the most indestructible remnants of mountains, once seamed with quartz veins, but degraded and obliterated before the middle of the Carboniferous era, perhaps long before. The quartz, on account of its hardness, resisted the grinding process which pulverized the adjacent rocks, and remained as pebbles, in bars and beds, until some great change swept them into the sea. Their quantity was enormous. The rocks composed of them now cover thousands of square miles to a considerable thickness.

As the Carboniferous age advanced the sea which had covered the greater part of West Virginia since Cambrian time, was nearing its last days. It had come down from the Cambrian to the Silurian, from the Silurian to the Devonian, from the Devonian to the Carboniferous, but it came down through the ages no further. From that area where the waves had rolled for a million years they were about to recede. With the passing of the sea, rose the land, which has since been crossed by ranges of the Alleghany, Blue Ridge, Laurel Ridge, and all their spurs and hills. From the middle of the Carboniferous epoch to its close was a period of disturbance over the whole area under consideration. The bottom of the sea was lifted up, became dry land, and sank again. It seemed that a mighty effort was being made by the land to throw back the water which had so long held dominion. It was a protracted, powerful struggle, in which first the land and then the water gained the mastery. Back and forth for hundreds of miles swept and receded the sea. Years, centuries, millenniums, the struggle continued, but finally the land prevailed, was lifted up and the waves retreated westward and south-



ward to the Gulf of Mexico, and West Virginia was dry land, and it has remained such to this day.

Beds of coal, unlike layers of rock, are made above water, or at its immediate surface. While the oscillation between sea and land was going on, during the Carboniferous age, West Virginia's coal fields were being formed. Coal is made of wood and plants of various kind, which grew with a phenomenal luxuriance during a long period of summer that reigned over the northern half of the earth. Each bed of coal represents a swamp, large or small, in which plants grew, fell and were buried for centuries. The whole country in which coal was forming was probably low, and it was occasionally submerged for a few thousand years. During the submergence, sand and mud settled over it and hardened into rock. Then the land was lifted up again, and the material for another bed of coal was accumulated. Every alternation of coal and rock marks an elevation and subsidence of the land—the coal formed on land, the rock under water. This was the period when the sea was advancing and receding across West Virginia, as the Carboniferous age was drawing to a close.

Other ages of geology succeeded the Carboniferous; but little record of them remains in West Virginia. The land here was above the sea; no sediment could be deposited to form rocks, and of course there was little on which a permanent record could be written. The strata underlying the greater part of our state grew thicker and deeper from the Cambrian age to the Carboniferous; then the sea receded, and from that time to the present the layers of rock have been undergoing the wear and tear of the elements, and the aggregate has been growing thinner. The strata have been folded, upraised by subterranean forces and cut through by rivers. In some places the Carboniferous rocks have not yet been worn away; in other places the river gorges have reached the bottom of the Devonian rocks; in still other localities the great Silurian layers have



been cut through; and in a few places the cutting has gone down deep into the Cambrian rocks. The Glacial age, the empire of "steadfast, inconceivable cold," which followed the warm period in which coal was formed, did not write its history in West Virginia as indelibly as in some other parts of our country. The great morains and boulders so conspicuous in other localities are not found with us. No doubt that the cold here was intense; perhaps there were glaciers among the high lands; but the evidence has been well nigh obliterated.

Land seems to have been lifted up in two ways, one a vertical movement which elevated large areas and formed plateaus, but not mountains; the other, a horizontal movement which caused folds in the strata, and these folds, if large enough, are ranges of mountains. In West Virginia we have both acting in the same area. Independently of the mountains, West Virginia has a rounding form, sloping gradually upward from three directions. Imagine the mountain ranges sheared off until no irregular elevations exist in the state. The resulting figure would show West Virginia's surface as it would be presented to us if no strata had been folded to make mountain ranges. This is the shape given by the vertical upheaval since the Carboniferous age, uninfluenced by the horizontal thrust of strata. The figure would show a great swell in the surface, the highest portion at the interlocking sources of the Greenbrier, the Elk, the Potomac, the east fork of the Monongahela, and Cheat. From that highest point the surface slopes in every direction, as shown by the course of the rivers. There is a long, curved arm of the plateau thrust out toward the southwest, reaching around through Pocahontas, Greenbrier, Monroe and McDowell counties, and overlapping into the state of Virginia. The New river, from the highlands of North Carolina, cuts through this plateau to join the Kanawha on the western side. The highest part of this rounded area is perhaps three thousand



feet above sea level, not counting the mountains which stand upon the plateau; for, in order to make the matter plain, we have supposed all the mountains sheared off level with the surface of the plateau.

Having now rendered it clear that portions of West Virginia would be high if there were not a mountain in the state, let us proceed to consider how the mountains were formed and why nearly all the highest summits are clustered in three or four counties. We have already observed that ranges of mountains such as ours are formed by the folding of layers of rocks. This is apparent to any one who has seen one of our mountains cut through from top to bottom, such as the New Creek mountain at Greenland Gap. Place several layers of thick cloth on a table, push the ends toward each other. The middle of the cloth will rise in folds. In like manner were our mountains formed. The layers of rock were pushed horizontally, one force acting from the southeast, the other from the northwest. Rivers and rains have carved and cut them, changing their original features somewhat; but their chief characteristics remain. The first upheaval, which was vertical, raised the West Virginia plateau, as we believe; the next upheaval, which was caused by horizontal thrust, folded the layers of rocks which formed the plateau and made mountain ranges. From this view it is not difficult to account for so many high peaks in one small area. The mountain ranges cross the plateau, running up one slope, across the summit, and down the opposite slope. These ranges are from one thousand to nearly two thousand feet high, measuring from the general level of the country on which they stand. But that general level is itself, in the highest part, about three thousand feet above the sea. So a mountain, in itself one thousand feet in elevation, may stand upon a plateau three times that high, and thus its summit will be four thousand feet above the sea. The highest peaks in the state are where the ranges of mountains cross the



highest part of the plateau. There are many other mountains in the state which, when measured from base to summit, are as high as those just mentioned, but they do not have the advantage of resting their bases on ground so elevated, consequently their summits are not so far above sea level. To express it briefly, by a homely comparison, a five-foot man on three-foot stilts is higher than a six-foot man on the ground; a one thousand-foot mountain on a three thousand-foot plateau is higher than a two thousand-foot mountain near the sea level.

Exact measurements showing the elevation of West Virginia in various parts of its area, when studied in connection with a map of the state, show clearly that the area rises in altitude from all sides, culminating in the nest of peaks clustered around the sources of the Potomac, the Kanawha and Monongahela. The highest point in the state is Spruce mountain, in Pendleton county, 4,860 feet above sea level; the lowest point is the bed of the Potomac at Harper's Ferry, 260 feet above the sea; the vertical range is 4,600 feet. The Ohio, at the mouth of Big Sandy, on the boundary between West Virginia and Kentucky is 500 feet; the mouth of Cheat, at the Pennsylvania line is 775. A line drawn through the principal points in the state at an elevation of 1,000 feet, would not run round the state, but beginning in the southwest would follow a waving and zigzag course along the western side, across part of the northern side, and after being cut off by the high region of western Maryland, would reappear in the state. If we begin at the mouth of Crane creek, on Dry fork of Big Sandy, the one thousand foot level passes through the mouth of Dry branch on Tug fork, in McDowell county; it sweeps up the Kanawha valley to Sewell, in Fayette county, passes through Wood's ferry on the Gauley, and passes up the Elk to the line between Webster and Braxton counties. The line ascends the Little Kanawha to the mouth of Gladys creek, in Lewis county. It



sweeps up the Monongahela and Tygart's valley rivers six miles above Grafton, in Taylor county, and up the West fork to Weston. It ascends Cheat river to the mouth of Sandy, in Preston county. It crosses the North branch of the Potomac at Bloomington, in Mineral county, and ascends the South branch to the mouth of the North fork, in Grant county. The line is almost level with the tops of the mountains in Jefferson and Berkeley counties.

The fifteen hundred foot contour line, beginning at the mouth of Cucumber creek, in McDowell county, follows the upper valleys and ridges around to the New river beyond the Virginia line. Thus the fifteen hundred foot contour cuts our state in two along the valley of the New river. The line returning along the face of the mountains north of New river, strikes the Greenbrier at Lowell station, and the Gauley at Hughes' ferry, the Elk at Addison, and the Little Kanawha at the boundary between Upshur and Webster counties. The line goes up the Buckhannon river to the mouth of Grassy run; up Cheat to St. George, in Tucker county. East of there the line leaves the state and enters Maryland; reappearing on the North branch below Elk Garden, and ascending the South branch to Deer run, in Pendleton county. The two thousand foot line crosses the south fork of Tug river near the Virginia line, in McDowell county; passes through Mercer county, crossing the Bluestone river at the mouth of Wolf creek. It crosses the Greenbrier at the line between Pocahontas and Greenbrier counties. It ascends Dry fork of Cheat to near the mouth of Red creek, in Tucker county, and crosses the North branch of the Potomac at Schell in Grant county. The higher contour lines enclose narrower areas until when four thousand feet is reached, only peaks project above. The general level of Pocahontas county is about three thousand feet above the sea. The bed of Greenbrier river where it enters Pocahontas is three thousand three hundred feet in elevation. Where Shaver's



fork of Cheat river leaves Pocahontas, its bed is three thousand seven hundred feet. A few of the highest peaks in Pocahontas, Pendleton, Randolph and Tucker counties are: Spruce knob, Pendleton county, four thousand eight hundred and sixty feet above sea level; Bald knob, Pocahontas county, four thousand eight hundred; Spruce knob, Pocahontas county, four thousand seven hundred and thirty; High knob, Randolph county, four thousand seven hundred and ten; Mace knob, Pocahontas county, four thousand seven hundred; Barton knob, Randolph county, four thousand six hundred; Bear mountain, Pocahontas county, four thousand six hundred; Elleber ridge, Pocahontas county, four thousand six hundred; Watering Pond knob, Pocahontas county, four thousand six hundred; Panther knob, Pendleton county, four thousand five hundred; Weiss knob, Tucker county, four thousand four hundred and ninety; Green knob, Randolph county, four thousand four hundred and eighty-five; Brier Patch mountain, Randolph county, four thousand four hundred and eighty; Yokum's knob, Randolph county, four thousand three hundred and thirty; Pointy knob, Tucker county, four thousand two hundred eighty six; Hutton's knob, Randolph county, four thousand two hundred and sixty.

We do not know whether the vertical upheaval which raised the plateau, or the horizontal compression which elevated the mountains, has yet ceased. We know that the work of destruction is not resting. Whether the uplift is still acting with sufficient force to make our mountains higher; or whether the elements are chiseling down rocks, and lowering our whole surface, we cannot say. But this we can say, if the teachings of geology may be taken as warrant for the statement: every mountain, every hill, every cliff, rock, upland, even the valleys, and the whole vast underlying skeleton of rocks, must ultimately pass away and disappear beneath the sea. Rain and frost, wind and the unseen chemical forces, will at least complete



the work of destruction. Every rock will be worn to sand, and the sand will go out with the currents of our rivers, until the rivers no longer have currents, and the sea will flow in to cover the desolation. The sea once covered a level world; the world will again be level, and again will the sea cover it.

There is greater diversity of climate in West Virginia than in almost any other area of the United States of equal size. The climate east of the Alleghenies is different from that west of the range; while that in the high plateau region is different from either. The state's topography is responsible for this, as might be expected from a vertical range of more than four thousand feet, with a portion of the land set to catch the west wind, and a portion to the east, and still other parts to catch every wind that blows. Generally speaking, the country east of the Alleghenies has the warmer and dryer climate. In the mountain regions the summers are never very hot, and the winters are always very cold. The thermometer sometimes falls thirty degrees below zero near the summit of the Alleghenies; while the highest summer temperature is seldom above ninety degrees, but the record shows ninety-six. The depth of snow varies with the locality and the altitude. Records of snow six and seven feet deep near the summits of the highest mountains have been made. At an elevation of fifteen hundred feet above the sea, there was snow forty-two inches deep in 1856, along the mountains and valleys west of the Alleghenies. In 1831, at an elevation of less than one thousand feet, snow accumulated three feet deep between the mountains and the Ohio river. Tradition tells of a snow in the northwestern part of the state in 1780 which was still deeper; but exact measurements were not recorded. The summer of 1854 was almost rainless west of the mountains. In the same region in 1834 snow fell four inches deep on the fifteenth of May; and on June 5, 1859, a frost killed almost



every green thing in the central and northern part of the state.

The average annual rainfall for the state of West Virginia, including melted snow, is about forty-seven inches. The precipitation is greater west of the Alleghanies than east, and greatest near the summit of these mountains, on the western side. Our rains and snows come from two general directions, from the west-southwest, and from the east. Local storms may come from any direction. Eastern storms are usually confined to the region east of the Alleghanies. The clouds which bring rains from that quarter come from the Atlantic ocean. The high country following the summits of the Appalachian range from Canada almost to the Gulf of Mexico is the dividing line between the two systems of rains and winds which visit West Virginia. Storms from the Atlantic move up the gentle slope from the coast to the base of the mountains, precipitating their moisture in the form of rain or snow as they come. They strike the abrupt eastern face of the Alleghanies, expending their force and giving out the remainder of their moisture there, seldom crossing to the west side. The Blue Ridge is not high enough to interfere seriously with the passage of clouds across their summits; but the Alleghanies are usually a barrier, especially for eastern storms. As the clouds break against their sides there are sometimes terrific rains below, while very little, and perhaps none falls on the summit. On such an occasion, an observer on one of the Alleghany peaks can look down upon the storm and can witness the play of lightning and hear the thunder beneath him. Winds which cross high mountains seldom deposit much rain or snow on the leeward side.

Whence, then does the western part of our state receive its rains? Not from the Atlantic, because the winds which bring rain for the country west of the Alleghanies, blow towards that ocean, not from it. No matter



in what part of the world rain or snow falls, it was derived from vapor taken up by the sun from some sea or ocean. An insignificant portion of the world's rainfall is taken up as vapor from land. From what sea, then, do the winds blow which bring the rain that falls against the western slopes of the mountains, and waters the country to the Ohio river and beyond?

Take the back track of the winds and follow them to their starting point, and that will settle the question. They come from a direction a little west of southwest. That course will lead to the Pacific ocean west of Mexico. Go on in the same direction two thousand or three thousand miles, and reach the equator. Then turn at right angles and go southeast some thousand miles further and reach that wide domain of the Pacific which stretches from South America to Australia. There, most probably, would be found the starting point of the winds which bring us rain. The evidence to substantiate this statement is too elaborate and complex to be given here; suffice it that the great wind systems of the world, with their circuits, currents and counter-currents, have been traced and charted until they are almost as well known as are the rivers of the world. Not only is the great distance from which our rains come an astonishing theme for contemplation, but the immense quantity transported is more amazing—a sheet of water nearly four feet thick and covering an area of twenty thousand square miles, lifted by the sun's rays every year from the South Pacific, carried through the air ten thousand miles and sprinkled with a bountiful profusion upon our mountains, hills, vales, meadows and gardens to make them pleasing and fruitful.



# CHAPTER XXI.

—«O»—

## WEST VIRGINIA'S FOREST TREES

There are four hundred and twelve species of forest trees in North America, exclusive of Mexico. Of these one hundred and three species are found in West Virginia. The Atlantic coast has two hundred and ninety-two species; the Pacific coast fewer than one hundred. There are not more than thirty species between the Alleghanies and the Rocky mountains which are not also found on one coast or the other. West Virginia, with less than twenty-five thousand square miles, contains in its forests one-fourth of all the species of trees, north of Mexico, in the whole American continent, and its number exceeds those of the Pacific coast from the Gulf of California to the shores of the Arctic ocean, embracing above one million square miles, ranging in temperature from the torrid to the frigid zones. It is usually the case that a certain tree is found over a wide country, but there is always some restricted territory in which it reaches its greatest development. The difference in size and appearance between this tree at its best and at its worst is often so great that a person acquainted with it at one extreme would scarcely recognize it at the other. A number of the forest trees found in West Virginia reach their greatest development in this state. Few territories of the world, so limited in area, can show the fullest development of as many species. The difference between trees and shrubs, as usually insisted on by botanists, is this: a tree has one straight, woody stem, which branches above the ground. A shrub does not have that characteristic. Trees and shrubs are not always dis-



tinguished by their size. Some trees are smaller than some shrubs; as, in Greenland, the former may not be six inches high, and in Florida the latter may be thirty feet. There is no well understood reason why a certain species among trees flourishes in one territory and is absent from an adjoining area of similar climate and soil. There is no doubt that trees and plants, as species, migrate the same as animals, but of course much more slowly and in a different way. They spread from one area to another. Yet, from some unknown cause, there are lines which it seems a certain species cannot pass. To this is largely due the grouping of one kind of trees in one part of an area and another kind in another part. In West Virginia may be found a belt of white pine extending across three or four counties. Parts of the adjoining counties have no white pine. The persimmon flourishes in one county, in one valley, in one range of hills, and is not found on similar hills or in similar valleys not far away. The black haw is also select, and seemingly unreasonable as to its habitat. The same observation might be truthfully made of other trees. Sometimes a certain soil is unfriendly to a certain species of plant, while other plants grow upon it. There is a kind of laurel in West Virginia which will no more grow on a limestone soil than in a gorge of ice.

In this brief chapter little more will be attempted than to present a catalogue of the species of forest trees found in West Virginia. Care has been taken to make the list complete. Some of the species are found only in one or two localities in the state, while others cover the whole area. Perhaps the chief cause for West Virginia's diversity of forest trees is the peculiar topography of the state, by which its climate and soil are affected. It has a greater average elevation than any other state east of the Mississippi, yet it possesses much low country, the lowest being the district along the Potomac, at and above Harper's Ferry. It has climate and soil peculiar to lofty peaks; to



ranges of mountains less elevated; to upland ridges; to narrow valleys and coves; to low hills and wide, fertile valleys. The rainfall on the western slopes of the Alleghany range is very heavy. It is somewhat less westward of that range, and is still less east of it. Thus the climate and soil vary exceedingly within an area of less than twenty-five thousand square miles. The trees suited to each soil and climate have taken possession of such localities as they like best. In the catalogue which follows, the popular name of the species is first given and the botanical name follows for the benefit of those who care to examine the subject more particularly.

CUCUMBER, or mountain magnolia, *magnolia acuminata*. It grows best along the Alleghanies.

ELKWOOD, or umbrella tree, *magnolia umbrella*. On western slope of the southern Alleghanies its highest development is reached.

YELLOW POPLAR, *liriodendron tulipifera*, sometimes attains a height of one hundred and eighty feet. The botanist Ridgway describes trunks ten feet in diameter. It is estimated that four billions of feet of yellow poplar stand in the forests of West Virginia, more than half on Cheat river and its tributaries.

PAWPAW, or custard apple, *asimina triloba*, grows best east of the Alleghanies.

LIN, *tilia Americana*, called also lime tree, basswood and bee tree. Its bloom is rich in honey.

WAHOO, or white bass wood, *tilia heterophylla*. It is sometimes confounded with lin, which it resembles.

PRICKLY ASH, or toothache tree *xanthoxylum Americanum*.

WAFER ASH, or hoptree, sometimes called shrubby trefoil, *ptelia trifoliata*.

AMERICAN HOLLY, *ilex opaca*. This is an evergreen, popular for Christmas decorations. It is not found in all parts of West Virginia.



INDIAN CHERRY, *rhamnus Caroliniana*. The wood is of little value, but the fruit is pleasant to the taste.

FETID BUCKEYE, or Ohio buckeye, *æsculus glabra*. This is the best wood in the world for artificial limbs.

SWEET BUCKEYE, *æsculus flava*. This and fetid buckeye are of the same genus, but this has fragrant blossoms. The nuts, when eaten by cattle, are injurious.

STRIPED MAPLE, *acer Pennsylvanicum*. It has other names, moosewood, striped dogwood, goosefoot maple, whistlewood. It is seldom more than seven inches in diameter. There are six species and one variety of maple found in the forests of West Virginia.

MOUNTAIN MAPLE, *acer spicatum*, grows from Georgia almost to the Arctic ocean.

SUGAR TREE, or sugar maple, hard maple, rock maple, *acer saccharinum*. Bird's eye maple and curled maple are accidental forms. Black sugar maple, *acer nigrum*, is a variety of the sugar tree.

SOFT MAPLE, *acer dasycarpum*; also called white maple and silver maple. It is seldom met with east of the Alleghanies in West Virginia.

RED MAPLE, *acer rubrum*, or swamp maple. The bark is sometimes used with sulphate of iron in making ink.

ASH-LEAVED MAPLE, or box elder, *negundo aceroides*, is one of the most widely distributed trees of the American forests.

STAGHORN SUMACH, *rhus typhena*.

DWARF SUMACH, *rhus copallina*. The leaves and bark are largely used in tanning.

POISON SUMACH, or poison elder, *rhus venenata*. The poison of this tree is due to a volatile principle called toxicodendric acid.

LOCUST, or black locust, *robinia pseudoacacia*. The wood is durable in contact with the ground. Of late years great ravage has been committed on this tree by the locust-borer.



**COFFEE NUT**, *glymnocladus Canadensis*. The seeds are used as coffee, and the leaves as poison for house flies.

**HONEY LOCUST**, *gleditschia triacanthos*, also known as sweet locust, honey shucks and three-thorned acacia. There are two or more varieties, one nearly destitute of thorns.

**REDBUD**, or Judas tree, *cercis Canadensis*.

**WILD PLUM**, or Canada plum, *prunus Americana*, has been cultivated for the fruit until it is almost a domestic tree.

**CHICASAW PLUM**, or hog plum, *prunus angustifolia*, is not believed to be a native of West Virginia, but was imported from the west, and now grows wild west of the Alleghanies.

**WILD RED CHERRY**, or pigeon cherry, *prunus Pennsylvanica*. It flourishes best near the summit of the Alleghanies. It is sometimes called choke cherry.

**WILD BLACK CHERRY**, *prunus serotina*. This valuable tree reaches its greatest development in West Virginia.

**SWEET SCENTED CRAB**, *pyrus coronaria*, so called on account of its blossoms.

**AMERICAN CRABAPPLE**, *pyrus angustifolia*.

**MOUNTAIN ASH**, *pyrus Americana*, grows only on high mountains in West Virginia. It extends to Greenland.

**COCKSPUR THORN**, or Newcastle thorn, *cratægus crus-galli*. The long, sharp thorns are occasionally used as pins for fastening woolsacks.

**RED HAW**, or white thorn, scarlet haw *cratægus coccinea*, is the heaviest wood in West Virginia. The name scarlet haw is misleading, as the true scarlet haw is not found in this state.

**BLACK THORN**, or pear haw, *cratægus tomentosa*. There are several varieties; that which bears the largest fruit *mispilus pometata*, dull red or yellow, reaches its highest development in West Virginia. The tree has a wide geographical range.



WASHINGTON THORN, *crataegus cordata*, is found chiefly near the Alleghanies.

SERVICE TREE, *amelanchier Canadensis*, called also June berry, shad bush, May cherry, grows from Labrador to Florida, but reaches its greatest development on the Alleghany mountains. A variety found on the summit of that range has a tree only a few feet high with fruit sweet and pleasant.

WITCH HAZEL, *hamamelis Virginica*, reaches its highest development among the Alleghanies.

SWEET GUM, or red gum, starleaved blisted, liquidamber, *liquidamber styraciflua*, is exceedingly tough as a wood.

DOGWOOD, *cornus alternifolia*.

FLOWERING DOGWOOD, or boxwood, *cornus Florida*.

SOUR GUM, or black gum, pepperidge, tupelo, *nyssa sylvatica*. This is the most unwedgeable wood in West Virginia. There are many varieties with differences so slight that botanists cannot agree on names for them. Marshall groups them as "forest gums," and Wangenheim as "many-flowered gums."

SHEEPBERRY, or nannyberry, *viburnum prunifolium*, emits a disagreeable odor.

BLACK HAW, or stagbush, *viburnum prunifolium*.

SORREL TREE, or sourwood, *oxydendrum arboreum*.

CALICO BUSH, or small laurel, ivy, spoonwood, *kalmia latifolia*, is poisonous to sheep and cattle.

GREAT LAUREL, or rose bay, *rhododendron maximum*, when in bloom is one of the most gorgeous trees in the world. It never grows over limestone.

PERSIMMON, *diospyros Virginiana*.

SNOWDROP TREE, *halesia tetrapetra*, has its northern limit in West Virginia. It is seldom seen growing wild in this state, but is common in cultivation.

WHITE ASH, *fraxinus Americana*, has large commercial value as lumber.



RED ASH, *fraxinus pubescens*, is sometimes mistaken for white ash, but it is a smaller tree.

GREEN ASH, *fraxinus viridis*. The wood is inferior to white ash, but resembles it in appearance.

BLACK ASH, or hoop ash, ground ash, *fraxinus sambucifolia*, is one of the most northern of the species in America, reaching Newfoundland.

SASSAFRAS, *sassafras officinate*. Although this well-known wood is plentiful in West Virginia, it does not reach its greatest development in this state, but in Arkansas, where it attains a height of one hundred feet and a diameter of seven feet.

SLIPPERY ELM, or red elm, moose elm, *ulmus fulva*, is valuable for its mucilaginous and nutritious inner bark, used for medicinal purposes.

WHITE ELM, or water elm, *ulmus Americana*.

ROCK ELM, *ulmus racemosa*; also known as cork elm, hickory elm, white elm, cliff elm. The wood is largely used for bicycle rims.

SUGARBERRY, or hockberry, *celtis occidentalis*.

RED MULBERRY, *morus rubra*.

SYCAMORE, or buttonwood, *platanus occidentalis*. This is the largest tree of the Atlantic states, sometimes attaining a height of one hundred and thirty feet and a trunk diameter of fourteen feet. The largest specimens are usually hollow.

WHITE WALNUT, or butternut, *juglans cinerea*.

BLACK WALNUT, *juglans nigra*. This valuable wood reaches its greatest development in West Virginia, west of the Alleghanies. It is a splendid forest tree, sometimes attaining a height of one hundred and forty-five feet. It does not form extensive forests in this state, but the trees are scattered.

SHELLBARK HICKORY, *carya alba*, is of the first economic value.



BLACK HICKORY, *carya tomentosa*, is also called king nut, mocker nut, big bud hickory, and white heart hickory.

BROWN HICKORY, *carya porcina*, is sometimes confounded with black hickory. It is also called pig nut and switch bud hickory. It is a little heavier than black hickory.

BITTER HICKORY, or swamp-hickory, *carya amara*.

WHITE OAK, *quercus alba*, reaches its greatest development in West Virginia, along the western slopes of the Alleghanies. There are thirty-seven species of oak in the United States, of which fourteen are found in West Virginia. There are at least sixty-one varieties, and a full share of them belongs to this state.

POST OAK, or iron oak, *quercus obtusiloba*.

SWAMP WHITE OAK, *quercus bicolor*. A tree of this species at Genesee, New York, the largest, perhaps in the world, reached a diameter of ten feet.

COW OAK, or basket oak, *quercus michauxii*.

CHESTNUT OAK, *quercus prinus*.

CHINQUAPIN OAK, *quercus prinoides*. The wood of this tree is the heaviest of all the oak family in this state. The chinquapin has a remarkable ability of adapting itself to all sorts of environments, and it changes its shape, size and other characteristics to conform to its surroundings. East of the Alleghanies it is usually a shrub.

RED OAK, *quercus rubra*. There are six well-defined varieties of red oak; not all, however, in West Virginia.

SCARLET OAK, *quercus coccinea*.

QUERCITRON OAK, *quercus tinctoria*. The bark of this tree is much used in tanning.

BLACK OAK, *quercus nigra*.

SPANISH OAK, *quercus falcata*.

PIN OAK, or water oak, *quercus palustris*, reaches its greatest development west of the Alleghanies.

POSSUM OAK, *quercus aquatica*.

LAUREL OAK, *quercus imbricaria*.



CHESTNUT, *castanea vulgaris*, variety, *Americana*. It reaches its greatest development among the southern Alleghanies; specimens as much as thirteen feet in diameter having been measured.

BEECH, *fagus ferruginea*.

IRONWOOD, or hop horn beam, *ostrea Virginica*.

BLUE BEECH, or water beech, *carpinus Caroliniana*.

YELLOW BIRCH, or gray birch, *betula lutea*, is often mistaken for white birch, *betula alba*, variety, *populifolia*, which is not found in West Virginia. The wood is largely used in the manufacture of pill boxes.

RED BIRCH, or river birch, *betula nigra*.

BLACK BIRCH, *betula lenta*. The fermented sap of this tree is used in making birch beer.

BLACK ALDER, *almus serrulata*, has at least eight varieties. It is often little more than a thick-branching shrub.

BLACK WILLOW, *silex nigra*, has several varieties, some of which are divided into sub-varieties. The willow family offers many puzzles for botanists.

SANDBAR WILLOW, *silex longifolia*, is found along the Potomac river.

ASPEN, or quaking asp, *populus tremuloides*, is the most widely distributed North American tree, growing from the Arctic ocean to the Rio Grande, and from the Atlantic to the Pacific.

POPLAR, *populus grandidentata*, is seldom more than seventy-five feet high, or two in diameter.

WHITE CEDAR, or arbor vitæ, *thuya occidentalis*, the lightest wood in West Virginia, is found among the Alleghanies, on the rocky banks of streams.

RED CEDAR, or savin, *juniperus Virginiana*, is the most widely distributed of the cone-bearing trees of North America. Its wood is preferred to all others for lead pencils.

WHITE PINE, *pinus strobus*, reaches in this state its southern limit as an important source of lumber supply.



There is an area of about two hundred square miles, containing six hundred million feet, of marketable white pine in West Virginia.

PITCH PINE, *pinus rigida*.

HICKORY PINE, *pinus pungens*.

YELLOW PINE, *pinus mitis*, is sometimes called spruce or short-leaved pine. The wood is much heavier than that of pitch pine and nearly twice the weight of white pine.

BLACK SPRUCE, *picea nigra*, has at least three varieties. It is found near the summit of the Alleghanies.

HEMLOCK, *tsuga Canadensis*, is found in many localities among the Alleghanies. It grows best on steep hillsides facing the north, and in deep and cold ravines.

BALSAM FIR, or balm of Gilead fir, *abies balsamæ*, is not abundant anywhere in this state, but is occasionally found near the summit of the Alleghanies.

The weights of the woods of West Virginia differ greatly, ranging from red haw, the heaviest, to white cedar, the lightest. To ascertain the comparative weights of woods, the specimens are carefully cut and measured, and are made exactly of the same size. They are then dried at a temperature nearly equal to that of boiling water, and are kept in that heat until they cease to grow lighter. They are then weighed, and a record kept of each. Below will be found the weights in pounds of a cubic foot of each species of wood in this state. Fractions are omitted, and only the even pounds are given. A cubic foot of water weighs about sixty-two and a half pounds. There is no wood in this state that heavy; consequently they all float in water. The weights, from the heaviest to the lightest, are as follows:

Red haw, a little more than fifty-four pounds to the cubic foot; chinquapin, fifty-four; ironwood, fifty-two; post oak, fifty-two; shellbark hickory, fifty-two; black haw, fifty-two; flowering dogwood, fifty-one; black hickory,



fifty-one; brown hickory, fifty-one; cow oak, fifty; service, forty-nine; persimmon, forty-nine; swamp white oak, forty-eight; black thorn, forty-eight; blue ash, forty-seven; bitter hickory, forty-seven; chestnut oak, forty-seven; laurel oak, forty-seven; black birch, forty-seven; jack oak, forty-six; scarlet oak, forty-six; white oak, forty-six; sorrel tree, forty-six; sheepberry, forty-six; locust, forty-six; wild plum, forty-five; cockspur thorn, forty-five; Washington thorn, forty-five; small laurel, forty-five; rock elm, forty-five; sugar berry, forty-five; possum oak, forty-five; blue beech, forty-five; yellow oak, forty-four; green ash, forty-four; witch hazel, forty-four; sweet scented crab, forty-four; sugar tree, forty-three; black sugar maple, forty-three; coffee nut, forty-three; chickasaw plum, forty-three; crabapple, forty-three; slippery elm, forty-three; Spanish oak, forty-three; pin oak, forty-three; beech, forty-three; dogwood, forty-two; honey locust, forty-two; white ash, forty one; water elm, forty-one; red oak, forty-one; yellow birch, forty-one; sour gum, forty; red bud, forty; big laurel, thirty-nine; red ash, thirty-nine; yellow pine, thirty-eight; black walnut, thirty-eight; red maple, thirty-eight; sweet gum, thirty-seven; red mulberry, thirty-seven; red birch, thirty-six; wild black cherry, thirty-six; holly, thirty-six; prickley ash, thirty-five; snowdrop, thirty-five; sycamore, thirty-five; mountain ash, thirty-four; Indian cherry, thirty-four; striped maple, thirty-three; mountain maple, thirty-three; soft maple, thirty-three; dwarf sumach, thirty-three; pitch pine, thirty-two; wild red cherry, thirty-one; sassafras, thirty-one; sandbar willow, thirty-one; red cedar, thirty-one; hickory pine, thirty-one; cucumber, twenty-nine; black alder, twenty nine; poplar, twenty-nine; black spruce, twenty-nine; black willow, twenty-eight; chestnut, twenty-eight; fetid buckeye, twenty-eight; lin, twenty-eight; elk-wood, twenty-eight; white bass wood, twenty-seven; sweet buckeye, twenty-seven; hemlock, twenty-seven; poison



sumach, twenty-seven; box elder, twenty-seven; wafer ash, twenty-six; yellow poplar, twenty-six; pawpaw, twenty-five; butternut, twenty-five; quaking asp, twenty-five; balm of gilead, twenty-four; white pine, twenty-four; white cedar, twenty.

Estimates have been made of the amount of cordwood in the forests of West Virginia, placing the total at six hundred and fifty millions of cords. The counties of this state having the smallest proportion of forest are Harrison and Jefferson; next are Monroe, Mason, Jackson and Roane; third, Preston, Monongalia, Marion, Taylor, Barbour, Upshur, Lewis, Doddridge, Tyler, Ritchie, Wood Ohio, Hancock and Brooke. The fourth group of counties, the densest forest and proportionately largest area embraces the remainder of the state. In the first group the cordwood is estimated at five to ten cords per acre; in the second, ten to twenty cords; in the third, twenty to fifty, and in the fourth, over fifty cords. The fourth group includes more than half the state; so, it is not probably out of the way to estimate the quantity of cordwood for the whole state at forty cords per acre.

When woods are seasoned, their capacity for giving out heat in combustion is proportioned to their weights, provided that the two classes, resinous and non-resinous, are compared, each with specimens of its own class. Weights for weight, resinous woods develop about twelve per cent more heat than non-resinous; but, under ordinary circumstances, resinous woods are not wholly consumed. The smoke carries away much that might be converted into heat, in a proper furnace. For this reason resinous woods are often considered inferior to non-resinous of equal weights in the production of heat. The fault is in the furnace, not in the wood.

A cubic foot of yellow poplar, which weighs twenty-six pounds will develop, in combustion, one-half as much heat as a cubic foot of black hickory, which weighs fifty-two



pounds. A cubic foot of green wood develops, when burned, as much heat as the same quantity when dry; but the apparent results are not the same, because a portion of the heat from the green wood is required to evaporate the water in the wood. . The amount is usually about fifteen per cent. The quantity of heat given out when wood is burned is no more and no less than the quantity absorbed (if the unscientific expression may be used) from the sunlight while the tree was growing. Heat given out from burning wood was obtained from the sun; it follows, then, theoretically, and experiments have proved it, that the process of drying adds nothing to the wood, and that the green stick can develop, in combustion, as much heat as the dry.



PART II.

County History.







# CHAPTER XXII.



## COURTS AND OFFICERS.

BY H. L. SWISHER.

But little more than a decade had passed after the settlement of Jamestown before the necessity for a tribunal of justice was felt and provided for. The numerous courts of today had their origin in justice courts, or as they are more popularly called, county courts. These were established in Virginia in 1623-4. In 1652 their members were elected by the house of burgesses. It was not until 1776 that the appointing of these justices became a part of the power of the governor of the state. This power he exercised until 1852. From 1852 to 1863 the county court was composed of four justices from each magisterial district into which the county was divided. The power of appointing was taken from the governor and the justices were elected by direct vote of the people. A board of supervisors, with one member from each township of the county, took the place of the county court from 1863 to 1872. The constitution of 1872 revived the old county court and it continued until 1880. In 1880 the amendment of the eighth article of the constitution destroyed the county court and established in its stead a board of commissioners, still commonly known as the county court. This board is composed of three members elected by the people of the county and has jurisdiction over the police and fiscal affairs within the county's area.

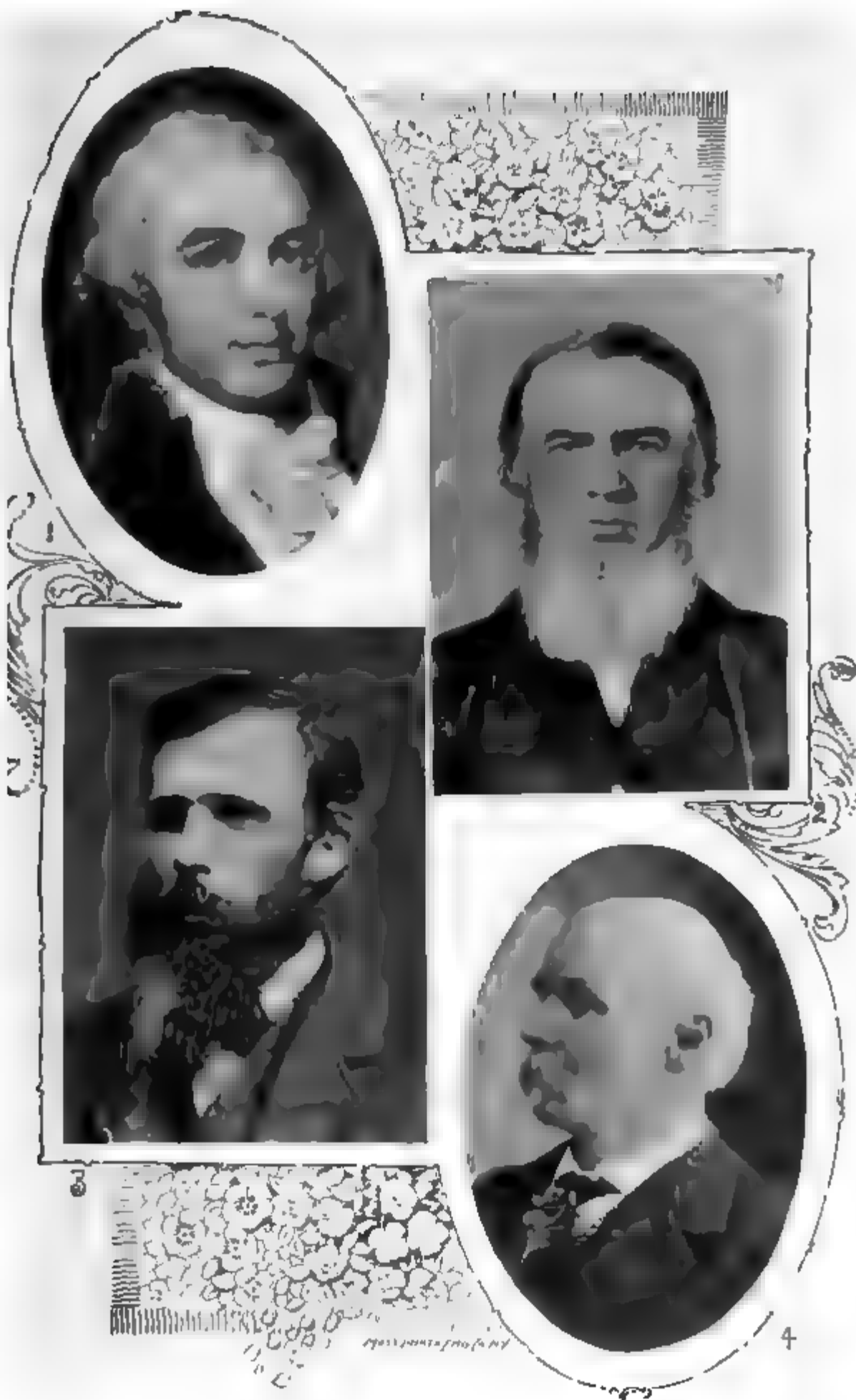
The first mention made of a court for Hampshire county, in any records accessible, is June 11, 1755. Who the justices were is not stated, but Archibald Wager was clerk.



Two years later we find another session of the same court, with a mention of the justices' names and Gabriel Jones as clerk. Among the powers conferred upon Lord Fairfax, in whose possession the whole area of this county was for many years, we find that he was permitted "to hold a court in the nature of a court baron." This court had power to collect debts not exceeding forty shillings. He also had power to hold a court leet twice a year.

One of the earliest court records now in the possession of the county clerk is an old order book for the years 1788-91. Interesting indeed are some of the orders passed by these old courts more than a century ago, and while they may seem trivial to us at this day, they were at that time, no doubt, matters of importance. Let a few instances illustrate. At a session of the justice court held March 14, 1788, Peter Theran was plaintiff in a case of "trespass, assault and battery" against Joseph Powell. The jury found the defendant guilty "in the manner and form as the plaintiff against him hath declared, and they do assess the plaintiff damages by occasion thereof to one penny." Mr. Theran is ordered to proceed at once to collect this magnanimous sum, but whether he succeeded or not we shall never know. A more serious verdict was passed, however, by a special session of the court called April 3, 1788, "for the examination of a man who stood committed to the county jail of said county charged with feloniously stealing a black mare, the property of John Thompson." The prisoner denied his guilt, but sundry witnesses brought about "the opinion of the court that the said C— P— is guilty of the felony aforesaid, but the court doubts whether the testimony would be sufficient to convict the prisoner before the general court, and the prisoner being willing to submit himself to the mercy of the court, it is therefore ordered that the said C— P— receive ten lashes on his bare back, well laid on at the public whipping post, and the sheriff is ordered to cause immediate execution thereof





1. JUDGE ROBERT WHITE.  
3. CAPTAIN C. S. WHITE.

2. JOHN B. WHITE.  
4. COLONEL ROBERT WHITE.







to be done." So the rattle of British musketry had its echo in the crack of the torturing whip. At a session of May court in the same year, we find it ordered by the court "that the sheriff let the repairing of the gaol and also the making of a pillory and stocks to the lowest bidder."

The common medium of exchange for a period of about fifteen years after the Revolution was tobacco, and we find that witnesses were paid twenty-five pounds a day for attending court, and at the rate of four pounds for each mile traveled in going to and from the court house. Hunting in those early days was no doubt pursued as a means of livelihood and in some instances, at least, it appears to have been profitable. By the county court of December 16, 1790, one man is ordered to be paid ten pounds and five shillings for ten wolves' heads. This sum was just equal to the salary of the prosecuting attorney of the county for that year. Such was the general routine of business that occupied the time of these early courts from which our excellent judicial system has been evolved.

The records of the superior courts for Hampshire county are very incomplete, owing partly to the fact that the courts for this county were held principally in other counties for many years after the Revolutionary war.

The courts of this county were the same as those of Virginia until the formation of West Virginia into a state. For this reason a brief notice of the courts of Virginia more than a century ago may not be amiss here. In the acts of the general assembly of 1792 there is provision made for a court of appeals, consisting of one judge, who composed the court. This was afterwards changed to five judges, any three of whom constituted a court for appellate cases. This court was held twice a year at Richmond, or such other place as the general assembly designated.

The general court at this time was composed of ten judges and met at Richmond twice a year. These ten



judges were sent out by twos to hold district courts in the different judicial divisions of the state. In 1819 the number of judges was increased to fifteen, and each judge was to hold one circuit court a year in each county of his district. The district courts of this county were always held at Winchester, where all such legal business as fell within the jurisdiction of such a court had to be transacted. From the district court established very soon after the capture of Cornwallis we have by an easy step the circuit courts of today.

In 1818 we find it stated in the Revised Code that there was to be held one superior court of chancery in each of the nine districts of the state. The counties of Frederick, Shenandoah, Hardy, Hampshire, Berkeley, Jefferson and Loudon composed Winchester district, where this court was held twice a year for the counties named.

It was not until after the constitution of 1830 was adopted that any superior court was held in Hampshire. The first was called the circuit superior court of law and chancery, and was held at Romney court house, October 5, 1831, with Richard E. Parker, one of the judges of the seventh judicial district and judge of the thirteenth judicial district, presiding.

At the April session, 1832, we find present as presiding judge, John Scott, "a judge of the general court." He does not appear to have tarried long, as at the next term in October, of the same year, Richard E. Parker again appears as judge, and so continues until September, 1836.

Isaac R. Douglass was his successor and appears for the first time at April session, 1837, and continues until September, 1850.

Following him came Richard Parker, evidently a different person from the first judge. He served as judge from 1851 until 1861 with the single exception of the September session, 1851, at which time G. B. Samuels was the presiding judge.



During the period, 1861 to 1865, there was no superior court on account of the troublous conditions attendant on the civil war. The period covered by Richard Parker was under the constitution of 1850 and it was during this time that the name circuit court came into use. This court is still called by that name.

The constitution of 1850 established Clarke, Frederick, Hampshire, Morgan, Berkeley and Jefferson counties as the thirteenth judicial district. Under this constitution the present court of appeals came into being. It was composed of five judges, one for each section. These were elected by the people for a term of twelve years while the circuit judges were elected for a term of eight years in the same manner.

After the civil war L. P. W. Balch was judge for one term, September, 1865.

In May, 1866, we find E. C. Bunker serving as judge and he continued in that capacity until 1868 with the single exception of the September term, 1866, when Thomas W. Harrison, of the Third judicial district, was judge in his stead.

J. P. Smith, of the Eleventh judicial district, served from March, 1868, to September, 1869.

For a single term, March, 1869, court was held by Judge George Loomis, of the Ninth judicial district.

The period of September, 1869, to August, 1870, was supplied by Judge Joseph A. Chapline.

Judge Ephraim B. Hall, judge of the Sixth judicial district, served from October, 1870, to March, 1873.

For a period of three years, August, 1873, to 1876, J. W. F. Allen filled the position.

The longest period covered by any judge in this county was that during which Judge James D. Armstrong served. He became judge in 1876 and presided over the courts of the counties in his district with singular ability for sixteen years, resigning in 1892. He was elected as judge o



the Fourth judicial circuit, but the state has been redistricted and Pendleton, Hampshire, Hardy, Grant and Mineral counties now form the Twelfth judicial district.

Upon the resignation of Judge Armstrong, R. W. Dailey, Jr., was appointed by the governor in his stead and later was elected to the office by popular vote.

Below is a list of the justices of the county of Hampshire together with the date of their appointment or election:

1788—Abraham Johnson, Isaac Millar, Samuel Dew, Ralph Humphries, Ignatius Wheeler, George Beall, Thomas Maccubin, Michael Cresap, John J. Jacob, Philip Wiggins, Marquis Calmes, William Fox, Thomas Collins, Andrew Cooper, John Mitchell, Okey Johnson, David McCrackin.

1789—James Monroe.

1790—Isaac Parsons, Jonathan Purcell, James Martin, Cornelius Ferrel, Edward McCarty, Solomon Jones, Elias Poston.

The records for the years 1790 to 1795 are lost.

1795—Alexander King, Francis White, William Vause, John Jack, Virgil McCrackin, John Snyder.

1796—John Parish.

1798—John Mitchell, James McBride, John Parrill, Mathew Pigmon, Archibald Linthicum.

No records for the years 1798 to 1814.

1815—James Dailey, Isaac Kuykendall.

1816—Henry Cookus.

1817—Thomas Collins.

1817 to 1824—No records.

1824—George Sharpe, Jacob Vandiver, Christopher Heiskell, David Gibson, Frederick Sheets, Samuel Cockerill, John Sloan, Reuben Davis, William Armstrong, William Mulledy, Eli Beal, Elisha Thompson, Jacob Smith, Robert Sherrard, David Parsons, Nathaniel Kuykendall, Vause Fox, John McDowell, John Stump.



1828—William C. Wodrow, Ephraim Dunn, Marquis Monroe, Philip Fahs, John Brady, William Donaldson, William Welch, Zebulon Sheetz.

1831—Michael Pugh.

1832 to 1837—No record.

1837—James Higgins, William Vance, Thomas Carskadon, Robert Newman, William Racey, John McDowell, Daniel Mytinger.

1838—Daniel Keller, William Ely, John Stump, William A. Heiskell.

1840—Robert Sherrard.

1842—William Vandiver, Samuel Davis, George Baker, Robert Monroe, William Miller, Joseph Frazier.

1843—Robert Carmichael, David Pugh, George W. Washington, Charles Blue, Joseph Smith, Samuel Bumgarner.

1844—Thomas B. White, Isaac Baker, Nimrod McNary.

1846—George Baker, Isaac Baker, Robert B. Sherrard.

1849—John L. Temple, Edward M. Armstrong.

1850—Samuel J. Stump.

The office of justice was abandoned with the adoption of the constitution of 1851.

The judges of the superior courts of Hampshire county since 1830 are given below. The dates show in what year they began to serve:

Richard E. Parker, 1831; Isaac R. Douglass, 1837; Richard Parker, 1851. Courts were practically suspended during the civil war. The judges since the war are: L. P. W. Balch, 1865; E. C. Bunker, 1866; J. P. Smith, 1868; Geo. Loomis, 1869; Joseph A. Chapline, 1869; Ephraim B. Hall, 1870; J. W. F. Allen, 1873; Jas. D. Armstrong, 1876; R. W. Dailey, jr., 1892.

The names of those who have served as members of the house of delegates from Hampshire county are as follows:

James I. Barrick, 1863; Thomas P. Adams, 1865; Samuel Cooper, 1866; John Largent, 1868; John J. Jacobs, 1869;



Alfred H. Pownall, 1870; Francis W. Heiskell, 1871; John Monroe, 1872; George Deaver, jr., 1873; Alexander Monroe, 1875; Asa Hiett, 1877; Alexander Monroe, 1879; Henry B. Gilkeson, 1883; A. L. Pugh, 1887; George A. Hott, 1891; Evan P. Pugh, 1895; B. W. Power, 1897.

The following is a list of the prosecuting attorneys of the county, with the year of their appointment or election: Chas. McGill, 1788; William Naylor, 1828; Philip B. Streit, 1830; Angus McDonald, 1836; Jas. D. Armstrong, 1844; Alfred P. White, 1850; A. W. McDonald, jr., 1858, William Perry, 1865; R. W. Dailey, jr., 1870; W. B. Cornwell, 1892.

The clerks of the county court of Hampshire county are as follows:

Archibald Wager, 1755; Gabriel Jones, 1757; Andrew Woodrow, 1782; Samuel McGuire, 1815; John B. White, 1815. No courts 1861-64. Thos. A. Kellar, 1865; J. A. Parsons, 1870; C. S. White, 1873.

The clerks of circuit court of Hampshire county:

— Smith, 1865; C. M. Taylor, 1865; C. S. White, 1873; V. M. Poling, 1876.

The following list contains the names of the surveyors of Hampshire county:

James Genn, 1755; Elias Poston, 1778; Joseph Nevill, 1786; John Mitchell, 1788; John Jones, 1808; Daniel Lyons, 1810; Samuel Dew, 1816; John Sloan, 1827; Samuel Cooper, 1852; Abram Smith, 1859; Warner T. High, 1865; David Biser, 1866; J. Z. Chadwick, 1868; Chas. N. Hiett, 1870; Alex. Monroe, J. G. Ruckman, Robert Monroe.

The following is a list of the assessors of Hampshire county from 1865 to 1897:

Alfred H. Pownall, Eastern district, 1865; William S. Purgett, Western district, 1865; George Hawes, district No. 1, 1866; George Milleson, district No. 2, 1866; Benjamin Pugh, district No. 1, 1870; George Milleson, district No. 2, 1870; Samuel C. Ruckman, district No. 1, 1872; Geo. Milleson, district No. 2, 1872; James A. Gibson, district



**N**o. 1, 1876; George Milleson, district No. 2, 1876; James **A.** Gibson, district No. 1, 1880; George Milleson, district **d**istrict No. 2, 1880; James A. Gibson, district No. 1, 1884; **E**van P. Pugh, district No. 2, 1884; James A. Gibson, dis-  
**t**RICT No. 1, 1888; Evan P. Pugh, district No. 2, 1888; John **B**lue, district No. 1, 1892; Maurice Scanlon, district No. 2,  
**1**892; John Blue, district No. 1, 1896; C. W. Schaffenaker,  
**d**istrict No. 2, 1896.

A list of the sheriffs of Hampshire county since its for-  
mation is as follows:

Edward C. Davis, 1754; Abraham Johnson, 1756; Elias  
Posten, 1788; Thomas McCubbin, 1790; William Fox, 1814;  
James Coleman, 1815; Lewis Petters, 1816; Thomas Col-  
lins, 1818; James Dailey, 1819; E. M. McCarty, 1821; Fran-  
cis White, 1825; Isaac Kuykendall, 1826; Frederick Sheetz,  
1829; George Sharpe, 1831; J. Vandiver, 1833; M. Pugh,  
1835; Samuel Cockerell, 1837; John Sloan, 1839; John Mc-  
Dowell, 1841; William Armstrong, 1843; Vause Fox, 1845;  
Reuben Davis, 1848; John Stump, 1850; Eli Beall, 1852; J.  
C. Heiskell, 1854; George Milleson, 1856; D. T. Keller,  
1858; J. C. Heiskell, 1860; J. H. Trout, 1865; J. A. Jarboe,  
1866; J. H. Powell, 1868; Samuel Cooper, 1870; W. H.  
Powell, 1872; R. D. Powell, 1876; Jonn Monroe, 1880; W.  
H. Powell, 1884; George Milleson, 1888; A. L. Pugh, 1892;  
James A. Monroe, 1896.

At the legislature of 1863 Hampshire was among the  
counties reported as having no sheriff or other collector of  
the revenue "because of the dangers incident thereto."

County superintendents of Hampshire:

Henry Head, 1865; John J. Jacob, 1866; Rev. O. P.  
Wirgman, 1867; Thomas A. Kellar, 1871; Dr. Townsend  
Clayton, 1873; A. M. Alverson, 1875; Henry B. Gilkeson,  
1877; Chas. N. Hielt, 1879; Daniel M. Shawen, 1885; Chas.  
W. Stump, 1889; Jonathan F. Tutwiler, 1891; Chas. N.  
Hielt, 1895. Jacob was appointed to fill out the term of  
Head.



# CHAPTER XXIII.

—«0»—

## OLD ROADS AND FERRIES.

BY HU MAXWELL.

That travel was general throughout Hampshire county a century ago is shown by the number of ferries. At that time bridges were few, and those who would cross the larger streams must do so by boat. A list of public ferries in the county, in the year 1790, so far as it is now possible to compile it, shows that there were eight, as follows:

Over the South branch, where R. Parker lived at that time.

Over the South branch at the residence of Isaac Parsons.

Over the South branch from the land of John Pancake to that of Jacob Earsom.

Over the South branch at the residence of Conrad Glaze.

Over the Capon from James Chenowith's to James Largent's.

Over the Capon at the residence of Elias Poston.

Over the north fork of Capon at the residence of Rees Prichards.

Over the Potomac at the residence of Luther Martin, below the confluence of the North and South branches.

The rate of toll established by law for all of these ferries was six cents for a man, and six cents for a horse, except the ferry at R. Parker's and that at John Pancake's, and the rate for these was five cents for a man and five for a horse. There was a schedule of tolls for vehicles of all kinds, and for sheep, hogs and cattle. The rate was established by law, and there was a severe penalty for an overcharge on the part of the ferryman, who must refund



to the injured party the amount of toll demanded and also pay a fine of two dollars. These ferries were public, that is, they were established and regulated by the state, but whether the keepers received salaries for their services, or whether they retained a percentage of their collections, is not clear from the reading of the law on the subject, passed by the Virginia assembly in 1792. But the inference is that they retained a percentage, otherwise there would have been little temptation to overcharge, and no need of so severe a law against it. The probability that the ferrymen received a percentage is likewise strengthened by the study of an act of the Virginia assembly passed the same year for the purpose of breaking up private ferries. It can be seen that the state was in the ferry business strictly for the money there was in it. The law provided that no one should run a private ferry for profit where it would take patronage from a public one. The penalty for so doing seems unnecessarily severe. The person who undertook to turn a few dimes into his own pocket by carrying travelers across a river, where those travelers might go by public ferry, was fined twenty dollars for each offense, and half of it to go to the nearest public ferryman and the other half to the person who gave the information; and in case the public ferryman gave the information, the entire fine went into his pocket. It will readily be surmised that the public ferryman maintained a sharp lookout for private boats which should be so presumptuous as to dare enter into competition for a portion of the carrying trade, and it is equally probable that competition with public service soon became unpopular, when a man might receive five cents for carrying a traveler across a river, and to be fined twenty dollars for it.

Messengers and other persons on business for the state were not required to pay toll, and they must be carried across immediately, at any hour of the day or night. But, as a precaution against being imposed upon by persons



falsely claiming to be in the service of the state, the ferryman was authorized to demand proof, which the applicant was obliged to furnish. This proof consisted of a letter, on the back of which must be written "public service," and must be signed by some officer, either in the civil or military service of the state. Inasmuch as the punishment for forgery at that time was death, it is improbable that any person would present forged documents to the ferryman in order to save a few cents toll. The men who kept the ferries enjoyed some immunities and privileges denied to the masses. They were exempt from work on the public roads. They were not required to pay county taxes, but whether this privilege was extended only to poll tax, or whether it applied also to personal property and real estate, is not clear from the reading of the regulations governing the business. They were exempt from military service due the state, and they were excused from holding the office of constable.

The roads of Hampshire county compare favorably with those of any other county in the state. In the rugged and thinly settled mountain districts the highways are often not all the people desire, but this is offset by the fine pikes which follow the principal streams. History does not record the beginning of road-building in Hampshire. Their growth has been an evolution from the trails and paths followed, first by Indians, and afterwards by the early settlers. One by one these paths were widened for wagons, but the earliest wagon road in the county cannot now be named. It may be that none were made prior to the military road constructed by Braddock during the campaign of 1755, unless a portion of a road made the preceding year for military purposes may be classed as a wagon road. The Braddock road was not built as a temporary measure. It was not the purpose of the British government and the American colonies that it should be used only as a military road and then abandoned. But it was to be a great high-



way between the east and the boundless and almost unexplored west. Civilization was to march toward the setting sun upon that thoroughfare. The land beyond the mountains was to be reached along the highway built by Braddock and his army as they marched against the French. Wagons and teams to the value of a quarter of a million dollars went west with the army. They never returned, but were abandoned on the Monongahela after the terrible defeat of July 9, 1755. That was the largest train of wagons that ever passed through Hampshire county, except, perhaps, that of General Forbes in 1758; and it is remarkable that it should have been the first, and that the first should have had so melancholy ending. There is no evidence that the Braddock road was ever extensively used by the people. Portions of it were early abandoned.

A number of the roads now in the county are on excellent grades, so far as the topography of the country will permit; but others were never properly surveyed, and many grades are steeper than necessary, while in numerous instances hills and mountains are crossed when the roads could have been constructed as easily around them. The men who laid them out forgot that a potbail is as long standing up as laying down.

The Virginia road law, several parts of which were in operation before the beginning of the nineteenth century, provided amply for roads. All men over sixteen years of age must work on the highways. Slaves must work the same as free people. The owner of two slaves who performed their required labor on the highways was exempt. The law required that every road must be kept in repair, and thirty feet wide. This provision was seldom complied with. Finger-boards to direct travelers must be kept at all intersecting roads, and the overseer was authorized by law to take timber and stone from adjoining lands to be used for finger-boards, but such material must be paid for. This law was passed in 1785. Bridges were required to



be at least twelve feet wide. When a road or bridge was in need of repairs the overseer could impress teams and teamsters and seize material for that purpose. But, though material might be taken from county property, the law forbade going upon town property for that purpose. When such material had been seized, its value was determined by two householders acting as a board of arbitration. Bridges across streams which were the dividing lines of two counties must be maintained by both counties in proportion to their respective assessments. The punishment prescribed for cutting a tree across a public road, or in a stream above a public bridge, and not removing it within forty-eight hours, was a fine of fifty dollars. A road leading across a milldam was required to be kept in repair, twelve feet wide, by the owner of the dam. In case the dam washed away the owner was not held responsible for the repair of the road until one month after he had repaired the dam and had ground one bushel of grain.

The early law of Virginia was strict on viewers of proposed roads, lest they should take bribes of such persons as were interested in having the highway located in certain places. The law passed in 1786 provided that the viewers appointed to locate the road should meet at a certain point on the proposed road, and begin work. From that time until their work was completed they were forbidden to accept any present from any person, "neither meat nor drink," on penalty of immediate imprisonment. The law of 1785 provided that no road could be opened through a lot in town without the owner's consent. The land could not be condemned.

Road overseers were not highly paid. In 1830 they received fifty cents a day, and there were thirty of them in Hampshire county. It may be of interest to know who they were at that time, and their names are given: Caleb Evans, Abbott Carder, John Horn, James Summerville, Absalom Doll, George Rudolph, Jacob Pugh, Moses



Thomas, John Berry, Benoni Cassady, Michael Pugh, John Crawfish, John Leatherman, Thomas Sloan, William Torrence, Mathew Hare, John Largent, Jesse Bane, Jacob Vandever, Arthur Spencer, Jacob Lambert, Henry Powelson, Frederick Spaid, Clark D. Powell, Peter Evans, Thomas Dean, Joseph Smith, Peter Leatherman.

The building of the Northwestern pike from Winchester to Parkersburg, through Romney, was a great event. This splendid highway was surveyed by one of the military engineers who served under Napoleon Bonapart in the Russian campaign. On the downfall of the emperor, it became necessary for the engineer to leave France, and he came to the state of Virginia, and was employed in road surveys. The construction of the pike was commenced at Winchester and was completed as far as Romney in 1837. The road was required to be twenty-one feet wide, and no grade more than five degrees, which is about two hundred and eighty-five feet to the mile. It was fortunate for Hampshire that nature cut gaps through Mill creek mountain in four places, by which roads may pass without climbing over that high and steep range. These gaps are, at the mouth of Mill creek, at upper Hanging Rocks, at lower Hanging Rocks, and at the Potomac just above the mouth of the South branch. The Northwestern pike passes through Mill creek gap, by a grade of about one degree, and along a route of great beauty. Every stream on this road was bridged. During the war nearly all the bridges were destroyed. The most of them have been rebuilt.

The Jersey mountain road was surveyed and improved in 1846. An older road had followed nearly the same route for many years, but at the above date it was widened and straightened. The Capon and North branch turnpike was made about 1842. It passes from Cumberland to Capon bridge, by way of Frankfort, Springfield, Higginsville, Slanesville and North river mills. It was built



by subscription, two-fifths of the stock subscribed by the state of Virginia, and the other by private parties. The pike from Greenspring to Moorefield was built by a stock company about 1850, the state taking two-fifths of the stock. This was called the Moorefield and North branch turnpike. In 1852 a turnpike was built from a point near Charles Taylor's, on the Capon and North branch turnpike, to a point near French's store, on the Potomac, near the mouth of the South branch.

The first stage line in Hampshire county, so far as any record exists, was established in 1830, between Winchester and Cumberland. In 1845 the stage lines from Greenspring to Romney and from Romney to Parkersburg and Marietta, Ohio, were owned by Nathaniel Kuykendall and Jesse Hildebrand. This was the main thoroughfare between the east and west, through what is now the northern part of West Virginia. The National road, from Cumberland to Wheeling was a rival in importance. The stages from Romney to the Ohio river made remarkably good time, reaching Clarksburg in one day and Parkersburg in two. Stages left Greenspring for the Ohio river on Mondays, Wednesdays and Fridays, "upon the arrival of the cars from Baltimore," as stated in an advertisement of that date. It would appear that only three passenger trains a week arrived from the east at that time. The distance from Greenspring to Parkersburg was two hundred and ten miles, and the fare by stage was ten dollars. The railroad fare from Baltimore to Greenspring was four dollars, or from Baltimore to Parkersburg, fourteen dollars. The time required for the journey from Baltimore to the Ohio river was fifty-seven hours; and from Baltimore to Greenspring nine hours. Stages from Winchester and from Moorefield connected at Romney with the stages for the Ohio river.



# CHAPTER XXIV.



## EDUCATIONAL AFFAIRS.

BY H. L. SWISHER.

The tracks of the Indians were scarcely effaced from our valleys and hills before the pioneer pedagogue appeared upon the scene. Who the first teacher was that ever meted out learning in the county of Hampshire will never be known. Even the names of these early teachers have become mere traditions, and we can only describe them as a class, making abundant allowance for exceptions.

In those early days that a man was a teacher did not signify that he was educated or cultivated. In fact these were often his least important qualifications. He must, however, be a man of courage and muscle, able to hold his own when the "big boys" entered upon the precarious pastime of "putting the teacher out." He must, moreover, be expert in the use of the rod and skilled in making quill pens. While he was not always of the most religious turn of mind, he had no shadow of doubt but that Solomon's saying: "Spare the rod and spoil the child," was a divine revelation.

This primitive apostle of education, the forerunner of the present educational system, labored under many disadvantages. His remuneration was small, and a place to hold his school was not always to be had. Sometimes a rude hut near a fort answered the purpose, or sometimes a public-spirited citizen would allow the use of his cabin a few hours each day.

It was not many years, however, until the backwoods school house was built. It was not an elegant building, but



it served as a place for holding schools, religious and political meetings. The structure was usually of unhewn logs with the cracks between more or less closed by puncheons and mortar. The floor was made of puncheons placed with the hewn side up, and the door made of clapboards. Somewhere in the wall a part of a log was left out and paper greased with lard served to close the aperture and let in the light. There was a huge chimney at one end large enough to accommodate a child or two on each side and yet have a roaring fire in the middle. Nor was the furniture more inviting than the building itself. The seats were made of split logs, hewn smooth on one surface, which was placed upward and supported by legs thrust into auger holes on the under side. These benches had no backs, and as they were rather high the position was not an easy one, especially for the smaller pupils, who sat all day dangling their tiny feet in a vain effort to reach the floor. Writing was done exclusively with pens made from quills, and a slab supported on pins driven into the wall served as a writing desk. Among the earlier text books there was a United States speller, the New Testament, the English reader and an arithmetic.

These early schools received no state aid, nor were they regulated by law. They were made up in something like the following manner. A peripatetic pedagogue appeared in a neighborhood with a subscription paper and each family "signed" whatever number of pupils it felt able to send. If enough "signers" were secured the school would begin; if not, the teacher wandered on to another neighborhood to try his luck again. Not infrequently the teacher took his pay in "produce," and the meager pay he received was made to go further by what was called "boarding round." By this system the teacher stayed a part of the time with each of his patrons. He frequently contributed to the comfort of the families with whom he stayed by chopping wood and doing chores.





RESIDENCE AND FAMILY OF FRANKLIN HERRIOTT.







The instruction given was usually of a very rudimentary nature, embracing the three R's, "reading, 'riting and 'rithmetic," and some knowledge of spelling. In mathematics the study extended as far as vulgar fractions, before which came proportion in the old arithmetics. But proportion was not proportion in those old books; it was the "single rule of three" and its mastery was considered an intellectual feat. There were no blackboards, no globes and charts, no steel pens, in fact hardly any apparatus and yet these primitive schools were the places where many a man got his inspiration that in after life made him a giant among his fellows.

It was not until 1810 that Virginia gave any recognition to popular education. It was then that the general assembly created what was known as the "Literary Fund." One of the provisions of the act was that all escheats, confiscations, fines and pecuniary penalties and all rights in personal property, accruing to the commonwealth as derelict and having no rightful proprietor should be used for the encouragement of learning. The auditor was instructed to open an account with the "Literary Fund." The management of this fund was vested in the governor lieutenant governor, treasurer, attorney general and president of the court of appeals.

By an act passed 1818 it was provided that "it shall be the duty of the courts of the several counties, cities and corporate towns \* \* \* in the month of October or as soon thereafter as may be, to appoint not less than five nor more than fifteen discreet persons to be called school commissioners." These commissioners had charge of the disbursement of their pro rata share of the fund which was distributed annually. In 1819 the "Literary Fund" amounted to four thousand five hundred dollars. That portion received by each county was used to pay the tuition of indigent children at the subscription schools. These children were selected by the commissioners and



apportioned to the different schools of the county. Here we see the first instance of the state taking it upon itself to educate its citizens, a work which at the present time seems so necessary. These "poor" or "primary" schools were what in 1863 developed into the free school system.

Poor white children only received benefit from the "Literary Fund." No provision was made for the education of colored children, in fact it was discouraged by sentiment and statute. An act passed by the general assembly, March 2, 1819, provides, "that all meetings or assemblages of slaves at any school or schools for teaching them reading or writing either in the day or in the night shall be deemed and considered an unlawful assembly." Corporal punishment to the extent of twenty lashes was to be inflicted upon the offenders. This was likely to make it unpleasant for the philanthropic teacher who sought to give instruction to his African brother.

There was a semi-compulsory provision connected with the distribution of the "Literary Fund" by which the commissioners were allowed to select children whom they considered as standing in need of help. After these children had been selected by the board of commissioners it became the duty of the parents or guardians to send such children, and if they failed they were made to pay a sum equal to the tuition for each day the children were absent. Many persons objected to this system of schools as when they received aid it placed them in the light of paupers. There were unquestionably many grave faults in the system, but it was a step toward that system which sets forth the idea that there is no child either too rich or too poor to receive an education at the hands of the state.

There was little change in the school system from 1819 to 1845, when we find an act passed by the state legislative body authorizing the county court to redistrict the counties and appoint a commissioner for each district. These commissioners were to meet at the court house of their



respective counties at the October term of court, and proceed to elect viva voce a county superintendent of schools. This is the first officer of that kind provided for in the school system. His duties were numerous, among them was to keep a register of the children in his district and report annually to the "Literary Fund" the condition of the schools under his care.

Still another step toward the free school system of today was an act for the establishment of a district public school system. This act was passed March 5, 1846. It provided that if one-third of the voters of a county should petition the county court, the court should submit to them at the next regular election the question of establishing district public schools. If two-thirds of the votes cast were in favor of such schools they were established. The maintenance of these schools was accomplished "by a uniform rate of increased taxation" upon the taxable property in the county. This additional levy was laid by the school commissioners. There was also a provision for three trustees in each district, two of whom were elected by the voters of the district at the annual election, and one of whom was appointed by the board of commissioners. These trustees were authorized to select a site for a school house in the district, build and furnish the same, and to employ a teacher, whom they could discharge for good cause.

It was also a part of their official business "to visit the school at least once in every month and examine the scholars and address the pupils if they see fit, and exhort them to prosecute their studies diligently and to conduct themselves virtuously and properly."

We see, then, how nearly the plan of the present system of schools was evolved more than fifty years ago, but its weak point was that it was left to the option of each county to accept or neglect it as the people saw fit, and we may safely say it was more often neglected than accepted.

The boom of cannon had scarcely died out of our hills



when the arts of peace began to be taught in every county in the state. During the horrors of civil strife, in which time our state was born, the free schools had been established. The system was in operation before the war in many states of the union, and in the neighboring states of Pennsylvania and Ohio. When those men who refused to follow the old state in seceding from the union met to frame a constitution for the new state they comprehended the advantages of a uniform system of free education. Well knowing the opposition such a system would meet with and the obstacles it would have to surmount, they builded on a sure foundation by inserting in the first constitution this declaration: "The legislature shall provide, as soon as practicable, for the establishment of a thorough and efficient system free schools by appropriating thereto the interest of the invested school fund, the net proceeds of all forfeitures, confiscations and fines accruing to this state under the laws thereof, and by general taxation on persons or property, or otherwise. They shall also provide for raising in each township [district], by the authority of the people thereof, such a proportion of the amount required for the support of free schools therein as shall be prescribed by general laws." When the first legislature met, December 20, 1863, they showed their desire to co-operate with the framers of the constitution by passing an act establishing the free school system. The voters of each township were to elect a board of education, and the voters of the county were to elect a county superintendent of free schools. The first board of education for Hampshire county was that of Romney district and was composed of Rev. O. P. Wirgman, president; William S. Purgett, Dr. Leatherman and J. D. McIlwee, secretary.

The first county superintendent of free schools was William Head, who was elected in 1865. At this time there were less than a dozen schools in the county. This sys-



tem, which all now consider so necessary and which all heartily support, met with vigorous opposition for several years after its introduction. The duties of the board of education at that time included those now performed by both board and trustees. It was not until 1866 that an act was passed providing that the board should appoint three trustees for each sub-district. The powers of these trustees consisted in caring for school property, hiring teachers and visiting the schools under their charge.

The duties of the county superintendent were many and diversified. He was "to examine all candidates for the profession of teacher and to grant certificates to those competent." There was at that time a wide range in securing a certificate. There were five grades, known as number ones, twos, etc., up to number fives. Many of those who applied for certificates were woefully unprepared and few number ones were granted. The lower grades, however, made it almost impossible for a candidate to fail if he could write his name and knew the date of his birth. There is a current tradition of a teacher who presented himself to the county superintendent for examination in those early days. When he returned home some of his neighbors inquired how he had succeeded. He replied that he had done very well, having made a number four, but that he intended to return to the next examination and try for a number five, as he thought he could do better a second time.

Other duties of the superintendent were to visit the schools "at least three times during each term of six months," to "encourage the formation of associations of teachers and teachers' institutes," and "to secure as far as practicable uniformity in the text-books used in schools throughout the county." His salary for this service was to range from one hundred to five hundred dollars.

While these schools were established for persons from six to twenty-one years of age, they were even more lib-



eral than this. In 1865 union soldiers honorably discharged from the service could receive instruction in the free schools without charge. It was also provided that other persons over school age could receive instruction upon the payment of a stipulated amount.

At the present time the district levies are laid by the board of education for each district. This has been the case since 1868, but previous to that time they were laid by the annual township or district meetings and could not go beyond twenty-five cents on each hundred dollars valuation for building fund and twenty cents for the teachers' fund. In 1867 the maximum for each fund was fixed at fifty cents on the hundred dollars valuation, and the moneys of the funds were to be kept separate. Uniformity in the text-books was aimed at in a law enacted in 1865, enabling the state superintendent to prescribe a series of class books to be used. The question of providing suitable text-books has been one that has always confronted and hindered the advance of education. There is probably not a state or territory in the United States that has a series of text-books which are wholly satisfactory. When some satisfactory solution to this troublesome problem has been reached the free schools will make still more wonderful steps forward than have been made in the past.

We have seen that under the laws of Virginia, while there was in reality no free school system, yet there was a provision whereby district schools might be established, and later there was an act calling for three trustees to be appointed to care for each district. Trustees were provided for as early as 1866 by the new state, and it became the duty of the board of education to appoint three trustees for each sub-district.

In introducing the free schools the legislature and friends of education overreached themselves by passing a law requiring the schools to be kept open uniformly six months each year. This could not be done by the maxi-



munum levy laid, and thus one law made another null and void. It was therefore enacted in 1867 that the schools should be kept open at least four months in the year, but even this could not be done, and in some districts of counties in the state there were not more than two months' school a year. The constitution of 1872 reaffirmed the position of the former one and enjoined upon the legislature to provide by general law for a thorough and efficient system of free schools. When the legislature assembled after the adoption of this constitution, among its first acts were those intended to carry out this clause of the constitution. A board of education was to be elected in each district, composed of a president and two commissioners. At the same time one trustee was to be elected. This number was afterwards changed to three and they were appointed by the board.

The county superintendent had enjoyed a monopoly on holding examinations for candidates for the profession of teaching up to the year 1873, but the acts of that year provided two examiners to assist him. His office heretofore had some possibilities of being moderately lucrative, but in 1879 he was reduced to a maximum salary of one hundred and twenty-five dollars, but as an offset he was excused from visiting school and his duties became very few. This office has always been so poorly paid as to render it almost useless by not holding out inducements sufficient to lead men of education and ability to devote their time and attention to it. A little more dignity was added to the office and a little better salary attached by an act passed in 1881 when it was made to pay not less than one hundred and fifty dollars nor more than three hundred dollars, and the superintendent was again required to visit the schools. Just where and by whom the first school was taught in Hampshire cannot now be stated with any absolute certainty. There are many traditions and facts, however, concerning these schools, some of which will be given.



Even after the civil war the school houses in this county, perhaps, did not exceed a dozen. In earlier times they were exceedingly scarce. There was a school house on Sandy ridge where some of the oldest persons now living attended school. This was built about 1835. Another at Forks of Capon near John Hiett's was scarcely less old. A very old school house with dirt floor and a chimney built of mud and sticks was standing as early as 1845 three miles from Forks of Capon, near North river. On the Bright's hollow road, one mile from Levels Cross roads, was built a school house in 1840. Outside of the towns these were, no doubt, among the first, if not the first, school houses built in the county.

The names of the early teachers have almost been forgotten. In the eastern part of the county we hear of the names of Barrett, Warren and Higgins as teachers, but the dates when and places where they taught are now forgotten. It was without question near the beginning of this century. Jeduthan Higbee, who taught in this country as early as 1830, came here from England. He had been educated for an Episcopal minister, but chose the profession of teaching. An entry made in an old note book shows that William Dunn taught school in Romney in 1813. Other early teachers who have long since passed away were a Mr. Chadwick and James A. Cowgill, the latter an able preacher of the Disciples' church.

Some of the pioneer educators of Hampshire are yet alive and can contemplate with pleasure the harvest now being gathered from their sowings in former years. Among these is Mrs. D. W. Swisher (nec Katharine Bonnifield) who taught her first school in Hampshire county, near Higginsville, in 1845, something over a half century ago. Miss Mary E. Keckley is another of our aged and respected early lady teachers. Colonel Samuel Cooper began teaching in 1843 and Colonel Alexander Monroe about the same time. Another of the veteran



educators of this county is B. F. McDonald, who began teaching in 1852 at the age of eighteen. All honor to these early workers in the educational vineyard. May they share with the present generation the advantages that have come to us from their labors.

The first public school taught in the county had for its home the law office of Andrew Kercheval in Romney and the teacher was Rev. O. P. Wirgman. This was in 1864-5. The six or seven schools opened the year after the war have grown to be more than a hundred at the present time. The county is now divided into seven school districts as follows: Gore, Bloomery, Capon, Sherman, Springfield, Romney and Mill Creek. Some mention of the academic schools is here in place and they will be considered in the order of their foundation.

*Romney Academy.*—Just back of where the present court house stands, for many years there stood a stone building, constructed so long ago that all remembrance of when it was built is now forgotten. This was the Romney academy. Many of the oldest inhabitants of the town went to school there in their youth. John G. Combs remembers attending school there as early as 1823, at which time he was ten years old. He has, however, no recollection of when it was built. It was undoubtedly the oldest school house in the county, and perhaps was built about the beginning of the present century. The rough, unhewn stones of which the academy was built, gave it a very uncouth exterior. The name of its founder, as well as of the first teachers who wielded the rod and saved the child within the walls of this early structure, are lost in oblivion. The remembrance of some of those early disciples of learning and knights of the birch is yet fresh in the memory of persons now living. Henry Johnson, an Englishman, was for years a teacher there.

Rev. Wm. H. Foote became principal about 1826 and continued in that position for many years. The following



named gentlemen were either principals or subordinate teachers in the academy at sundry times in its history: E. W. Newton, Silas C. Walker, Brown, Thomas Mulledy and Samuel Mulledy.

After it ceased to be used as a school building the old academy was put to various purposes. For a time it was the home of the Virginia Argus. Its upper hall was also used for years as a meeting place for secret orders. The walls stood for years after it ceased to be used at all, and the place where it stood is yet to be recognized.

*Romney Classical Institute.*—It was through the educational forces put into operation by the Romney literary society that this school was established. Before any considerable progress can be made in any enterprise it is essential that people first think along the line of progress desired. The thought concerning educational advancement provoked by the discussions in the literary society at length materialized in the above-named school.

It was in 1845 that the matter took definite shape. In a local paper of the date April 4, 1845, we find a notice asking for bids from contractors "for the erection of a building for the Literary Society of Romney." This was, in the words of the advertisement, to be "a brick building, 36 feet by 40 feet, 22 feet high from the foundation of the square, to consist of two stories, to have a tin roof and be surmounted by a cupola. The end to be the front and to be embellished with a handsome portico the whole width of the house." The notice is signed by E. M. Armstrong, John B. Kercheval, David Gibson, committee.

All bids were to be in by the 24th of May of the same year, and it was on this day that the deed for the land on which the building was to stand was made to the trustees. The school opened the following year.

Rev. Wm. H. Foote, who at that time was teaching an academic school in the old court house which stood on the present site of W. N. Guthrie's store, was induced to be-



come principal. He continued in this capacity until the fall of 1849, when he withdrew and soon after established the Potomac seminary.

When Dr. Foote resigned E. J. Meany was chosen principal. He had for his assistants John J. Jacob, Mrs. Meany and Miss Kern.

For some years there was a literary organization known as the Phrena Kosmian society in connection with the institute. On November 15, 1850, this society discussed the question, "Would the Southern States be justified in seceding from the Confederacy under present circumstances?" There is no record of the conclusion reached, but we all know too well, alas, the decision of the states themselves little more than a decade after the debate.

John J. Jacob, afterwards governor of West Virginia, became principal of this school in 1851. At this time Romney had two academic schools, the seminary and the institute, both in a flourishing condition.

Mr. Jacob was succeeded by J. Nelson, who was teaching in the institute when the war broke out in 1861. The doors of the school were then closed until peace once more came to possess the land. About 1866 William C. Clayton became principal and held school for a few terms. Mr. Dinwiddie was also a teacher in this school after the war.

When West Virginia decided to establish a school for the deaf and blind, Romney put in its bid for the location. One of the inducements was the offer on the part of the trustees of the classical institute to give the building and grounds of that school to form the nucleus of the new school for the deaf and blind. Romney was finally chosen as the site for the state school for these unfortunates, and with the foundation of the institution we lose sight of the Romney Classical institute which was then absorbed by and became a part of the new organization.

*Potomac Seminary.*—Owing to some friction between Dr. Foote, principal, and the governing body of the



Romney Classical institute, he resigned the principalship of the institute in 1849 and established the Potomac seminary in 1850. The deed for the land on which the buildings stand was made a year after the building was erected. It was expressly stipulated in the deed that the principal of the seminary should always be a member of the Presbyterian church, and that the government of the school should be in the hands of the pastor and sessions. Such has always been the case, and the school is yet governed and presided over in the manner originally intended.

In the opening session in the fall of 1850 Rev. W. H. Foote was principal, Rev. Edward Martin professor and Mrs. Foote and Mrs. White assistants. Dr. Foote continued as principal until June, 1861, when the breaking out of the civil war turned the minds of the people to things other than education.

J. M. Diffenderfer took charge of the school soon after the war, but his success was not great owing largely to the financial stringency of the times. For a few years after Mr. Diffenderfer's resignation no academic school was held, but primary instruction in the form of a subscription school was still given.

About the year 1870 S. L. Flournoy took charge of the school and met with considerable success. He was succeeded by Dr. John Wilson, who continued for some years when the school was again given over to primary instruction.

W. H. Morton, of Kentucky, in 1890, placed the school once more upon an academic basis and it has so continued until the present time. Mr. Morton had charge of the seminary until 1894 when he was succeeded by Professor J. B. Bentley, who served as principal for a single year.

The present efficient principal took charge of the seminary in the fall of 1895. Under Rev. W. S. Friend, the gentleman now in charge, the name of this institution of learning was changed from Potomac seminary to Potomac



academy. Under his administration the tendency has been decidedly progressive and the future outlook of the school is encouraging.

*Springfield Academy:*—This school might almost be called a branch of the Potomac seminary as Dr. Foote, who shaped the destinies of the seminary, also took an active part in founding the academy. The deed for the ground on which this school was built was made in 1854 by William Abernathy to William Henry Foote, William Walker and William Earsom, trustees. The deed conveys "the said land to be held for the purpose of erecting such buildings as may be thought necessary for carrying on a school or schools of such order and grade as may be deemed advisable for the welfare of the community."

The following gentlemen were principals of this school in the order named: Rev. Conkling, John Q. A. Jones, J. M. Diffenderfer and Rev. Mr. Chadwick. The academy closed its doors during the late war and they were never reopened.

We have passed in hasty review the various educational movements within our county's borders. It is gratifying, to be sure, that so much has been done and the past augurs well for the future. The principal drawback to educational advancement at the present time is the meager salaries of the teachers. Such salaries as are now paid are not calculated to encourage persons to thoroughly prepare themselves for the profession of teaching. But let the friends of education be patient. Teachers are paid as much perhaps as the people are able to pay, or at least as much as they are willing to pay, at the present time. Public schools have long ago proved their *raison d'être* and we can but hope and believe that in the future those who have shared in their blessings will see to it that they are well cared for. An institution that has its foundation in the affections of a people cannot be easily destroyed.



# CHAPTER XXV.



## AMONG OLD LAWS.

BY HU MAXWELL.

Hampshire being the oldest county in the state of West Virginia, has been governed by every state law of Virginia in force between the years of 1754 and 1861, and by every West Virginia law from 1863 until the present. A history of the county would be incomplete without a reference to some of these old laws. They are not only worthy of consideration because they were once the rule of the land, but they should be studied to show the progress of society during the past century. There are persons who speak of the good old times as though everything were better than now; and who speak of the people of a hundred years ago as if they were greater, purer, nobler than the men of today, and as if when they died, wisdom died with them. The historian knows that this belief is erroneous. Not only are there men now living who are as upright, wise and patriotic as any who ever lived, but society, in all its branches and departments, has grown better. Only the pessimist refuses to see that the human race is climbing to a higher level, and not retrograding.

To bring this truth nearer home to the people of Hampshire county, let a retrospective view of the customs and laws prevailing here a century ago be taken. That the people of Virginia, and those of Hampshire in common with the rest, tolerated the laws long after the close of the Revolutionary war, is proof that the laws were not obnoxious to a majority of the people; otherwise they would have changed them. Before proceeding to a statement of



the acts of the Virginia legislature, let it be remembered that at that time Washington was president of the United States, and the great men of Virginia, at the close of the last century and the beginning of this, were in their prime. They were responsible for the bad laws, as well as for the good; if not directly, at least indirectly, for they were looked upon as leaders. Patrick Henry, who had exclaimed, "give me liberty or give me death," was yet living and practicing law; John Randolph of Roanoke was entering his career of greatness; James Monroe, soon to be president of the United States, was a leader in Virginia; George Mason, the author of the Bill of Rights, had not yet lost his influence; James Madison, also to be president of the United States, was a leader among the Virginians; William Wirt, one of Virginia's greatest lawyers, was in his prime; Edmund Randolph, governor of Virginia, was in politics; John Marshall, the famous chief justice, was practicing in the courts; Thomas Jefferson, the author of the Declaration of Independence, was in the height of power; and the list might be extended much further. Yet, with all of these truly great men in power in Virginia, the legislature of that state passed such laws as will be found below:

On December 26, 1792, an act was passed for the purpose of suppressing vice, and provided that for swearing, cursing or being drunk the fine should be eighty-three cents for each offense, and if not paid, the offender should have ten lashes on the bare back. For working on Sunday the fine was one dollar and sixty-seven cents. For stealing a hogshead or cask of tobacco found lying by the public highway, the punishment was death.

On December 19, 1792, an act was passed by the Virginia legislature providing that any person found guilty of forgery must be put to death; and the same punishment was provided for those who erased, defaced or changed the inspector's stamp on flour or hemp. No less severe was



the punishment for those who stole land warrants. But for the man who made, passed, or had in his possession counterfeit money, knowing it to be such, the penalty of death was not enough. He was not only to be put to death, but was forbidden the attendance of a minister, and must go to execution "in the blossom of his sin." The design of the law-makers evidently was to add to his punishment not only in this life, but, if possible, send him to eternal punishment after death. It is not in the province or power of the writers of this history to ascertain whether the Virginia assembly ever succeeded in killing a man and sending him to hades because he had a countefeit dime in his pocket; but the probability is that the powers of the law-makers ceased when they had hanged their man, and a more just and righteous tribunal then took charge of his case.

It is evident that the early Virginia law-makers laid great stress on the idea of clergy to attend the condemned man. If they wanted to inflict extreme punishment they put the finishing touches on it by denying the privilege of clergy. On November 27, 1789, an act was passed by the legislature segregating crimes into two classes, one of which was designated as "clergyable," and the other as "unclergyable." It was provided that the unclergyable crimes were murder in the first degree, burglary, arson, the burning of a court house or prison, the burning of a clerk's office, feloniously stealing from a church or meeting-house, robbing a house in presence of its occupants, breaking into and robbing a dwelling house by day, after having put its owner in fear. For all of these offenses the penalty was death. A provision was made in some cases for clergy; but, lest the convicted man's punishment might not thereby be too much lightened, it was stipulated that he must have his hand burned before he was hanged. The same law further provided that, although a man's crime might not be unclergyable, yet if he received the benefit of clergy,



and it was subsequently ascertained that he had formerly committed an unclergyable offense, he must then be put to death without further benefit of clergy. In this law it was expressly provided that there should be no mitigation of punishment in case of women.

By an act of December 26, 1792, it was provided that the man who apprehended a runaway servant and put him in jail was to receive one dollar and forty-seven cents, and mileage, to be paid by the owner. This law was, no doubt, intended to apply chiefly to slaves rather than to white servants. If the runaway remained two months in jail unclaimed, the sheriff must advertise him in the "Virginia Gazette," and after putting an iron collar on his neck, marked with the letter "F," hire him out, and from his wages pay the costs. After one year, if still unclaimed, he was to be sold. The money, after the charges were paid, was to be given to the former owner if he ever proved his claim, and if he did not do so, it belonged to the state.

The law-makers believed in discouraging gossip and tattling, as well as burning a condemned man in the hand prior to his execution. A law passed by the Virginia legislature, December 27, 1792, was in the following language: "Whereas, many idle and busy-headed people do forge and divulge false rumors and reports, be it resolved by the general assembly, that what person or persons soever shall forge or divulge any such false report, tending to the trouble of the country, he shall be by the next justice of the peace sent for and bound over to the next county court, where, if he produce not his author, he shall be fined forty dollars, or less if the court sees fit to lessen it, and besides give bond for his good behavior, if it appear to the court that he did maliciously publish or invent it."

There was a studied effort on the part of the legislators to discourage hog stealing. It is not apparent why it should be a worse crime to steal a hog than to steal a cow; or why the purloining of a pig should outrank in criminality the



king of a calf; or why it should be a greater offense to appropriate a neighbor's shoat than his sheep. But the early law-makers in Virginia seem to have so considered, and they provided a law for the special benefit of the hog thief. This law, passed by the legislature December 8, 1792, declared that "any person, not a slave, who shall steal a hog, shoat or pig," should receive thirty-five lashes on the bare back; or if he preferred to do so, he might escape the lashing by paying a fine of thirty dollars; but whether he paid the fine or submitted to the stripes, he still must pay eight dollars to the owner for each hog stolen by him. This much of the law is comparatively mild, but it was for the first offense only. As the thief advanced in crime the law's severity increased. For the second offense in hog-stealing the law provided that the person convicted, if not a slave, should stand two hours in a pillory, on a public court day, at the court house, and have both ears nailed to the pillory, and at the end of two hours, should have his ears cut loose from the nails. It was expressly provided that no exception should be made in the case of women. If the hog thief still persisted in his unlawful business and transgressed the law a third time, he was effectually cured of his desire for other people's hogs by being put to death.

The slave had a still more severe punishment for stealing hogs. For the first offense he received "thirty-nine lashes on the bare back, well laid on, at the public whipping post." For the second offense he was nailed by the ears to a post, and after two hours of torture, had his ears cut off. For the third offense he was put to death. The law provided that if a negro or Indian were put on the stand as a witness against a person accused of stealing hogs, and did not tell the truth, he should be whipped, nailed to a post, his ears cut, and if he still testified falsely, he paid the penalty with his life. After a hog had been stolen and killed, the relentless law still followed it to try to discover if some one else might not be punished. If



a person bought, or received into his possession, a hog from which the ears had been removed, he was adjudged guilty of hog stealing, unless he could prove that the hog was his own property. There was also a law forbidding any one from purchasing pork of Indians, unless the ears went with the pork. There would be some inconvenience in retailing pork under this restriction, as it would require a skillful butcher to so cut up a hog that each ham, shoulder, side and the sausage should retain the ears.

There can be no question that hog raising was profitable in Hampshire under this law, and also before the law was enacted. Indeed, it is said that the name Hampshire was given the county because of its excellent hogs. According to this story, Lord Fairfax was once in Winchester when a drove of very fine hogs passed along the street on their way to market. He asked where they came from, and upon being told that they were raised on the South branch of the Potomac, he remarked that when a new county should be formed in that part of the country it should be called Hampshire, after a place of that name in England which was famous for its fine hogs.

If stealing hogs was a crime almost too heinous to be adequately punished in this world, horse stealing was so much worse that the law-makers of Virginia would not undertake to provide a law to reach the case. They, therefore, enacted a law, December 10, 1792, that the convicted horse thief must be put to death; and, in order that he should certainly reach eternal punishment beyond death, he was forbidden to have spiritual advice. The language of the law is that the horse thief shall be "utterly excluded."

A law of unnecessary severity was passed December 22, 1792, against negroes who should undertake to cure the sick. It is reasonable and right that the law should carefully guard the people against harm from those who ignorantly practice medicine; but to us of the present day it



appears that a less savage law would have answered the purpose. It was provided that any negro who prepared, exhibited, or administered medicine should be put to death without benefit of clergy. It was provided, however, that a negro might, with the knowledge and consent of his master, have medicine in his possession.

The law of Virginia required every county to provide a court house, jail, pillory, whipping post, stocks and a ducking stool. But the ducking stool might be dispensed with, if the county court saw fit to do so. The whipping post was the last of these relics of barbarism to be removed from Hampshire county. Many persons now living can remember when the whipping post stood in the rear of the old court house, a grim reminder of the severe laws gone by. It was a large post, octagon in shape, and had a roof over it. The culprit was tied by his wrists and drawn close against it, and the whip was applied.

So far as can be ascertained from an examination of county records, mutilated and destroyed by time and war, the last public and legalized burning of a convicted man in Hampshire county occurred in July, 1823, in the old court house. A negro slave, named Simon, the property of David Collins, was tried on a charge of assault. The record does not show that he had a jury. The court found him guilty and ordered the sheriff to burn him on the hand and give him one hundred lashes, chain him, and keep him on "coarse and low diet." The minutes of the court state that the sheriff "immediately burned him in the hand in the presence of the court," and gave him then and there twenty-five lashes. The remaining seventy-five were reserved for future days. The judges who were present on that occasion were John McDonald, Christopher Heiskell, Vause Fox, John Brady and W. C. Wodrow. The sheriff who executed the order of the court was Francis White, and the clerk was John B. White.

It is but justice to the law-makers of Virginia, and the



people at that time, to state that nearly all of these severe laws came from England, or were enacted in the colony of Virginia many years before the Revolutionary war. Some of them date back to the time of Cromwell, or even earlier. Although the people of Virginia took the lead in the movement for greater liberty, both mental and physical, they could not, all at once, cut loose from the wrecks of past tyranny. They advanced rapidly along some lines, but slowly along others. They found those old laws on the statute books, and re-enacted them, and suffered them to exist for a generation or more. But we should not believe that such men as Patrick Henry, Edmund Randolph, Thomas Jefferson, George Washington, and the other statesmen and patriots of that time believed that a man should be nailed to a post for stealing a pig, or that the crime of stealing a hymn book from a church should be punished with death without benefit of clergy.

A law passed near the close of the last century, and still in force in 1819, provided sheriff's fees on a number of items, among which were the following: For making an arrest, sixty-three cents; for pillorying a criminal, fifty-two cents; for putting a criminal in the stocks, twenty-one cents; for ducking a criminal in pursuance of an order of court, forty-two cents; for putting a criminal in prison, forty-two cents; for hanging a criminal, five dollars and twenty-five cents; for whipping a servant, by order of court, to be paid by the master and repaid to him by the servant, forty-two cents; for whipping a free person, by order of court, to be paid by the person who received the whipping, forty-two cents; for whipping a slave, by order of the court, to be paid by the county, forty-two cents; for selling a servant at public outcry, forty-two cents; for keeping and providing for a debtor in jail, each day, twenty-one cents.

It was more expensive to be whipped or pilloried by the sheriff than by a constable, although there is no evidence



that the sheriff did the work any more effectively. Since the person who received the punishment usually paid the fees of the officer who performed the service, it is probable that such person preferred being whipped or nailed to a post by the constable because it was less expensive. Some of the constable's fees are shown below: for putting a condemned man in the stocks, twenty-one cents; for whipping a servant, twenty-one cents; for whipping a slave, to be paid by the master, twenty-one cents; for removing a person likely to become a charge on the county, per mile, four cents.

It would appear from this that it was customary to send persons out of the county who were likely to become paupers; but, of course, the county to which they were sent must take charge of them, or send them on to the next county. Most likely the pauper was hustled on from county to county, it being found cheaper to move him than to maintain him. Not much can be said in praise of a custom which sent paupers to some one else to be cared for; but, at that time, indigents were not numerous. Although each county might claim and exercise the right of shoving its paupers into another county to be cared for, yet when it came into possession of an indigent in this manner from an adjoining county, it considered it hard luck. There is a letter preserved in the old county records giving an insight into the feelings of disgust with which one county court received a pauper from another. The letter contains a fine vein of sarcasm, and is worth quoting:

“WINCHESTER, COUNTY OF FREDERICK,

“STATE OF VIRGINIA, AUG. 4, 1794.

“TO THE HONORABLE COURT OF HAMPSHIRE COUNTY.

“STATE OF VIRGINIA, GENTLEMEN:

“GREETING:—The court of Frederick beg leave to inform the court of Hampshire that we have just received a visit from one Simon Pelman, a pauper, who informs us that he was sent to us by the court of Hampshire. The



court of Frederick beg leave to inquire to what may we attribute the honor of this visit from Mr. Pelman, late of your county? This court were not aware that they had merited the distinction of being thus waited upon by your envoy extraordinary. But, notwithstanding this court were taken by surprise, they find themselves in a position to return the honor by returning Mr. Pelman to Hampshire, by the road which he came; with the suggestion that when it again shall please you to accredit to us an ambassador of Mr. Pelman's rank, you will so far observe the rules of diplomacy as to inform us of your purpose, that we may not again be taken by surprise, but may be prepared to meet your envoy on our frontiers and receive him in a manner becoming his rank and the dignity of the court which sent him.

“COURT OF FREDERICK COUNTY.”

Within the past century several important changes have taken place in the laws under which Hampshire county has been governed. An act of assembly, passed November 29, 1792, provided that in cases where a person is suspected of having committed a murder, and the coroner's jury recommend that he be held for trial, and he eludes arrest, the coroner must seize his house and property and hold them until he surrenders himself or is arrested. Where a defendant was found guilty the costs of the prosecution was collected by sale of his property, if he had any property; but he might pay cost and thus save his property. No constable, miller, surveyor of roads or hotel-keeper was eligible to serve on a grand jury. A law passed January 16, 1801, provided a fine of five dollars as a penalty for killing deer between January 1 and August 1 of each year. A law enacted January 26, 1814, provided that sheep-killing dogs should be killed. If the owner prevented the execution of the law upon the dog he was subject to a fine of two dollars for each day in which he saved the life of the dog. The bounty on wolves was made six dollars for each scalp,



by a law passed February 9, 1819. But the bounty was not always the same, nor was it uniform throughout the counties of Virginia. In 1828 George O. King and Isaac Davidson were each paid twenty dollars for the scalps of two old wolves which they had killed in Hampshire county. There were six wolves killed in the county that year. A law of January 16, 1802, provided a fine of thirty dollars for setting the woods on fire; and a law of January 4, 1805, punished by a fine of ten dollars the catching of fish in a seine between May 15 and August 15.

There was a severe law passed by the Virginia legislature February 22, 1819, for the benefit of tavern-keepers. It provided a fine of thirty dollars for each offense, to be levied against any person, not a licensed tavern-keeper, who should take pay from a traveler for entertainment given. Not only was this law in force in and near towns, but also within eight hundred yards of any public road. There was a law enacted by the assembly of Virginia December 24, 1796, which was intended to favor the poor people. It is in marked contrast with many of the laws of that time, for they were generally not made to benefit the poor. The law had for its object the aiding of persons of small means in reaching justice through the courts. A man who had no money had it in his power to prosecute a suit against a rich man. He could select the court in which to have his case tried; the court furnished him an attorney free; he was charged nothing for his subpoenas and other writs; and he was not charged with costs in case he lost his suit.



# CHAPTER XXVI.



## AGRICULTURAL AFFAIRS.

BY H. L. SWISHER.

In the settlement of a new country one of the first things that occupies the attention of a people is agriculture. More especially is this the case in a county like our own in which the chief source of wealth is in the agricultural products. Dangers and hardships attended every step of the early settler's progress. After his cabin was built it became necessary for him to supplement the supplies of game and fish he could capture, by the food products of his truck patch and cornfield. His implements for clearing and cultivating the ground were rude and in the use of these he was often molested. When he went to the field he must carry with him his gun, as he labored he must keep constant watch lest some Indian in ambush shoot him at his work. Not infrequently was he compelled to throw down his hoe and seizing his gun cover his own retreat to the nearest fort.

Agriculture in the early settlements was not carried on extensively. A small patch of corn, and perhaps one of tobacco, together with a small garden or truck patch was the extent of each settler's farming. Very often the only implement used in the cultivation of these primitive crops was the hoe, as the keeping of a horse was difficult, owing to the thieving Indians. The first plows used were made entirely of wood and the addition of an iron plate to the lower end of his wooden implement gave rise to what was called the "shovel plow." Oxen and horses were both used by the early settlers in tilling their lands and if there



was any favor shown it was to the ox, if we may call constant and persistent use showing favor. The early harrow was even ruder than the early plow and sometimes it consisted in nothing more than a thorn-bush slightly trimmed and weighted down by tying some chunks across it. The first manufactured harrows had wooden frames and wooden teeth. The scythe, when indeed that improved implement came into use, was not made of carefully tempered steel as it now is, but was wrought at the village smithy, and instead of being ground to sharpen it, it was beat thin on an anvil. Nor was it supplied with a sneathe crooked like the one now in use, but had only a straight stick which was usually cut from the nearby woods. In using this the mower was compelled to bend himself like the bow of promise. Forked saplings peeled and carefully dried served to handle the hay and grain. Wooden spades and shovels were the only kind then in use. It is safe to say that if the present generation could see the rude and clumsy tools with which the early settlers had to raise and harvest their crops they would be filled with wonder and would look upon them as implements of torture if they were compelled to use the same in agricultural pursuits today. We must not think, however, that our forefathers in this then wilderness had no enjoyment for they spent many a happy hour and their fewer wants and these easily satisfied, made them on the average as well content as their descendants.

When clearing land there were frequent "log rollings" at which the neighbors would gather for miles around bringing with them their teams of oxen and horses to assist in putting the logs in heaps to burn them. Usually the "clearing" had been burned over previously to make way with the smaller brush and undergrowth. This left the remaining logs blackened and as the men worked among them they became sweaty and begrimed. The teams were no less so. All around rose the flames and



smoke of the burning heaps while the sooty laborers toiled in the midst. It was such a scene as might easily be imagined in the workshops of the mythical blacksmith Vulcan underneath Vesuvius. Another gathering in these early settlements was the "raising." When one man in a community wished to build a house or barn it was an expected courtesy upon the part of his neighbors to assist him until the heavier parts were in position. No pay was tendered nor expected for this help, but a like labor was, perhaps, afterwards asked of the one assisted. Another social and co-operative gathering of those times which has now been almost wholly abandoned is the corn husking. The ears of corn were "jerked" husk and all from the stalks and hauled together in huge ricks. Some night when the weather was favorable, usually a moonlight night, the neighbors were all invited to the husking. A general overseer of the work was appointed and the men were arranged along the rick of corn at regular intervals. Then the work began. It was considered especially lucky to find a "red ear" and as the husks were torn off each one was carefully scrutinized to see if it was of the desired color. While the men were enjoying themselves at the husking the women of the neighborhood were usually assembled at the farm house at a "quilting." After a few hours' work the "quilting" and "husking" alike broke up in a dance or as it was popularly called a "hoe down." Sometimes there was a too liberal use of "rock and rye" and a few fights lent interest to the gathering.

In those early times when it was necessary that almost everything used should be produced on the farm, or at least in the neighborhood, women added much to the comfort of the home by their skill and industry. Almost every household was supplied with a loom, a spinning wheel and all else that was necessary for changing the wool or flax from its original condition into clothing and blankets. Wool was sheared from sheep raised on the



farm. It was carded, spun and woven or knit into clothing on the place. The flax was grown in the fields, it was allowed to weather in the patches where it was raised, it was broken on the flax brake and the woody portion combed out on the hackle, spun and woven into cloth without leaving the farm on which it was grown.

Evidently the tobacco crop in Hampshire was once a much more important affair than it is now. As stated in another chapter, it formed the medium of exchange, serving as money until after the Revolutionary war. In March, 1819, the general assembly passed an act providing that "Public warehouses for the receipt of tobacco be established at Romney warehouse and Cresap's warehouse, at the confluence of North and South branches of the Potomac in Hampshire county." Before tobacco could be stored in these warehouses it was necessary that it be inspected. There was an inspector appointed for Romney. His salary was sixty-two dollars and fifty cents a year. At Cresap's the inspector was paid at the rate of eighty-four cents a hogshead, of which seventeen cents were to be paid the proprietor of the warehouse for rent. There is no record to show how many hogsheads or pounds were stored in any year. Another important crop that began to be cultivated early in this county was wheat. In fact the soil here is so well adapted to the cultivation of this cereal that it has become the principal crop raised for shipment. In early years, however, it was cultivated on a much more limited scale. Numerous difficulties stood in the way of an extensive acreage. The sowing was a matter of no small labor. The seed had to be scattered by hand and then covered by harrowing or "shoveling" it in. This was not only laborious, but also very slow. Harvesting, too, was a tedious process. A sickle was then the most improved reaping implement. The reaper gathered a grip of grain in his left hand and cut it off with the right. These handfuls were placed in bundles and bound into sheaves. When it



came time to haul the crop in from the fields this was done on sleds, as wagons were then not in general use. Threshing the crop was next. This was accomplished by means of the flail, and it required an expert hand to flail out fifteen bushels a day. Another mode of threshing somewhat in advance of the flail and less laborious, was to place the grain on a barn floor and tramp it out with horses. There was a chance here to use the small boy, ever such a convenience about a farm. He could ride one horse and lead another around over the grain. When it was well tramped it was turned and gone over again until at length most of the grain was threshed out. The next step in advance was a threshing machine, known as a chaff-piler. This was probably introduced in this country as early as 1835. It was a small affair and very incomplete, not separating the chaff from the wheat. The first "separators" were horse-power machines and came into use about a half century ago. The last advance was the steam thresher, and now the greater part of the grain in the country is threshed by these machines. No such thing as a windmill was known here before the present century, and the early method of separating the chaff and grain was to toss the mass into the air and the chaff, being lighter, would be blown away, while the wheat would fall to the ground on a sheet or floor prepared to receive it.

After the crop was raised it had yet to be prepared for food. The matter of making meal and flour like the other mechanic arts, was in the pioneer days, rude and incomplete. Corn was the chief crop raised by the early settlers and the matter of its preparation for table use was of first importance. The hominy block was one of the earliest contrivances. A large block was hollowed out at one end by burning. The top of the opening in the block's end was large, but it narrowed at the bottom so as to form a funnel-shaped cavity. The corn was placed in this block, and by means of a wooden pestle it was pounded into a



more or less fine condition, so that it served partly for johnny-cake and bread, while the coarser was cooked as hominy. While the corn was soft it was sometimes prepared for bread by means of a grater. This consisted of a piece of tin punched full of holes and bent into concave shape by nailing its sides to a piece of wood. The ears of corn were rubbed on the rough surface of the tin and a kind of meal was thus made. The sweep for pounding grain is thus described by Dr. Doddridge: "This was a pole of some springy, elastic wood thirty feet long or more, the butt end of which was placed under the side of a house or a large stump. This pole was supported by two forks placed about one-third of its length from its butt end, so as to elevate the small end about fifteen feet from the ground. To this was attached, by a large mortise, a piece of sapling about five or six inches in diameter and eight or ten feet long, the lower end of which was shaped so as to answer for a pestle, and a pin of wood was put through at the proper height, so that two people could work at the sweep at once." A little more improved was the hand-mill which came into use somewhat later. This was constructed of two circular stones, one running on to the other. The nether of these was called the bed stone and was stationary. The upper one was called the runner; around these was a wooden hoop with an opening for discharging the meal. In the upper surface of the runner there was a hole near the edge into which the end of a pole was fitted. The other end of this pole was put through a hole in a board fastened to the joist above. With one hand grasping the upright pole the operator turned the stone and with the other he put the grain into the central opening in the runner. The grinding of one bushel of grain was considered a day's work.

The first water mills were designated tub mills. In this the upper stone was stationary and the lower one turning against it ground the grain. A perpendicular shaft was



fitted into the lower stone or runner. On the lower end of this shaft there was a water wheel about five feet in diameter. The wheel was sunk in the stream and the force of the running water caused it to revolve, turning the stone at the other end of the shaft. Following these came the grist mills, with a water wheel having a horizontal shaft. In these early mills bolting cloths were not used. Seives were used, but not the ordinary wire seive of today. At that time they were made by stretching deerskin tightly over a hoop and punching it full of holes with a hot wire. Ever since Hampshire became even sparsely settled it seems the inhabitants have had a surplus of wheat, and it has furnished them a means of obtaining ready money. In the early days after the revolution the matter of transportation was a serious hindrance to commerce. Goods had to be hauled from the cities in wagons, and the products of the farm had to be taken to market in a like manner, at least in most instances.

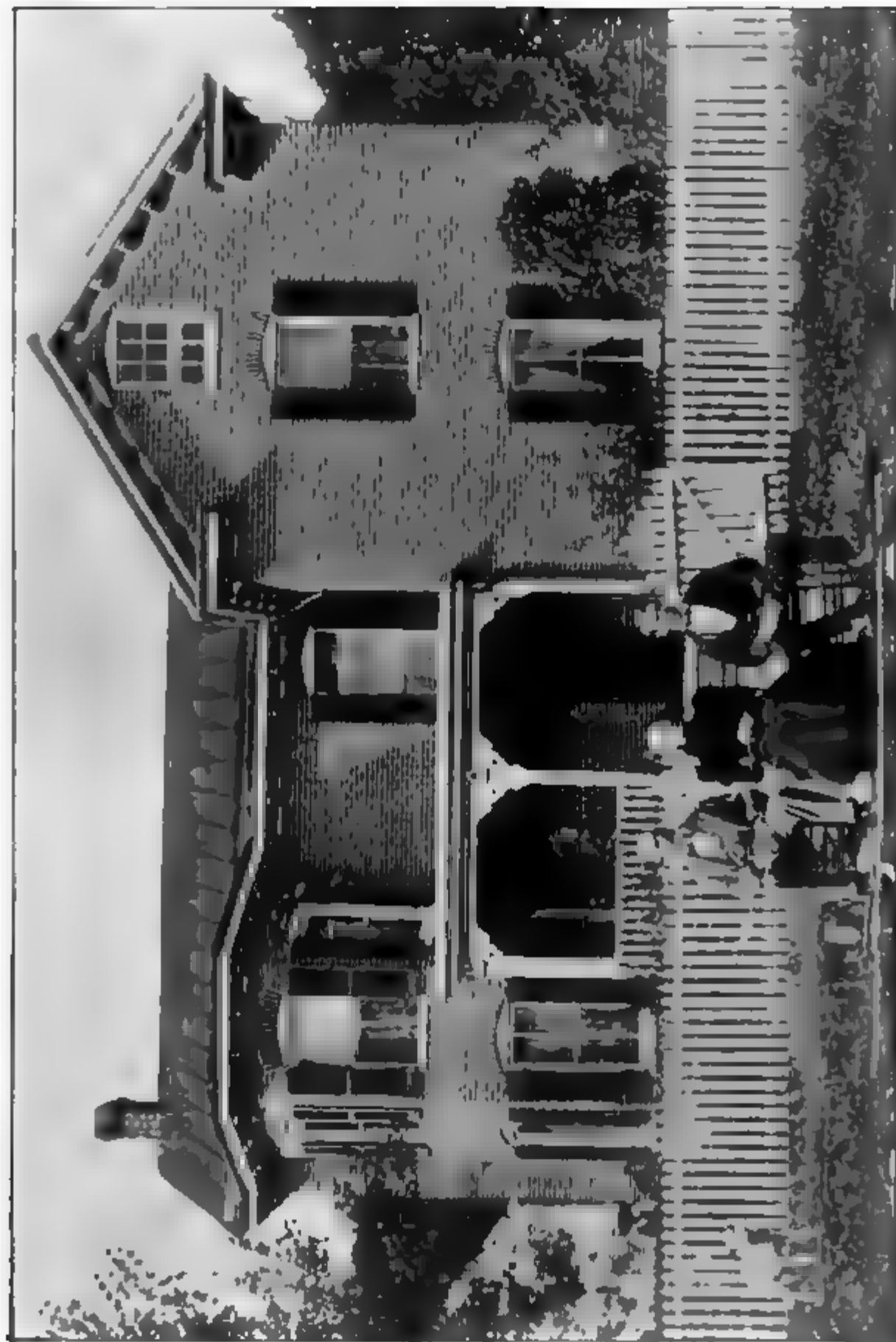
Hampshire had an important advantage in this particular. Through the most fertile and productive valley of the county ran the South branch river. By means of boats this river was made to perform an important service. Had a person chanced to pass up the South branch in those days, at the various eddies and places of easy access, as far up as Moorefield, he would have seen scores of barrels of flour sitting. When the river began to rise boatmen would come and build boats, load the flour upon them and float away with it to market. There were no particular depots or places for storing the flour, but it was placed on the river bank at such points as it could be easily loaded. Flour merchants would hire boatmen to build boats to take this flour to market. The boats used were usually mere flat structures, built temporarily for the purpose of transporting this flour and sold for lumber when their destination was reached. There were, however, keel boats of more expensive and graceful build, that were pushed



back up the river by the boatmen when they had delivered their cargo. This traffic ceased about 1830. Two of the men who used to make these boating trips, James Larimore and Samuel Larimore, lived on Jersey mountain, near Three Churches. They, together with Captain Jake Earsom, another of their number, are well remembered by persons now living. Alexandria and Washington were the principal markets for this flour. Some fourteen miles above Washington the Potomac plunges over a precipice some sixty feet in height. To get around this a canal was built. It was about a half mile in length and deep enough to float heavily loaded boats. The walls of this historic canal, the first in America, are still standing and are frequently visited by those interested in the early industrial history of this country.

Much of the drudgery of farming has been removed by the introduction of farm machinery. It is no exaggeration to say that one man can with the improved machinery of today, accomplish as much as five men could with the implements in use at the beginning of this century. Improvements in farm machinery came slowly, but the progress already made is very great, and there is unquestionably still a large field for improved inventions in agricultural implements. One of the first improvements of importance was the grain drill, and while the first invention was a rude machine, it was an immense step forward from the shovel plow. The "old blue drill," as it was called, was in use in this county as early as 1850. Windmills came in somewhat earlier, perhaps as soon as 1810. Previous to their appearance grain had been cleaned by means of a sheet. One man taking hold of each end, the sheet was swung to and fro, creating a current of air by this motion. A third person tossed the wheat into the air or stood upon an elevated place and poured in from a vessel. While this was a slow process it was more satisfactory than one would at first suppose. The first windmills had





RESIDENCE AND FAMILY OF EPHRAIM HERRIOTT.







wooden cogwheels and were kept oiled by means of soft soap. The iron cogwheels came in about 1840. Reaping machinery was introduced along the South branch valley several years before the civil war. The reapers were what were then known as "droppers." They did not bind the grain in sheaves, but threw it off in bunches, and it was afterwards tied by hand. About 1870 the binder came into use, and these machines, now highly improved, are in general use throughout the county. The mower and hay-rake are two inventions that have added much to the ease of caring for the hay crop. These machines in their present improved form have not been in popular use more than a quarter of a century. The first rake for gathering hay by means of horse power was almost entirely of wood. It was without wheels and slid upon the ground much after the manner of a sled. Occasionally one of these old rakes is still used.

It was not long after land had been farmed and its best grain growing elements extracted until the need of fertilizers was felt. Among the earliest fertilizers used in this county were lime and ground gypsum or plaster. These enriched the soil to a certain degree, but there was a desire for something that would have a more immediate effect. Something that would have a direct effect on the crop on which it was sown. This led to the use of manufactured fertilizers. As early as 1852 Philip B. Streit and Rev. John M. Harris were using Peruvian guano on their farms on Jersey mountain. This guano was put up in Richmond, Virginia, and proved a very excellent stimulus to crops. The acid fertilizers so widely used on our fields today have not been generally used for more than twenty years. When first placed upon the market these fertilizers sold at from thirty to forty dollars a ton.

In the days of early settlements the matter of soil was of little importance. The pioneer cleared his field and farmed it until the growing qualities of the soil were



exhausted. But all around him was wooded lands whose soil had never felt the plow, and for the clearing these became his fields. When the country became more thickly settled there was a limit to the acreage of each man. Then the preserving of soils and the reclaiming of those already barren, became a matter of interest. There is, perhaps, no more important matter confronts the farmer today than the proper care for his newer soils and the reclaiming of now barren tracts. The soil upon our hills and valleys is the accumulation of untold geological ages and its wasteful destruction should not be permitted. When once destroyed it can only be replaced, if at all, by years of careful agriculture and unmeasured work.

Hampshire county has for years been noted as a stock raising center and is even supposed to have been named after Hampshire in England because the two districts very much alike in the production of fine hogs. As long ago as 1750 droves of hogs were driven from the South branch valley to Winchester to market. Cattle were raised and marketed within a few years after this date. Improved stock have been introduced from time to time and the county yet has many advantages as a stock raising district, though from being more thickly populated there is less range than in the early days of its settlement. Man's progress upwards has been largely due to his subjugation of other animals and of plants. The friends he has won have made their own bondage more complete by the added strength they have given their captor. So long as man was content with the meager supplies of flesh he could capture from the forest, and, so long as he depended upon the uncultivated hills and valley to furnish him grains and fruits, his advancement was slow. To his lack of ability to domesticate we may ascribe the backward condition of the American Indian when discovered by the whites. He had no domestic animals, as the horse, cow or hog; his domestication of plants had been limited to corn



and tobacco, while of tame fowls he had none. The Aryan race are the great domesticators of the earth. The white man has his scores of friendly animals and plants to help him in the struggle for existence. He ranges his stock and tills his fields and plants his orchards. Probably the last phase of agriculture to receive attention in this county was the growing of fruits. Many can yet remember the puny orchards that surrounded the early settler's cabin, or the chance scrubby tree that stood in the commons like a ragged vagrant asking for sustenance. Apples were apparently the first fruit cultivated and there are standing today many trees a half century old. Peaches were next, but chiefly seedling varieties, until 1875, when budded fruit began to be planted as an experiment. There are at present some extensive peach farms in Hampshire. Those of Harry Miller, near Bethel church, on Little Capon, and then controlled by a stock company, near Romney, are the most extensive. Pears, plums, cherries and quinces have all been cultivated with varying degrees of success for the last half century, but no one has planted extensively of these fruits. The soils of the county seem well adapted to the growing of nearly all fruits that can be raised in the temperate zones. A considerable development of this line of agriculture may be looked for in the future.

*The West Virginia Fish Commission.*—An act was passed February 20, 1877, creating this commission for the purpose of encouraging the culture of fish and the stocking the streams of the state. The first commissioners were, Major John W. Harris of Greenbrier, Hon. Henry B. Miller of Wheeling, and Captain C. S. White of Hampshire. These were appointed June 1, 1877, for a period of four years. The commission organized July 17, 1877, by electing Major Harris president, Captain White secretary, and H. B. Miller treasurer. In the summer of 1877 Captain White purchased of Charles Harmison the



Maguire Springs near Romney, and erected and equipped a hatchery at a cost of seven hundred dollars. The commission also purchased the Maguire Springs, including one-fourth acre of land for five hundred and fifty dollars. In 1879 Major Harris resigned and N. M. Lowry was appointed in his stead. H. B. Miller was then elected president. In 1880 the grounds were greatly improved. New ponds were constructed and the grounds about the hatchery enclosed by a tight seven foot fence. A house for the manager of the hatchery to use as a dwelling was built in 1885. In June of 1885, Hon. L. J. Baxter of Braxton county, was appointed commissioner, succeeding Mr. Miller. C. S. White was made president. In June of the next year M. A. Manning of Summers county, was appointed commissioner, vice N. M. Lowry, removed from the state. Mr. Manning removed from the state the next year, and Hon. James H. Miller was appointed in his stead. This year the ponds were much enlarged. In 1889 N. C. Prickett, Esq., of Jackson county, was appointed in place of J. H. Miller. In the year 1891 a new hatching house was built and equipped, an addition was made to the dwelling. The ponds were also repaired and enlarged. The following persons have been managers at the hatchery: From June, 1878, to May, 1880, Z. N. Graham; from October, 1880, to January, 1881, R. G. Ferguson; from January, 1881, to August, 1881, W. H. Maloney; from July, 1883, to February, 1886, William Montgomery; from April, 1886, to April, 1895, F. P. Barnes. Before Z. N. Graham was appointed manager, and during other intervals, when there was no manager, Commissioner White served in that capacity.

In the year 1877 and for some years thereafter it was confidently believed by United States Commissioner Baird and all leading fish culturists that the California salmon, a fish of fine quality, could be successfully introduced into our streams, and at his request the first and most expen-



sive efforts of the West Virginia commission were made by hatching and depositing in adjacent streams large numbers of this fish. This hatching was successfully accomplished by Captain White in charcoal troughs of his own design and manufacture. The salmon did well in the South branch and Potomac and went to the sea. Numbers of them were caught all the way from Romney to Washington. High hopes were entertained that this experiment would prove a success, but to the surprise of all interested in fish culture, the salmon never returned to our streams to spawn nor to any other stream entering the Atlantic ocean, although they invariably return to streams entering the Pacific. It will be interesting to give some figures showing the work done by the commission. In the years 1877-78 about 675,000 salmon, 100,000 trout, 1,200 black bass, most of them large enough to spawn, were distributed. In the years 1879-80 there were distributed 360,000 salmon, 165,000 shad, 600 carp, 2,000 gray bass and 1,400 native fish (black bass, pike, perch, jack and blue catfish), together with large numbers of mill-pond roach, as food for the bass. In 1881 and 1882 the commission put out 18,500 land-locked salmon, 7,000 trout, 2,000 carp, 600 black bass, 125 silver perch, 25 pike perch.

The appropriations since that time (\$500 a year) have been so meagre that the work of the commission has been devoted almost entirely to the raising of carp and native fish, and food fish for the bass. The streams of the state are now pretty thoroughly stocked with these fish. New river, Gauley and Greenbrier rivers, with their tributaries, have been supplied with black bass until now they contain great numbers of these fish. Many depleted trout streams have been restocked and many streams have been supplied with small food fish for the bass. In 1893 the legislature failed to make any appropriation for the commission nor have succeeding legislatures done anything. All that is now done by the commission is to care for the



state houses and ponds and furnish carp as they are called for.

*Farmers' Alliance.*—The only organization of agricultural people in this county that has met with success is the National Farmers' Alliance and Industrial Union. In the spring of 1889 W. B. Parham was commissioned by Colonel Barbee of Virginia, to come to Hampshire county and lecture at the same time, perfecting local organizations of the Alliance. Mr. Parham accordingly labored here in the spring and summer of 1889, meeting with considerable success and bringing into life many sub-divisions of the organization. In answer to a call these local sub-divisions of the Alliance sent delegates to Romney Tuesday, July 23, 1889, at which time the county Alliance was organized. There is a store at Romney which is under the control of the Alliance. Shares are issued to members of the organization only, and a board of directors have the management of the enterprise. The present officers of the Alliance in this county are, Dr. J. W. Shull, president; David Fox, vice-president; John Breinig, secretary; Geo. M. Haines, chaplain; L. H. L. Henderson, lecturer; Joseph H. Clem, assistant lecturer.



# CHAPTER XXVII



## REMINISCENCES OF WASHINGTON.

BY HU MAXWELL.

Allusion has been made in other chapters of this book to the fact that George Washington earned on the the South branch his first money, which became the foundation of his fortune. It is not amiss to enter more fully into details of the great man's visits to Hampshire, when he was a mere youth, and before he had won the justly-deserved fame of after years.

“His greatness he derived from heaven alone,  
For he was great ere fortune made him so;  
And wars, like mists which rise against the sun,  
Made him but greater seem, not greater grow.”

It is the purpose in this chapter to give extracts from Washington's diary and letters, referring to the South branch and neighboring country. Early in the spring of 1748 he made the acquaintance of Lord Fairfax, who had but lately arrived from England to take possession of his vast estate in Virginia. He sent Washington, who was just past sixteen years of age, to examine and survey the lands. George William Fairfax accompanied him. On March 18, 1748, Washington entered in his journal: “Thomas Beckwith's on the Potomac. We agreed to stay till Monday. We this day called to see the famed warm springs, and camped in the field all night.” These springs are at Bath, in Morgan county. There was high water at that time, and the party did not venture to cross the river, but on March 20, Washington writes: “Finding the river not much abated, we, in the evening, swam our horses over



to the Maryland side." March 21, "Traveled up the Maryland side all day in a continual rain, to Colonel Cresap's, over against the mouth of the South branch." March 25. "Left Cresap's and went up to the mouth of Patterson's creek. There we swam our horses over the Potomac and went over ourselves in a canoe and traveled fifteen miles, where we camped." March 26, "Traveled up to Solomon Hedges', one of his majesty's justices of the peace in the county of Frederick, where we camped." The next day the party reached the South branch, and on March 28, this entry was made: "Traveled up the South branch about thirty miles to Mr. J. R.'s (horse jockey), and about seventy miles from the mouth of the river." It is probable that Washington overestimated the distance from the mouth of the river by about ten miles. It is not likely that the distance had been measured at that time. On March 30 he wrote: "Began our intended business of laying off lots." On April 4 he made an entry showing the kind of people who then lived there, and who were all squatters on the lands of Lord Fairfax, or at least on land claimed by him; but some of them considered the land as their own, and in after years suits were brought to quiet the title, some of the suits remaining on the court dockets undecided for a generation. On April 4 he writes: "We were attended with a great company of people, men, women and children, who followed us through the woods, showing their antic tricks. They seem to be as ignorant a set of people as the Indians. They would never speak English, but when spoken to they all spoke Dutch."

To judge from this, the country must have had a considerable population at that time, and this population was largely German. It is also interesting to note that many localities then had the names by which they are still known, such as Patterson's creek, the Trough and South branch. Many years after that this river is given the Indian name, Wappacomo, in deeds and other public records, and one



might be led to suppose it had no other name; but the journal of Washington shows that in 1748 it was called South branch, the same as now. While surveying in the vicinity of Moorefield Washington boarded at Mr. Van Meter's, a relative of an influential family of the same name which has ever since been identified with the interests of Hardy and Hampshire counties. It appears that, although Washington made his headquarters at Van Meter's he slept in a camp; for, on April 7, he records that he slept at the house of a man named Casey, and says it "was the first night I had slept in a house since coming to the branch." On April 8 Washington wrote in his journal: "We breakfasted at Casey's, and rode down to Van Meter's to get a company together, which when we had accomplished, we rode down below the Trough to lay off lots there. The Trough is a couple of mountains, impassable, running side by side for seven or eight miles, and the river between them. You must ride round the mountains to get below them." The surveying below the Trough was completed in a couple of days, and on April 10 Washington wrote: "We took our farewell of the branch and traveled over hills and mountains to Cuddy's, on the Great Cacapehon, about forty miles." This Cuddy was none other than Caudy, a well-known pioneer who was a noted Indian fighter in after years, and from whom Caudy's Castle was named. It is interesting to note how Washington spelled Capon. He was not a very accurate speller, but usually spelled words as they were pronounced, and it is tolerably conclusive evidence that Capon was then pronounced as Washington spelled it. For the various spellings of the word, the reader is referred to the chapter in this book on early lands and land owners. From Capon, Washington and Fairfax proceeded home, and closed their business in Hampshire for that time. The report to Lord Fairfax proved satisfactory, and Washington was appointed public Surveyor. That office was then somewhat different from



what it is now. Fairfax owned all the land, or at least had a perpetual lien on all of it, and there was no "public," so far as a surveyor's duties extended.

Tradition has long maintained, and many people believe it, that the bottom lands of the South branch in Hampshire county, both above and below Romney, were laid off into lots by George Washington. Such, however, was not the case. This part of the county was surveyed prior to October 19, 1749, by James Genn, in the employ of Lord Fairfax. It was originally the purpose of Fairfax to retain the level land along the South branch and the adjacent hills, as a manor; but he changed his mind and offered the land for sale.

In the fall of 1753 Washington passed through Hampshire, on his way to the upper tributaries of the Ohio, on his mission from the governor of Virginia to the French in that country. The next year he was in the county again, on his way with troops to build a fort where Pittsburg now stands. In 1755 he passed through the county again, accompanied by General Braddock, on the ill fated expedition which met disaster on the bank of the Monongahela. The road by which this army marched is yet to be seen in some parts of Hampshire county. It passed through Spring gap, and crossing the Potomac near the mouth of Little Capon proceeded to Cumberland on the Maryland side of the river. After Braddock's defeat the Indians became troublesome along the frontier. On October 11, 1755, Washington wrote from Winchester to the governor of Virginia saying: "The men I hired to bring intelligence from the South branch returned last night with letters from Captain Ashby, and other parties there. The Indians are gone off." This refers to an Indian incurson a short time before. "It is believed their numbers amounted to about one hundred and fifty, that seventy-one men are killed and missing, and several houses and plantations destroyed. I shall proceed by quick



marches to Fort Cumberland in order strengthen the garrison. Besides these, I think it absolutely essential to have two or three companies of rangers to guard the Potomac waters. Captain Waggoner informed me that it was with difficulty he passed the Blue Ridge for crowds of people who were flying as if every moment was death. He endeavored, but in vain, to stop them, they firmly believing that Winchester was in flames." It can thus be seen that the Indian warfare must have been savage when seventy-one men on the border, perhaps nearly all of them in Hampshire county, were killed in a few days. On November 18, 1755, Washington wrote: "I think, could a brisk officer and two or three sergeants be sent among the militia stationed on the South branch, they would have probable chance of engaging many, as some were inclined to enlist at Winchester." On April 7, 1756, Washington wrote: "Mr. Paris, who commanded a party, is returned. He relates that upon the North river he fell in with a small party of Indians whom he engaged, and after a contest of half an hour, put them to flight." Washington states that he had just sent an officer and twenty men to reinforce Edwards' fort on Capon. Again on April 22, 1756, Washington wrote to the governor of Virginia: "Your honor may see to what unhappy straits the inhabitants and myself are reduced. I see inevitable destruction in so clear a light that, unless vigorous measures are taken by the assembly, and speedy assistance sent from below, the poor inhabitants that are now in fort, must unavoidably fall, while the remainder are flying before the barbarous foe. Ashby's letter is a very extraordinary one. The design of the Indians was only, in my opinion, to intimidate him into a surrender; for which reason I have written him word that, if they do attack him, he must defend the place to the last extremity, and when bereft of hope, to lay a train to blow up the fort, and retire by night to Fort Cumberland."



The Captain Ashby named in Washington's letter was John Ashby, grandfather of General Turner Ashby and of Captain Richard Ashby, both of Hampshire county and both killed while serving in the confederate army. In Washington's letter of April 22, 1756, he speaks of a fight on Patterson's creek: "A small fort which we have at the mouth of Patterson's creek, containing an officer and thirty men guarding stores, was attacked by the French and Indians. They were as warmly received, upon which they retired." Two days later he wrote another letter from Winchester in which he said: "The inhabitants are removing daily, and in a short time will leave this county as desolate as Hampshire, where scarce a family lives. Colonel Martin has just sent me a letter from Fort Hope-well on the South branch. They have had an engagement there with the French and Indians. The waters were so high that, although Captain Waggoner heard them engaged, he could send them no assistance. You may expect, by the time this comes to hand, that, without a considerable reinforcement, Frederick county will not be mistress of fifteen families. They are now retreating to the securest parts in droves of fifties. Fort Cumberland is no more use for defense of the place than Fort George at Hampton. At this time there is not an inhabitant living between this place and Fort Cumberland except in few settlements upon the manor around a fort we built there, and a few families at Edwards' fort on Cacapehon river, with a guard of ours, which makes this town (Winchester) at present the uttermost frontier."

This is a gloomy picture of Hampshire as it existed in the darkest hour of the French and Indian war. When Washington drew that picture he did it with all the facts before him. Only two small clusters of families between Winchester and Cumberland! One of these were seeking protection at Fort Edward on Capon, the others at Pear-sall's fort, which stood on the bluff overlooking the present



bridge across the South branch, about half mile south of Romney. It is no wonder there is a blank place in the court records of Hampshire county from June 11, 1755, till 1757. Nobody was left in the county to hold court. It is interesting to learn from this letter of Washington that he built the old fort which stood almost on the site of the present town of Romney.

In 1770, on October 9, Washington visited Romney and remained over night in the town, the next day proceeding upon his journey to the west to look at large tracts of lands on the Monongahela and Kanawha rivers. The house in which he spent the night stood on lot number ninety-six, at present owned by S. L. Flourney of Charleston, West Virginia.



# CHAPTER XXVIII.

—«O»—

## INDIAN DEPREDATIONS.

BY HU MAXWELL.

Elsewhere in this volume will be found chapters dealing with Indian wars in general, as they affected the state. The present chapter will be devoted to depredations which took place within the limits of Hampshire county, or near its borders. No tribe of Indians occupied and claimed this part of West Virginia when it first became known to white people; but large and small parties of the aborigines frequently occupied it temporarily, and no doubt sometimes remained for a considerable time. Indians from Pennsylvania on the north, North Carolina on the south and Ohio on the west often hunted along the South branch and over the neighboring mountains, and also in the valley of Virginia. And in time of war Indians from these same localities made incursions into Hampshire and adjacent sections, often murdering many people. These war parties usually came from Ohio and western Pennsylvania. A complete record of their murders does not exist, but a conservative estimate of the number of persons killed by the savages in Hampshire county from 1754 to 1765 would reach one hundred, and in addition to these, many were carried into captivity and never returned. There is no lack of evidence that the valley of the South branch was once the home of Indians. Their numerous graves attest this fact. Flint arrowheads in abundance were formerly found, usually on ridges overlooking the valley, and in the vicinity of springs where villages were probably located. Excavations in the graves a century ago occasionally revealed bones or entire



skeletons in a tolerable state of preservation. This was proof that no great time had passed since occupants of the graves had been laid to their final rest. Under favorable circumstances a skeleton may lie in a grave one hundred years, or probably longer, without total decay. There are accounts of skeletons and bones of giants dug from some of these graves, but these stories should be accepted with caution. That there have been giants in the world is well known, but authentic history records no race of giants. Individual Indians may have been abnormally large, the same as individuals of other nations, but doubts may well be entertained whether so many of them existed in the vicinity of the Potomac as old stories relate. It is said that a jawbone was plowed up near Moorefield which would pass over the outside of a common man's lower jaw; that it contained eight jaw teeth on either side, and that they sat transversely in their sockets. A bone of that size would have belonged to a man eight or nine feet high. That there were eight jawteeth on either side may safely be set down as a mistake. Another jawbone of enormous size is recorded as having been discovered near Martinsburg. The skeleton of a giant is said to have been dug up near the Shannondale springs. On Flint run, in Shenandoah county, the thigh bone of a giant is among the discoveries claimed. It was three feet long. This would indicate that the owner, in life, was fully nine feet high. The catalogue of large bones might be continued almost indefinitely, but they do not deserve a place in history because of the element of exaggeration attending their description.

It is claimed, and is probable, that the occupants of the South branch and surrounding country were exterminated or driven off by other Indians about the time of the earliest settlements by Europeans in Virginia. A date more definite cannot be given, because no man knows. The sole evidence is tradition supplemented by a study of the ruins found on the sites of former villages, their decay,



and the probable length of time which has passed since they ceased to be occupied. There was a tradition widely believed among the early settlers that a fierce battle was once fought at Hanging Rocks, on the South branch, a few miles north of Romney, between Delaware and Catawba Indians. According to this tradition, the Delawares had invaded the Catawba country, in the vicinity of western Carolina, captured a number of prisoners and retreated northward with them. When they reached Hanging Rocks, they stopped to catch fish. At this place a narrow strip of land is enclosed between the river and the cliff. The pursuing Catawbas came up unobserved, threw a detachment across the river, another in front of the Delawares, then advancing, made the attack from three sides, killing all or nearly all of the Delawares. A row of graves extending sixty yards or more, on the bank of the river, was early pointed out as confirmatory evidence of the slaughter of the Delawares. The tradition is given for what it is worth, but the reader is cautioned that the evidence of such a battle at Hanging Rocks is very unsatisfactory. The fact that there are graves at that place is about the strongest evidence, and that, in itself, is of little value. It is stronger evidence that an Indian village was somewhere near, and that this was the grave yard. That the evidence was unsatisfactory to the early inhabitants is proved by the fact that the battle field was located at two other places, one on the Opequon, several miles northeast of Winchester, and the other on Antietam creek, in Maryland. There was evidently a tradition of such a battle somewhere, and the earliest inhabitants began to hunt a suitable location for it. Without question, the Hanging Rocks would have been an admirable field for such a battle.

There is evidence, if not positive proof, that there was an Indian town two miles below Hanging Rocks. Of this Kercheval says, writing early in the present century:



“About two miles below Hanging Rocks, in the bank of the river, a stratum of ashes, about one rod in length, was some years ago discovered. At this place are signs of an Indian village and their old fields.” The most permanent remains of Indian towns are the beds of ashes left by their fires. Their frail wigwams fall to pieces in a short time, but the ashes remain for ages, covered with a greater or smaller accumulation of soil, depending upon the length of time and the surrounding conditions. The “Indian Old Fields,” in Hardy county, so called to this day, are without doubt the site of an Indian settlement. When the country was first explored by white men these fields were bare of trees, evidently having long been under cultivation. The Indians who occupied the South branch, as well as those who lived in the valley of Virginia, probably of the same tribe, were farmers as well as hunters, as is shown by the extent of their old plantations. That portion of the valley of Virginia lying between the Blue Ridge and Little North mountain, about twenty-five miles wide and forty-five long, was nearly all cleared of timber when first visited by white men. Agricultural Indians had no doubt lived there for ages.

In all parts of Hampshire county, but especially on the bluffs overlooking South branch valley, Indian arrow heads have been picked up since the country was first occupied by civilized man. These flints formed the tips of their arrows, both for the chase and in war. The notion that the Indians were accustomed to dip their arrows in rattle-snake poison, to make them more deadly, is erroneous. They did so at times, but it was not the usual practice. It is believed that the flint from which they made their arrow-heads was carried from Ohio. It is not found in this part of the country; but in Ohio old quarries have been discovered which seem to have been worked from time out of mind. The flint bears evidence of having been blasted by means of fire, being broken into fragments by heat.



When the French and Indian war broke out, and during Pontiac's war, a period extending from 1754 to 1765, the people of Hampshire county, in common with those of other parts of the frontier, built forts as places of refuge from the savages. These forts were usually large log houses, but sometimes consisted of a number of cabins enclosed by a stockade of logs planted on end, side by side in the ground and rising eighteen or twenty feet. There was a fort seven miles above Romney, but its name and its exact location are now forgotten. Fort Edward was on the Capon river, near where the road from Romney to Winchester now crosses. Eight miles below Romney was another fort, the name of which is not remembered. Fort William was a short distance below Hanging Rocks, and Furman's fort was some distance above Hanging Rocks. Ashby's fort was at Frankfort, on Patterson creek. Fort George stood near Petersburg, in Grant county, and Fort Pleasants, near Moorefield, in Hardy county. These were all small forts, but a number of formidable fortifications were built during those troublous times, not within Hampshire county, but so near that many Hampshire people found refuge in the n. Fort Cumberland stood where the town of Cumberland, in Maryland, has since been built, about twenty-eight miles from Romney. Fort Frederick was also in Maryland, about twelve miles from Martinsburg. It was built of stone, walls twenty feet high and four and a-half feet thick. It is said to have cost more than three hundred thousand dollars. Fort Loudoun, near Winchester, was very strong, and at one time five hundred families fled there for refuge. The fort was planned and built by Washington, who superintended it in person. It was erected immediately after Braddock's defeat, 1755, and no doubt was meant as a stronghold to withstand the attack of the French and Indians should they advance and destroy Fort Cumberland. Fort Loudoun mounted twenty-four cannon, of which six were eighteen-pounders, six twelve-



pounders, six six-pounders, four swivels and two howitzers.

When the French and Indian war broke out, Hampshire, lying on the exposed western frontier, soon felt the effects of savage warfare. The county at that time included Mineral, Hardy, Grant, Pendleton, part of Morgan, as well as much territory lying westward. In speaking of Indian depredations, the present limits of the county will be chiefly considered, but events near the borders will not be omitted. It will be observed that the Indians made hostile inroads into Hampshire from 1754 to 1765, eleven years, never before nor after. One of the most noted Indian chiefs whose presence added to the horrors of the savage warfare in the South branch valley was Killbuck, a Shawnee from Ohio. He was well acquainted with the people along the South branch before the war. His invasion of Pendleton, Grant and Hardy counties is spoken of elsewhere in this book. When the war broke out, Killbuck led some Indians to Patterson creek and killed a man named Williams after Williams had killed five of the savages, firing on them from his cabin as they attempted to break into it. Procuring a larger band of followers, Killbuck became ambitious of conquest, and led his men against Fort Cumberland, where Cumberland, Maryland, now stands. Not being strong enough to capture it by assault, he resorted to deceit, and sent word to the commandant, Colonel Livingston, that his intentions were honorable and his desire was for peace. He wanted to visit the fort with his Indians. But Colonel Livingston suspected his design, and when Killbuck and his principal chiefs were inside, the gate was closed. The commandant charged him with treachery and drove him out in disgrace. No attack was made on the fort at that time. The experience which the savages had gained in attacking Fort Cumberland a short time before had taught them the perils of the enterprise. A high knob on the Maryland side of the river overlooked the fort, and Indians in con-



siderable numbers amused themselves by taking position on the summit of this knob and firing into the fort. They did little damage, but the practice was annoying. One night while the savages were firing into the fort, and making the hill hideous with their yells, seventy-five soldiers surprised them and killed all but a few. For years thereafter the knob was called Bloody hill.

Killbuck continued to annoy the settlements until the close of the war. He then repaired to his home in Ohio, and occasionally visited Wheeling. Subsequently he became blind, but lived to be more than one hundred years old. A companion of Killbuck, named "Crane," because of his unusually long neck and legs, was a great nuisance along the South branch, but not much record has been found of his doings. In that day he was considered nearly as dangerous as Killbuck.

A party of Indians appeared before a fort about seven miles below Romney, perhaps in the year 1757, and a number of men unwisely sallied out to fight them; but they were compelled to retreat to the fort with the loss of several of their party.

In 1757 a large body of Indians invaded the country, separated into small parties and murdered many people. About thirty of them approached Fort Edward, on the Capon, about three-quarters of a mile above where the road to Winchester now crosses. The Indians decoyed the garrison into the woods, Captain Mercer being in command. The savages waylaid them and killed thirty-four. Only six escaped to the fort. This party had previously killed two men in that vicinity, making a total of thirty-six.

Isaac Zane, well known in the annals of Indian warfare, was a resident of the South branch, but was taken prisoner when quite young and was carried to Ohio where he grew up with the Indians, married a sister of a Wyandott chief and lived near Chilicothe. During the revolution when the Indians were waging a relentless war against the



frontier, Isaac Zane on more than one occasion secretly sent warning to the settlements, informing them of intended Indian raids, thus saving many lives. It is not improbable that he at one time saved Wheeling from surprise and capture. He never forgot the English language. His childhood home was in the present county of Hardy.

Very early in this war Michael Cresap, then a youth, but afterwards a brave soldier, distinguished himself in an Indian fight near Old Town, in Maryland, near the mouth of the South branch. An Indian had shot a settler and when in the act of scalping him, was shot by Cresap who was armed with only a pistol. The aim was good and the savage was killed. During that Indian war there were unprincipled white men who went about the settlements disguised as Indians, for the purpose of robbing the houses, after frightening the people away. In 1758 two such men were killed by settlers in Berkeley county.

In 1764 a party of Delawares invaded the South branch valley and hid near Furman's fort. William Furman and Nimrod Ashby left the fort to go to Jersey mountain to hunt deer and were both pursued and killed. The Indians prowled around other settlements several days, taking a number of prisoners, and with them returned to the South branch. While crossing that stream near Hanging Rocks, one of the prisoners, Mrs. Thomas, was carried away by the swift current, but fortunately escaped drowning. She escaped from the Indians and reached Furman's fort in safety.

Logan, the famous Mingo chief, from whom both Logan and Mingo counties, in this state were named, began his career of blood in the South branch valley, killing Benjamin Bowman, taking prisoner Humphrey Worsted, and stealing a number of horses. Logan's principal achievement was the killing with his own hand of thirty or more settlers, chiefly women and children, during the Dunmore war in 1774. He has also received considerable notoriety



on account of a speech attributed to him which was read at Dunmore's treaty with the Indians at Camp Charlotte, 1774. But Logan was not the author of the speech, and perhaps never saw it or heard of it. In that speech he is made to say: "During the course of the last long and bloody war Logan remained idle in his cabin, an advocate of peace. Such was my love for the whites, that my countrymen pointed as they passed and said, 'Logan is the friend of the white men.'" This, in itself, is reasonably conclusive proof that some one wrote the speech who was not acquainted with Logan's murdering and horse stealing expedition to the South branch a few years before. Michael Cresap, who was charged in the speech above referred to, with being the cause of the Dunmore war, but which charge was groundless, was well known in Hampshire county, although a citizen of Maryland, just across the Potomac. The accusation that Cresap murdered Logan's relatives near Wheeling in 1774, is now known to have been false, although long reiterated in histories, even by George Bancroft the most eminent historian of the United States. Captain Michael Cresap was on the Ohio river when the war of 1774 began. He returned at once to the Potomac, raised a company of volunteers, mostly in Hampshire county, and within seventeen days from his departure from the Ohio he had returned almost to that place when he was ordered to dismiss his men by John Connolly, of Pittsburg. Cresap did so with great reluctance. Connolly was a willing tool of Dunmore's in his conspiracies against the American people, and when the patriots of Virginia shortly afterwards drove Dunmore out, Connolly fled also. More than a century has passed, and in the light of history Cresap stands out as a patriot, while Dunmore and Connolly are convicted by their own acts of conspiring against the Virginians who were fighting for liberty at the opening of the revolution.

When Fort Henry, at Wheeling, was threatened and



besieged by an Indian army in 1777, Captain Foreman with a company of Hampshire volunteers marched with all speed to help save the settlements along the Ohio. Before his arrival the Indians had been compelled to retreat from Wheeling, but twelve miles from that place Captain Foreman fell into an ambuscade and himself and twenty-one of his men were killed at Grave creek. In every danger, in every call for help, the men of Hampshire have been found among the first to respond.



# CHAPTER XXIX.



## MONEY AND CURRENCY.

BY H. L. SWISHER.

The mere enumeration of substances and commodities that have been used as a medium of exchange or money would fill much space and occupy much time, and though it would possibly be interesting to show how the currency of today has been evolved, and to conjecture as to a means of exchange in future years, such a treatise does not fall within the scope of a county history. The earliest currency used in this country was that in use among the Indians at the time white men arrived here. This consisted of shells strung on strings and circulated freely among the different tribes and to some extent among the first settlers on the James river. Furs were another primitive means of exchange and we find a considerable traffic in these along the South branch at an early day. It was not until a later time that we find tobacco the standard of value. The unsavory weed was used for this purpose and to a much larger extent than is generally supposed. In an old order book of the Hampshire justice court for the years 1788 to 1791 we find continual reference to the payment of judgments in tobacco. Witnesses were invariably paid in tobacco for their attendance at court. The rate was twenty-five pounds a day and four pounds for each mile travelled in going to and from court. Clerks' and sheriffs' salaries as well as those of other county officers were paid in tobacco a little more than a century ago. The specie value of this tobacco was a penny and a half-penny per pound or about three cents in the money of today. At



a justice court held April 16, 1789, judgment was awarded "Andrew Wodrow against James Anderson, late sheriff of Harrison county, for one thousand three hundred and eighteen pounds of tobacco at a penny and a half-penny per pound, being the amount of fees put into the hands of said Anderson to collect on which he never reported." We can easily see how clumsy this medium of exchange was in the adjustment of large accounts. Then it was no small matter to transport such a load of money.

We cannot wonder that in 1792 tobacco as money was abandoned and the present system of dollars, cents and mills was introduced with some modifications. Coins of other countries circulated freely, but led to considerable complication in business transactions, so that the general assembly passed an act in 1792 regulating the value of foreign coins. It stated that twenty-seven grains of the gold coins of France, Spain, England and Portugal should be equal to one hundred cents in Virginia money. The gold of Germany being of less fineness, it required twenty-nine and eight-tenths grains to equal one dollar in Virginia. Spanish milled dollars were worth one hundred cents and other silver coins, uncut, were worth one dollar and eleven cents an ounce. A "disme" was one-tenth of a dollar.

The first bank in this county was the Bank of the South branch of the Potomac. The building in which it did business stood on the ground now occupied by the Literary hall in Romney. The date of the organization of this bank could not be ascertained, but it was, in all probability, in operation at the beginning of the present century. An act was passed November 16, 1816, which was "to give the Bank of the South branch of the Potomac more time to close its business." Unchartered banks had been ordered to quit circulating their notes and this act was meant to suspend the order temporarily. The same year banks were ordered to pay specie on penalty of an addition of six per cent. This bank continued in business as late as 1819,



at which time Nathaniel Kuykendall was cashier. The Bank of the Valley of Virginia, at Winchester, was authorized by act February 5, 1817, and the provision was made that if the counties of Jefferson, Berkeley, Hampshire and Hardy would subscribe one hundred thousand dollars stock, an office of deposit and discount should be established in each county, or if they subscribed two hundred thousand dollars two such offices were to be established. By taking advantage of this provision a branch of the Valley bank was established at Romney about 1825, with John McDowell, president, and John Jack, cashier. Other branches were established at Moorefield, Charlestown, Christiansburg and Staunton. It was this bank that served the people of the county until the civil war, when the mother bank at Winchester suspended and the branch banks went out of existence.

During the war there was no bank in the county and the circulating medium, which consisted largely of confederate money, was in a disturbed condition. The frequent incursions of union and confederate forces and the capture and recapture of the territory by the opposing parties lent such an element of uncertainty to business transactions that no one knew what kind of money to accept. A great many, firm in the belief that the confederate cause would be triumphant in the end, accepted its money without hesitation, and finally had only worthless paper to represent the large estates they owned at the beginning of the war. The counterfeiting of bank notes seems to have been quite common previous to 1860. Each month there was a "Bank Note List," taken from Bucknell's Reporter, published in the county papers. In a copy of the Virginia Argus for August 21, 1851, there is such a list published. The whole number of banks in Virginia at this time was forty-one, three of which are reported closed and two of which have failed. Out of this number, forty-one, there are twenty-six banks on which there were "either counterfeit or



altered notes of various denominations in circulation throughout the United States, for the description of which we refer our readers to the Detector." The Romney branch of the bank of the Valley is among the number having spurious notes in circulation.

Immediately following the war there was a great dearth of money and in consequence business was hampered and hindered. The considerable volume of confederate money then in the county having become utterly worthless, the people were left without a medium of exchange and consequently transactions of a business nature were carried on largely by barter. For more than twenty years after the war there was no bank in Romney or in the county. People generally did business with the Second National Bank of Cumberland for which J. C. Heiskell acted as agent. While this method of banking was quite satisfactory so far as methods were concerned it was found to be very inconvenient. It was therefore decided to organize a bank in the county. The Bank of Romney which is still in operation and doing business in the building occupied by the branch of the Valley bank previous to the war, was granted its charter September 3, 1888, and went into operation January 1, 1889. It was organized with the following board of directors: H. B. Gilkeson, president; Judge James D. Armstrong, R. W. Dailey, Jr., I. H. C. Pancake, R. E. Guthrie, J. C. Heiskell, J. W. Carter, members and John P. Vance, cashier. The convenience of having a bank within the county's limits for the accommodation of its citizens is likely to make the Bank of Romney a permanent institution.



# CHAPTER XXX.



## THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR.

BY HU MAXWELL.

Hampshire county was not invaded by the enemy during the war of the revolution. The British were never in a position to invade it, had they so desired. There was too much country between the mountains and the sea. Little could be gained and much might be lost by such an invasion. The fate of Colonel Furguson, who attempted to cross the mountains in North Carolina with a strong British force, was a warning to all others. The story of King's mountain soon became familiar far and near. No record exists in Hampshire, so far as known, of the names or number of the soldiers who went from the county to the war of the revolution, but there were many, as is shown by the history of the old families, nearly all of whom had representatives fighting under Washington, Gates, Greene, or some other general in that long and desperate struggle. The character of the soldiers from Hampshire needs no words of praise. Well might a general exclaim, as Pyrrhus exclaimed, "Had I such soldiers how easily could I conquer the world!" Trained and schooled in the wars with the Indians, the settlers of Hampshire were not afraid of danger. Their loyalty to the cause of liberty was not to be shaken, as may be seen from their indignation when the tory rebellion broke out in Hardy county, and from the promptness with which they helped to suppress it. A full account of that unpleasant affair will be found elsewhere in this book.

General Washington fully appreciated the character of



the people on the western frontier when he said, in the most discouraging season of the war, that if driven from the lower country by overwhelming force he would retreat to the mountains and raise the standard of liberty there and hold that rugged country for freedom. No doubt he had Hampshire county, among other mountain regions, in mind when he thus spoke. No country along the ranges of mountains was better known to him than was Hampshire. He had walked over its hills and camped in its valleys before the county was formed, and before he was known to fame. He knew that Hampshire pioneers refused to be driven from their county by the Indians, but held out, at the fort at Romney and on Capon, when all the rest of the country between Winchester and Cumberland had been given up to pillage. These things, no doubt, he called to mind when he seriously considered what he would do if driven from the lower country by overwhelming forces of British.

During the revolution a large number of prisoners of war were confined in the fort at Winchester. They were largely Hessians, who had been imported from Germany by England to fight against the patriots in America. They were savage and merciless on the field of battle so long as they had the advantage, but when they were on the losing side, and more particularly when taken prisoners, they were humble, submissive and contrite. After they had been confined at Winchester for some time, Tarleton, a British officer, undertook a raid against Winchester for the purpose of liberating the prisoners. But the movement was discovered in time, and the prisoners were hurried off to Fort Frederick, in Maryland, twelve miles from Martinsburg. Learning that the prisoners were beyond his reach, Tarleton did not continue his march to Winchester. It is probable that the Hessians were glad that Tarleton did not succeed in setting them at liberty, for they would then have been put back in the army, and they preferred



to remain in captivity. They had a better time where they were. They were allowed almost as much liberty as the private citizens in the surrounding country, yet few of them attempted to escape. When, at last, they were set at liberty, they preferred to stay in America, and many of them found their way into Hampshire county and settled. Their descendants are in the county yet, and form a respectable portion of the community.

*John Champe.*—A few miles south of Romney, near the South branch, is the site of a house which long ago fell into decay, only a few ruins remaining. Connected with these ruins is a story dating back to the revolution. Here lived for thirty years John Champe, one of the bravest soldiers in Washington's army. A mystery hung over his life, but it has long since been cleared away. He came into the South branch valley while the war for independence was in progress; and, since it was known that he had been an officer in the army, enjoying the confidence of Washington, it was a source of speculation why he had left the army and taken up his abode in what was then the remote frontier of Virginia. The true reason was understood by a few, but the truth became generally known only long years after the war, when Washington and many of his soldiers had gone to their last rest. Washington sent Champe into Hampshire county to remove him from the danger of falling into the hands of the British, by whom he would have been hanged had they captured him. The story of his life and of the hazzardous mission which he undertook is as follows:

John Champe was born in Loudoun county, Virginia, about 1756. He enlisted in the continental army in 1776, and was in the command of Major Henry Lee. Champe rose to the rank of sergeant major, and was a great favorite with Lee. He was thus performing the duties of a soldier and officer when peculiar circumstances brought him to the notice of Washington. Benedict Arnold had



turned traitor and had fled to the British army at New York. Major Andre had been captured and was held as a spy. Rumors were in circulation to the effect that at least one other American officer of high rank contemplated desertion, and no one knew how far the spirit of treason might extend. It was an hour of uncertainty and danger. Washington felt the gravity of the situation. He sent for Major Henry Lee in whom he had unbounded confidence, and laid before him a plan for the capture of the arch-traitor Arnold. Could he be taken and executed, his death would satisfy justice and furnish the public example deemed necessary; and the unfortunate Major Andre's life could be spared. To carry out Washington's plan, it was necessary to find a man of cool determination, deliberate purpose, desperate courage, and absolute self-possession under any and all circumstances. He was to desert to the British, and execute a plan for kidnapping Arnold and carrying him into the American lines. Washington asked Lee to find him a man who could do this. Lee selected Champe and brought him to Washington. The young officer was of a silent and morose disposition, of dark complexion, a splendid horseman, of a frame muscular and powerful, combining the qualities, both mental and physical, necessary for performing duties difficult and dangerous.

The young officer came to Washington, and heard the plan for Arnold's capture. He did not like to undertake it, not because of the danger, but the thought of desertion, even when feigned, was abhorrent to him. Upon the earnest entreaty of Washington, he finally agreed to go upon the mission. The time was short, for it was necessary to act at once. About eleven o'clock that night he quietly mounted his horse and started for New York by way of Paulus Hook. He hoped to escape unobserved, or at least to have several hours the start of his pursuers. But in this he was disappointed. He had not been gone an



hour before a troop of cavalry was in pursuit. When he reached the water's edge, within sight of a British ship, the pursuers were within two hundred yards of him. He left his horse and plunged into the water. The British came to meet him and he was assisted on board, and in a short time reached New York, where he was introduced to Sir Henry Clinton, who at once saw that Champe was a man who could be useful. The news of the desertion had already reached the British commander. Champe had papers on his person which showed him to be an officer; and it was the policy of the British to give deserting officers the same rank in the British army that they had held in the American army, by this method encouraging others to desert. Benedict Arnold had already been received with favor, and was engaged in raising a body of soldiers, which he called the American Legion, composed of Tories and deserters. It was natural that Champe should be sent to Arnold to be given service in the American Legion. This was what he had hoped for; and at the end of a few days he found himself with Benedict Arnold. Arrangements were made for carrying the traitor back to the American lines. Champe had two companions who were ready to assist him. A boat was prepared and was tied at a convenient point. Major Lee was notified, and sent a troop of cavalry to a place agreed upon to be in readiness to carry Arnold away if Champe should succeed in kidnapping him and bringing him in the boat to shore. The plan was to seize Arnold, gag him, carry him by force to the boat and make off. Everything was ready, and the night approached for executing the plan. But at the last hour it was defeated by an unforeseen occurrence. Arnold was ordered to another point, and Champe, with much disgust, saw his project fall through. It is believed that it would have succeeded had Arnold remained a few hours longer where he was. In the meantime Major Andre had confessed, thus rendering unnecessary a protracted trial,



and he had been put to death in accordance with the severe but necessary rules of war which decree that the spy must pay the penalty with his life. Had Arnold been captured, and executed, the life of Andre could not have been spared under the circumstances.

Benedict Arnold and his newly organized troops sailed for the south and landed in Virginia. Champe went with them, and was thus carried far from his friends in New York, and all hope of kidnapping the traitor was past. He therefore prepared to escape back to the American lines. The opportunity to do so came soon after Arnold joined Lord Cornwallis at Petersburg. General Greene was then in the south, as was Major Lee also. Champe returned to Lee, and was by him introduced to General Greene who furnished him with a horse and sent him to General Washington who received him kindly, and gave him his discharge from the army, lest he fall into the hands of the British and be hanged by them. It is highly probable that Washington advised him to go to the South branch valley beyond the reach of the British. It is well known that Washington was acquainted with Hampshire county, and knew the wealth of the country in natural resources; and also knew that no British army would ever penetrate so far into the interior. At any rate, Champe took up his residence on the South branch, on land now belonging to John M. Pancake, near the Haunted Gate, five miles south of Romney.

The subsequent history of Champe is much like that of Simon Kenton, the Kentucky pioneer who was doomed to disappointment and neglect and who died in poverty. When Washington sent Champe upon his perilous mission he promised him, in the name of the United States, that he should be well rewarded. This promise seems never to have been fulfilled. Champe remained at his home on the South branch, but there is no record that he ever owned the land on which he lived. However, Washington never forgot



him. About fifteen years afterward, when it seemed that war was about to be declared between the United States and France, and Washington had been called to take command of the American army, he endeavored to find Champe, intending to give him a command in the army. But he was told that Champe had gone to Kentucky, where he had died. But this was incorrect. He still lived in the South branch valley, but it is uncertain whether at the place of his first settlement or further up the river. In 1788 his name occurs on the land books. In that year he entered a claim on a tract of public land on the Alleghany mountains, in Hardy county, but within the present limits of Grant county. It is not believed that he ever lived on this land. For the next twenty-five years nothing is known of his life, except that he married Phœbe Parnard and had a family. About 1815 he moved to Ohio, in company with Isaac Miller of Hampshire county. Mr. Miller settled on a tributary of the Scioto river. Champe remained a short time in Ohio and then went to Kentucky and soon died. His descendants are still living in Ohio and Michigan. His son, Nathaniel Champe, was an officer in the war of 1812 and made an honorable record. About 1858 S. S. Cox of Ohio, presented a petition to congress on behalf of the heirs of John Champe, asking for recognition of the claim of their father. The heirs then resided in Ohio and Michigan. The petition was prepared by A. W. Kercheval of Hampshire county. It was never acted upon.

*Early Militia Roll.*—The earliest militia roll now obtainable in Hampshire county is in the possession of Lieutenant John Blue, to whom it descended from his grandfather, Captain John Blue. The roll bears date April 28, 1790, and as that was but a short time after the close of the Revolutionary war it is highly probable that the same company was in existence during that war. From the list of names given below it will be seen that many of the names are still common in this county among the best



class of citizens: John Blue, captain; Robert Ross, John Ross, Garrett Blue, William Linton, John Pancake, James Spilman, John Reynolds, John Newman, Andrew Humes, George Glaze, Robert Parker, William Hanson, George Newman, William Newman, James Dale, Thomas Cornick, Barton Davis, Abraham Blue, John Williams, Joseph Hall, Peter Parker, Jesse Edwards, William Beakeman, Benjamin Belford, John Elos, Benjamin Swick, Isaac Daiton, John Ross, jr., David Laycock, Jacob Blue, William Skidmore, Samuel Davis, Samuel Newman, George Taylor, Ralph Skidmore, John Walker, William Coughran, Joseph Coughran, John Donalson, William Donalson, Robert Walker, Samuel Walker, Robert Buck, Anthony Buck, Jeremiah Sullivan, Patrick Savage, John Wells, William Corbett, Isaac Johnson, Robert Reynolds, Henry Hinds, Samuel Abernathy, James Halls, James Smought, Simon Pancake, Wheeler Meradeth, Thomas Davis, Joseph Williams, James Starr, Samuel Shrout, William Sheets, William Spilman, James Wood, Abraham Skilmon, Peter Swick, Henry Barber, Peter Williams, John Campbell, Feildon Calmers, Benjamin Neale, Isaac Newman.

It will be seen that four men of the name Newman were members of that company. It is believed that they were brothers of Dr. Robert Newman, but proof of it has not been found. Dr. Newman had five brothers who, with himself, took part in St. Clair's battle with the Indians, north of Cincinnati, the year after the date of the above militia roll, that is in 1791, and five of the brothers were killed.



# CHAPTER XXXI.

—«O»—

## NOTES ON NEWSPAPERS.

BY H. L. SWISHIER.

Hampshire's newspaper history is long but not so varied as that of many counties a century younger. We find in many counties numerous newspapers of an ephemeral nature. They grow up as suddenly as Jonah's gourd and like it perish in a night. Such is not the history of newspapers in Hampshire. This county seems to have never had a paper but met with a reasonable degree of success and accomplished in a certain measure the purpose for which it was established. In the year 1830 William Harper set on foot the Hampshire and Hardy Intelligencer. This paper served the people of both counties as a newspaper as there was no other paper nearer than Cumberland. The name was in a short time changed to The South Branch Intelligencer and under this head it was run for two generations. This paper when established was a six-column, four page paper 14x20 inches in size. It was, however, soon enlarged to seven columns and later to eight. At first it was printed on an old Franklin press, and the printing of one thousand to twelve hundred copies, which was its circulation at that time, was no small job. The ink was distributed by means of buckskin-covered balls filled with some absorbing substance. Such a thing as a composition roller was unknown. This paper was whig in politics during all its career up to the war, but after the war it lent its support to the regular democratic party. Mr. Harper continued as editor of the Intelligencer until his death, which took place in 1887. During



his long connection with newspaper work in the county he became acquainted with most of the older inhabitants, and they looked upon him and his paper as indispensable friends. After his death the paper was conducted, for about three years, by his widow until 1890, when Mrs. Harper sold the paper to a stock company who placed C. F. Poland at the head, and he continued as editor until January, 1897, when the stock and fixtures were bought by Cornwell Brothers, of the Review. With this event the old South Branch Intelligencer, which had visited the people of the county regularly, except during the civil war, for almost three score years, passed out of existence.

The Virginia Argus, a democratic paper, was established in Romney in the month of July, 1850. Its founder was A. S. Trowbridge, who had formerly followed the profession of teaching in New Orleans. The measure of success was not such as he thought ought to be meted out to his enterprise, so in the year 1857 he sold the paper to Samuel R. Smith and John G. Combs, who held it for three years and nine months and in turn sold it to William Parsons. A few months' experience satisfied Mr. Parsons that he did not need the paper, so he in turn sold it to Colonel Alexander Monroe and Job N. Cookus. These gentlemen continued as editors and proprietors until the first year of the war when they laid aside the pen and took up the sword and substituted for the noise of the printing press the din of battle. The paper was not revived after the war.

The Review, the strongest paper ever in the county, and one of the most ably edited local papers in the state, was established in 1884 by C. F. Poland, who conducted the enterprise with considerable success until 1890, when he sold out to the present proprietors, Cornwell Brothers. The Review has a comfortable home, built in 1895, and is steadily increasing in circulation and influence. When established it was a seven column folio, but has recently



enlarged to eight columns, and is now printed on a new steam press. In politics it has always been democratic.

The latest journalistic enterprise in the county is the *Romney Times*, established March 25, 1897. James Wirgman is editor and proprietor. The paper is republican in politics and has thus far received a fair measure of support.

The *Tablet* is an educational paper supported by the state and published at the Institution for the purpose of teaching printing to the pupils. It is issued weekly, on Saturday, during the school session of forty weeks. Parents of pupils attending the Institution receive the paper free. Others pay fifty cents a year for it. In size it is four column, 16x22, and its makeup is chiefly of such matter as concern the school and pupils. This paper was established in January, 1877, by A. D. Hays and has remained under his management for the greater part of the time since.

There is nothing that so minutely mirrors local sentiment and current history of a community as its local papers. In after years the chaff of weekly news, as recorded in the columns of a county's papers, yields the golden grain of history. Some of the incidents and happenings of former years that we find recorded in those old papers seem trivial enough, but, in fact, they were once matters of moment.

The oldest paper published in Hampshire which the author has seen, is a copy of the *South Branch Intelligencer* of April 4, 1845. It is a seven-column folio. The title is in moderately-sized letters, but without display. The paper is filled up largely with descriptive articles and foreign news. Some local items, however, are of interest. There is a list of unclaimed letters remaining in the *Romney* postoffice April 4, 1845, signed by E. M. Armstrong, P. M. This paper and several other very old ones were furnished the writer by J. N. Buzzard. They bear the



name of James Larimore. In this issue John Green and Joseph Davis give notice that they do a general business in carding and fulling. There is also a column and a-half article on the Chesapeake and Ohio canal, showing the probability of its being built and the benefits to be derived therefrom. In an issue of the same paper for 1847 we find this notice:

“TEMPERANCE.

“George Gilbert contemplates delivering a temperance address in the court house in Romney on Saturday night, 23d inst., at early candle lighting.”

We see thus that active war was waged against intoxicants fifty years ago even in our midst. In the market reports for this year wheat is quoted at one dollar and forty cents to one dollar and fifty cents a bushel; corn sixty-nine to seventy cents; oats forty to forty-five cents, and rye seventy to seventy-five cents. Here is a notice that must have caused consternation among the small boys:

“NO BALL PLAYING AGAINST THE COURT HOUSE.

“HAMPSHIRE COUNTY.

“September Court, 1847.

“Ordered, That Joseph Poling, keeper of the court house, prevent all ball-playing against the court house and defacing and injuring the same; and that if any person or persons shall hereafter play ball against said court house, or deface or injure the same, it shall be the duty of the said Poling to report to the court the names of all such offenders in order that he or they may be proceeded against for said offence.

“This order is ordered to be published.

“A copy: Teste.”

There is also an advertisement of “The most brilliant lottery ever drawn in the United States.” It was located at Alexandria, and no doubt attracted many an adventurer by its brilliancy. There is, however, no local mention of any fortunate ticket-holder in this county. Another copy



of the paper for November 15, 1850, is very much improved in size, appearance and makeup. There are numerous professional cards and many business notices. Two schools of academic grade are advertised, showing that educational advancement kept pace with material progress. Two year later still greater progress is manifested and the paper becomes in tone much like the local paper of today. A couple of peculiar notices from these old papers will close this chapter:

“HALF A CENT REWARD.

“Ran away from the subscriber on 22 of February of February, a bound boy by the name of James C——, about 13 years of age. The above reward will be given to any person who may bring him back to me.

“WASHINGTON PARK.

“Hamp. Co., Mar. 5, 1852.”

We have no record of who captured the prize. There are also several advertisements of slaves for sale and for hire, which read to us of the present generation like tales from a foreign land.

Times were not then so prosaic as one might suppose, for in an old paper printed in 1852 a shoemaker thus pours forth his soul in a poetic advertisement:

“Each lady, too, will please to recollect  
Men have for pretty feet a great respect.  
Many a time the foot a beau will gain,  
E’en when a pretty face has tried in vain.”

But let us drag into the light no more of the peculiarities of times and people so long past. Who shall say others will not in time to come, smile at those things we now consider sum and substance?



# CHAPTER XXXIII.



## AMONG OLD RECORDS.

BY HU MAXWELL.

Hampshire county, being the oldest in the state, its public records of course date back beyond those of any other county. So far as can be ascertained the first public record for Hampshire was written June 11, 1755. It was the minutes of a court held at that time. The oldest book in the court house, or that which is apparently the oldest, is a record of deeds, leases and mortgages immediately following the organization of Hampshire. The entry on the first page bears date in December, 1757, and to this fact are probably due the statements made by most historians who have written on the subject, that the oldest record was made in 1757. A person who is seeking the date of the oldest record, naturally looks on the first page of the oldest book. But in the present case, that would be misleading; and it is apparent that Kercheval, Howe, Lewis and others who have examined into Hampshire's history, have fallen into the error, and have concluded that the entry on the first page of the oldest book extant is actually the oldest record. Such is not the case. This old book bears internal evidence of being a copy of a still older book; or, more probably, it is a copy of records which existed some years as documents folded and laid away. The evidence of this is the fact that at different places in the books are instruments bearing dates earlier than those on the first pages. For example, on the first pages are deeds prefaced by these words: "At a court held in and for the county of Hampshire, December 13.



1757, ordered to be placed on record." A hundred or more pages further in the book occurs this preface to a deed: "At a court held in and for the county of Hampshire, June 11, 1755, ordered to be placed on record." Documents admitted to record at earlier sessions of court are found following those admitted later, probably twenty places in the book, showing, or at least indicating, that the recorder had before him a bundle of papers of different dates, all to be recorded; and that he endeavored to record them in the order of their dates, and usually did so, but a few of the earliest were overlooked, and had to be recorded later.

The honor of being the first clerk of Hampshire has usually been given to Gabriel Jones; but this is also a mistake, and it was made in the same manner as the error as to the first court. The first page of the oldest book was examined, and the clerk who recorded that page was Gabriel Jones. But the records of the court of June 11, 1755, show that Archibald Wager was the first clerk, or at least was in office before Gabriel Jones. There is nothing in this old book to show where this first court was held. It would be interesting to show this, for at that time the French and Indian war was raging with all its fury, and Hampshire was overrun with savages and their French allies. Three days before this first court was held in Hampshire, the British and American troops, under command of General Braddock, left Cumberland on the march to the present site of Pittsburg; and within one month from that date occurred the terrible battle on the bank of the Monongahela where Braddock fell and where he lost nearly half his army. Washington conducted the retreat to Cumberland, and the place was considered so unsafe, that the British troops continued the retreat to Philadelphia. Washington returned to Virginia with the American soldiers, and built a strong fort at Winchester as a defense against the Indians and French. If such was the



desperation of the situation that a British army was afraid to stay in Cumberland, and Washington thought it necessary to fortify Winchester, what must have been the situation of Hampshire which lay exposed to attack, and forty or fifty miles nearer the Indian country than Winchester was? Yet, it was in that summer, in the midst of the war, that Hampshire's first court was held. As already said, it would be interesting to know where the court convened and what protection it had against Indian attacks. It is known that the oldest court house stood several miles above the site of Romney, on the South branch; but whether it was in existence as early as the summer of 1755, and whether the first court was held there, is not certainly known, and perhaps the truth will never be ascertained. No person living can remember anything throwing light on the subject. It is probable, however, that the first court was not held in the court house on the river. It is more probable that it was held in some private house, the owner and its location having been long ago forgotten. Some persons are inclined to believe that the first court was not held in the county at all, but somewhere else. Wherever it was held, it was under British rule, and the judges were appointed by the crown, probably on authority delegated to Lord Fairfax.

Gabriel Jones was clerk of the court in 1757, and held office twenty-five years, and signed the court proceedings till the close of the Revolutionary war. If not a relative of Lord Fairfax he was at least on intimate terms with him, and held his office by appointment from Fairfax. He was a personage of considerable importance in his time, at least in his own estimation. He was clerk of other courts besides Hampshire, and went from place to place signing the court proceedings, which were written by his deputies. Sometimes, however, several pages in the old books are found in the unmistakable penmanship of Gabriel Jones, showing that he could work when he wanted to. Lord



Fairfax owned several counties and could have appointed Jones clerk of all of them had he so desired. As it was the old clerk had good pay and enough to do to keep him busy part of the time, and he was philosophical enough not to grasp at so many of the emoluments of office that he would have no time to enjoy the fleeting years. Thus life ran smoothly with him, and for a quarter of a century he signed the pages of the Hampshire courts. There is no record of how or why he lost his place; but, since his name disappears just after the close of the revolution, and soon after the death of Lord Fairfax, it is probable that the end of British rule in Virginia also was the end of the clerkship of Gabriel Jones. Nevertheless he had been permitted to hold the office all through the war, although it was well known that his patron, Lord Fairfax, was an enemy to the cause of American independence.

Although he was clerk of several counties, yet he found time for long pleasure trips to Richmond, Baltimore and elsewhere. Those cities were not so large or busy then as now, and many of the inhabitants, perhaps the most of them, at least in Richmond, knew Gabriel Jones. Like many other men of fame or genius, he sometimes took refuge from business cares in the excitement and pleasure of a game, usually as pastime, but sometimes for money. The story is told of him that once in Richmond the games went against him all night, and by the dawn of day his pocketbook had collapsed; the last shilling had gone into the pocket of the successful shark who played against him. But Mr. Jones had resources other than ready money. He wore a coat with gold buttons, every one worth five dollars, and there were a dozen of them. When his money was gone he commenced betting his buttons. As fast as he lost one he cut off another and staked it. Luck was against him, and the buttons went until only one was left. He hesitated when he came to that, but his hesitation was short, and as he cut off the button he remarked: "Here



goes the last button on Gabe's coat." That sentence became a proverb in Hampshire county, and still may be heard. When a man is driven to extremities and is compelled to put forward his last resource, he does so with the remark: "Here goes the last button on Gabe's coat."

The oldest books in the court house are made of linen paper, apparently equal to the best modern paper. At any rate, it has stood the test of a century or more of use and wear, and is still in good condition. The writing in most cases is clear and easily read. The ink used then must have been of an excellent quality, for it has neither faded nor rotted the paper. This is no doubt partly due to the fact that the writing was done with quill pens. It is well known that public records and documents to be preserved for a great length of time, should never be written with steel pens, but with quills, or with gold or glass pens. The rust from a steel pen forms a combination with some kinds of ink and rots the paper. In manuscripts not a quarter of a century old the ink sometimes has rotted the paper until every letter is eaten out, due to having been written with a steel pen and poor ink. But in Hampshire's records not a case of this kind was met with, either among the old or the new books.

The spelling and the grammar are often faulty and unique in the old records. This was due to two causes: first, documents were sometimes copied in the books just as they were written, mistakes and all; secondly, those who did the recording were sometimes deputies who had little education. The clerks of Hampshire have usually been educated gentlemen, but occasionally they have employed less educated persons to do the clerical work, and errors in grammar and spelling have crept in. A lease was recorded before the Revolutionary war in which the word "acres" is spelled in seven different ways, and not one of them right. It is "akers," "eakers," "akkers," "aquers," "ackers," "aikers," and "akres." One is



tempted to believe that the person who wrote it was experimenting to see in how many wrong ways he could spell the word. Another case of the same kind occurs in which "the calculus of variations" is brought to bear with all its powers upon the proper name "Hughes." From the handwriting it is evident that the copying was done by the same person who had experimented on "acres." It appears that Thomas Hughes and Susanna Hughes, his wife, made a deed. At first they are spoken of as "Thomas Hughes and Susanna Hues, his wife," and then as "Thomas Hughes and his wife Susannah Hughs;" again as "Thomas Hews and S. Hughes," and finally pure phonetics are resorted to and names are "Tomas Huse and Suzana Huze, his wife." Such variation in the spelling could not have been the result of ignorance, and must have been done by some copyist for amusement. The variations in the spelling of "Capon" are little better; but in that case the different orthographies were usually by different persons, and are found all through the records from the earliest times till the present. Each clerk, or copyist, had his own way to spell the name; and to this day men who have lived their whole lives in Hampshire will dispute over the proper spelling of the word. It is the name of a river, and is said to be of Indian origin, meaning "to appear," "to rise to view," "to be found again," or something of that kind. Lost river after flowing many miles, sinks and disappears, and after passing some distance under ground, rises to the surface, and then takes the name Capon. The word is spelled in different ways now. It is pronounced "Ca-pon," with accent on the first syllable, and that ought to be the spelling. But some write it "Cacapon" to this day, and it so spelled on the government geologic maps. In the earliest records it appears as "Cape Capon," "Capecapon," "Capcapon," "Cacapehon," "Cacapon," "Capecacapon," "Capecacapehon," and even in other ways. In 1849 Dr. Foote in his "Sketches of Vir-



ginia" spells it "Cacopon." The name "Potomac" has nearly as many spellings, not to mention three or four different and distinct names by which it was known in early years. It was "Powtowmac," "Potomack," "Powtowmac," "Powtowmack." "Pawtomack," "Potawmack," "Potomuck," and "Potomoke."

There is little difficulty in determining whether a document was written under British rule or after the achievement of independence, even if the date is missing. Under the British rule there is a long preamble, reciting the great and lasting benefits which befall humanity on account of the benign sovereignty of "the king of Great Britain, France and Ireland, by the grace of God." After the Revolutionary war there is no more of this foolishness. Sometimes papers of the most trivial character are prefaced by pompous and highflown language, always referring to the royal family on the throne of England. One may be given as an example of a large class. Early in 1762 Elizabeth Long, wife of Christian Long, of Hampshire county, owned a tract of land and wanted to sell it. But she was an invalid and was unable to travel from her home to the court of Hampshire county to acknowledge the deed and to be questioned as to whether she had signed it willingly, as the law required. She being unable to travel to court, and the court being unwilling to travel to where she was, there was a hitch in the proceedings, and the throne of England was appealed to for assistance. Thereupon, "George the Third, by the grace of God, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, etc.," appointed a commission to visit Mrs. Long at her house and ascertain whether she had signed the deed of her own free will, or whether she had done it "through force, fear or fraud." This commission was composed of Benjamin Kuykendall, Jonathan Heath and Robert Parker, all of Hampshire. The gentlemen performed their duty as became loyal subjects of King George, and made a written report "to the



justices of our lord, the king," that Mrs. Elizabeth Long had willingly signed the deed, and force, fear or fraud had no influence over her. Thereupon the deed was admitted to record May 12, 1762. Of course this document was in compliance with a form used in all similar cases; but that makes it none the less interesting, as it reminds us forcibly of the time when the people who inhabited the valleys and hills of Hampshire acknowledged the sovereignty of the king of England. Although they were loyal and obedient subjects, yet it is doubtful if they had much respect for any king. At least the people of this part of the country were the strongest supporters of independence, both at home and on the battlefield.

The first divorce granted in Hampshire county was a peculiar affair. If the law had been strictly interpreted, it probably would not have been declared a lawful divorce; but it is designated a divorce on the face of the record, and without doubt it was so considered by all interested parties. The history of the transaction, as nearly as can be ascertained, was as follows: During Pontiac's war, prior to 1765, a farmer in Hampshire county was taken prisoner by the Indians, but his wife escaped. He was carried to Ohio and from there was sold from tribe to tribe until several years afterwards, when peace was made with the Indians, he came home. He had heard nothing from his wife during the years of his captivity, but he evidently expected to see her again. Great was his disappointment when, upon arriving at his old home, he learned that she had long ago given him up as dead; had married again, and had several children. He did not seek revenge, but accepted the situation with the resignation of an Enoch Arden. The following record was made February 19, 1773, except that the names are left blank.

"To all whom these presence may come or may concern:

"Whereas, My wife hath sometime left me, and hath intermarried with J—— C——, I do hereby certify that I do



freely acquit and discharge the said J—— C—— from all trouble or damages, and I do consent that they may dwell together as husband and wife for the future without any interruption from me. Given under my hand and seal this XIX day of February, 1773.

“J—— K——.”

After Gabriel Jones had held the office of clerk twenty-five years, Andrew Wodrow came in and held from 1782 to 1814, thirty-two years. There was then a clerk who was in office only a few months, and gave way for John B. White, who was clerk from 1814 to 1862, forty-eight years. During the war and immediately following, the office was administered by different parties till C. S. White was elected in 1872, and was subsequently elected for terms ending in 1903. No other county in the state, and probably none in the United States, can show such a record. In 1903 the county will be one hundred and forty-eight years old, and four clerks will have held office one hundred and thirty-five years. These clerks are Gabriel Jones, twenty-five years; Andrew Wodrow, thirty-two years; John B. White, forty-eight years; C. S. White, thirty years. The last two are father and son, and their combined terms are seventy-eight years. The historian is not gifted to see into the future, but at the date of the writing of this book the county clerk, C. S. White, is not an old man, and judging from the custom of Hampshire of keeping clerks in office all their lives, it is not beyond the range of possibilities that the father and son may hold the office a century.

It is not positively known where the first Hampshire county court was held, but very early in the county's history a court house was built in the valley several miles above Romney. This was prior to 1762. In that year Romney was made the county seat, and a wooden court house was afterwards built between the present store of J. H. C. Pancake and the foot of the hill, southwest. Court was held there many years, and finally a brick building



was erected for the court. It stood east of the present court house and answered all purposes for which it was intended until 1837, when the present court house was completed.

The records have passed through vicissitudes of fortune, and many are now missing. It is believed, however, that they were complete up to the beginning of the war. During the war the court house was used as a stable by the soldiers who were stationed at Romney, and all records which had been left in the building were scattered and lost. Fortunately, however, the most valuable books had been removed. Early in 1861 when the union forces under General Lew Wallace came to Romney, John B. White was clerk. He was fearful that the books would be meddled with, and he kept close watch over them. But they were not molested. In the fall of 1861 another union army advanced to Romney under General Kelley. Learning of the advance of the federal forces, and not wishing to risk the books again in the hands of the union troops, Mr. White loaded them on wagons and sent them to Winchester. He took only the bound volumes, such as deed books, wills, and settlements of estates, and left the original papers in the court house taking two chances of preserving the records. If the books should be destroyed, there was a chance that the papers in Romney would escape. If the papers should be lost, the books in Winchester might escape. The wisdom of this measure was afterwards apparent. Had the books been left in the court house, all of Hampshire's records before the war would have been destroyed, opening the way to almost endless litigation regarding the title to lands. As it was, the books had many a narrow escape as related in what follows.

In 1863 Winchester was no longer a safe place for anything that could be destroyed. That town was captured seventy-eight times during the war. It changed hands oftener than the moon changed. The yankees and the rebels



chased one another in and out of it in rapid succession. By the close of the second year of the war the town could no longer be held any length of time by the confederates. Captain C. S. White, then in the southern army, kept his eye on the Hampshire records with concern for their safety. The yankees had ascertained that the books were in Winchester, and they were bent on destroying them. To prevent this, Captain White removed them to Front Royal. In a short time they were in danger here, and they were taken to Luray and remained several months. The union forces threatened that town, and it was apparent that it must soon fall into their hands. Captain White was determined to take the Hampshire books away, and with a company of about sixty men hurried to Luray, hoping to reach there ahead of the federal troops. In this he was disappointed. They entered the town ahead of him, and made straight for the place where the books were stored and commenced destroying them. That appeared to be the principal object they had in view, and had they been left alone a few hours they would have succeeded. But they were surprised in the act. Captain White and his men rode up and caught the yankees tearing up the books. The first intimation they had of the approach of the rebels was when a load of shot fired from a double-barreled gun in the hands of Captain White took effect on the exposed part of the body of a yankee who was in the act of perpetrating an insulting defilement upon the open pages of a deed book. The yankee sprang into the air as the load of shot struck him, ran a few steps, butted his head against a wall, and fell. Another yankee was at work on a book with his knife, slashing the pages. When the shot was fired, the yankees fled. Captain White and his men threw the books, about one hundred and fifty in number, into a wagon, and carried them safely away. They were taken to North Carolina and were concealed until the war was over. This was in the autumn of 1864. The



next year Captain White went to North Carolina and hauled the books to Staunton, and from there sent them by express to Romney.

In all of these changes of location, and ups and downs of fortune, not a volume was lost, and the only damage sustained was the wear of the covers, and the mutilation of two books by the yankees at Luray. The Romney court house was repaired and cleaned out, and the clerk's office was once more opened for business, after an interval of four years.

Other portions of the county records did not fare so well. Some of the records of the superior court are not in Romney, and may never be found. Among the volumes dating from before the war are, "Field Notes of the County Surveyor," in 1820, containing many names of old surveys; "Minutes and Fee Book," from 1792 to 1796, of about four hundred pages; "Tavern License Book," from 1843 to 1850, about one hundred pages; "Fee Book" of 1820, 1821 and 1822; "Chancery Cases," from 1843 to 1861; "Execution Book," of 1818, 1819, 1820 and 1821; "Superior Court Proceedings," from 1809 to 1831; "Execution Book," from 1814 to 1818; "Surveyor's Book," from 1793 to 1803; "Surveyor's Book," from 1804 to 1824; "Surveyor's Book," from 1778 to 1793; "Fee Book," from 1814 to 1817; "Warrant Book," from 1788 to 1810. This was connected with the state land office, and contains a record of all state lands patented in Hampshire county during the years which it covers. It will thus be seen that there are many gaps which will probably remain forever unfilled. It is said that records of some of the earliest courts have never been deposited in Romney; but that they were kept in the private office of Lord Fairfax, and they may have been long since lost beyond recovery.



# CHAPTER XXXIV.



## RELIGIOUS ORGANIZATIONS.

BY H. L. SWISHER.

The pioneer settler had not spent many moons in his rude cabin before the pioneer minister visited his abode. It would be hard indeed to discover the name of the first minister who braved the dangers of the forest to point men to a higher and nobler life. Nor is it definitely known what denomination first built a church within the present limits of Hampshire county.

This chapter is compiled from such data as could be gathered from histories and from ministers and members of the different denominations. No particular order was observed in the treatment of the different churches, but this chapter progressed as information was received. If more space is given to the treatment of one church than another it is because more data was furnished the author by those interested in that particular church.

*Protestant Episcopal Church.*—The county of Hampshire was formed into a parish by this church in 1753. When Hardy county was cut off from Hampshire in 1785 a new parish was formed in that county. Sometime in 1771–72 the Reverend Messrs. Ogilvie, Manning and Kenner were ordained in England for the church work in Hampshire county. Of these three Mr. Manning only reached the county, and the success or failure of his work is not recorded. About 1812 the Reverend Mr. Reynolds had charge of the parish of Hampshire, and quite soon after that Bishop Moore of Virginia, ordained the Reverend Norman Nash for church work in Hampshire, and such



was his zeal that unexpected success crowned his efforts. With his own skillful hands he helped to erect one if not two churches in this county. Zion, near North river mills, stands today as a monument to his skill and industry. After at least sixty years silence the voice of the Episcopal ministry was again heard at Zion a few years ago, when Bishop Peterkin and Reverend Gibbons held service at that place. Service is now held there quite frequently. It is probable also that Reverend Nash built a frame church at the town of Frankfort. Rev. Sylvester Nash, a nephew of the above-named gentleman, succeeded his uncle and often preached in the log churches he had erected. Through the untiring efforts of the last mentioned gentleman the old brick church in Romney was built. This church was partly destroyed by fire just previous to the Civil war. The remaining walls are now incorporated in the public school building which stands on the lot formerly owned by the church. Succeeding Mr. Nash came Rev. Mr. Hedges, and after him Rev. Mr. Irish. On October 12, 1878, Rev. J. Dudley Ferguson took charge of the work in Hampshire and remained until his successor, Rev. J. Tottenham Loftus, arrived in January, 1881. He, on the sixth of September of the same year, received injuries in a railroad accident from which he died in England in 1883. After an interregnum of nearly two and a-half years, Rev. Samuel H. Griffith took charge and remained one year. The Rev. G. A. Gibbons of Fairmont, W. Va., was then called and took charge of the work in Hampshire and adjoining counties July 2, 1885. The same year the brick church, St. Stephens, was built in Romney, chiefly through the efforts and liberality of the late J. C. Corell. This church was consecrated November 13, 1887, Bishop Peterkin and the rector, Rev. G. A. Gibbons, officiating. St. Stephens has at present twenty communicants and a Sunday school of five teachers and twenty scholars, E. O. Wirgman, superintendent.

In November, 1885, Rev. Gibbons and Bishop Peterkin



visited the McGills and Russells, near Okonoko, this county. During this visit they for the first time conducted Episcopal service in the M. E. church, south, on the Levels, about a mile from Levels cross roads. This service was repeated from time to time until this mission grew to have twenty communicants. At length the beautiful Epiphany church was built, chiefly through the well-directed efforts of Miss Hester McGill and other faithful adherents, and by the kindness of Wm. L. Davis of Rochester, New York, who generously donated his work while building the church. Epiphany has twenty communicants and a Sunday school of twenty scholars and five teachers, Henry McGill Russell, superintendent.

We gather, then, that this church formed the parish of Hampshire in 1753. It has been served by ten clergymen, Messrs. Manning, Reynolds, Nash, Nash, Hedges, Irish, Ferguson, Loftus, Griffith and Gibbons. There have been six churches, four of which, Zion, Frankfort, St. Stephen and Epiphany, are still standing. The old brick in Romney and a church on North river have been destroyed.

*Evangelical Lutheran Church.*—In the last quarter of the eighteenth century a congregation known as the "German Churches" was organized at a point about four miles from Capon Springs on Capon river. These "German Churches" were German Reformed or Lutheran congregations. The house in which these congregations worshiped for a full half century was built of hewn logs. It is still standing and is used as a sexton's house. The official records date back as far as 1786, and in 1836 interesting centennial exercises were held in Hebron, the name of the present Lutheran church at that place. For a number of years the two denominations had but one pastor, who was sometimes a German Reformed minister and sometimes a Lutheran.

The preachers in those early days served this congregation in connection with churches in the valley of Virginia.



Rev. A. Reck, a Lutheran minister residing in Winchester, became pastor of the Capon church, as it was then called, and since that time only Lutheran ministers have served as pastors. The present church, Hebron, was erected in 1849, under the ministry of H. J. Richardson. A visit to the cemetery of this pioneer organization reveals the fact that the Swishers, Rudolphs, Klines, Brills, Sechrists and Baumgardners were the first worshipers, and their descendants to the third and fourth generation worship there today. Mrs. Maud L. Michael, the wife of the present pastor, is of the fourth generation, being a great-granddaughter of George Rudolph, sr. There are but three of the pastors who served Hebron church now living. These are Reverends P. Miller, P. J. Wade and the present pastor, Rev. D. W. Michael. Rev. W. G. Keil, who was pastor at Hebron from 1822 to 1827, died at Senacaville, Ohio, in 1891, in his ninety-second year. In 1867 the membership of this church was the highest it has ever been, 106 being then enrolled.

St. James, formerly known as Laurel Chapel, was organized in 1866. There is also a congregation at Rio, on North river, known as North River Evangelical Lutheran church. It was founded by Rev. H. J. Richardson in 1849. The house of worship is owned jointly by Lutherans and Presbyterians.

*Regular Primitive Baptist Church.*—Three congregations of the Primitive of Regular Baptists were early formed in the limits of what was then Hampshire. The first of these was at North River and was established in 1787 by B. Stone, with twenty-six members. Crooked Run had forty-four members to start with and was founded by B. Stone, 1790. Paterson's Creek congregation was formed in 1808, by John Munroe, with sixteen members. All these belonged to the Ketocton association. Robert B. Semple, in his "History of the Rise and Progress of the Baptists in Virginia," published in 1810, speaking of the



above-named organizations, says: "North River, Crooked Run and Patterson's Creek are new churches, concerning which nothing interesting is known, except that they are preached to by Elder John Munroe, a practitioner of physic. Doctor Munroe has long been engaged in the heavenly employment of dispensing the gospel, and was, when a resident of Fauquier, as well as since his removal to Hampshire, a very successful preacher of the gospel."

Crooked Run, one of these early congregations, is now known as Union church, and is situated near the Northwestern grade, one and a half miles from Pleasant Dale, and one mile from Augusta. There are three other churches of this denomination in the county known as Little Capon, Mount Bethel or Branch Mountain and Grassy Lick. Elder B. W. Power is pastor of these congregations at the present time. The total membership is about sixty.

Messrs. John Arnold, John Munroe, Herbert Cool, Jesse Munroe, George Loy, Benjamin Cornwell, John Corder, and T. N. Alderton have all served in the capacity of elder for the Regular Primitive Baptist church in Hampshire county.

*Presbyterian Church.*—Very soon after the Revolutionary war ministers of the Presbyterian faith preached at different points in this county. Mount Bethel, at Three churches on Branch mountain, was organized in 1792. The same year the Romney church was founded, but it was reorganized in 1833. Rev. John Lyle was the minister for the congregations of Frankfort, Romney and Springfield when the Winchester Presbytery was formed in 1794. This presbytery had five ministers and sixteen churches, viz: "Rev. Moses Hoge, pastor of Carmel (Shepherdstown) congregation; Rev. Nash Legrand, of Winchester, Opequon and Cedar creek; Rev. William Hill, of Charlestown and Hopewell (Smithfield); Rev. William Williamson, of South river (Front Royal) and Flint run; and Rev. John



Lyle, of Frankfort, Romney and Springfield; with the following vacancies, viz: Middletown (Gerardstown) and Back creek, united, able to support a minister; Concrete (in Hardy county), able; and Powell's fort and Lost river, not able."

Rev. John Lyle died in 1807 and was buried at Springfield. After him, Rev. James Black preached at Romney, Springfield and Moorefield as stated supply. Rev. William H. Foote took charge of the work in 1819, and continued many years. Previous to 1833 all the churches in the county were included in the Mount Bethel congregation. In that year, October 19, we find the following entry upon the minute book: "Sufficient evidence appearing before the Presbytery that Mount Bethel church desires a division, therefore, Resolved, That the name of Mount Bethel church be changed to that of Romney, Mr. Foote continuing the pastor of the same; and that Mr. Foote have leave to form separate organizations at Springfield, Mount Bethel, North river and Patterson's creek."

Springfield was organized in 1833 at the time of the reorganization of Romney. Seven years before, in 1826, a church had been organized at Bloomery. North river church was organized in 1833. Stone Quarry, near French's Depot, is a flourishing congregation with a considerable membership. The last two churches of this faith, Westminster, at Capon bridge, and the one at Rio were organized in 1894, making eight churches of this denomination in the county. The combined membership at the present time is three hundred and sixty-nine; number of Sunday school teachers, eleven; scholars, two hundred and twelve.

The Presbyterian church has always been closely connected with the various educational movements in the county. Some of its ministers have been teachers of wonderful ability and wide reputation.

*Methodist Episcopal Church, South.*—The



foundation of this church in the county is cotemporaneous with the foundation of the Methodist Episcopal church, for until recent years the two organizations were one. The history of the one is, therefore, the history of the other until comparatively recent years. It was in 1844 that a plan of separation was agreed upon by the churches, and in 1846 this separation took place. Conferences on the border were allowed to chose whether they would adhere to the north or south. Baltimore conference was one of these, and its decision was to remain with the northern branch of the church. So many of the members of the Methodist church in this county were southern in feeling that, though the Baltimore conference was yet nominally in control, they desired the churches in which they worshiped to belong to the Methodist Episcopal church, south. There were many disputes as to which of the churches the property belonged, but in most cases these were decided in favor of the Southern church. The Baltimore conference of the Methodist Episcopal church, south, then took these congregations under its charge.

In 1845 Springfield was in Winchester district and John Smith was presiding elder. The annual conference, which met at Baltimore for that year, appointed Revs. C. Parkison and J. W. Hedges as ministers to Springfield circuit. Rev. James A. Duncan is thought to have been the first minister to this county after the churches were definitely and completely separated. Mr. Duncan came in 1846. Among those who early supported the Southern Methodist church in Hampshire county especial mention should be made of Geo. W. Washington, who lived on the South branch a few miles below Romney.

Moorefield district at the present time is presided over by Rev. Geo. H. Zimmerman. There are six circuits of this district which touch Hampshire. Romney circuit, with Rev. C. Sydenstricker in charge, has the following churches: Romney, Fairview, Ebenezer, St. Luke's, Sul-



phur Springs, Duncan Memorial, Trinity and Marvin. There is also at present a congregation at Number Six, making nine congregations and eight churches on this circuit. Capon Bridge circuit has for its present pastor Rev. W. H. Ballengee. It is made up of the following churches: Capon, Bridge, North River Mills and Green Mound. There are also congregations at the following places: Augusta, Sedan, Park's Hollow, Sandy Ridge and Capon chapel. Rev. W. A. Sites is at present in charge of Slanesville circuit, which was cut off from Springfield circuit about five years ago. There are seven churches on this circuit, known as McCool's Chapel, Bethel, Levels, Wesley Chapel, Branch Mountain, Salem and Forks of Capon. Since the cutting off of Slanesville circuit Springfield circuit has but one church in this county. This is located in the town of Springfield. There is also a congregation at Green Spring. Rev. J. W. Mitchell and Rev. W. J. Kight are the pastors in charge. Hardy circuit touches this county with but two churches. One of these is Mt. Zion, the other Hott's chapel, Rev. C. H. Cannon pastor in charge. Wardensville circuit has just one church in this county, Shiloh. There are, however, congregations at Capon Springs and Mt. Airy. This circuit is at present ministered to by Rev. C. L. Potter. The Methodist Episcopal church south has at present in the county twenty-two churches and thirty-one congregations. Besides a handsome district parsonage in Romney, there are circuit parsonages at Springfield, Capon Bridge and Romney. There are about one thousand three hundred and eighty-five members in the county. The latest minutes show twenty-four Sunday schools with over a thousand scholars. There are also six Epworth Leagues.

The following is a list of presiding elders who have served since 1866 in this district: South Branch district, John C. Dice, 1866-1870; Moorefield district, David Thomas, 1871-1875; P. H. Whisner, 1875-1878; Rumsey Smithson,



1878-1882; W. G. Hammond, 1882-1886; S. G. Ferguson, 1886-1890; Geo. T. Tyler, 1890-1894; Geo. H. Zimmerman, 1894-1898.

*Evangelical Association.*—Rev. Moses Bowers in company with Rev. Henniberger came to Hampshire and preached in the interest of the Evangelical Association as early as 1825. Rev. Mr. Bowers was a man of pure character and was commonly spoken of as the sainted Moses Bowers.

Rev. Jacob Shemp was the first preacher in the Grassy Lick region. He first held meetings just below where Bethel church now stands, on the creek which flows near the Shingleton property. The Grassy Lick Run church was built about the year 1855, by Rev. Elijah Beaty, who was then preacher in charge. He afterwards deeded the property to conference, asking no return for his labor and expense. The Bethel Church property was purchased in 1842. It belonged at first to Abigail and Elisha Pownell, who conveyed it June 18, 1831, to Martha and William Shingleton. They in turn conveyed it to the trustees of the church. These were Jonathan Pownell, Joseph Haines and William Poling. This latter deed was recorded March 9, 1843. Rev. Daniel Long preached at Bethel in 1845 and continued for some time to preach at different points in the county. Another of these early preachers was Rev. William Poling, who served as early as 1847. He afterwards went to Minnesota as a missionary. He is at present living at Dayton, Ohio and is nearly seventy-five years old. Rev. Daniel Poling joined the conference in 1855, and afterwards became presiding elder. Succeeding Rev. Poling came Rev. John T. Boles, the great revivalist.

In later years the following named gentlemen have served in the capacity of pastors of this denomination within the limits of Hampshire: Reverends Reisinger, Treseith, Ellenberger, John Curry, Charles Floto, Dickey, John Mull, John Winger and Berkley. After the civil war



Rev. Hammer came to this circuit but was not well received.

Rev. S. M. Baumgardner then took charge and built up the church wonderfully. For four years previous to 1897 the church was without a pastor. At present Rev. Frank Van Gorder is in charge. Romney circuit, as this portion of the work is called, belongs to Somerset district of Pittsburg district. Rev. S. M. Baumgardner is presiding elder. There are at the present time two churches owned exclusively by the Evangelical association and they have an associate interest on two more. There are seven places where preaching is held. About fifty persons belong to the Association in this county.

• *Methodist Episcopal Church.*—Among the first churches that planted their banners in America was the Methodist. Long before the Indians had departed to leave the white settler in peaceful and undisputed possession of the country, the missionaries of this church were at work spreading good news from a far country.

Virginia was early a scene of their labors. In 1771 Robert Williams, "the Apostle of Methodism in Virginia," was busy in the field. At the formation of the first American Methodist conference, which took place in Philadelphia in 1773, it was shown there were one hundred Methodists in Virginia. Likewise the work was early begun in this county. Who the first minister of this church in Hampshire was cannot be positively stated. The Rev. J. J. Jacob, who lived near where Green Spring, on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, now stands, was licensed to preach in 1789.

Bishop Asbury held a session of the Baltimore conference at Mr. Jacob's place in 1792. He is also said to have preached several times in the South branch valley about this time. It is said that the only minister of any denomination who remained in Romney all through the Civil war, was Rev. O. P. Wirgman, of the Methodist church. The



Baltimore conference, to which the work in this county has always belonged, was established in 1784, on Christmas day. Methodist churches and congregations continued to increase in number and enlarge in influence to a wonderful degree. At the close of the late war the greater number of church organizations in the county adhered to the southern division of the church until at present there are but two Methodist Episcopal churches in the county.

One of these is the Romney church, with Rev. M. L. Beal as present pastor. This congregation belongs to Romney circuit, Frederick district of the Baltimore conference. A list of the pastors who have served on Romney circuit since 1875 includes the following gentlemen: Reverends D. B. Winstead, Ed. C. Young, H. P. West, F. G. Porter, H. C. McDaniel, Pasco, William Harris, W. A. Carroll, Henry Man, John F. Dayton and J. I. Winger.

The other church of this denomination is located at Levels Cross Roads. Rev. Milson Thomas is pastor at present. This church belongs to Paw Paw circuit in Frederick district of Baltimore conference.

*Disciples of Christ or Christians.*—The Church of the Disciples was first organized in this county by G. W. Abell in 1853. This organization was at Sandy Ridge, on the Springfield grade, two miles east of North river mills. Prior to the organization of the church several ministers of this faith labored in the county. About the year 1820 Thomas Campbell, father of the illustrious Alexander Campbell, founder of Bethany college and the person to whom the Christian church largely owes its present power and success, preached in an old school house on Sandy ridge. This old school house is now in ruins. It stood near the present Sandy ridge church. Other preachers in these early times were Rev. Robert Ferguson and his eloquent son Jesse, who afterwards became an infidel. A Rev. Jackson and Rev. William Lane also belong to the pioneer period of the church's history.



Since the Civil war Reverends G. W. Abell, John Pirkey, Frederick Booth, J. A. Cowgill and R. C. Cave of St. Louis, Missouri, have served in the county.

About 1868 an organization was effected at Pine Grove school house, which was afterwards removed to Zion church, two miles west of North river mills. Somewhat later a church was organized at Barrettesville, now Augusta. In recent years the following-named ministers have served in this county: Revs. P. S. Rhodes, G. W. Ogden, W. E. Kincaid, Jacob Walters, J. A. Spencer, J. D. Dillard, J. D. Hamaker, W. S. Hoyer, D. H. Rodes, J. P. Hawley, C. S. Lucas and J. J. Spencer. In 1896 a church was organized in Lupton's Hollow and a house of worship erected the same year at the junction of the Beck's Gap road with the Lupton's Hollow road.

The membership of the Disciples church in this county at the present time is three hundred. There is a Sunday school at each preaching place in the county. The ministers now serving the congregations are Revs. Alexander Khun and W. H. Patterson.

*Quakers.*—There was a congregation of Quakers in the county quite early in its history. This congregation built a church at Quaker Hollow in Capon district, near where John Powell and George Slonaker now live.

It is very probable that this church was established more than a hundred years ago by Quaker emigrants from the Shenandoah valley, as these people were among the very early settlers of that region. Thomas Chaukley, a member of the church, wrote an official letter in 1738 to the "dear friends who inhabit Shenandoah and Opequon." Among other things he says: "I desire you to be very careful (being far and back inhabitants) to keep a friendly correspondence with the native Indians, giving them no occasion of offense; they being a cruel and merciless enemy where they think they are wronged or defrauded of their rights, as woful experience hath taught in Carolina, Vir-



ginia and Maryland, and especially in New England." Further on in the same letter he adds: "If you believe yourselves to be within the bounds of William Penn's patent from King Charles the Second, which will be hard for you to prove, you being far southward of his line; yet, if done, that will be no consideration with the Indians without a purchase from them, except you will go about to convince them by fire and sword, contrary to our principles; and if that were done they would ever be implacable enemies and the land could never be enjoy'd in peace." It is quite probable that these people perfected one of the first church organizations in this county.

*German Baptist Bretheren.*—The word "Dunkard," which is commonly applied to this church, is not correct. The word was originally "Tunker," from the German word "tunken," to dip. It was applied to the Bretheren as a term of derision because they baptized by dipping. English corruption of the original gives us the present word "Dunkard." Properly speaking, however, there is no such church as the Dunkard or Tunker, for the incorporate name of this body of Christians is "German Baptist Bretheren."

The Beaver run congregation now in Mineral, but once in Hampshire, was the first organization of this church in the county. More than one hundred years ago three Arnold brothers moved here from Frederick county, Maryland. Two of these brothers, Samuel and Daniel, were ministers, and soon began active work in behalf of their church. Dwelling houses were the only meeting places for many years until the first Beaver Run church was built. This church was used for nearly fifty years as a place of worship, but in 1876 it was torn down and the present brick church was built. The second generation of ministers in this section included Joseph Arnold, Benjamin Arnold, Jacob Biser and many others. At the present time



about fifty members of the Beaver run congregation live in Hampshire county.

The Pine Church congregation, partly in Hampshire and party in Hardy, dates its origin from mission work done by the Beaver run congregation. The Pine Church congregation was formerly Nicholas, organized about 1870 by Dr. Leatherman, who entered the ministry near that time. Pine Church is owned in partnership by several churches, but the Bretheren are the largest shareholders. A small portion of the Bean settlement congregation live in Hampshire and the others in Hardy. This church, which also owes its origin to the missionary labors of Beaver Run church, is near Inkerman. Its history extends over some thirty years.

The Tearcoat congregation is the only one wholly within the present limits of the county. Its origin dates back about forty-five years. Several families connected with the church early emigrated from the Valley of Virginia to Pleasant Dale and the Levels. Abraham Miller, Isaac Miller, William Roby and Abraham Detrick, who lived on the Levels, were ministers for years in that neighborhood, but finally moved to the west. The church now near Pleasant Dale was built after the Civil war. There are at present two hundred and forty members living in the county. There are also seven ministers, two of whom are elders. The Home Mission board of the First district of West Virginia is prosecuting work on the part of this church at various points in the county.

*Mission Baptists.*—Through the preaching of Whitfield in New England what was known as the New-light-stir, was originated. Members of all churches, who felt the need of vital and experimental religion, separated from the established churches and formed themselves into a society which about the year 1744 was given the name of Separates. It is from this movement that the Mission Baptists have sprung. One of the early preachers of this



church organization was Rev. Shubal Stearns, who began preaching in 1745. He felt himself called to preach to the people in the "far west." Accordingly he set out from New England in 1754 together with a few of his members. They first halted at Opequon in Berkeley county. Here they found a Baptist church already established and under the care of S. Henton. Here, also, he fell in with Rev. Daniel Marshall, a Baptist minister who had just returned from a missionary visit to the Indians. These two then joined their companies and moved to Cacapon in Hampshire county about 1755. This was the first church organization in this county. Rev. Stearns and his companions did not stay long on Cacapon but moved to North Carolina.

There are at present four congregations of the Mission Baptist church in this county. They are named and located as follows: Bethel, on Grassy Lick; Zoar, near Mt. Zion; Salem, at Mechanicsburg; and Little Capon church, at Barnes' mills. Rev. Samuel Umstot is at present the pastor in charge.

*United Brethren.*—Parts of four circuits of this church are represented in the county, with a considerable membership. Preachers of this faith have been laboring in the county for many years and a fair degree of success has crowned their efforts.

*Mormons.*—There is no regular organized church of this denomination in the county, nor is there any established preaching place. From time to time itinerant elders of the Latter Day Saints or Mormons preach at different places in the county and have made some converts.

*Roman Catholic Church.*—In the neighborhood of Barnes' mills there are a number of members of this church. They are visited from time to time by priests of that faith and services are held at intervals. There is no church building or regular church organization.

*The Christian Church.*—This is a different organization from the Disciples church, though the two are some-



times confused. A church was built by this body about the year 1818, on Timber ridge, seven miles from Capon bridge. The lot was given by William Groves. The first person buried in the cemetery at this church was Mary Spaid. The beautiful brick church which now stands on the site of the former log structure was built in 1875. There is an especially large congregation at this point. Reverends Isaac N. Walter, Miller, and Enoch Harvey are among those who have been ministers of this church in the county.

As a closing to this chapter the following extract from the diary of Rev. William H. Foote, is appended as giving a clear idea of the work of a missionary in Hampshire at an early day. This extract comes under the date of November 16, 1819:

"I think I can never forget the events of this cool, chilly day. The morning was lowery, threatening rain, and the clouds riding low, gave to the Capon mountains back of Mr. S——'s a more sable hue. They had always a dreary appearance, but now looked melancholy, as if draped in mourning. I set out after breakfast to pass over them and wind amongst them to find N—L—, to whom I had sent on an appointment. The wind whistled a November tone among the fallen and falling leaves, and now and then a lowering cloud let fall a few drops as I wound my solitary way over and amongst the Capon ridges of barren soil. Few houses were to be seen from the road, which is seldom passed by wagons. At the second house I was to inquire. The way measured a dreary length before I came to the second house. Then I was told to leave the road and take a horse path to N—L—'s. I left notice for preaching, which I found was entirely news to the people, and turned in among the thick pines and followed the spine of a ridge. I had proceeded not far before I met an old man riding a small black horse, his gray hairs from his bent shoulders hanging near the saddle-bow.



"I had approached near before he saw me. His bridle and saddle were like his raiment, the relics of a past age. A hat in keeping with his costume crowned his head, which was bent near to his saddle. As I came near he raised himself a little, for it seemed he could not straighten himself, and gave a keen look from a bright black eye, which glistened amongst his long grey hair and beard. As he answered my inquiry, 'Is this the way to N—L—'s?' 'I am N—L—; what do you seek?' 'I am a missionary going there to preach.' 'A missionary!' said he, looking more intently. 'A missionary! who sent you; who are you?' I told him my name and by whom sent. 'Sent by Wilson!' said he, holding out his hand. 'Welcome! It is now a long time since missionaries came here. They used to come. There were Hill, and Glass, and Lyle; but none has been here for years. Can you go home with me? I was going to a neighbor's. When do you want to preach? Have you no appointment?' 'None; I sent you one for tonight.' 'Well, I never heard of it, but I will send out now; it is not noon yet.' So he turned and led me along a narrow, winding path, questioning and talking, and expressing his satisfaction that a missionary had come from his own and his father's church.

"Then suddenly turning we were on the brow of a steep precipice of no ordinary height. At our feet lay a beautiful scene. The Capon, running with fine stream, was in full view, making a semicircular bend of more than a mile, the land within the bend, level, and in beautiful cultivation, little plots of plowed land, of grass, of orchards scattered over it, a few buildidgs, and near to us a little mill. The Capon almost surrounded the little spot in the shape of a horse shoe, and was itself hedged in by a higher precipice of similar form. At our feet the Capon, at our left a continuation of the precipice on which we stood, beyond the little plot of land a high ridge of rocky mountains, and as far as the eye could reach all round tops of ridges, wild



and fierce, and dark as the clouds that lowered about them. 'That house is mine,' said he, pointing to one whose smoke seemed to come near us, almost overhung by the precipice, as it stood on the brink of the river. He led me along down a winding horse path. 'Are there any religious people here?' 'Yes, a few.' Fit retreat thought I, for persecuted religion; a residence becoming the Waldenses. Busy in gazing around I felt my horse stumbling; and by a fortunate fall up the precipice side felt thankful my fall had not been on the other side of my horse as it must have probably landed me in the stream below, so near were we to the edge of the shelving projecting rocks. I walked to the bottom, feeling more secure on my feet than on my pony's back. I could not keep my eyes from running to the immense precipice of rocks that surrounded me as I approached the house which stood near the horse shoe neck of land and which was above half surrounded by it. Says the old man as we entered the house: 'This is a missionary come to preach; put away your work, clear the room, get something to eat, and send out word to the neighbors.' The house was small, one room sufficed for eating and cooking and working. The spinning wheels were laid aside, and the cooking commenced. I took one seat in the corner of the ample chimney, near me were some cooking utensils. I observed in the other corner the remaining cooking furniture and various preparations of the family. The chimney had its supply of choice sticks of various timber taking the smoke, drying for use. 'Go, son,' said he to a stout young lad, 'go, son, and tell neighbor ———, and tell him to tell his neighbor there will be preaching here, and go by neighbor ——— and tell him the same, and if you see any one tell him the same, and I will give notice at the mill.'

"Towards middle of the afternoon I looked out and saw persons coming in different directions down the mountains. I had seen so few places of residence I could not



contrive whence they came. Looking to the old man, half in jest. 'Where do these people come from? from the rocks?' 'No, from their houses,' half angry at the question. But his frown soon passed away. I preached from the words, 'Fear not, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom.' After the congregation had dispersed I found that the old man had fulfilled in part his duty as an elder in the church by assembling his neighbors and reading to them and praying with them, some few of whom are religious. 'My father and grandfather,' said he, 'were pious. My grandfather came here and chose this spot in preference to any of the Valley of Virginia, because he thought it more healthy. There he was driven away by the Indians—here he lived—here my father lived. They taught me my duty. They were French Protestants.'

"Something was said about his children. 'Some are in the western country, some are here at home, and one is dead. He was my best son;' here he paused, and I saw by the flashing light that tears were stealing down his cheeks. 'I never liked that war. I liked peace. But when a draft came they took my son. He came home and told me he was taken and must go to Norfolk. I never liked that war. I went out and prayed for him. He was a good boy; he never disobeyed me in his life. I came in and took down my best rifle—a true shot—"Here," said I, "my son, take this, be a good soldier; your grandfather fought the Indians, and you must go and fight the British; be a good boy; if you go to fight don't run." The first I heard of him after he got to camp at Norfolk was that he was dead.' "



# CHAPTER XXXV.

—«0»—

## LANDS AND LAND-OWNERS.

BY HU MAXWELL.

There was a time when every acre of land in what is now Hampshire county belonged to one man, Lord Fairfax. The purpose of this chapter is to give a brief account of his lands and the manner by which they passed into the possession of others, together with the names of some of the early land-owners, and where their possessions were situated. Before proceeding to do this, it is proper to state, once more, that Hampshire county was once larger than at present, and that lands, now beyond the county borders, were once within the county, and in this chapter will be so considered. Lord Fairfax's estate consisted of the territory now contained in the following counties of Virginia and West Virginia: Lancaster, Northumberland, Richmond, Westmoreland, Stafford, King George, Prince William, Fairfax, Loudoun, Fauquier, Culpeper, Clarke, Madison, Page, Shenandoah, Frederick, Jefferson, Berkeley, Morgan, Mineral, Hampshire, Hardy and Grant, twenty-three in all. The total number of acres was little short of six millions. This estate was not granted to Lord Fairfax in person, but to Lord Hopton, Lord Germyn, Lord Culpeper, Lord Berkeley, Sir William Morton, Sir Dudley Wyatt and Thomas Culpeper. This grant was made by Charles II. The lands were bounded by the Rappahannock on one side, by the Potomac on the other, and by a line drawn from the head of the Rappahannock to the head of the Potomac, then called the Quiriough. This name was given to the Potomac below its confluence with



the Shenandoah; above the mouth of the Shenandoah it was called Cohongoroota; and the South branch was called Wappacomo. In granting this large body of land, King Charles expressed the hope that it would be speedily settled by Christian people. The king reserved one-fifth of all the gold and one-tenth of all the silver which might be discovered on the grant. The proprietors were required to pay a yearly rental equivalent to thirty-three dollars. This was to be paid at Jamestown "on the day of the feast of St. John the Baptist." Lord Hopton sold his interest to John Frethewey. There was some misunderstanding concerning the grant, and the king expressed his willingness to give a new charter, if the old one were surrendered. A new one was accordingly granted, authorizing the proprietors to found schools, colleges and courts. There was one condition, however, which was not satisfactory. The king stipulated that the patent should cease on any part of the land "not possessed and occupied" within twenty-one years. This condition was subsequently modified. The proprietors were strictly forbidden to meddle with military affairs. Virginia had full power to levy taxes upon the land, and it was subject to the laws of that state the same as any other lands. Receiving a good offer for their holdings the other proprietors sold all of them to Lord Culpeper, son of Lord John Culpeper. Thus the entire estate came into the possession of one man, and from him descended by inheritance to Lord Thomas Fairfax. The title to the land was questioned, and adventurers took possession of large tracts. Law suits resulted, some of which were in the courts fifty years, long after the parties to the original suits were dead. Some of these suitors had the title to their lands confirmed by the assembly, but the transaction appears to have been in the nature of a compromise to which both parties consented, for it was ordered that such persons might hold their lands, but must



pay the yearly rent to Lord Fairfax, the same as those who had purchased their lands of him.

Lord Fairfax never married. He was a scholar and man of letters, tall, dark of complexion, usually greedy for money, but at times giving away farms to those of his tenants or servants who pleased him. He made a trip from England to America to see the land which had fallen to him by inheritance. He was so well pleased with it that he decided to make his home in Virginia and enjoy his vast estate. He arranged his business in England, and about 1747 came to Virginia. He lived awhile at Belvoir. He was a middle-aged man, about fifty-seven years old at that time. Lawrence Washington, a brother of General Washington, had married a near relative of Lord Fairfax and this brought the Fairfaxes and the Washingtons into close friendship, and to this friendship great events in history may be traced. George Washington at that time, 1748, was sixteen years of age, educated only in the rudiments of reading, writing, arithmetic and surveying. Lord Fairfax had such confidence in him that he employed him to survey the vast estate. Washington's salary for this work ranged from seventeen to twenty-two dollars a day. In addition to this, both he and his brother Lawrence obtained valuable tracts of land within the former limits of Hampshire county on the most favorable terms. In this work Washington laid the foundation of his fortune; built up a robust and powerful constitution, and gained that acquaintance with the wilderness west of the Blue Ridge which caused him some years later to be sent with important dispatches to the French forts above Pittsburg. This led to his military career, and all its grand achievements followed. Washington, the youthful surveyor, climbed the mountains and crossed the valleys of Hampshire, mapping the estate and setting landmarks, and the accuracy of his work has been a marvel to surveyors ever since. Speaking of his occupation at that time, and comparing it with the great



congress in Europe, in session at the time Washington was in the woods of Hampshire, George Bancroft, the venerable historian, speaks thus:

“At the very time of the congress of Aix-la-Chapelle, the woods of Virginia sheltered the youthful Washington, the son of a widow. Born by the side of the Potomac, beneath the roof of a Westmoreland farm, almost from infancy his lot had been the lot of an orphan. No academy had welcomed him to its shades; no college crowned him with its honors; to read, to write, to cipher—these had been his degrees of knowledge. And now, at sixteen years of age, in quest of an honest maintenance, encountering intolerable toil; cheered onward by being able to write to a school-boy friend: ‘Dear Richard, a doubloon is my constant gain every day, and sometimes six pistoles,’ himself his own cook, ‘having no spit but a forked stick, no plate but a large chip;’ roaming over spurs of the Alleghanies, alive to nature, and sometimes spending the best of the day in admiring the trees and the richness of the land; among skin-clad savages, with their scalps and their rattles, or uncouth emigrants ‘that would never speak English;’ rarely sleeping in a bed; holding a bearskin a splendid couch; glad of a resting for the night upon a little hay, straw, or fodder, and often camping in the forests, where the place nearest the fire was a happy luxury—this stripling surveyor in the woods, with no companions but his unlettered associates, and no implements of science but his compass and chain, contrasted strangely with the imperial magnificence of the congress of Aix-la-Chapelle. And yet God had selected, not Kaunitz nor Newcastle, not a monarch of the house of Hapsburg, nor of Hanover, but the Virginia stripling, to give an impulse to human affairs, and, as far as an event can depend upon an individual, had placed the rights and the destinies of countless millions in the keeping of the widow’s son.”

Fairfax had the best lands of his large estate laid out in



manors. Two of these were in Hampshire county, prior to the formation of Hardy and Mineral; but now there is little of the manor land in Hampshire. The Wappacomo manor, containing fifty-five thousand acres, lay along the the South branch, mostly in the present county of Hardy. The Patterson creek manor, of nine thousand acres, was in what is now Mineral county. George Washington, after he was president of the United States, owned land in Hampshire. These manors were subsequently bought by John Marshall, chief justice of the United States, Raleigh Colston, and General Henry Lee.

Lord Fairfax had an eye to money-making, and resolved to realize as much as possible from his property. It is not necessary in this place to enter fully into his plan of deriving revenue from his possession. Suffice it to say that his desire was to provide a perpetual income. It amounted to the same thing as renting his land forever at a fixed yearly rental. He required a small sum, usually two and one half cents an acre, or even less, to be paid down. He called this "composition money." He required a sum of about an equal amount to be paid every year "on the feast day of Saint Michael the Archangel." He did not always charge the same sum yearly per acre. He was greedy and overbearing, and if a person settled and improved his lands without title, and afterwards applied for title, he took advantage of it, and charged them more, thinking they would pay it sooner than give up their improvements. Had he succeeded in disposing of all his lands on his regular terms, his perpetual income would have been about one hundred and fifty thousand dollars yearly. This would have enabled him and his heirs to live in royal style. But it was to be otherwise, as will be shown in this chapter.

Lord Fairfax took up his residence at Greenway court in the present county of Clarke, about twelve miles from Winchester. He had a large manor laid off there, and planned a number of buildings, only one of which he ever



completed, and he never lived in it, but made it the residence of his steward. Fairfax lived in a small cabin near by, fared like the country people around him, and appeared satisfied. He had about one hundred and fifty slaves who lived in log houses scattered about the woods. As early as 1747 he began to sell his real estate. Land within Hampshire county was sold in 1749, and perhaps earlier, but that is the earliest record found here. This county was not organized till 1755, and the first instrument admitted to record in Hampshire county was at a term of court held June 11, 1755. On December 13, 1757 the first deed signed by Fairfax was recorded. It had been executed in 1749, but for eight years had remained unrecorded. It was made to John Cunningham, and in its preamble these words occur: "The Right Honorable Thomas Lord Fairfax, Baron of Cameron, in that part of Great Britain called Scotland, Proprietor of the Northern Neck of Virginia, in the nineteenth day of August in the twenty-third year of the reign of our sovereign George the Second, of Great Britain, France and Ireland, by the Grace of God defender of the faith, etc." The land conveyed was "on the Wappacombe or great South branch of Potowmack." In making these early deeds it was stipulated that the person who bought should "never kill elk, deer, buffalo, beaver or other game," without the consent of Fairfax or his heirs.

Land along the South branch in those days was not so valuable as at present; yet it found ready sale. Four hundred acres, near Moorefield, sold for one hundred and twenty-five dollars in 1758. Prior to the Revolutionary war a method of conveying land was in vogue, both in this county and in England, which is not now often met with in this state. It was resorted to as a means of deeding land, because, under the old English laws, an ordinary deed was usually defective because few people absolutely owned their land, which was also the property of heirs yet to follow. By the system of a lease, and a release im-



mediately following, a valid deed could be made. In the oldest book of records in Hampshire county, there are ten leases and releases to one deed in fee simple. This book contains all deeds, mortgages, bonds, powers of attorney, bills of sale, leases and releases recorded in this county from June 11, 1755 to November 12, 1766. During this interval there were placed on record fifteen deeds, two bonds, two powers of attorney, three mortgages, two bills of sale, one hundred and fifty leases and an equal number of releases. Thus, there were one hundred and seventy deeds recorded in the first twelve years of the county's history. A list of the first fifteen deeds in fee simple recorded in Hampshire county may be of interest, with date of record: Lord Fairfax to John Cunningham, Lot thirty-eight, South branch, 1757. James Simpson to Thomas Waggoner, one hundred acres on South fork of South branch, 1757. John Elswick to Rachel Elswick, two hundred acres near Hanging Rocks, 1759. William Bowell to Joseph Craycroft, ninety-two acres, on Capon, 1760. William Bowell to William Craycroft, ninety-five acres, on Capon, 1760. Stephen Ruddell to Daniel Wood, three hundred acres, on Lost river, 1761. Stephen Ruddell to Robert Denton, two hundred and sixteen acres on Great Capon, 1761. Rachel Elswick to John Keplinger, two hundred acres, on Lost river, 1761. George Horner to John Owens, fifty acres, on North river, 1761. Francis McBride to Robert Denton, two hundred and twenty-two acres, on Lost river, 1761. Hugh Murphew to Thomas Cresap, land in "French's Neck," 1762. John Johnson to Daniel McGlolin, one hundred and thirty-two acres, on Great Capon, 1765. Thomas McGuire to Robert Parker, one hundred and thirteen acres, on New creek, 1765. Job Pearfall to Luke Collins, three hundred and twenty-three acres, on the South branch, 1766.

The history of the Revolutionary war is given elsewhere in this book. No county felt immediately the change from



a monarchical government to a republic any more forceably than Hampshire. Under British rule the land all belonged to Fairfax, and all who occupied it must pay him perpetual rent; and had the British arms been successful in that war, most probably the lands would still be paying rent to the heirs of Fairfax. No man could have felt that he absolutely owned his land. But the British armies were defeated and Fairfax lost his grip on his possessions. As this is an important matter in the history of Hampshire it is proper to consider it more fully.

Lord Fairfax always considered himself a British subject, although he remained quietly on his estate near Winchester during the revolution. His sympathies with the royal cause were well known; and had he been an ordinary person he would have been roughly treated by the patriots in the valley of Virginia. But the great friendship that existed between him and General Washington saved him. Out of respect for Washington, Fairfax was spared. When the great general was in that part of the state he always visited Fairfax, for whom he had much respect. The old Englishman earnestly hoped that England might retain its hold on the colonies. But when Cornwallis surrendered at Yorktown, October 19, 1781, Fairfax saw that all was over. It may be said that it was his death blow. He took to his bed and never again left it, dying soon after in his ninety-second year.

Prior to this the Virginia legislature had been passing laws to break up such estates as that of Fairfax, for the good of the people. Thomas Jefferson was the leader in this movement. As early as October 17, 1776, he introduced a bill in the Virginia legislature to abolish estates in tail; that is, he wanted a law that would prevent a man from selling land and still keeping it, and prevent him from collecting rent forever. Estates should be held in fee simple. This was a blow at the Virginia aristocracy. That class of people were obnoxious to the ideas of liberty



and equality for which the Americans were then fighting. It was not thought best for large estates to remain in one family forever. The result was, the law against estates in tail was passed. This in itself did not at once break up the Fairfax estate, but it stopped the rent on land already sold. However, the final blow fell at last, and the Fairfax estate was confiscated, because it belonged to a tory during the revolution. The land became the property of Virginia, except such tracts as had been already sold, and the purchasers of these received clear titles.

This was a great event for the people of Hampshire as well as of the other counties formerly owned by Fairfax. The land was thrown open to the public, and the best parts of it were soon taken. That which was more remote remained state land longer, but the last acre of it was finally bought, and within a reasonable time thereafter fully two hundred thousand people possessed homes in a country in which one man formerly controlled everything. It is said that not one acre remained in the possession of any member of the Fairfax family. This chapter will be closed with a list of about two hundred persons who early availed themselves of the opportunity to possess Fairfax lands which had been confiscated by the state. The first entry on the commonwealth land, of which there is any record in Romney, was in 1788. There may have been older records, but they cannot be found. From January 14, 1788, to August 21, 1810, there were 1,986 land entries made in this county. The records are missing from February 4, 1804, to January 29, 1808, and it is unknown how many entries were made during that interval. The 1986 entries were probably made by not more than three hundred persons. As many as fifty entries were made by one person, probably for speculation. Half dozen entries by one person was not unusual. In the list which follows will be found names of persons whose descendants now constitute many of the most prominent families of the county. The date when



they took up their land, the number of acres, and the location are given:

1788. James Machan, 400 acres, "adjoining Lawrence Washington's land on Knobby."

1788. John Dawson, 80 acres, on North branch.

1788. Andrew Cooper, 100 acres, on Painter's run.

1788. David Hunter, 79 acres, on North branch.

1788. William Bell, 120 acres, on Patterson creek.

1788. Thomas Collins, 800 acres, on North branch.

1788. Hugh Malone, 300 acres, on the waters of Mill creek.

1788. Thomas Bryan Martin, 400 acres, on the waters of South branch.

1788. Thomas Wittecher, 150 acres, on Knobby.

1788. Marion McGraw, 300 acres on Capon.

1788. Rees Pritchard, 400 acres, on North run.

1788. Isaac Means, 400 acres, in Mill creek gap.

1788. William Adams, 400 acres, on the waters of Patterson creek.

1788. Samuel Boyd, 20 acres, on the North branch, and 800 acres on Capon.

1788. Nathaniel Parker, 300 acres, on Patterson creek.

1788. Henry Hawk, 400 acres, on the waters of Mill creek.

1788. William Armstrong, 400 acres, on the North branch, adjoining Michael Cresap's land.

1788. Andrew Wodrow, 100 acres, on Capon.

1788. William Keeder, 100 acres, on Capon.

1788. John Jones, 50 acres, on Patterson's creek.

1788. Eben Williams, 300 acres, on Patterson creek.

1788. Ezekiel Whitman, 150 acres, on Cat Tail run, and 180 acres at the head of Green Spring valley.

1788. Andrew Cooper, numerous tracts in all parts of the county. He was, apparently, the largest land holder at that time in Hampshire.

1788. Richard Stafford, 400 acres, near Cross roads on the waters of South branch.



1788. Frederick Metheny, 100 acres, on Limestone run, "including the sugar camp."

1788. Adam Hall, 150 acres, on South branch, "at Hall's mill."

1788. Elisha Collins, 309 acres, on Clay Lick run.

1788. Joseph Bute, 100 acres, on Buck Island run,

1788, William Young, 50 acres, on South branch.

1788. Peter Walker, 100 acres, in Green Spring valley.

1788. David Holmes, 2,400 acres, on the waters of Capon, and 900 on the waters of Lost river.

1788. David Williams, 100 acres, on Patterson creek.

1788. Henry Kuykendall, 91 acres, on Buffalo run.

1788. John Peyton, 115 acres, on Captain John's run; also 319 acres near the foot of Sidelong hill; also 800 acres on Watt run; also 400 acres on Capon.

1788. John Wolleston, 100 acres, on Buck Island run.

1788. Abraham Johnson, 100 acres, on Patterson creek; also, 200 acres on Cabin run.

1788. Joseph Mitchell, 405 acres, on the waters of Patterson creek.

1788. James Fleming, 150 acres, on the waters of Mill creek; also 500 acres on Lick run.

1788. Joshua Calvin, 400 acres, on the waters of Little Capon.

1788. John J. Jacob, 212 acres, on South branch mountain.

1788. Joseph Steers, 50 acres, on Bloomery run.

1788. Moses Star, 300 acres, on Middle ridge.

1788. Peter McDonald, 100 acres, on Middle ridge. .

1789. Ebenezer McKinley, 150 acres, on Mill creek.

1789. John Hugh, 200 acres, on Thompson run.

1789. Archibald Magill, 500 acres, on Mill creek.

1789. John Keller, 400 acres, on Patterson creek ridge.

1789. John Wilkins, 92 acres on Saw Mill run.

1789. Benjamin Stone, 50 acres, on Maple run.

1789. Richard Huff, 130 acres, on North river.



1789. John Bishop 400 acres, on Mill creek.  
1789. Jesse Pugh, 4 acres, on South branch.  
1789. James Keys, 50 acres, at the foot of Dillon's mountain.  
1790. George Wolf, 350 acres, on Lick run.  
1790. Robert Ross, 400 acres, on Morgan's run.  
1790. Daniel Slain, 170 acres on Sandy ridge.  
1790. James Hiott, 200 acres, on Sandy ridge.  
1790. James Forman, 780 acres, on Sugar run.  
1790. Lewis Stallman, 250 acres on Stagg run.  
1790. John Chenowith, 50 acres, on North river.  
1790. Thomas Williamson, 400 acres, on the headwaters of Little Capon.  
1790. Jacob Miller, 150 acres, on Hazel run.  
1790. William Fox, 300 acres, on Middle ridge.  
1790. Jacob Short, 100 acres, on Spring run.  
1790. William Russell, 50 acres, on Capon.  
1790. William Smith, 200 acres, on South branch.  
1790. Valentine Swisher, 222 acres, on Capon.  
1790. Alexander King, 800 acres, on North branch.  
1791. Frederick High, 610 acres, on Mill creek.  
1791. Thomas Morgan, 50 acres, on White Oak bottom.  
1791. Ephriam Johnson, 150 acres, on Sugar Tree bottom.  
1791. William Jeney, 500 acres, on Deep run.  
1791. Robert McFarland, 100 acres, on Town hill.  
1791. John Hough, 100 acres, on Pargatt's run.  
1791. Richard Neilson, 234 acres, on Tearcoat.  
1791. Peter Kizer, 100 acres, on Town hill.  
1791. William Chapman, 25 acres, on Clay Lick ridge.  
1791. Daniel Pugh, 9,600 acres, on both sides of Patterson creek, including the greater part of the Philip Martin manor.  
1791. Isaac Means, 50 acres, on Mill creek.  
1791. Moses Thomas, 100 acres, on Craig's run.  
1792. John Goff, 25 acres, on Kuykendall's sawmill run.



1792. Hugh Murphy, 50 acres, on Little Capon.
1792. John Blue, 300 acres, on South branch below Hanging Rocks.
1792. Robert French, 260 acres, on Little Capon.
1792. Benjamin Ayers, 200 acres, on Patterson creek.
1792. Peter Larew, 100 acres, on Capon.
1792. Daniel Newcomb, 160 acres, on Sidelong hill.
1792. Isaac Daton, 300 acres, including Two islands in the South branch.
1792. Nicholas Boyce, 400 acres, on Mill creek.
1792. George Bowman, 100 acres, on George's run.
1792. John High, 137 acres, on Mill creek.
1792. Thomas Hailey, 50 acres, on Spring Gap mountain.
1792. William Jackson, 200 acres, on Capon.
1792. William Carlyle, 15 acres, on High Top mountain.
1792. Jonathan Pursell, 100 acres, on South branch.
1792. Jacob Doll, 50 acres, on Knobly.
1793. Newman Beckwith, 300 acres, near Davis' mill.
1793. John Butcher, 50 acres on Capon mountain.
1793. Jesse Barnett, 100 acres, on New creek.
1793. John Seaburn, 30 acres, on Little Capon.
1793. Abram Rinchart, 200 acres, on Edward's run.
1793. Peter Putman, 25 acres, on Knobly.
1793. James Jamison, 100 acres, on Little mountain.
1793. Thomas Fry, 100 acres, on Capon.
1793. Virgil Graybill, 100 acres, "adjoining the land of President Washington on the waters of the Potomac."
1793. William Scott, 50 acres, on Sidelong hill.
1793. Jacob Jerkins, 25 acres, "near and including the meeting house."
1793. Joseph Lang, 100 acres, on Widow Gilmer's run, near Big Mud lick.
1793. Jacob Purgatt, 50 acres, at the foot of Knobly.
1793. Francis and William Deakins, 12,000 acres, be-



tween Patterson creek and New creek, next to the North branch.

1793. Virgil McCrackin, 100 acres, adjoining Washington's survey.

1793. Moses Ashbrook, 300 acres, on Maple run.

1794. James Caruthers, 4 acres, on Capon.

1794. James Largent, 100 acres in the Chimney tract.

1794. Isaac Lupton, 28 acres, on Sandy ridge.

1794. Jacob Baker, 175 acres, on North river.

1794. Perez Drew, 83 acres, on Little Capon.

1794. John Wallis, 100 acres, on Little Capon.

1794. Job Shepherd, 65 acres, on Wiggins' run.

| 1794. Abram Neff. 100 acres, on Wild Meadow run.

1794. Jacob Umstott, 50 acres, on Mill creek.

1794. Jacob Hoover, 100 acres, on North mountain.

1794. John Stoker, 100 acres, on Spring Gap mountain.

1794. George Phebus, 100 acres, near Rhobey's gap.

1794. David Stephens, 100 acres, on Capon.

1794. George Chambers, 64,544 acres, located in various parts of the county, but chiefly near the Hardy county line, on Patterson creek mountain and on the North branch.

1794. George Gilpin, 14,000 acres, on Knobly, and along the Hardy county line, and other large tracts elsewhere in the county.

1795. Jacob Kisner, 80 acres on North river.

1795. John Plumb, 100 acres, on Mill creek.

1795. Simon Taylor, 200 acres, on South branch.

1795. Isaac Parsons, 100 acres, on South branch.

1795. Philip Pendleton, 1,000 acres on great Capon mountain.

1795. John Jack, 100 acres, on the road leading from Romney to Winchester.

1795. Samuel Chesshire, 69 acres, on Tear Coat.

1795. Elisha C. Dirk, 40,000 acres, partly along the Alleghaney mountain and New creek, and partly between



North river and South branch; also 2,400 acres in other parts of the county.

1795. John and Joseph Swan, 10,000 acres, between Spring Gap mountain and Little Capon.

1795. Aaron Steed, 100 acres, on Hopkin's run.

1795. Joseph B. Billings, 727 acres, on the North branch; also other tracts in different parts of the county.

1795. John Randolph, 300 acres, on Abram's creek.

1796. Peter Good, 50 acres, on Dry run.

1796. John Pancake, 50 acres, on South branch.

1796. William Winterton, 50 acres, on Capon.

1797. Joseph Baker, 100 acres, on Capon.

1797. Frederick Gulick, 50 acres, on Little Capon.

1797. Frederick Haus, 64 acres, on South branch.

1797. Gabriel Throckmorton, 600 acres, on Capon.

1797. Robert Gustin, 100 acres, on Capon.

1797. Samuel Dobbin, 100 acres, on Cabin run.

1797. David Parsons, 300 acres, on South branch.

1798. Samuel Howard, 50 acres, on Capon.

1798; Charles Dowles, 1,500 acres, on the road from Romney to Winchester.

1798. John Pearsall, 100 acres, on Patterson creek.

1798. John Wolfe, 40 acres, on Capon.

1798. Jacob Bowers, 50 acres, on Dilling's mountain.

1798. John Lay, 20 acres, on Knob ridge.

1798. Daniel Duggan, 50 acres, on North River mountain.

1798. John Switzer, 190 acres, on Dillinger's run.

1798. Luther and Samuel Calvin, 100 acres, on the waters of South branch.

1798. William Reeder, 40 acres, on Crooked run.

1799. John Templeton, 300 acres, on North branch.

1799. Adam Hider, 4 acres, on Shrub mountain.

1799. John Foley, 300 acres, on Long ridge.

1799. Thomas Parker, 50 acres, on Green Spring run.

1799. John Abernathy, 5 acres, on Pine Swamp run.



1799. Norman Bruce, 100 acres, on the Potomac.  
1799. Natley Robey, 100 acres, on Mill creek.  
1799. John Jones, 115 acres, on North river.  
1799. Philip Pendleton, 9,500 acres, on Branch mountain and elsewhere.  
1799. Daniel Hopwood, 100 acres, on Knobly.  
1799. William Gray, 50 acres, on the Potomac.  
1800. William Buffington, 100 acres, on South branch.  
1800. Francis White, 20 acres, on North river.  
1800. George Harris, 50 acres, on Mill creek.  
1800. James Laramore, 225 acres, on South branch.  
1800. Henry Hartman, 139 acres, on Mill creek.  
1800. Jacob Millslagel, 150 acres, on Timber ridge.  
1800. Alexander Monroe, 300 acres, on North river, and 1,700 acres on Patterson creek.  
1800. Jeremiah Ashby, 300 acres, on North branch.  
1801. James Slack, 16 acres, on South branch.  
1801. John Casper, 50 acres, on North river.  
1801. David Bookless, 80 acres, on Cattleman's run.  
1801. John Moore, 50 acres, on Myke's run.  
1801. Schantzenbach Kisler, 100 acres, on Sidelong hill.  
1801. Andrew Bogle, 100 acres, on New creek.  
1801. Robert Rogers, 100 acres, on the Potomac.  
1801. William Naylor, 50 acres, on Town run.  
1801. Thomas Carscaddon, 250 acres, on Stag run.  
1801. Richard Holliday, 5 acres, on Spring run.  
1801. John Griffin, 83 acres, on Horse Camp run.  
1801. William Stennett, 500 acres, on Spring Gap mountain.  
1801. John Poland, 41 acres, on Kuykendall's run.  
1802. Andrew Walker, 100 acres, on Green Spring run.  
1802. Solomon Hoge, 25 acres, on South branch mountain.  
1802. George Beatty, 139 acres, on Mill creek knob.  
1802. Daniel Lantz, 50 acres, in Green Spring valley.  
1802. Robert Gustin, 73 acres, on Rock Gap run.



- 1802. James Caudy, 50 acres, on Mill creek.
- 1803. John Selby, 50 acres, on North run mountain.
- 1803. Eli Ashbrook, 100 acres, on Tear Coat.
- 1803. John Wright, 60 acres, near Capon springs.
- 1803. Jacob Jenkins, 50 acres, near Bear garden.
- 1804. William Florence, 200 acres, on Cabin run.
- 1808. Lewis Vandever, 279 acres, on Patterson creek.
- 1808. William Armstrong, 100 acres, on Patterson creek.
- 1808. Michael Widmire, 70 acres, on Capon.
- 1808. Henry Dangerfield, 20 acres, on Capon.
- 1809. Peter Bruner, 25 acres, on Capon.
- 1809. Jacob Stuckslagh, 6 acres, on the Potomac.
- 1809. Nathan Sutton, 148 acres, on High Gap mountain.
- 1809. Frederick Buzzard, 10 acres, on Mill's branch.
- 1809. John Swisher, 50 acres, on Hughes' run.
- 1810. Jacob Leopard, 300 acres, on North branch.
- 1810. Henry Huntsman, 600 acres, on South branch.
- 1810. John Wolford, 25 acres, on North river.
- 1810. James Glinn, 25 acres, on Bennett's run.
- 1810. Thomas Youngley, 84 acres, on North river mountain.



# CHAPTER XXXVI.



## NATURAL CURIOSITIES.

BY H. L. SWISHER.

*Capon Springs.*—Four miles up the mountain from Capon river and two miles from the summit of North mountain, Capon springs and baths, today among the famous watering places of the world, rest like a hawk's nest against the mountain side. The buildings are on a small plateau containing a couple of acres, and through the middle of this flows a small crystal stream whose waters are from the mineral springs at its head.

These springs have been known for years. Long before the beginning of this century a man named Henry Frye had discovered the springs and made some improvements. While hunting one day on the mountain side, near the springs, he killed a large bear. Gathering up such a portion of his game as he could carry, he started for camp. Before he had proceeded very far, however, he became thirsty, and throwing down his burden, he descended into the glen in search of water. He found a large spring, from which he cleared away the moss and leaves and then satisfied his thirst. The temperature and peculiar taste of the water led him to suspect its medicinal value. When, during the following summer, his wife was afflicted with rheumatism, he decided to take her to this place to see if a cure could not be effected. He built a small cabin and removed with his wife thither. This was undoubtedly the first improvement of the place and was made perhaps about the year 1765, although there is no definite record of



the late. The place was for many years known as Frye's springs, in honor of the discoverer.

In the month of October, 1787, twenty acres of land around and including the spring was laid off into lots and streets. The place was named Watson and retained this name for some years. The following persons made up the first board of trustees: Elias Poston, Henry Frye, Isaac Hawk, Jacob Hoover, John Winterton, Valentine Swisher, Rudolph Bumgarner, Paul M'Ivor, John Sherman Woodcock and Isaac Zane.

The lots thus laid off were to contain one-half acre, and it became the duty of the trustees to advertise the lots and offer them for sale at the next session of the county court. One of the conditions to a title was that the purchaser should build on each lot a dwelling house sixteen feet square and having a brick or stone chimney.

Defining the duties of trustees, article eighth of the same act states: "The said trustees shall lay off the said lots and streets as contiguous to that part of said land from whence the water issues, supposed efficacious in certain disorders, as the situation will admit of; and shall also lay off half an acre of land, to include said spring, the length of which shall extend down the stream and be double the width; which half acre so laid off shall be and the same is hereby vested in said trustees and their successors, in trust, to and for the use of such persons as may resort thereto."

Another act was passed on December 27, 1800, by which Andrew Wodrow, James Singleton, John Litle, Stephen Pritchard, Moses Russell, Henry Beatty, John Croudson and Thomas Powell were made trustees. Disputes arose concerning titles to the lots sold by the first board of trustees, and in 1803 John Mitchell, at that time county surveyor, was appointed to re-survey the town and make a plat showing boundary of lots. This plat was approved by the trustees and afterwards established by the assembly as the true survey of the town. The law which compelled



the purchasers of lots to build stone or brick chimneys to their dwellings was also repealed in the same year. On January 4, 1816, Charles Brent, Philip Williams, David Ogden, John Litle (son of Thomas Litle), George Huddle, William Herrin and Archibald Craigwell were appointed trustees. There was another act passed in 1830, which made it the duty of the board to appoint a clerk, who had charge of collecting and disbursing moneys accruing to the trustees.

An early historian, writing about the place in 1833, says: "This place is too publicly known to require a minute description in this work; suffice it to say, it is located in a deep, narrow glen, on the west side of the Great North mountain. The road across the mountain is rugged and disagreeable to travel, but money is now raising by lottery to improve it. The trustees for several years past have imposed a pretty heavy tax upon visitors for the use of the waters. This tax is intended to raise funds for keeping the baths, etc., in repair. There are seventeen or eighteen houses erected without much regard to regularity, and a boarding establishment, capable of accommodating fifty or sixty visitors, which is kept in excellent style."

Such was a description of the place sixty-four years ago, but there have been great changes since then. In 1849 the main building was built by Buck, Blakemore and Ricord, at a cost of \$75,000. During the summer following its completion Daniel Webster paid the place a visit and made a speech while there. He was accompanied by Sir Henry Bulwer, at that time English ambassador to this country. President Pierce also paid the place a visit during his term of office. At one time, when there was a vacancy in the board of trustees, J. P. Morgan, the multi-millionaire of today, was chosen for the place. His going to Europe soon thereafter prevented his acceptance. When the Civil war came on the board of trustees were some eight thousand dollars in debt. A special act passed the Virginia



assembly permitting the trustees to sell the buildings and property for debt. This was done, but after the war was over the sale was annulled as a confederate transaction.

Capon Springs have long enjoyed a reputation as a watering place. It was once a favorite summer resort with the Washington family. "Long before hotels were built," writes Dr. Still, "the wealthy families of Virginia and the neighboring states pitched their tents around the Springs during the heated term." Another writer speaking of this place before the war, says: "The Capon Springs and baths in ante-bellum days enjoyed a reputation unsurpassed by any watering place in the South. The wealth and intelligence of the North and South met here during the season in pleasant, social relation, and gave to Capon a historic interest and national reputation which to this day have made it among the most popular and attractive summer resorts in this country."

The people of this county are far less acquainted with this resort than many strangers from hundreds of miles away. For this reason a description of the place as it appears today may be of interest to readers of this book. The main hotel which stands at the base of the hills which rise in the rear of the building, is an imposing structure. It rises four stories in height and has a frontage of two hundred and sixty-two feet on the north and one hundred and ninety-six feet on the south. In front of this building runs a large portico one hundred and seventy-five feet long and eighteen feet in width. The front of this portico is set off with huge white Doric pillars rising up thirty-five feet to the ceiling. The dining hall, which is two hundred and forty feet long and forty feet wide, permits more than six hundred persons to be seated at one time. Adjoining the dining room is the large and finely furnished ball room. In the same building is the parlor, which is quite au fait. Besides the main hotel there are a couple of annexes which are buildings of considerable size. Facing



the building above described, and separated from it by about a hundred yards of lawn, stand the bath house and swimming pool. There are about forty bath rooms in the building with arrangements for douche, plunge and shower baths. The swimming pool is an elliptical pit ninety feet in length and forty-eight feet wide. The depth varies from three and one-half to eight and one-half feet, but the crystal clearness of the water gives it the appearance of being but a few inches deep.

At the head of the glen in which the buildings are situated, is the main spring which pours out its waters from the base of white cliffs at the rate of six thousand gallons an hour. As it flows from the earth the temperature is sixty-four degrees. In the swimming pool the temperature is ordinarily near seventy, but this is due to the sun's heat. The water is what is known as alkaline lithia, and as it flows from the earth has a saponaceous feel. A qualitative analysis of the water shows that it contains silicic acid, soda, magnesia, bromine, iodine and carbonic acid. The waters are not repugnant to the taste, but are, in fact, pleasant. They belong to the alkaloid carbonates and Dr. Ashby, who made an extensive study of mineral waters, declared that they were similar in medical affect to the Vichy of France, the Carlsbad of Germany and the Bethesda of Wisconsin. The waters are agreed to be especially valuable in the treatment of idiopathic affections of the nervous system, dyspeptic depravities and derangements of the mucous surfaces. They are, no doubt, valuable also for rheumatic and catarrhal troubles.

There is also a chalybeate Spring about three-quarters of a mile from the main spring. Capon springs is thirty miles from Romney and about twenty-five miles from Winchester. The springs are likely to grow in favor as they become better known. Sir Henry Bulwer, who visited them in 1850 in company with Daniel Webster,



declared there was no more complete bathing resort in Europe.

*Ice Mountain.*—This curious work of nature, which is perhaps better known than any other natural curiosity in the county, is situated about half a mile from North river mills. It consists of a ridge, shaped like an arc of an elliptic, with its concave side facing northwest. At the foot of the mountain, which is perhaps five hundred feet high, flows North river in a horseshoe, conforming to the shape of the mountain. The sides of the mountain are covered with fragments and boulders of broken sandstone which have rotted away from the cliffs above. This talus is a perhaps fifty feet thick at the mountain's base. A part of the slope is completely barren, but much of it is covered with laurel, birch and stunted pine, while at the foot there is a strip of trees of considerable height. Crowning the ridge is Raven rock, which presents a perpendicular face of two hundred feet. It is the last remaining vestige of a towering cliff that once overlooked the river. It is the foot of the mountain, however, that attracts attention and has made the place famous.

At the mountain's base, extending for about two hundred yards along the river and averaging about two rods in width, is a huge natural refrigerator. By removing the loose rocks, even in the hottest season of the year, ice can always be found. The rocks are so cold as to numb the fingers, though the mid-day sun may be shining full upon them. There is a continual expulsion of cold air which is felt perceptibly some feet from the edge of the rocks.

Many theories have been advanced to account for the formation and preservation of ice at this place. The phenomenon is most likely due to very simple causes. The open nature of the talus of course allows the free circulation of air and water in the spaces between the boulders. During the cold season ice is formed from rain and snow in the crevices of the rocks until the mountain side for



many feet below the surface is a mass of ice and stone. The outer ice acts as a protection to that deeper in the rocks by sealing it up, as it were, from the outside air, while the deeper ice acts in a preserving manner by lowering the temperature. When the hot weather comes, the ice higher up on the mountain soon disappears, while that at the base is preserved, because it is less exposed to the sun on account of the trees along the base, and also on account of the facing of the mountain. Then again, its thickness is much greater. It is well known that as the season advances it becomes necessary to dig deeper in the loose rocks in order to find ice. The expulsion of cold air from the base may be accounted for by supposing that the surrounding air circulating among the rocks above the ice becomes cool and settles to the bottom. Its own gravity prevents its rising and the pressure of the atmosphere above forces it out along the face of the rocks at the lowest point. Ice mountain seems admirably adapted as a site for a dairy, or with the expenditure of considerable capital, it could be made a famous summer resort.

*Caudy's Castle.*—In a spur of North river mountain known as Castle mountain, on the west bank of Capon river, is situated Caudy's Castle. This imposing work of nature is named for James Caudy, an early settler in that part of the county and a noted Indian fighter. Facing the river and rising almost perpendicular at this point, is an immense cliff about four hundred and fifty feet high. The Castle proper crowns this cliff and rises solemn and barren fifty feet higher. The ascent is made from the west with the gradual slope of the mountain from that side till within seventy-five feet of the top, when one is compelled to follow along a narrow shelf of rock around the northern end of the Castle and then along its face overhanging Capon. The last fifteen or twenty feet is nearly perpendicular, and the top can only be reached by perilous climbing, clinging to the projecting edges of the rock. On top



there is a space of about twenty feet, but such a gale constantly sweeps across its barren summit that one with difficulty stands erect.

*The Tea Table.*—Four miles from Forks of Capon and on Capon mountain is a curiosity of some note. This is the Tea Table. A large flat rock fifteen feet wide, is supported on a column which rises fifteen feet or more in the air, and which is not more than three feet in diameter at its narrowest place. The upper surface of the table is concave and usually contains several gallons of water. This is due, however, to rainfall and not to a spring in the rock as is stated in Howe's History of Virginia.

*Diamond Ridge.*—This name is given to a mountain spur just west of the town of Bloomery. Large rocks are here found, the surfaces of which are studded with the most beautiful crystals, some of them an inch in diameter. From these the ridge has taken its name.

*Pivot Rock.*—On the land of Amos McElfresh, about one mile from Springfield, may be seen a curiosity, which of its kind is, perhaps, equal to anything in the world. This is Pivot Rock. A huge boulder, weighing hundreds of tons, is supported on a slender stem less than one-eighth the diameter of the rock above.

This rock is about twenty-five feet high above its fragile stem and nearly forty feet thick at its greatest diameter. The column on which it rests is twelve feet high and at the narrowest place not more than five feet in diameter. One is puzzled to understand how this great mass of silicious sandstone is able to rest on such small support, and it is evident that a slight earthquake shock, or a few sticks of dynamite, rightly placed, would send this mighty rock thundering and crashing down the declivity below. Just back of this goblet-shaped curiosity carved out in the long course of geological time is the cliff from which it is taken. A log from the cliff to the rock some twenty feet, served for sometime as a means of access to the top of the



latter for those adventurous persons who desired to ascend it. No vegetation grows upon the boulder save a few birch bushes. Numerous camping parties from the city have visited the place and many views have been taken of it. This natural curiosity was pointed out to the author by J. T. Woodson, who lives near by, and was the first person to call public attention to it.

*Hanging Rocks.*—Four miles north of Romney the South branch river has cut through Mill Creek mountain forming an interesting and imposing cliff known as Hanging Rocks. This cliff, more than three hundred feet high, rises almost perpendicular from the river's edge. The rocks are arched like a bended bow forming what in geology is known as an anticline. The distance through the gap is five-eighths of a mile. The upper stratum of rocks is Monterey sandstone, while that immediately below is a cherty limestone called Lewiston chert-lentil. The limestone is made of a conglomeration of small sea shells known as brachiopods. Long before man inhabited the earth this mountain began to rise out of the sea and the Wappatomaka (South branch,) which was then flowing in its present course, began to cut through it. Slowly the mountain rose a few inches in a century perhaps, slowly the river cut its way downward until it made the mighty cliffs that now cause us to stand and wonder. This gap is only one of four in the same mountain in Hampshire county. The first is at Mechanicsburg where Mill creek cuts through, the next, proceeding northward, is the one described, two miles south of Springfield, known as Lower Hanging Rocks, is the third; while the fourth is made by the North branch of the Potomac near the junction of the two rivers.

*Blue's Gap.*—Going to Capon Bridge via of the Northwestern grade one passes through Blue's Gap, sixteen miles east of Romney. Here a small stream that empties into North river has cut through North river mountain, forming a pass about two hundred yards in length. The



rocks in this gap are wholly of sandstone of a very fine variety. So little of cementing material is there mixed with the finely triturated grains that a piece of the rock can easily be crushed to pieces with the hand. At the eastern end of the pass is a tunnel some fifteen feet wide and twenty feet high, and extending in the mountain a considerable distance. This artificial cave was made by persons hewing out the stone and carrying it away for various purposes. It is a great favorite with the housewives round about for scouring purposes, while many farmers use it in the manufacture of whet paddles for sharpening scythes.

*Caves.*—There are but few caves in this county. Caverns most frequently occur in limestone, and the fact that there is so little of this stone exposed in Hampshire accounts for the absence of them. There are a few small ones, however. There is a cave on what is known as the Milslagle farm on Timber ridge. This was explored for a short distance some years ago by William Offutt, but has since attracted little attention.

*Mineral Springs.*—These are quite numerous and distributed over a large area in the county. Sulphur springs are most abundant and of many varieties, locally known as red, white and black sulphur springs. Capon Springs are alkaloid lithia. There are also a few chalybeate or iron springs in different parts of the county.



# CHAPTER XXXVII.



## CEMETERIES OF ROMNEY.

BY HU MAXWELL.

So far as can be ascertained from extant traditions, the first burying place for the dead of Romney was situated on the public square on which the court house was afterwards built, but the graves were between the present court house and the Kellar hotel, on the site and in the rear of the present bank of Romney. It is probable that the first dead of the town were laid to their last rest in that old cemetery. How many sleep there, no one now knows. But there were many; for there is evidence that it was still used as a burying ground after the beginning of the present century. Old people a few years ago could remember when the graves could be distinguished, one from another. But the land was occupied by houses and gardens; and the plow finally obliterated each

“Mouldering heap,  
Where, in his narrow cell forever laid,  
The rude forefathers of the hamlet sleep.”

It is related that, after the ground ceased to be used as a burying place, and was appropriated as a garden, a person in walking through the high grass and rank weeds would sometimes stumble into the deeply sunken graves. No stone now marks the sight of a single tomb, and the name of a single person who was buried there cannot now be ascertained. In their day they no doubt believed they were filling a place in the world of the living which would entitle them to, and secure for them, at least a gravestone to mark their narrow house in the realm of the dead. But,



such has not been the case. No doubt, in that old cemetery lie the men who saved from the tomahawk of the savage many a frontier home in Hampshire; and who, in their lives, were looked upon as the protectors, defenders and saviors of the people and their homes, when the cruel Indian and his no less cruel white ally made wide desolation along the frontiers. But, alas, how soon the children forget the debt of gratitude which their parents owed! How applicable to the dead here are the verses written of the neglected grave of Simon Kenton, the defender of Kentucky in its earliest years:

“Ah, can this be the spot where sleeps  
 The bravest of the brave!  
 Is this rude slab the only mark  
 Of Simon Kenton's grave!  
 These broken palings, are they all  
 His ingrate country gave  
 To one who periled life so oft  
 Her hearths and homes to save!”

In the old cemetery in Romney there remain not so much as the “broken palings” or the “rude slab.” All have passed away, and nothing is left but the memory, and that, being the most immaterial and ephemeral of things, will soon pass into nothingness, and the shadow of oblivion will settle down forever.

Archaeologists who dig into the tumuli along the Nile, the Tigris and the Euphrates, discover that very ancient cities often stood upon the ruins of cities more ancient, and these, in their turn, rested their foundations upon cities antedating them by centuries, one ruin upon another, stretching back into the dim antiquity of the infant world until a time is reached when there is not so much as a uniform inscription or a rude hieroglyph to give an approximation of the date, nor a hint of the name or character of the first city and its inhabitants. History repeats itself, even in the small thing of village graveyards. Romney a hundred years ago abandoned the cemetery in which



it had buried its first people. Perhaps the space was full. A new, larger and more beautifully situated cemetery was chosen, beginning near the southwestern street of the town, and rising toward the hill with a gentle slope. It was no doubt believed that this new field would furnish ample space for burying the village dead for centuries. But no cities increase in population more rapidly than the cities of the dead. All that live must some time make their habitation there. The new cemetery was ample for more than half a century. Then space became circumscribed. One by one the vacant places grew smaller and fewer; and the people who still lived began to interest themselves in securing a less crowded place in which to rest when dead. The graveyard was full. The old church in the cemetery, which was building while British cannon were bombarding Baltimore's protecting fort; while British fire was burning the capitol at Washington; while British troops, which had driven Napoleon from Spain, were breaking against Jackson's fortifications at New Orleans, like waves against immovable rocks—that old church in the cemetery had the dead buried close to its very walls. So crowded had the places become that no other room could be found. The graveyard was full. A new one, a larger, must be found; for Romney still furnished people for "the narrow chambers in the halls of death."

On a high, beautiful terrace, overlooking the valley, Indian Mound cemetery was marked out. It was the burial place of Indians centuries before the white race saw the Blue Ridge, hence its name. Further back, in geological time, it was the channel of the South branch, and the rounded stones of the old flood plane lie in drifts beneath the subsoil. This is the graveyard of today.

The old abandoned and neglected cemetery at the foot of the hill is a melancholy picture. The hand of time has been laid heavily upon it, and its beauty has departed, save that beauty which a pensive fancy can see in ruin and deso-



lation, especially when so intimately associated with the dead. Heavy foundations, covered with grass which hides the wreck of masonry, mark the site of the church, which ceased to be used more than a quarter of a century ago. In this edifice the eminent Dr. Foote preached for nearly thirty years. He and the church have taken their departure.

“Dead the singer; dead the song.”

A clump of locust trees, no doubt planted when the church was new, stands there still, about the only cheerful thing to relieve the monotony of the desolation. A row of posts, some of them broken, and gaps where others are missing, shows where the enclosing fence once was. At present the cemetery is the village pasture ground; and cattle fight for the tufts of grass which flourish in the spaces between the overturned tombstones. Slabs of marble, broken into fragments, strew the ground; and gravestones, leaning at all angles, show how numerous are the graves. Vandalism has done its worst. Evidence is not wanting that many a stone has been broken deliberately, for the dints of blows are visible where one gravestone has been used as a maul to break another. On some of the stones still standing, on others lying flat and half buried, and on the broken fragments of still others, may be read epitaphs and names which suggest much that deserves to be remembered. We do not know how much was once there which cannot now be read. We cannot tell who lie in graves no longer marked. The oldest citizen of Romney has forgotten, if he ever knew, who are the occupants of tombs which, to judge from the heavy pedestals on which gravestones formerly stood, were made for influential and prominent men. The best catalogue that can now be made of the graves is but a mere fragment. We know what we have, but cannot know what we have not. The historian, whose sense of duty impels him to rescue what he can from oblivion, finishes his task with the feeling that, after



all his pains, he can present only a page here and a torn fragment there from this book of the dead. Yet he feels that the fragments, like broken vases from Etruscan ruins, are valuable. What is done must be done quickly, or the dead of this cemetery, like those of the older one, will pass into oblivion and leave not a name.

The land occupied by the cemetery was given by Andrew Wodrow, and was deeded to James Beach, William Inskeep, Adam Hare and John Lawson, as trustees. The church was several years in building. The aisle took up half the interior space. The first elder in the church, William Naylor, was among the first to be buried there. He was a lawyer, and a pillar in the Presbyterian church. Another elder, John McDowell is buried there. He was a son-in-law of Andrew Wodrow. In this old cemetery sleeps Andrew Wodrow, a Scotchman by birth, a gentleman by nature, a scholar above the average of his time. He came from a family of scholars. His father enjoyed, and still has, a national reputation as a historian. His father, the historian of the church of Scotland, was Robert Wodrow. He published his history the year Andrew Wodrow was born, 1752. Lord Macaulay frequently quoted from that book in his history of England, and it was diligently read by Walter Scott and other great men. The Wodrows were related to the family of Dr. McCosh of Princeton college. They were a family of college professors. Two members of the Wodrow family filled, in succession, the chair of theology in the Glasgow university, in Scotland, and another was librarian of the university. Andrew came to America, and late in the eighteenth century took up his home in Romney, and there lived and died. His son, Craig Wodrow, also rests in the cemetery. He, too, was a scholar, but poor health through life prevented his taking part in active business. A large marble slab, whose broken fragments are half buried in the grass, was over the grave of William Sherrard, who died at St. Augustine, Florida,



and who was brought home that he might be buried where friends could visit his grave. Had he been laid to rest under the evergreen palms in the southern land of flowers it would have been as well. The quietude of a Florida forest, where the ground is flecked by sheen and shadow, were preferable to "a marble wilderness."

The wife of J. B. Sherrard and the two wives of David Gibson were buried here; also the wife of John W. Marshall. Here was laid to his last rest that unsatisfied man, Dr. Robert Newman, whose early life was a romance, and whose later years were filled with longings after scientific truths which forever eluded him. He read the great works of Newton on astronomy, and criticized them, but was never able to perfect his own theory. He had been hindered in his early years from acquiring a university education; and for this reason he ever afterwards felt himself handicapped in his pursuit of knowledge. He was the author of a book on medicine. In early life he was a deist; but these views were modified in later life. Elsewhere in this book will be found more extended mention of Dr. Newman.

In this old cemetery was buried Nathaniel Kuykendal, a character which stands out in bold relief. He had known the trials of this life; had known the bitterness of desertion, and in all the vicissitudes of fortune he had been a man in all senses of the word. Here was buried Peter Peters; the aged and venerable Joseph Combs; and Eli Davis, the old jailor who faithfully performed the unpleasant duty of locking doors between unfortunates and freedom, but who himself finally entered the narrow cell whose door will never be unlocked until the graves give up their dead. The old tavern keeper, Steinbeck, known to the early inhabitants of Romney, occupies the six feet of earth set aside for every man. He fares as well in this city of the dead as his neighbors, the scholarly Wodrow and the scientist Dr. Newman. Death levels all. Even the old,



faithful slave, known only by the name of Mammy Betsy, occupies the same place of honor in the silent city, as those who in their lives believed that they were made of better clay. When that bourne is passed, from which no traveler ever returns, all differences soon pass away. "All that live shall share thy destiny."

A willow tree once waved over the graves of Mrs. McGuire, the mother of the second wife of William Naylor, and the mother of Samuel McGuire, clerk of Hampshire county, in 1815, and who was a son-in-law of Andrew Wodrow. The willow tree is gone. No man can now say which is the mother's grave, and which the son's. That page is missing from the records of the dead. Not far distant is the grave of Mary, the wife of William S. Naylor. Old people used to remember her as a beautiful, light hearted girl, daughter of Mrs. Sarah Davis, who is buried beside her. The girl gave her love and her hand to a stranger, and left Romney to make her home with him. In one year he brought her back a corpse, beautiful in death, and here she rests. Miss Charity Johnson, loved by all who knew her, has not been forgotten, although her grave has been neglected. Here is shown the grave of Dr. Dyer, and his story illustrates the irony of fate. He had been buried elsewhere, but was removed to this cemetery to be near friends; and now his grave is hard to find. Friends forget; for the dead cannot remember the dead. Dr. Snyder also was buried here. His skill as a physician was widely known; and he prolonged and saved many a life; but although "he saved others, himself he could not save," and here he lies, almost forgotten. Others have taken his place among the living. Here were buried also, men whose names and the names of their descendants are identified with the history of Hampshire from its early years to the present. They are Jacob Heiskell, Samuel Heiskell, Adam Heiskell, and Elizabeth the daughter of Christopher Heiskell.



The grave of Mrs. Fitzgerald has a pathetic interest. Her two sons went to the war of 1812 and both fell in battle. When the news of their death reached her, she betook herself to her bed, and never left it until carried to her grave. Chichester Tapscott, a young lawyer of promise, but whose delicate health stood in the way of success, is among the dead. Near his is the grave of his sister, Mrs. White. The grave of a stranger, whose only known name was Wood, may be pointed out. He died somewhat suddenly while in Romney, and some one manifested enough interest in him to mark his grave. No one knows whence he came, nor whether he had a family. For years, perhaps, some one waited for his return, and never knew his fate. But, the very fact that he was a stranger caused him to be remembered, while those whose lives were spent in Romney have been forgotten. Another grave has an interest, not from the prominence or worth of its occupant, but because it shows that the greatest are not always the longest remembered. Elizabeth Evans, an outcast, an inebriate, welcomed to nobody's home while living, was given the same welcome to the tomb that all others receive; and her grave is pointed out to this day; but the names of those buried to the right and to the left of her are not known. Mr. and Mrs. David Griffith and Mrs. Catherine Cookus, well remembered by the older people of Romney, were buried here. John Baker White, and wife of John B. White, have graves which have not yet been lost. J. B. Kercheval, grandson of the historian of the valley of Virginia, Samuel Kercheval, is buried here. Adam Heiskell, one of the first of that name to come to Hampshire, lies undisturbed, "waiting the judgment day." Few scenes of danger and hardships he did not look upon; few have shared in greater glory than he, so far as heroic service to one's country can bring glory to the soldier. He was one of Morgan's men, and he fought unflinchingly in the darkest hour of the revolution. He was in the memor-



able march to Quebec. "After life's fitful fever he sleeps well." A grand niece of Lord Fairfax is among the dead who were laid to rest here. The grave of an insane man is said to be in the enclosure, but no mark now remains, nor is his name remembered. But it is related that his grave was dug near a remote corner, removed as far as possible from all the other dead. That was unnecessary. So far as mortal man can learn, there is no difference in the grave, or beyond it, between the philosopher Aristotle and the poorest lunatic. Opinion, creed and hypocrisy put up no bars across the avenues of immortality and eternity; although they erect many barricades this side.

Another occupant whose grave can no longer be pointed out, is Thomas Ragland, a young lawyer of promise, but who succumbed to consumption before he had fairly begun life's work. James Dailey was also buried there, one of the first inhabitants, a banker, and a relative of the Wood family, from whom the county of that name in West Virginia received its name. George Porterfield is interred in the old cemetery. He is said to have been a member of the Porterfield family of the valley of Virginia, and a relative of Colonel George A. Porterfield, who had charge of the first confederate forces that saw active service in northwestern Virginia, and who was defeated by General Kelley at Philippi, June 3, 1861. Neglected, overrun by cattle, uncared for by anybody, is the grave of one of the greatest men Hampshire has produced, William Mulledy. Born in 1796, of poor parents, without an introduction to men in high places, he pushed into the great battle of life, and by the splendor of his mental abilities he compelled recognition, and in his short life of only thirty-five years his name became known on both sides of the Atlantic as an ecclesiastic of the Roman Catholic church, and as an intellectual leader at the head of one of America's best colleges. He is mentioned elsewhere in this book.

When the old cemetery became filled, a few years prior



to the Civil war, the ground for a new one was procured, large enough to meet the requirements of the people of Romney for a few generations. It is on a promontory, naturally sterile and barren, which juts out over the wide, South branch valley. The ground has been improved and beautified, and few more attractive cemeteries are in the state. There is, perhaps, not another one where the natural scenery on all sides is finer. The Indians recognized this when they buried their dead there; although that benighted race had little conception of beauty. Their dull appreciation, however, saw that the mountains were in sight, and the river flowed beneath, and these features of nature they could understand. The mountains south and west are the flanking ranges of the Alleghanies, and in the language of the Indians the name "Alleghany" is their nearest expression of the idea of eternity. They were the eternal mountains, the everlasting range; they went on forever. But, their conception of the idea of eternity partook more of distance than of time. It cannot be stated as a fact of history that the Indians buried their dead on that promontory because of the wide view obtainable from that point, for it is not known when or why they used that burying ground; but it is highly probable that the place was chosen because of its beauty and sublimity. It has never been a prevailing custom of the Indians to bury their dead on prominent highlands; but many instances are known wherein they did so, expressly for the purpose of giving their dead an opportunity of a perpetual view of their favorite haunts while alive; in their simplicity supposing that the dead continued to partake of the sensations of the living and to feel an interest in the affairs of their friends. No matter what was their motive, it is certain that a burying place was there. A large mound, covered with pines, not perhaps a century old, is a prominent feature of the cemetery. This mound may contain the bones of a score of persons, or twice that number. It is built of boulders



and soil. The rocks are waterworn, and it is a common supposition that they were carried up from the river, half a mile away and two hundred feet below. Such may have been the source of supply, but it is not probable; at least it was not necessary to go so far for boulders. The terrace is underlaid with such rocks, with a few feet of earth on top; and where the neighboring ravine cuts the terrace the boulders may be picked up in large numbers within fifty yards of the mound. Indians would not likely carry them from the river when they could obtain them within a few steps. The mound has been opened and numerous fragments of bone were found; but all indications were that the tumulus was old, prehistorical. It was more than an ordinary grave; how much more, must forever remain unknown.



# CHAPTER XXXVIII.



## ROMNEY LITERARY SOCIETY.

BY HU MAXWELL.

The Literary Society of Romney dates from January 30, 1819. It is the oldest literary society in the state, and there are few older in the United States. It is believed that not one of the original members is living. Never at one time were there more than fifty-two members on the roll, and there is no record that of this number more than seventeen were ever present at one meeting. The work accomplished by these few energetic citizens of Romney is astonishing. No other one thing in the history of the town has had such lasting results for good. The founders did not appreciate what a great work they were inaugurating when they entered upon it. On the evening of January 30, 1819, ten gentlemen of Romney met in the office of Dr. John Temple to organize a literary society. Those present on that occasion were Samuel Kercheval, Charles T. Magill, John Temple, Thomas Blair, James N. Stephens, Nathaniel Kuykendall, David Gibson, W. C. Wodrow, James R. Jack and William C. Morrow. They organized by electing Mr. Kuykendall chairman and Mr. Magill secretary. The business of the evening was the appointment of a committee to draft a constitution. This committee reported at a meeting held February 4, 1819. The provisions of the constitution were, that the organization should be known as "The Polemic Society of Romney;" that the dues from each member should be fifty cents a month; that no political or religious question should be debated unless in the abstract and in general terms; that after the



running expenses of the society had been paid, the remaining funds should be expended in buying books; that a member who should use profane language in presence of the society, or bring spirituous liquors to the meetings, should be fined one dollar for each offense. The election of officers resulted in the selection of Mr. Magill as president, Mr. Wodrow secretary, and Dr. Temple as treasurer. This constitution was adopted February 4, 1819.

The next meeting was held in the court house, February 13, and the debate for the evening was on the question: "Ought a representative be governed by instructions from his constituents?" The decision was for the affirmative. On February 19 the question for debate was: "Is education in a public school better than that of a private school?" The decision was in favor of the public school. At this meeting the first money appropriated by the society was paid the doorkeeper. The sum was twenty-five cents. On February 26 the affirmative won in a debate on the question: "Is a system of banking advantageous to a community?" On March 6 a question somewhat more psychological in its nature was discussed. It was an abstract question of religion: "Can the human mind, by its own reflection, arrive at the conclusion that the soul is immortal?" The society decided in the negative. For ten years the society met at least twice a month, and usually four times. The questions debated covered all ranges of topics, scientific, religious, political, social. Some of them may have been "in the abstract so far as politics and religion are concerned," at that day, but viewed from the present standpoint, some of them seem almost partisan. For example, they debated and decided in the negative the question: "Is a protective tariff detrimental to the interests of the country?"

The first money to buy books was appropriated April 23, 1819. Two volumes were bought, "Plutarch's Lives of Illustrious Men" and "Vallett's Laws of Nations." This



was the humble beginning of the splendid library accumulated during the succeeding forty years, and which was scattered and almost destroyed during the Civil war. On July 2, 1819, the balance of money in the treasurer's hands was two dollars and forty-six cents, but by October 23, following, sufficient funds were on hand to buy "Rollins' Ancient History," "Lewis' Roman History," and "Robertson's History of Charles the Fifth." No more books were bought till near the close of the next year, when "Livy," "Tacitus" and "Marshall's Life of Washington" were purchased. Three months later a bookcase was purchased. About this time, 1821, an act was passed by the Virginia assembly incorporating the "Library Society of Romney." The charter granted was not satisfactory to the society, because it required changes which had not been asked for, one of which was the name. The members considered that they had a "literary" society, not a "library" society. The assembly was asked to amend the charter, which was done a year or so later, and after many delays and debates the new charter was accepted by the society February 4, 1823, and it became "The Literary Society of Romney," a name which it ever after retained.

In April, 1821, the new books added to the library were "Hook's Roman History," "Herodotus," "Travels in Greece," "Modern Europe," "Ramsay's History of the United States," and the "Works of Benjamin Franklin." In May, 1822, a spirited debate took place on the question: "Is it to the interest of the people of Hampshire to encourage the canalling of the Potomac?" Unfortunately, no record exists of the arguments advanced in this discussion, but the decision was that it would be detrimental to the interests of Hampshire county, to have a canal built along the Potomac. It is presumed that the objection to the canal was that it would destroy the business of teamsters who hauled merchandise from the east. Such, at least, was the objection to building the Baltimore and



Ohio railroad. The society had passed a by-law that any member who published one of his own, or anybody else's, speeches delivered before the society should pay a fine of five dollars. Consequently no speeches were published. The society adopted a new constitution in 1824.

In the eleven years, between January 30, 1819, and January 22, 1830, the names of fifty-two members appear on the books of the society. They were: Francis A. Armstrong, Thomas Blair, Joseph W. Bronaugh, R. W. Baker, James H. Clark, William Curlett, James Dailey, Andrew W. Dailey, Joseph P. Eblin, David Gibson, James Gibson, Andrew Gibson, Isaac A. Inskeep, Henry M. Inskeep, James R. Jack, C. T. Jack, John G. Jack, Samuel Kercheval, Nathaniel Kuykendall, Thomas McDonald, Charles T. Magill, John McDowell, William Mulledy, Alfred T. Magill, Angus McDonald, Edward C. McDonald, John H. McEndree, Henry M. Machen, William S. Naylor, Robert Newman, William Nalyor, Granville Newman, E. W. Newton, Cuthbert Powell, James Parsons, Peter Peters, Thomas Ragland, James M. Stephens, John Snyder, William Sherrard, John Temple, Warren Throckmorton, William Thompson, Chichester Tapscott, Newton Tapscott, John A. Thompson, William C. Wodrow, John B. White, Thomas B. White, Washington G. Williams, Neill Armstrong.

No record of the proceedings of the society can be found covering the period from January 22, 1830, to May 15, 1869, nearly forty years. The records of this period are supposed to have been destroyed during the war. This is to be regretted, because during that period the society did its great work. Without doubt many members were on the rolls during these years whose names cannot now be ascertained; but, although the historian is compelled to pass over their individual acts without mention, yet the result of their work stands as a monument to their memory. It is learned from the proceedings of the Vir-



ginia assembly, and from other sources, that the great work of the society began in 1832. On January 6 of that year the assembly passed an act authorizing the society to raise by lottery the sum of twenty thousand dollars to be expended in educational purposes. A detailed statement of how the money was expended cannot be found; but it is known that large sums were paid for books; a building was erected; strong financial support was given to the Potomac academy, which stood near the site of the present court house. On February 15, 1844, the Virginia assembly passed an act authorizing the society to donate to the Romney academy the balance of the money raised by lottery; and on December 12, 1846, another legislative act was passed empowering the society "to establish at or near the town of Romney, a seminary of learning for the instruction of youth in the various branches of science and literature; and the society may appropriate to the same such portion of the property which it now has or may hereafter acquire, as it may deem expedient." In accordance with this act a handsome building was erected on the site of the present institute for the deaf and blind. In fact, the old building forms a part of the larger institution, as will be detailed more fully in this chapter. The splendid library of the society was removed to the new building, and a school was opened under the most auspicious circumstances. Few schools in the state of Virginia at that time had access to better libraries. In September, 1849, the society prepared a code and a system of by-laws for the government of the Classical institute.

In October of the same year the principalship was tendered to Dr. Foote, who considered the proposition and finally declined to accept it, and founded an opposition school, called the Potomac seminary. Thereupon Professor Meany was chosen as principal of the Classical institute. The difference between Dr. Foote and the society, which led to his refusal to accept the principal-



ship, was in regard to the appointment of the assistant teachers and the amount of their salaries, and the manner of paying them. The literary society and the school flourished until the beginning of the Civil war. The disastrous four years, from 1861 to 1865, brought ruin to many a southern enterprise. The Literary Society of Romney suffered irreparable losses. Nearly all the members joined the confederate army, and the building and books remaining in Romney were considered legitimate plunder by the union troops. It is a wonder that a book remained. No list of the books at the commencement of the war can be found, but those who are familiar with the library say that fully three-fourths of the books were carried away or destroyed. The most valuable were never recovered. There were about three thousand volumes in 1861. About two hundred remained on the shelves when the war was over, but a considerable number of others were subsequently found, and the library contains perhaps seven hundred volumes now. But the value of these is greatly lessened by the sets being broken. Some sets of ten or twenty volumes now contain only three or four books. Other sets are all gone but one or two, and others are all missing. A cyclopedia which cost over eighty dollars, and was bought in 1826, is gone. It is no wonder that the members of the society were discouraged when they came home from the war and saw the ruins of the library which had cost much money and the labor of half a century. What remained seemed scarcely worth bothering with, and not until May 15, 1869, was an effort made to revive the society and collect what remained of the books. A meeting was called for that date, and the members who responded to the call were, A. P. White, William Harper, James D. Armstrong, A. W. Kercheval, Robert White, John C. Heiskell, Samuel R. Lupton, David Entler and James Parsons. Many who were members in 1861 did not respond to the roll call of the society in 1869. They were at rest in soldiers' graves



by the rivers of Virginia. Those who were elected new members between 1869 and 1886 were, Lemuel Campbell, J. J. Inskeep, J. D. Parsons, Robert J. Pugh, John T. Vance, T. T. Brady, James A. Gibson, S. L. Flournoy, R. W. Dailey, Dr. R. W. Dailey, Henry B. Gilkeson, John C. Covell, E. M. Gilkeson, C. M. Davis, John S. Pancake, H. H. Johnson, C. S. White, R. G. Ferguson, I. H. C. Pancake, Wilbur Wirgman.

A new hall was erected in 1869 and in November of that year the remnants of the library, and the other property were moved to the new quarters. At that time the proposition of establishing a school in West Virginia for the deaf and blind was under consideration; and the literary society took up the work of securing the institution for Romney. On April 12, 1870, the society passed a resolution by which it was agreed to deed, free of cost, the buildings and grounds of the Romney Classical Institute to the Deaf, Dumb and Blind Institute, on condition that the institute be located in Romney. The regents met in Wheeling April 20, 1870, and A. W. Kercheval and Robert White were sent by the Romney society to make the formal offer of the buildings and grounds to the regents. The offer was made, and in a short time was accepted by the regents. The society appropriated three hundred and twenty dollars, July 11, 1870, for the purpose of repairing and putting in good condition the building, preparatory to turning it over to the regents. The transfer was made, and the valuable property passed into the hands of the Deaf, Dumb and Blind Institute.

After that the literary society met only occasionally. There is no record of any meeting from March, 1872, to April 1878. The last meeting of which there is any record was held February 15, 1886. The full results of the labors of the Literary Society of Romney cannot be measured. The influence for good has been very great. The principal visible results may be summed up in the collection of a fine



library; the substantial support of the Romney academy; the founding and support of the Romney Classical Institute; and great influence and assistance in securing for Romney the Deaf, Dumb and Blind Institute. It detracts none from the credit due to others to say that without the aid of the literary society it is barely possible that the institute for the deaf, dumb and blind could have been secured for Romney.



# CHAPTER XXXIX.



## LITERARY WORKERS.

BY HU MAXWELL.

Hampshire county, which is pre-eminent in many things, is not wanting in writers of note. Elsewhere in this book will be found a history of the newspapers and editors who have helped mold and lead public opinion in Hampshire; and in this chapter will be given a sketch of the lives, with extracts from their writings, of those who have ventured farther into the fields of literature.

JOHN J. JACOB, father of Gov. John J. Jacob, published in 1825 a book which possesses much historical value. It was the life of Michael Cresap, the well-known Indian fighter. Cresap lived opposite the mouth of the South branch, on the Maryland side of the Potomac, and after his death, Mrs. Cresap became the wife of Mr. Jacob. The purpose of the book was to correct a widespread error regarding the part taken by Captain Cresap in the Dunmore war. The charge had been made, and was given wide circulation by Thomas Jefferson, and by other writers, that Cresap had murdered the family of the celebrated Indian Chief Logan, and by that act plunged the border into war with the Indians. Mr. Jacob's book undertakes to prove, and it does prove conclusively, that Captain Cresap did not murder Logan's family, and that the Dunmore war was not brought on by anything done by Cresap.

GEORGE ARMSTRONG WAUCHOPE, formerly of Hampshire county, but now professor of English language and literature in the university of Iowa, has won a reputation in the



field of letters, both as a writer and editor. He was born in 1863, and graduated from the university of Virginia 1884, and two years later received the degree of master of arts, and later that of doctor of philosophy. He taught Greek and Latin, and studied in Germany. He made a specialty of early English and the kindred languages, and won distinction in that field of investigation. He is one of the staff reviewers for *The Critic* of New York, and the editor of De Quincey's *Revolt of the Tartars*, and of the *Confession*. He has written in both prose and poetry. The following sonnet on the death of Dr. William Shrader, who sacrificed his life while experimenting with the Roentgen rays on consumption germs, will show his style.

O noble friend! high hopes inspired thy breast,  
Who lately wrapped all pale in Azrael's pall  
Was borne from sad Missouri's classic hall.  
Thou daredst unclasp old Nature's book, to wrest  
From some dim page of her fast-sealed bequest  
To mortals under foul disease's thrall,  
A potent charm, the dread fiend to appall.  
Unselfish, thou refusedst needful rest,  
But with unswerving toil consumed the night  
On duty, testing the mysterious ray,  
An humble martyr to the cause of truth.  
Grasping the white torch of world-girdling light,  
Thou hast passed forth, for the high gods did say,  
"Let him, our well beloved, die in youth!"

ANDREW W. KERCHEVAL, born 1824, contributed much to the literary culture of Hampshire. He came from a family eminent for learning. On one side he was related to the Wodrows, an old Scotch family of sterling worth. He inherited French blood from his father's ancestors, who were Huguenots. They fled to England from France to escape persecution. There were two brothers of the name, Samuel and Lewis Kercheval, Samuel dying in Lon-



don, Lewis making his way to Virginia, and settling near the Chesapeake bay. There he married and reared a family. His sons moving to the Valley of Virginia, William, grandson of Lewis Kercheval the founder of the American family, was one of the earliest merchants of Winchester, and his son, Samuel Kercheval, the historian, was born in Winchester before the Revolutionary war. Samuel was the father of twelve children, the eldest, Samuel, being a lawyer, and the father of the subject of this sketch. He came to Romney to write in the clerk's office under Andrew Wodrow, and married the clerk's daughter, Emily Jean Wodrow. He lived for a time in Kentucky, but returned to Virginia where he died in 1840. Sketches of the other branches of the Kercheval family cannot be given here, suffice it to say that men of that family have been prominent in all the honorable walks of life in many states of this union. John Kercheval, a great-uncle of Andrew, was an efficient officer in the patriot army under Washington. He it was who carried the wounded Reverend Charles Myron Thruston, the famous "fighting parson," off the battle field of Monmouth. Benjamin B. Kercheval was a prominent citizen of Detroit, Michigan, and was at one time the law partner of General Cass. Lewis Kercheval, another member of the family, was one of the first mayors of Chicago. Captain Thomas Kercheval was an aid of General Harrison at the battle of Tippecanoe. Another Kercheval of the same family was an early mayor of Nashville, Tennessee.

Andrew W. Kercheval, nearly all his life, was a member of the Romney Literary society and contributed to the success which that society attained. He was a writer for newspapers and magazines, and undertook several pretentious literary works, but never finished any of them. He published a pamphlet of criticisms and notes on a poem, "Idothea," written by Professor Joseph Saliards, of Virginia. But Professor H. H. Johnson, of Romney, is



entitled to a share of the credit for that pamphlet, as he and Kercheval wrote it together. Kercheval undertook the compilation of an exhaustive history of the war of 1812, but never finished it. He also revised his grandfather's History of the Valley, but left the work in manuscript. He collected material for a History of the Upper Potomac, but that, too, was left unfinished. He commenced the study of many languages, and acquired considerable proficiency in several of them. He read French, German, Spanish, Italian, Latin, Greek and Hebrew. At the beginning of the civil war he left Romney and went south, not as a soldier, but as a speculator. He had a contract to supply the confederate army at Richmond with soap, and realized a large sum; but the confederate money ultimately became worthless and he lost it all.

Mr. Kercheval occasionally contributed verses to the newspapers. It is all in a dignified, serious, reflective strain, no touch of humor, with no satire in it. The following extracts from longer poems will show the character of his verse:

## EPICEDIUM.

Gone out the flame of those soul-lighted eyes,  
That flashed with glory, beamed with tenderness,  
Or rose in joy, and darkliest sank in gloom,  
Twin stars of hope and love, of faith and fame!  
And hushed that voice discoursing music rare,  
That wooed young love, and thrilled the hearts of men,  
An anthem rolled through vast cathedral aisles,  
Or clarion's blast or harp-string's dying swell:  
And that heroic, faithful, generous heart,  
Shedding o'er life divinity and power,  
Crowning with glory the fair brow of love,  
To home, to altars, to bright honor true,  
Transformed to marble, by the touch of death!

Alas my soul  
Is filled with sadness, even nature's face



Hath lost its old, accustomed loveliness,  
While memory sorrows for the cherished dead.  
Dead? Yet thy life unperishing remains,  
High, priceless thoughts, and winged words that bear  
Parturient power, and bright example given  
To teach us, while we waste or weary here,  
Truth, honor, genius triumph o'er the grave!

---

LIFE'S MISSION.

Prometheus-like, the fire celestial caught,  
Explore far fields of action and of thought,  
And then, O heart! subdued by toil and pain,  
Confess the rock, the vulture, and the chain!  
Ah, but to feel, in some awakened hour,  
The conscious pride of virtue and of power,  
Victorious eagles through the world to bear,  
To vanquish death and triumph o'er despair,  
To win from fate some envied, high renown,  
Or conquest's laurel, else the martyr's crown,  
With curious weapon that thyself hadst wrought  
In other years—old armories of thought.  
Yet this may be ambition's vainest dream,  
Like starlight mirrored in a treacherous stream.  
O God of Heaven, give me power to feel  
Truth in all brightness o'er my spirit steal;  
Subdue in me this earth born, lowly pride—  
Hark! the good angel whispers at my side:  
    "And canst thou o'er life's errors weep,  
    Faith's utmost holy vigils keep?  
    The oil of gladness sweetly shed  
    Upon thy fallen brother's head?  
    Affections' soft and shadowy wing  
    O'er hearts that hate thee, gently fling?  
    Canst thou, with equal mind, and great,  
    Brave the Thermopylæ of fate?"  
Above all fortune, even above the fame



That servile waits upon a great man's name;  
Brighter than all of worldly, vain success;  
Purer than all its vaunted happiness—  
To feel thou hast some path of duty trod,  
True to thyself, to country, and to God;  
Or won how well in glory's phantom field,  
"Non Omnis Moriar," written on thy shield!  
Do thou thy duty, duty's path is plain,  
And thy life's mission shall not be in vain.

After the war Kercheval returned to Romney and spent the remainder of his life, dying in 1896. He and his sister, Miss Mary S. Kercheval, lived together, and she survived him.

JAMES W. HORN, a resident of Capon Bridge, and a student in the West Virginia university, has occasionally contributed verses to the columns of the papers. One of his best, "Capon River," is here given:

CAPON RIVER.

Capon river, sparkling water,  
Running, never asking rest;  
Old Potomac's southern daughter  
Rushing to your mother's breast.  
Bathing banks of bramble bushes,  
Shoving sand and shells ashore,  
Outward each broad breaker pushes,  
Reaching for a wider floor.  
Moistening massy beds of mosses,  
Sprinkling shining silver spray,  
Catching leaves the light wind tosses,  
Smiling in the glare of day.  
Drinking water from the mountains,  
Drinking autumn's chilling rain,  
Quaffing down the brooks and fountains,  
Breaking winter's icy chain.  
Stealing summer's sunny showers,



Draining drops that try to stay  
On the bright and blooming bowers  
That above your surface play.

Here with gentle calmness flowing,  
Making motion merely seen;  
Here with greater swiftness going  
Steep and stony banks between.

Sometimes measured murmurs making,  
Sometimes music soft and low;  
Sometimes into torrents breaking,  
Louder music, swifter flow.

Peaceful, cheerful, ever singing,  
Not despised although small;  
No city walls your echo ringing,  
Sounding no Niagara Fall.

Treasured not in song nor story,  
Knowing naught of history's page,  
Covered not with fame nor glory,  
Acting in the current age.

Yet to me, O, Capon river,  
There's no other river flows,  
That, of half the joys is giver,  
Which your daily song bestows.

Sing more sweetly, sing more loudly,  
Through the years that are to be;  
Flow more grandly, flow more proudly,  
With the seasons, fast and free.

H. L. SWISHER was born in Hampshire county in 1870; passed his early years on the farm of his father, on the Levels. At eighteen years of age he became a school teacher in his native county. Later he attended the state normal school at Fairmont, and graduated. After visiting the northwestern states, and making a journey through Manitoba, Assiniboia, Alberta and British Columbia, he



spent two years in California, part of the time teaching school. After that he returned to West Virginia and entered the university at Morgantown, graduating in three years. While in that institution he edited the college paper, the Athenaeum. In the meantime he published a small book of poetry, containing about six hundred lines, and dedicated it to his class-mates in the normal school. He contributed numerous articles to the newspapers while in the west, usually in prose, but occasionally in verse. He was one of the authors of the present volume, the History of Hampshire County. Extracts from his published verses follow:

## LOTTIE DOON.

No more the angels come to earth,  
I've heard them say.

This was, in truth, my thought  
Until today;

But now I know they come,  
A bright boon;

For I have seen thy face,  
Lottie Doon.

Not of earth were you born,  
This I know;  
You winged your way from heaven  
To us below.

Your smile would change the midnight  
Into noon.

It has banished all my sorrow,  
Lottie Doon.

There is beauty in your face,  
This is true;  
But 'tis not half the beauty  
Seen in you.

• Your cheeks are like the roses  
Blown in June,



Yet more beautiful your soul,  
Lottie Doon.

For your soul shines in your face,  
Gladdening all,  
And to worship at your feet  
I would fall.

Your pathway all through life  
Shall be strewn  
With sweet flowers of adoration,  
Lottie Doon.

All homage you may ask  
Shall be given,  
Ere from us you shall go  
Back to heaven.  
Earth's harps shall for you play  
A glad tune,  
If with us you will stay,  
Lottie Doon.

---

THE SPRING 'NEATH THE OLD GUM TREE.

There is many a spot on the old home place  
That I'm wishing and longing to see,  
But the dearest of all is the meadow lot  
And the spring 'neath the old gum tree.  
At the harvest noon when the wheat in the field  
Waved a billowy, golden sea,  
Round the clover heads the bumble bees croon  
By the spring 'neath the old gum tree.  
Oh, the shade was sweet, and the grass was green  
While, merry harvesters, we  
Spent a happy hour when we used to meet  
By the spring 'neath the old gum tree.  
The spring bubbled up with a laugh on its lips,  
And danced away to the sea,  
While again and again we filled the cup



From the spring 'neath the old gum tree.  
 But those days are fled in the din of life  
 And never more shall I be  
 With the harvesters of then (who now are dead)  
 By the spring 'neath the old gum tree.  
 So, there's many a spot on the old home place  
 That I'm wishing and longing to see,  
 But the dearest of all is the meadow lot,  
 And the spring 'neath the old gum tree.

---

## BOHEMIAN LOVE SONG.

We are poor, dear heart, but we will feign  
 That we a castle have in Spain.  
 When clouds are dark and storms are high.  
 Together we will thither fly.  
 Around it spreads the living green,  
 Above it bends the smiling sky;  
 'Twas meant, my love, that you and I  
 Should reign within as king and queen.  
 We are sad, dear heart; but we will feign  
 That we a castle have in Spain,  
 Where tears flow not and hearts are light,  
 Where lips are red and eyes are bright.  
 We are faint, dear heart, but we will feign  
 That we a castle have in Spain,  
 Where love doth wield her magic spell  
 And faith and hope together dwell.  
 The windows dance a diamond sheen,  
 The slim spires sparkle toward the sky;  
 I am sure, my love, that you and I  
 Ere long shall reign there king and queen.

---

The following verses are samples of a translation from  
 the French of Beranger, "Shooting Stars:"

Shepherd, say you that in the skies



Gleams the star that guides our sail?  
'Tis so, my child; but from our eyes  
Night hides that star within her veil.

Shepherd, 'tis thought, with mystic art,  
You read the secret of the skies:  
What is that star which downward darts,  
Which darts, darts and darting dies?

My child, an erring mortal dies,  
And instant downward shoots his star;  
He drank and sang amid the cries  
Of friends whose joys no hatred mars.

Happy he sleeps, nor moves, nor starts;  
After the wine he quiet lies—  
Another star is seen which darts,  
Which darts, darts and darting dies.

MARSHALL S. CORNWELL was born in Hampshire county, October 18, 1871. His boyhood was spent on his father's farm, about twelve miles from Romney, where he had the benefit of the country schools. He ventured upon business for himself as editor of the Gazette, at Petersburg, Grant county, West Virginia. He made a success of this, and by his vigorous editorials attracted attention beyond the borders of his county. He was invited by United States Senator Stephen B. Elkins to take charge of the Intermountain, a newspaper published at Elkins, in Randolph county, West Virginia. He accepted the position and built up an excellent paper. He filled a position as clerk during a session of the state legislature at Charleston. His health failed, and in 1896 he was obliged to give up his newspaper work. He spent the winter in Florida, where he was not idle, but occupied his time studying the character of the country and people. The result was, he wrote with a keen appreciation of what he saw.

The letter which will be found below was written by





MARSHALL S. CORNWELL.







James Whitcomb Riley, the poet, and the poem to which it refers is also given:

“INDIANAPOLIS, IND., March 12, 1897.

“M. S. CORNWELL, ESQ. DEAR SIR:—By the poems you send me, especially the one ‘Success,’ your gift seems genuine and far above that indicated in verse, meeting general approval. Your own philosophy in last stanzas of ‘Success’ contains the entire creed of fame or failure for the striver, in any line of art, in this world’s order and conditions. You can succeed, but must be of stoutest heart and hope and patience—just as every master before our time. Therefore let us read their lines as well as works, and in between the lines down fathoms deep. Remain firmly superior to all trials; keep sound of soul and always hale of faith in all good things. Work and enduringly rejoice in your work and utter it ever like a jubilant prayer.

“Fraternally yours,

“JAMES WHITCOMB RILEY.”

SUCCESS.

Two ships sail over the harbor bar  
With the flush of the morning breeze,  
And both are bound for a haven far  
O'er the shimmering summer seas.  
With sails all set, fair wind and tide,  
They steer for the open main;  
But little they reck of the billows wide  
Ere they anchor safe again.

There is one perchance, ere the summer is done,  
That reaches the port afar;  
She hears the sound of the welcoming gun  
As she crosses the harbor bar.

The haven she reaches, success, 'tis said,  
Is the end of a perilous trip.  
Perhaps the bravest and best are dead  
Who sailed in the fortunate ship.



The other, bereft of shroud and sail,  
At the mercy of wind and tide,  
Is swept by the might of the pitiless gale  
'Neath the billows dark and wide.  
But 'tis only the one in the harbor there  
That receiveth the meed of praise;  
The other sailed when the morn was fair,  
And was lost in the stormy ways.  
And so to men who have won renown  
In the weary battle of life,  
There cometh at last the victor's crown,  
Not to him who fell in the strife.  
For the world recks not of those who fail,  
Nor cares what their trials are,  
Only praises the ship that with swelling sail  
Comes in o'er the harbor bar.

---

## SOME DAY.

Some day through the mists of the earthly night  
We shall catch the gleam of the harbor light  
That shines for aye on the far off shore  
Where dwell the loved who have gone before;  
We shall anchor safe from our stormy way  
In that haven of rest, some day, some day.  
Some day our sorrows will all be o'er  
And we'll rest from trouble forevermore:  
When over the river's rolling tide  
We shall "strike glad hands" on the other side.  
In the city celestial, at last we may  
Rest in peace, some day, some day.  
Some day will close these weary eyes  
That shall look no more on the earthly skies,  
And over the heart that has ceased to beat  
Kind hands will place fresh flowers sweet;  
But my soul shall hear the celestial lay,  
Sweet pæans of praise, some day.



## AN INVOCATION.

Give me oh Lord of Life, I pray  
A little love lest I should stray.  
'Tis this I ask and this alway  
Unto the end of life's brief day.

I crave no storm of passion's flood  
That madly stirs the human blood,  
Only the love of friend for friend—  
And it be faithful to the end.

For human hearts have human needs;  
And naught of piety or creeds,  
Of peace can give to souls forlorn  
That stem alone life's battle-storm.

I ask not wisdom—the divinè;  
For death shall make this soul of mine  
To heights and depths of knowledge vast  
When outworn dreams of earth are past.

A little love alone I crave  
To light my pathway to the grave—  
The hand of friendship tried and strong  
To steer my shattered barque along,  
Until at last the sail is furled  
In the wide bay where tempest hurled  
Storm-riven wrecks from time's rough sea  
Ride safe through all eternity!

DR. ROBERT NEWMAN, author of a book on the Treatment of Dropsy, was a noted man in his day. He wrote many books, but published only the one above mentioned. He was philosophical in his tastes; and, while he practiced medicine and achieved distinction in that field, he found time to prosecute investigation along other lines. He was born in Culpeper county, Virginia, in 1770. His youth passed with nothing to distinguish him from others of his age and circumstances. He was the youngest of six

•



brothers, and of a delicate constitution. In 1791 all six brothers joined the army under General Arthur St. Clair, and took part in the battle of November 4, of that year, against the Indians north of Cincinnati. St. Clair's defeat is one of the saddest pages in American history. Of the nine hundred soldiers who went into action, more than six hundred were left dead on the field of battle. They had met the allied army of all the Indian tribes of Ohio and Indiana: With this overwhelming force, they,

“Fought eye to eye and hand to hand;  
Alas, 'twas but to die!  
In vain the rifle's deadly flash  
Scorched eagle plume and wampum sash,  
The hatchet hissed on high;  
And down they fell in crimson heaps,  
Like the ripe grain the sickle reaps.”

The exhausted and panic stricken fugitives made their escape to Fort Jefferson, near Cincinnati. Among those fugitives was the subject of this sketch, Robert Newman. Of the six brothers who went into the fight, he alone escaped with his life. It might be supposed that he would have been satisfied with his experience and would have been content to return to the quietude of his Virginia home, and remain with his books, of which he was very fond. But, although he loved books much, he loved adventure more; and we next find him seeking his fortune on the banks of the Mississippi, the first years of the nineteenth century. About that time Burr and Blannerhassett were engaged in a mysterious undertaking, never fully understood, but believed to have for its object the setting up of a government on territory of Texas, which then belonged to Spain. At any rate, Burr and Blannerhassett were arrested, together with others, and were tried in Richmond. Robert Newman was, by many, believed to have knowledge of the designs of Burr and his associates.

•



He was summoned to Richmond as a witness, but, if he had any knowledge on the subject, he did not divulge it. He often spoke of the matter, but was careful in his statements, except that he frequently said that he considered the undertaking a speculation rather than a plot against the government of the United States or any other government.

Returning from the south he married Mrs. Elizabeth Hancock, formerly Miss Neale, and made his home on the Potomac at Old Town, where he commenced the practice of medicine. He removed to Romney in 1820, when he was fifty years old, and resided there ever afterwards, enjoying much local celebrity, especially in the treatment of dropsy and consumption.

His views on religion have been spoken of in another chapter of this book, and his history as a physician in still another. It is proper here, in connection with his literary labors, to speak of his scientific studies. He was a man who merited notice in several fields of labor, in medicine, in science, in literature and religion. In astronomy he found pleasure, formulating theories which could not then, and cannot now, be substantiated by facts. Nor did he claim to substantiate them, and he knew of his failure, but he still hoped that the future would show that he was right. He wrote extended treatises on the subject, which he left in manuscript at his death. The outline of his theory of the movements of the heavenly bodies, as contained in his manuscript works, is as follows: Isaac Newton was wrong in claiming that planets, and all heavenly bodies, are held in their orbits by the balancing of the centrifugal and centripetal forces, but these bodies are held apart by the elasticity of their respective atmospheres, which are in contact. He claimed that worlds are not so far apart, nor so far from ours, as mathematicians had calculated them to be; not that mathematics was unreliable as a science, but that correct data had not been obtained



on which to base the calculations. He replaced gravitation by magnetism, but in attempting to show how all known celestial phenomena could be thus accounted for, he encountered problems which he could solve only by calling in "electricity" as an assistant to magnetism. Had he been so fortunate as to have attained a thorough education he would not have attributed to electricity everything which could not be explained.

Richard Newman was one of the founders, and most earnest supporters, of the Romney Literary society. He died January 28, 1843, in his seventy-seventh year.

WILLIAM HENRY FOOTE is in the foremost rank among the literary men of Hampshire county, where he spent a long life of activity working in the cause of education, the church, and literature. The publication by which he is best known was "Sketches of Virginia," printed in Philadelphia in 1850, with a second and enlarged edition later. It is the best history of the Presbyterian church in Virginia that had been written at that time; yet, it is not strictly a church history, but deals with persons, places and events.

JOHN O. CASLER, author of a book widely read in Hampshire county, *Four Years in the Stonewall Brigade*, has contributed to the cause of literature and history; to the latter by preserving from oblivion facts which were fast passing beyond recall; to the former by writing in a plain and entertaining style. He was born in Frederick county, Virginia, nine miles from Winchester, in 1838. His mother's maiden name was Hieronimous, an old family dating back to the Revolutionary war. In 1841 his father moved his family to Springfield, in Hampshire county, and there the subject of this sketch grew to manhood. Early in 1859 he came to the conclusion, so common with the energetic young men of West Virginia, that the west offered better opportunities than could be found in his native state, and he took his departure, and landed in Cass



county, Missouri. He lived two years in that state, and no doubt would have remained had not the signs of the times portended war. He could have found all the fighting he wanted in Missouri, as subsequent events proved, but he preferred to cast his fortunes with Virginia, which he regarded as his home. He, therefore, returned to Winchester in the spring of 1861, and after visiting relatives in Frederick county, he passed into Hampshire, and at Blue's Gap, on the road between Romney and Winchester, he joined the company of Captain P. T. Grace, which had been organized at Springfield, and with nearly all the men he was personally acquainted. His book gives his experience in the war; and it has been consulted with advantage by the authors of the present history of Hampshire. It was published at Guthrie, Oklahoma, in 1893.

HOWARD HILL JOHNSON comes of a sturdy race of ancestors remarkable for sterling qualities of mind and heart, and in some instances for broad culture and extensive learning. His father, Colonel Jacob F. Johnson, was for fifty years a prominent citizen of Pendleton county, and represented his county in the legislature of 1872-3. He held many other offices of trust and responsibility. His grandfather, James Johnson, represented the same county in the legislature of Virginia several times, and was a member of the constitutional convention of 1829. His great-grandfather, Joseph Johnson, was born in Pennsylvania of English parents, in the early part of the eighteenth century, and migrated to the Shenandoah valley during that remarkable movement which settled that part of Virginia with the ancestors of the present enlightened population. He married there, and finally settled in Pendleton county about the time of the Revolutionary war, or shortly before, where he raised a family of several children late in life. He was past age for service, and his children were not old enough to engage actively in the struggle for independence.



The subject of this sketch was born at the old family home on Friend's run, near Franklin, in Pendleton county, Virginia, now West Virginia, February 19, 1846, and was soon found to be, like his elder brother James, almost totally blind. His parents were persons of superior judgment and information, and wisely arranged for the most favorable conditions to give their unfortunate offspring equal opportunities and chances with their more fortunate brothers and sisters. The older brother was entered at the institution for the deaf and the blind at Staunton in 1848, and finished the usual course there in 1855. He became his younger brother's instructor at once, and prepared him for school with great care and ability. Two years later Howard was entered at the same school, and made rapid progress till he was obliged to leave off his training by the opening of the war 1861. By this time James had established himself as a teacher in his native county, and the younger brother's education was little interrupted, as he went immediately into his brother's school, where he was taught just as other children were taught, with the single exception, that his lessons were read to him by his schoolmates instead of by himself. To this circumstance, more than to any other, he attributes much of the success he may be thought to have achieved as a teacher of the blind.

After two years he was considered to have covered enough ground to warrant his being placed in a classical school near New Market, Virginia, under the care of Joseph Saliards, a most remarkable scholar in many respects.

During the two years he spent in this school under his learned preceptor he made considerable progress in mathematics, literature, science, and the languages, and when the war closed he and his brother opened a school of high grade at Franklin, in which many of the young men of the neighborhood who had been deprived by the war of their



school advantages, found ample opportunity of preparing themselves for the duties of life and business.

In 1866 the institution at Staunton offered the young student-teacher advantages in the prosecution of his studies, which he availed himself of for one more term, greatly to his advancement. In September, 1867, he began a school at Franklin under the provisions of the free school system which had just gone into effect in Pendleton county. The next year he was called to Moorefield, where he taught the public school for three successive terms, with great acceptance.

During his years of early teaching he had noticed with regret and concern, that there was no provision in the general system for the education of the blind in his native state, and he soon set for himself the task of supplying this defect, and of removing from the fair fame of his beloved state this apparent reproach. Accordingly, in 1870, he realized his most sanguine expectations in seeing the establishment of a school for the education of the deaf and the blind at Romney, in which he was made the principal teacher in the blind department, and where he is at this writing, entering on his twenty-eighth term of service.

In 1877 Mr. Johnson received from the Virginia Polytechnic institute at New Market, the successor to his old friend's school, the degree of A. M. through the kind partiality of Professor Saliards, an honor not unworthily bestowed, and most gratefully appreciated.

He had married in 1868 a Miss Barbbe of Virginia, to whom were born three children, Leila B., William T. and H. Guy Johnson. He lost his wife in 1880, and the care of his little family was kindly assumed by the grandparents, at Bridgewater, Virginia. In 1882 Mr. Johnson married again, his second wife being Miss Elizabeth Neale, daughter of Dr. Hamlet V. Neale of Keyser, West Virginia. George N. and Lucy N. are the only children of this marriage.



The lessons of this sketch are valuable in their bearing on the education and training of blind children. The wisdom and thoroughness of Mr. Johnson's home training are credited by him with whatever he has been able to accomplish, either for himself or his fellows under the like cloud of blindness, to the amelioration of whose condition he has devoted himself with singleness of heart.

Mr. Johnson has written in, both prose and verse. His prose writings treat chiefly of educational topics, particularly in relation to the blind. A few selections from his poems are given:

A QUESTION.

Man, thy virtues shine not faintly;  
But magnificently they blaze.  
Say, thy neighbors deem thee saintly:  
Art thou worthy of their praise?

---

BLINDNESS.

Ah, veiled and clouded in eternal night,  
The opening blossom, and the verdant plain,  
And landscapes, smiling in the mellow light,  
On me expend their holy charms in vain.

---

INTUITIVE LOVE.

The fragrance that bursts from the bosom of nature  
And spreads to the star-spangled heavens above—  
O, that rich exhalation, ethereal teacher—  
Bids us act by the instinct God gives us to love.

---

HYMN TO SPRING.

The black austerity of snow clad hills,  
Of icy forests and of frozen rills,  
Of winter howling through the leafless trees  
With notes all mournful as he rules the breeze,  
Has rolled its glittering armanent afar  
With polar strands and arctic seas to war.  
Adieu, dread tyrant of the year, adieu



Till ice-wrought shackles bind the world anew.

All hail, thou balmiest season of the year,  
The summer's cradle and the winter's bier!  
Thee I salute, thou soft, etherial spring  
That all the charms of sunny south dost bring,  
Of fields conceiving in the warm embrace  
Of genial sunshine every living grace  
That decks the carpet of the verdant sod  
And wafts its grateful incense to its God.

Since last thy banners were unfurled around;  
Since last thy presence spread the naked ground  
With softest carpeting of heaven-dyed hue,  
Sight-soothing green 'neath heaven's expanse of blue,  
The summer's heat matured the welcome grain  
That waved all golden on the fertile plain.  
His withering scepter then the autumn swayed,  
And field and forest each his lord obeyed.

Then rose the winter in the endless train,  
And spread his snows upon the prostrate plain;  
And one interminable shroud of white  
Concealed decaying nature from the sight.

Thrice curved the vestal sovereign of the night  
Majestic o'er the glittering fields of white,  
Ere winter ceased impetuous wrath to vent;  
Ere all the fury of his storms was spent,  
Then slow retiring to the arctic main  
He leaves thee, Goddess, to resume thy reign.

At first, kind subject of the muse's song,  
Thy march was doubtful and thy halts were long.  
For winter, glittering in his cave of snow,  
Was loth to battle with so fair a foe;  
Yet, proud and arrogant as foemen are,  
He left Æolus to support the war.

In vain, he labored to subdue thy might,



Exhaust thy patience in the airy flight;  
In vain, his hostile legions of the air  
Around him rallied in their last despair.  
Repulsed, and flying in impetuous haste,  
They left thee sovereign of a desert waste.

The wandering breezes, ever circling round,  
At last submitting, though at first they frowned,  
And disengaging their ethereal mold  
From wintry vestiges of piercing cold,  
Now stand, expectant of thy kind command  
To waft thy fragrance o'er the smiling land.

At thy sweet bidding, too, thou vernal Care,  
The joyous, swift-winged messengers of air  
Will bear to regions yet confined in ice  
The grateful tidings of the kind device  
That shines effulgent on thy flower-wrought shield  
And wakes new vigor in the torpid field.

They'll tell the oppressor of the aching ground,  
With songs outgushing from the heart's profound,  
To heal the wounds of heartless tyranny,  
And, swift dispersing, leave the landscape free;  
For once again the bright, celestial fire  
Relights the pole, and frantic flames with ire.

When last his chariot coursed its vernal path,  
The like indignities awoke his wrath  
That wake it now; for fields he left in bloom,  
Now lie inhumed beneath an icy tomb.

The sunbeams, dancing on the snowy plain,  
Will raise thick vapors to recruit the rain;  
Snows disappear as comes the vernal queen;  
Their white monotony is lost in green;  
They fall, as tyranny must ever fall,  
When weak subjection shall for mercy call.

The high, celestial arbiter of light,  
Whose flaming disc consumes the shades of night,



Controls thy seasons with omnific sway;  
Spring, summer, autumn, even snows, obey;  
And, though they war, their conflict is in vain,  
As each, unrivaled, in his turn must reign.

The world, long trembling 'neath the wintry king,  
Would never smile but for thy soothing wing,  
Kind brooding bird, the spacious womb of earth  
At thy command teems myriads at a birth.  
Thy genial presence, quickening every grain  
That, smiling, bursts beneath thy joyous plain,  
And shooting upward to salute its queen,  
The world is carpeted in living green.

The hills, the vales, the landscapes far and wide,  
The rolling prairies, and the mountain side,  
Proclaim thy praises, O thou goddess fair;  
Their incense rises in the balmy air.

Each shrub, thy altar, and thy priest, each rose  
That all the range of fragrant nature shows;  
Each grove, thy temple; and thy court, each plain.  
No earthly sovereign has so wide a reign.

Dew-dissolved odors on the wings of morn  
High toward the vaulted skies are softly borne  
From opening petals of symbolic love,  
From out the arbor, and from out the grove;  
From every turf that feeds the vital stock,  
From every cranny in the barren rock.  
To thee, O spring, this offering sweet is given;  
To thee whose presence makes the world a heaven.

Winged warblers, twittering o'er the world of flowers,  
Enchant with melody the fleeting hours;  
From nature's orchestra what notes arise  
In sweet vibrations through the liquid skies!  
Such is the universal feast of spring,  
Yet, all her sweetness she herself doth bring.  
What, though contending elements should war,



And storms, fierce growling, should be heard afar!  
What, though the clouds should quench the blazing sun,  
And spread thick darkness 'neath his highest noon!  
What, though the demons of the air attend  
And all their terrors to these terrors lend,  
Whilst lightnings, blazing in the murky cloud,  
Presage in wrath the bellowing thunders loud;  
When thunders bursting, from the forger hurled,  
In peals terrific shake a startled world;  
Still thou art welcome to the earth most dear,  
Thou brightest, loveliest season of the year.



# CHAPTER XL.



## SCHOOLS FOR THE DEAF AND BLIND.

BY H. L. SWISHER.

There is no surer evidence of advancement in civilization in a state or community than that it has a care for those of its members who are unfortunate. When we remember how those physically or mentally unsound were treated in centuries past, and even today in those social societies where little advancement has been made, we can congratulate ourselves that we live in a more enlightened time and country.

Doubtless more than one person felt pity for those unfortunate persons to whom the whole world of light and shade, the smiling landscape and sparkling stream is worse than unknown, before any active steps were taken to better their condition. In this state it was left for one who knew the hardship of sightless eyes to do something for his fellow-beings who were afflicted in like manner. The history of the founding of this benevolent institution is so closely connected with the history of one man, who first gave it shape and has since devoted more than a quarter of a century of his life to its success, that it will be necessary before going further to give some account of his life.

Professor H. H. Johnson, founder of the West Virginia schools for the deaf and blind, was born near Franklin, in Pendleton county, then in Virginia, February 19, 1846. From infancy he was afflicted with very imperfect vision, and in a few years became totally blind. Having heard of the Staunton school for the blind, he went there at the age of eleven and remained four years. His progress in his



studies was remarkably rapid and his ability was a subject of remark among his teachers and acquaintances. Leaving Staunton, he went to his home at Franklin, where his brother, James Johnson, some years older than himself, was conducting a school. His brother was also blind. After this he attended school at New Market, Virginia, for two years. His teacher while here was Professor Joseph Saliards, a ripe scholar, an able teacher and an author of considerable note. Professor Johnson was accompanied to New Market by a young man named Clark, who read his lessons for him and in turn was assisted by young Johnson in his studies, especially in French, with which his blind friend had early made a familiar acquaintance. Leaving New Market Mr. Johnson again returned to Franklin, where, during the winter of 1865-66, he taught a private school in connection with his brother. Not yet satisfied with his accomplishments in fields of study, in the fall of 1866 he re-entered Staunton school for the blind and remained there one year, taking advanced studies.

The next year we find him teaching at Moorefield, and also the year following he is at his post in the school room at the same place. It was early in the year 1869 that Professor Johnson became imbued with the idea of establishing a school for the blind and so perseveringly did he labor that his idea now has a material representation in the West Virginia schools for the deaf and blind. Governor William E. Stevenson had been recently inaugurated and Professor Johnson opened a correspondence with him in regard to his hope and ambition to found a school for the blind. The governor assured him of his sympathy and support. Mr. Johnson then took it upon himself to make a canvas of the state, stirring up public thought and discussion concerning his enterprise. Unquestionably much good was done and it is doubtful if the bill could have been gotten through the legislature the next spring had it not been for the sympathy and good will aroused by this can-



vass. The legislature convened in Wheeling on January 18, 1870, and it was decided to make an effort to have the school established that year. With the bill already written Professor Johnson set out for Wheeling. He was at this time only twenty-four years old yet he had undertaken a work from which many an older person would have shrunk and which was encompassed by so many difficulties and discouraging circumstances that even a stout heart might well despair of success.

On his way to Wheeling Mr. Johnson fell in with Ex-Governor Francis H. Pierpont at Fairmont and soon endeavored to get him interested in the proposed institution. When asked to present the bill to the legislature he replied that he could not afford to connect his name with an enterprise so sure to fail. Hon. Joseph S. Wheat, the member of house of delegates from Morgan county, when approached in regard to the matter, declared the bill would fail because it ought to fail, the state, as he claimed, not then being able to establish any more public institutions. Not discouraged by these rebuffs, Mr. Johnson persevered and through the kindness of some friends was granted the use of the hall of the house of delegates in which to give an exhibition in connection with his brother, James Johnson, and Miss Susan Ridenour, also blind. This exhibition consisted of music, recitation and class drill. The hall was full of people who had gathered to witness the performance. After the exhibition was over Professor Johnson arose and for an hour he reasoned and pleaded with the law-makers of the state for the establishment of a school for those who were denied the sense of sight. This speech had a wonderful effect, and, when he had closed, people crowded around to congratulate him upon his wonderful effort. Mr. Wheat who the day before had been opposed to the bill and had declared the measure ought to fail, pressed up to him and grasping his hand, said earnestly, "Johnson, I'll vote for your bill if it costs a hun-



dred thousand dollars." After this there was no lack of persons who were willing to put the bill before the house. It was finally done by Hon. John J. Davis, Harrison county's representative.

It must be remembered that all this time the labor was in behalf of a school for the blind. When the bill was put before the legislature no mention was made in it of a school for the deaf. After the bill had passed through all the stages necessary to becoming a law and just when it was at the last possible point where it could be amended, Hon. Monroe Jackson, of Wood county, offered as an amendment that the words, "deaf and dumb and" be inserted before the word blind in every instance in which it occurred in the bill. The amendment was accepted and the bill became a law March 3, 1870, establishing what was first called the West Virginia Institution for the deaf, dumb and blind. The dual character of the school is now more definitely shown by the name which has been changed to the West Virginia Schools for the deaf and the blind."

Some of the provisions of this bill were, first: "That immediately after the passage of this act the governor shall appoint one person from each senatorial district of the state, to constitute, collectively, a body corporate, with powers to rent, purchase and convey real estate, and with all the powers necessary for the establishment of a temporary institution for the education of the deaf and dumb and blind youth of West Virginia, as hereinafter provided, and to be known as the Board of Regents of the West Virginia Institution for the Deaf and Dumb and Blind." Another provision was that "the board of regents of the West Virginia Institution for the deaf and dumb and blind shall meet in Wheeling, at a time to be specified by the governor within a fixed period of three months after the passage of this act, and shall proceed at once to adopt and put in execution the necessary means for the education of the



deaf and dumb and blind youth of West Virginia." The eighth section of the bill reads: "The board of regents in the establishment of the institution herein authorized, shall provide accommodations for not more than forty persons, at first, including officers, assistants, etc. And they shall authorize their principal to notify the principal of the Virginia institution and the superintendent of the Ohio institution for the deaf and dumb and blind, at as early date as practicable, of the time at which the West Virginia institution for the deaf and dumb and blind shall be open and ready to accommodate the indigent and all other deaf and dumb and blind youth from this state, who have been so kindly and so liberally accommodated in their respective institutions; and the board shall at that time furnish the necessary means for the transportation of such indigent youth as may then be in said institutions, to their own institution."

Further on it was provided that "all deaf and dumb and blind youth, residents of the state of West Virginia, between the ages of six and twenty-five years, shall be admitted to pupilage in the institution on application to the principal until the institution is filled."

In section eleven of the bill it is declared that: "In addition to their other duties, the assessors of the state are hereby required to register in a book, to be furnished them by the auditor for the purpose, the names of all deaf and dumb and blind persons in their respective districts, with the degree and cause of their blindness in each case, as far as can be ascertained from the heads of families, or from other persons, whom the assessors may conveniently consult, their ages, the names of their parents or guardians, their postoffice address, and such other circumstances as may constitute useful statistical information, in making the institution herein authorized promptly efficient in ameliorating the condition of the deaf, dumb and blind by education." The last provision of the act ap-



appropriates "the sum of eight thousand dollars, to be paid out by the treasurer of the state, upon the order and warrant of the board of regents of the West Virginia institution for the deaf, dumb and blind; which sum shall be used by said board in meeting the expenses of the establishment of the institution hereby authorized, and in supporting the same from the date of its establishment to the thirtieth day of September, eighteen hundred and seventy-one."

According to the first provision of the act the governor proceeded to appoint the first board. It was composed of the following members:

Hon. Wm G. Brown, president, Kingwood, Preston county; Rev. D. W. Fisher, Wheeling, Ohio county; General D. N. Couch, Concord Church, Mercer county; Rev. T. H. Trainer, Benwood, Marshall county; Rev. R. N. Pool, Clarksburg, Harrison county; Col. G. K. Leonard, Parkersburg, Wood county; Hon. Henry Brannon, Weston, Lewis county; J. D. Baines, Esq., Charleston, Kanawha county; Major J. H. Bristoe, Martinsburg, Berkeley county; Prof. H. H. Johnson, Moorefield, Hardy county; Capt. W. Mann, Falling Spring, Greenbrier county. This board met in Wheeling, April 20, 1870, and proceeded to formulate plans for the school. Towns and cities throughout the state were invited to compete for the location of the institution; the one which would make the best offer was promised the school. Wheeling, Parkersburg and Romney all offered strong inducements. Wheeling proposed to give the property known as the Female College, and so liberal was the offer that it was decided to locate the school there. After the board had adjourned, however, the authorities were hindered from transferring the property to the board by an injunction gotten out by friends of the Female College, who were unwilling to see that school discontinued. The matter was not contested and at the next meeting, which was held at Parkersburg, June 23 of the same year,



the board decided upon Romney as the place where the school should be established. The literary society and citizens of Romney agreed to give the building known as "Romney Classical Institute," together with fifteen acres of land attached. This property was situated just east of the town. Its value was twenty thousand dollars. The acceptance of this offer gave the institution a home, and the only thing yet to be done was the election of a corps of teachers.

The board met again on July 20, 1870, in Romney. H. H. Hollister, A. M., a teacher in the Ohio institution, was elected principal at this meeting. The other teachers and officers chosen to serve at the same time, were Prof. H. H. Johnson, teacher in blind department; Holdridge Chidester and Miss Rosa R. Harris, teachers in deaf department; Henry White, watchman; Mrs. Lucy B. White, matron; and Dr. S. R. Lupton, physician. With this able crew at the helm the institution launched upon its career September 29, 1870. Its success from the beginning was assured. The first year twenty-five deaf mutes and five blind pupils were enrolled. Robert White, secretary of the board of regents, in his report to Governor Stevenson at the close of the first year, says: "The board has to express its entire satisfaction with the present flourishing condition of the institution. The discipline, the progress of the pupils in their studies and their general improvement, deserve the highest commendation and entitle our deaf and dumb and blind institution to the unstinted patronage of the state."

Some excerpts from the report of the principal for the first year may prove interesting. After some introductory remarks concerning the repairs made in the building and auspicious opening of the school, he says: "It is believed to be the first time in the history of similar institutions that the number of applications received before the opening was greater than the building could possibly accom-



modate. At the commencement of the session, or soon thereafter, thirty pupils (twenty-five mutes and five blind) were received. Among these are three (two mutes and one blind) transported according to law from the Virginia institution. The pupils were immediately classified and put under instruction. The teachers whom you appointed have all shown a commendable zeal and faithfulness in the discharge of their duty. Professor Johnson, in the instruction of the blind, has displayed a marked ability which is showing, and will show, good results in this department. Professor Chidester brings to us an experience of fifteen years as private teacher and as instructor in a sister institution. His skill, diligence and enthusiasm are ample proof of the wisdom of the board in his appointment. Miss Harris, in the facility with which she is acquiring the sign language and the peculiar processes of deaf mute instruction, gives promise of great future usefulness. With the assistance of an advanced pupil she also gives musical instruction to the blind. The board were fortunate in securing the services of Mrs. Lucy B. White as matron. She has discharged her duties with kindness towards all the inmates, and with a marked ability and zeal for the interests of the institution. The number of pupils already admitted is fully equal to the capacity of the building; and as it is, we have to dispense with many conveniences which a well regulated institution should have."

The following further quotation from his letter shows how a person may reconcile himself to the absence of conveniences: "When the institution was located at Romney I felt that the lack of a railroad would prove prejudicial to its highest interests. But our location has advantages which are a large compensation for our isolation. It gives us cheaper provision of every kind; it relieves us from all anxiety lest our pupils should wander away and be killed on the railway track, as has happened a score of times in other states, but above all, it gives us a retirement favora-



ble to the advancement of the pupils." Let another quotation, showing the financial condition of the institution, suffice: "From an inspection of the expenditures so far, it will be seen that the appropriation made by the last legislature is not sufficient to meet the expenditures of the establishment and support of the institution until September 30, 1871. Of the eight thousand dollars appropriated nearly one thousand dollars were expended before the organization of the institution could be completed. About three thousand dollars were expended for repairs and furniture. Thus about four thousand dollars were left for the support during a little more than one year--a sum hardly sufficient to pay the salaries and wages of employees and the traveling expenses of the board, leaving no provision for current expenses and clothing of indigent pupils. In view of all these facts I would ask an appropriation of five thousand dollars to meet the deficiency. Besides these amounts, not less than eleven thousand dollars will be required to support the institution during the current years of 1871 and 1872. Therefore I respectfully recommend that you ask our next legislature for forty thousand dollars for the above purposes.

"It is desirable at no distant day to make arrangements for the training of the pupils in some useful trade. The trades most commonly taught are carpentering, printing and shoemaking for the deaf, and broommaking for the blind. Permit me here to acknowledge the great assistance which Colonel Robert White, your secretary, has given me in the duties I have had to perform. The unfortunate children entrusted to our care owe him a debt of gratitude for the interest he has taken in their welfare. Also to acknowledge the skill with which Dr. Lupton has performed his professional duties to the inmates of the institution, and his many suggestions and cordial cooperation to promote the physical wellbeing of the pupils."

Such is the history of the founding of the institution and



a review of its first year's work. This was twenty-seven years ago. Around the old "Classical Institute," as a nucleus, the beautiful and spacious buildings have grown. Two wings, each 70 by 30 feet, were added to the original building in 1871-72. This gave the building a front of 194 feet. The same year thirty-three new pupils were enrolled and many were turned away because of lack of accommodations. Mr. Hollister continued as principal for three years, and under his careful management the school grew from thirty in 1870 to seventy-seven in 1872. In October, 1873, Mr. Hollister resigned to practice medicine.

When Mr. Hollister severed his connection with the school, Dr. S. R. Lupton, who had been serving the institution as physician since its foundation, was elected temporary principal. On the 15th of December, of the same year, the board of regents met and chose Mr. C. H. Hill as principal. Mr. Hill was at that time a teacher in the Maryland school at Frederick city, and being offered additional inducements by that institution, declined the tendered principalship. The board met again on January 5, 1874, and selected Leveus Eddy, Esq., a teacher in the Wisconsin school for the deaf, for principal. Mr. Eddy came immediately and took charge of affairs, but remained only until the next July.

The same month the board elected Major John C. Covell to the principalship, and in the fall of 1874 he began his long and successful career of thirteen years. Previous to this time Major Covell had for some years been principal of the Virginia school at Staunton. The unprecedented success of the school under his management was largely due to his splendid scholarship and remarkable aptness, coupled with wide experience, which he made to serve him in this work. The year preceding the election of Major Covell showed a falling off in the attendance of thirteen, but under his administration the school at once began to grow. Finding that twelve out of the fifty-four counties



in the state had no representatives in the institution, he at once urged upon the board of regents the necessity of making a canvass to discover if there were not in these counties persons who would be glad to avail themselves of the advantages of the school. His recommendation was adopted, and investigation showed that his supposition was founded on fact. In his first report he urged the necessity of introducing gas into the buildings for purposes of light. This was afterwards done. The present supply of pure water is another improvement urged in his report and soon afterwards arranged for.

A new system of classification was introduced into the school in 1875, by which the pupils were arranged in grades similar to the present system. A committee consisting of Messrs. John Johnson, chairman; H. L. Hoover and John Wilson, jr., appointed in 1875 to examine into the condition of the school, gave in a very favorable and flattering report, culminating in the statement that, "in the judgment of the committee it can be said in reference to this institution, from the board of regents and principal down through every grade of office that the right man is in the right place." It was the year following that the first biennial report was published, covering the years 1875 and 1876. Hitherto the reports had been published annually.

It was recommended to the board at their June meeting in 1877 by the principal that they establish the department of visible speech. The recommendation was considered and such a department was created. The things to be taught the deaf mutes in these classes were articulation and lip reading. The position as teacher in this branch of the school was tendered to Miss Susie W. Allen, a distinguished graduate of Professor A. Graham Bell's school in Boston. Miss Allen accepted the position and entered upon her duties on the 20th of November, 1877.

When the institution was ten years old in 1880 the at-



tendance had reached 120. Of these, eighty-seven were deaf mutes and thirty-three were blind. During this year the following distinguished gentlemen, Geo. W. Peterkin, G. W. Finley and C. E. Joyce, who, at the principal's request, attended the annual examination of the institution, reported that: "The classes gave gratifying evidence of proficiency in their studies and of the diligence and faithfulness of their teachers." They further report "the marked efficiency of the teacher of music, Mr. O. W. Schaeffer, and the progress of the pupils under his tuition."

The annual appropriation for the years 1885-89 was twenty-five thousand dollars, which goes to show that more than three times as much was expended on this state charity in these years as was in the year of its organization.

Thirteen years of labor in the school on the part of Major John C. Covell was closed by his death June 4, 1887. Under his guidance the school had increased in attendance from sixty to one hundred and thirty. The benefits and influence of the Institution were made known in every section of the state, largely through his untiring labors and unflagging courage. The following resolution passed by the board of regents five days after his death, will serve to show the esteem in which he was held by that body:

"WHEREAS, We have learned of the death of Major J. C. Covell, the late principal of the West Virginia Schools for the Deaf and the Blind, therefore,

"Resolved, That we greatly deplore his loss to the Institution over which he presided with such universal acceptability; that in his death we recognize the loss of a friend worthy of the fullest confidence and an official of marked ability and adaptation to his duties which he always performed with a faithfulness and efficiency unexcelled."

No eulogy, however, could speak so high in his praise as the eloquent labors of love he performed when alive. Cast-



ing about for a new principal to fill the now vacant place, the board was fortunate enough to fall upon Hon. H. B. Gilkeson, a prominent lawyer of Romney. Any special training for this work that he lacked was amply made up by his broad culture and liberal education. His capacity for business enabled him to conduct the schools with economy and in a manner very satisfactory to the board. Mr. Gilkeson had left a lucrative law practice to assume the principalship and after a year's service he decided to return to his former more lucrative profession.

After the resignation of Mr. Gilkeson the board in their meeting in the summer of 1888 elected as principal Professor C. H. Hill, who was then teaching in the North Carolina Institution at Raleigh. It will be remembered that Mr. Hill was offered the same position fifteen years before but had declined. This time, however, he accepted and entered upon his duties in September, 1888. His long experience in this work before coming to the Institution has enabled him to maintain the high standard established by his predecessors as well as to further advance the work. Under his administration numerous additions have been made to the buildings and many improvements made in other buildings previously erected. He early recommended the purchasing of additional acreage of land to afford a place of recreation for the largely increased number of pupils. The buildings as they stand at present are very handsome and convenient. Two parallel buildings of equal dimensions, each one hundred and ninety-four feet in length, are joined in the middle by a cross building, which gives the whole structure the shape of the letter H. In the rear building, in the central part, is the general dining room on the first floor, school rooms on the second, with the third used as a chapel hall, and stairways in each wing communicate with these apartments so that the boys and girls can enter from opposite directions. The buildings are all of brick and finished in the French style of



architecture. In the ends are extensive dormitories, sitting room and hospitals. The boys enter the north wing and the girls the south. The blind have exclusive use of the front building while the rear is occupied by the deaf. The size of the chapel is 42x64 feet with a pitch of thirteen feet, and the general dining room is 42x59 feet with a ceiling ten feet high. Behind the main building and connected with it by a covered way is another brick structure, 40x80 feet. In the basement of this is the laundry and boiler room. In the upper rooms of the same building are the kitchen, storerooms and bakery. In the rear of the north wing stands another large three story brick building, 30x51 feet, in which the industrial classes are taught. Somewhat further back stands a comfortable two-story, six-roomed brick building used by the servants connected with the schools. The green campus in front is neatly mapped out by smooth walks covered with black shale that wind hither and thither among the trees and flowers and around the plots of fresh green grass. In the midst a pretty fountain jets its silver spray into the air, adding to the already beautiful spot.

The two-fold character of the school is recognized in the name by which it is now officially designated; "The West Virginia Schools for the Deaf and Blind." This title is first used in connection with the Institution, as it is still popularly called, in the biennial report for the two years closing September 30, 1896.

At the last session of the legislature a bill was introduced for the separation of the two schools. The first section of the bill read as follows:

"Be it enacted, That the West Virginia schools for the deaf and the blind, located at Romney, in the county of Hampshire, shall, after the expiration of the present term, that is to say, after the 15th day June, 1897, cease to be a school for the education of deaf and blind youth, and shall thereafter be a school for the education of deaf youth only."



## SCHOOLS FOR THE DEAF AND BLIND. 477

The bill then further provided for the establishment of a separate school for the blind. Professor H. H. Johnson, senior teacher in the blind department, framed the bill and labored for its passage, but it was defeated.

At the last meeting of the board, July 14, 1897, Professor James P. Rucker was elected principal vice Professor C. H. Hill. Mr. Rucker was for several years principal of the graded school at Lewisburg, Greenbrier county. While he is without special training for the work he will assume this fall, his energetic qualities and liberal education bespeak for him a successful administration.

The following tables contain a complete list of principals, teachers and officers connected with the institution from its beginning to the present time, with the dates of entrance to the school:

Principals: Horace H. Hollister, 1870; Dr. S. R. Lupton, 1874; Leveus Eddy, 1875; J. C. Covell, 1875; H. B. Gilkeson, 1887; C. H. Hill, 1888; James T. Rucker, 1897.

Teachers in blind department: H. H. Johnson, 1870; Mrs. Cornelia Wilson, 1874; Miss Maggie Blue, 1875; Oliver W. Schaeffer, 1879; Mrs. S. E. Caruthers, 1880; Mrs. L. W. Campbell, 1886; Mrs. L. W. Ferguson, 1888; Miss Annie Fetzer, 1894.

Teachers in deaf department: Holdridge Chidester, 1870; Miss Rose R. Harris, 1870; Miss Lucy White, 1871; Miss L. M. Kern, 1873; R. G. Ferguson, 1874; O. D. Cooke, 1875; E. L. Chapin, 1875; Miss A. B. Covell, 1877; J. Brooks McGann, 1880; A. D. Hays, 1880; Miss M. H. Keller, 1890; John A. Boland, 1890; Miss Susie Chidester, 1894; J. W. Neel, 1894; A. J. Thompson, 1897.

Teachers in musical department: J. H. Holmes, 1872; Oliver W. Schaeffer, 1877; William Mooney, 1885; Miss N. Lucas, 1885; Richard McGee, 1888; Miss Lena Wright, 1897; Miss Leob, 1897.

Teachers in the department of visible speech and articulation: Miss S. W. Allen, 1877; Miss A. M. Grimm, 1884.



Matrons: Mrs. Lucy B. White, 1870; Miss M. McClelland, 1873.

Physicians: Dr. S. R. Lupton, 1870; Dr. John M. Snyder, 1873; Dr. R. W. Dailey, 1874; Dr. S. R. Lupton, 1876; Dr. R. W. Dailey, 1878.

Watchman: Henry White, 1870.

Governesses: Miss M. Blue, 1873; Mrs. S. E. Caruthers, 1874; Mrs. L. W. Campbell, 1884; Mrs. S. E. Burke.

Foremen of shoe shop: Henry Friddle, 1872; John S. Seeders, 1874.

Foremen of broom shop: J. H. Holmes, 1872; Herbert Estes, 1874; H. C. Jackson, 1878; R. H. Cookus, 1880.

Foremen of tailor shop: A. J. Kreamer, 1873; George Smith, 1876; William W. Smith, 1884; William G. Smith, 1888; Louis Meier, 1890.

Foremen of cabinet shop: H. C. Jackson, 1873; A. D. Hays, 1875; William Bierkamp, 1880; W. C. Bierkamp, 1886.

Foremen of printing office: A. D. Hays, 1875; M. Rehlian, 1888.

Members of board of regents: First board, 1870: Hon. Wm. G. Brown, president; Rev. D. W. Fisher, General D. N. Couch, Rev. T. H. Trainer, Rev. R. N. Pool, Col. G. K. Leonard, Hon. Henry Brannon, J. D. Baines, Esq., Major J. H. Bristoe, Prof. H. H. Johnson, Capt. A. W. Mann, Capt. Robert White, secretary. Second board, 1871-73: Hon. Wm. G. Brown, president; Rev. D. W. Fisher, chairman executive committee; J. D. Baines, Esq., George W. Washington, Esq., J. C. Palmer, Col. Charles T. Beale, Geo. G. Orr, Esq., Col. Robert White, secretary. Third board, 1874-76: Thomas Maslin, president; Dr. George Baird, J. W. Mason, R. B. Kidd, Geo. G. Orr, G. W. Craig, W. S. Laidley, Isaac T. Brady. Col. Robert White, secretary. Fourth board, 1876-1880: M. F. Hullihen, M. D., president; J. W. Mason, W. S. Laidley, S. R. Lupton, M. D., G. W. Craig, John T. Pierce, Alex. Campbell, S. L.



Flournoy, Henry B. Gilkeson, secretary. Fifth board, 1880-84: J. R. S. Hardesty, M. D., president; Col. Geo. W. Thompson, N. D. Baker, M. D., John T. Pierce, Charles L. Payton, G. W. Craig. John N. Holt, H. B. Gilkeson, secretary. Sixth board, 1884-88: John T. Pierce, president; A. L. Pugh, Charles L. Peyton, George Baird, M. D., V. S. Armstrong, William T. Smoot, J. Holt, W. H. McClung, M. D., John R. Donehoo, H. B. Gilkeson, secretary. Seventh board, 1888-1890: John T. Pierce, president; W. H. McClung, George Baird, M. D., J. E. Peck, W. P. Vicars, John R. Donehoo, A. L. Pugh, C. F. Poland, secretary. Eighth board, 1892-1894: John T. Pierce, president; W. S. Wiley, J. E. Peck, D. C. Casto, W. H. McClung, M. D., A. L. Pugh, J. R. Donehoo, J. J. Cornwell, secretary. Ninth board, 1894-1896: W. H. McClung, president; W. S. Wiley, J. E. Peck, D. C. Casto, George H. Johnson, Jesse Fisher, C. W. Brockunier, J. J. Cornwell, secretary. Tenth board, 1897: F. M. Reynolds, president; Dr. W. C. Jamison, Dr. G. A. Aschman, Dr. H. G. Stalnaker, J. W. Shick, C. C. Watts, Benjamin Bassell, Jr., D. A. Pettigrew, S. S. Buzzard, M. S. Cornwell, secretary.

These tables are prepared from the annual and biennial reports of the institution. The year given as the first appearance of a teacher, or officer, is the first for which he is catalogued.

"In a pamphlet history of the West Virginia Schools for the Deaf and Blind, Professor Hill says: "The schools have thus far been most liberally supported by the state.

The appropriation for some years has been twenty-five thousand dollars per annum, for current expenses besides one thousand dollars annually to cover the cost of transportation of indigent pupils. In addition to this the law provides that clothing shall be supplied all needy children, to an amount not exceeding forty dollars a year and charged to the counties from which they come. With competent and skilled teachers, comfortable buildings, a



healthful climate, good medical attendance and the generous support of the state the future of the school is bright with promise, if only the large number within the borders of the commonwealth, who have not availed themselves of its benefits, can be brought under its ameliorating influence."









1. REV. PETER MILLER.  
3. DR. J. M. MILLER.

2. CLYDE P. MILLER.  
4. MRS. ALBERTA C. MILLER.



# CHAPTER XLI.



## PHYSICIANS AND SURGEONS.

BY HU MAXWELL.

A history of Hampshire county would be lacking in an important point without a record of a worthy and intelligent class of citizens whose work is quiet and unobtrusive, but who are indispensable—the physicians. It is to be regretted that the data from which to compile a history of the doctors of the county is so incomplete. It is impossible to do the subject justice, because information concerning many successful and learned men of the medical profession is fragmentary or wholly wanting. A record, often the name only, of twenty-nine physicians of Hampshire is all that can be obtained. There can be no doubt that one-half the doctors have been forgotten. This seems a cruel and undeserved fate; but it is a fact. Who can doubt that Hampshire in the one hundred and forty years of its existence has had at least one hundred practicing physicians? Yet, not one-third of them are now known by name. This is largely due to the fact that no medical society or association has ever been organized in the county. Had such society been in existence during the century or more last passed, a record of its proceedings would contain a history of Hampshire's medical men, and this chapter could be made far more complete than it is. In most counties such associations have been in existence many years, and every member is given a place upon its records. Following will be found sketches of a number of physicians.

B. F. BERKELEY, M. D., was born in August, 1824, and attended the Louisville (Kentucky) medical institute in



1844, and for a number of years practiced his profession in Ohio. He was a surgeon in the union army during the Civil war. He afterwards took up his residence in Romney and continued to practice till his death, which occurred April 15, 1897.

EDWARD BEALL, M. D., was born 1836, and was for a long time a successful practitioner in the eastern part of Hampshire county. He organized a confederate company early in the war, an account of which will be found in another chapter of this volume.

J. F. GARDNER, M. D., was born in Frederick county, Virginia, 1843, and was educated by a Lutheran minister. When eighteen years of age he volunteered in company D, thirty-third regiment of Virginia volunteers, and fought under the flag of the Southern confederacy until the close of the war. He then entered the Bellevue Hospital Medical college, New York, and graduated from that institution in 1879. In June, 1880, he located at Bloomery, in Hampshire county, and eight years later removed to Capon Bridge where he has since practiced his profession. When Dr. Gardner came to Hampshire county his family consisted of a wife and six children; and three children were afterwards born. Mrs. Dr. Gardner, before her marriage, was a Miss Clawser, a descendent of one of the first settlers of the valley of Virginia. Her great grandmother was captured by the Indians, and was taken as far as the Ohio river, an account of which is given in Kercheval's history. She had a testament in her pocket, and she tore off bits of the leaves of the book, and when her captors were not observing her, she scattered these fragments of paper along the trail. Settlers from Virginia pursued the Indians, being guided by the scraps of paper, and overtook them at the Ohio river and recaptured the prisoner.

GEORGE H. THOMAS, M. D., third son of Owen Thomas, a farmer living twelve miles west of Leesburg, was born in Loudoun county, Virginia, and received a free school



education at his home. He was then sent to the Potomac academy, at Alexandria, Virginia, where he prepared himself for entering the university of Virginia, in 1887. He finished the course in medicine at the university of New York where he continued his medical studies and in April, 1891, he received the degree M. D. from that institution. Since then, for the purpose of more perfectly fitting himself for the responsible duties of his profession, he has twice taken post-graduating courses in the New York university, the first in 1892 and again in 1896. He had previously located for the practice of medicine at Springfield, Hampshire county. In July, 1893, he was married to Miss Margaret Washington, fifth daughter of Edward Washington. Their daughter, Margaret, was born July 4, 1894. Dr. Thomas removed from Springfield to Romney in May, 1894, where he has since practiced his profession.

J. J. T. OFFUTT, M. D., was born August 4, 1826, died in 1886. He began his course of reading while clerking in Chamberlain's store, which was in a part of the brick house at Capon Bridge, now owned by A. L. Pugh. The young student there had access to a good library and he made excellent use of it. He afterwards entered the medical college which was then at Winchester, and graduated there. He began the practice of medicine at Capon Bridge, and soon established a reputation for success. For forty years he lived and practiced his profession at Capon Bridge. In early years, when physicians were not so numerous, he rode over a large part of the county. During the war he was a union sympathizer, but never entered active service. Being a quiet citizen, and not disposed to intrude his opinions upon others, he continued in the peaceful practice of his profession during the whole war. He became postmaster at Capon Bridge before the war, and was continued in the office till 1885.

W. T. SHIPE, M. D.—The subject of this sketch was born in 1867, in Clarke county, Virginia, and when seven



years of age removed with his parents to Bunker Hill, Berkeley county, West Virginia, where he spent the early years of his life on his father's farm. He entered the Baltimore medical college and graduated in the spring of 1894. In the fall of that year he commenced practicing his profession at Springfield, Hampshire county. In December of that year he was married to Miss Ella M. Pine of Darkeville, Berkeley county.

REUBEN SAMUEL DAVIS, M. D., son of Reuben Davis, was born November 6, 1834, on New creek, then in Hampshire county, now Mineral. His grandfather, of Welch ancestry, was born April 1761. He married Rebecca Dent, the daughter of Thomas Dent, who resided near Charlotte Hall, St. Mary's county, Maryland. The Dents came from Gainsborough, York county, England. Joseph Davis resided in Fauquier county, Virginia, from 1790 to 1799, and then removed to New creek, Hampshire county, and built a dwelling house within one rod of the county line, at which place he resided till his death, which occurred September 16, 1831. Thomas Dean, grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was born in 1757, and married Jane Gilmore. The ancestry of both came from Dublin, Ireland. He lived on New creek until his death, March 27, 1809. Reuben Davis was born September 30, 1792, in Fauquier county, Virginia, and came to Hampshire with his father in 1799. His great uncle, Colonel George Dent, stood godfather at his baptism, and gave him a set of silver sleeve buttons with his initials, "R. D.," engraved on each, which are now in possession of Dr. Davis, who retains them as a souvenir of the past century. Colonel Dent married Eleanor Dean, daughter of Thomas Dean, April 1, 1813. In the war of 1812 he served as ensign in Captain Cockerell's company at Norfolk, Virginia. He served many years as a magistrate by appointment, and was next to the last one to hold the office of sheriff of Hampshire county, on the priority of his commission, previous to the adoption of the consti-



tution of 1850. He resided at Piedmont from 1860 to his death, November 17, 1868. Dr. Davis enlisted in Captain George F. Sheetz's company at Romney, June 6, 1861. The company was mustered into service about July 20, 1861, as company F, seventh regiment of Virginia cavalry, Colonel Turner Ashby's regiment, and become a part of Ashby's brigade, and was commanded by General Rosser at the close of the war, and was included in General Lee's surrender at Appomattox. Dr. Davis commenced the study of medicine in May, 1856, under Dr. W. H. Dew of West Milford, Harrison county, West Virginia, and continued the study until he volunteered in the confederate army, in June, 1861. He resumed his study in 1865, and commenced practice in 1868. His residence is at Kirby, Hampshire county.

ROBERT NEWMAN, M. D. A sketch of the life of Dr. Newman will be found in this book in the chapter on the literary workers of Hampshire, and in the present chapter only such mention of him as refers especially to his labors as a physician will be given. He occupied a place of honor and confidence in Hampshire county, as well as in the adjacent portions of Maryland, which would be a credit to any professional man. He was an original investigator. His ideas did not follow beaten tracks, but struck boldly into unexplored regions. As elsewhere remarked, if he could have had the advantage of a university education, by which he would have been enabled to concentrate his talents upon unexplored fields rather than waste them in going over ground already traveled by others, he would probably have acquired a national reputation. But the time and place in which his lot was cast were not suited to acquiring knowledge from books. He fought on the frontiers, explored wildernesses beyond the Mississippi, encountered dangers, surmounted obstacles, triumphed over difficulties, and in spite of them all accomplished much as an investigator in the profession of medicine. His book



on the treatment of dropsy, which he published while at Old Town in Maryland, embodied his own original ideas and investigations on the subject. He could claim whatever of merit there was in it; for it was his work, his idea, his experience. It would not be difficult for a well-read physician to compile a book on nearly any branch of his profession, by appropriating the ideas and investigations of others. But Dr. Newman did not do this. He acted upon the injunction:

“Think for thyself. One good idea,  
But known to be thine own,  
Is better than a thousand gleaned  
From fields by others sown.”

Dr. Newman was never a man of vigorous health. He always believed himself predisposed to consumption; but, as often happens, the man with questionable health outlives those who seem to be physically perfect. Dr. Newman had reached the age of fifty when he made Romney his home, removing to that place from Old Town, in 1820. His acquaintance with the people of the South branch dated several years earlier; for he had often been called, professionally, to attend the sick, even as far south as Moorefield. When he took up his residence in Romney he at once entered upon a large practice, and was particularly successful in treating cases in which the seat of the trouble was in the lungs. He was a resident of Romney until his death, which occurred in 1843, in his seventy-seventh year.

Dr. Newman's ideas regarding religion have already been mentioned; but he had a peculiarity which was all the more noticeable because of his scepticism, and which led some to doubt his sincerity in his claims of being unorthodox. Although he might have considered scepticism good enough during life, he evidently believed religion was better when the hour of death came. Whenever he realized that a patient of his could not recover, and that death



was near, he would request Rev. Dr. Foote to pay the patient a ministerial visit. He and Dr. Foote were lifelong friends, and so uniform was his custom of sending the reverend gentleman to administer to the spiritual wants of those about to die, that the neighbors learned to understand what it meant when Dr. Foote would call upon one of Dr. Newman's patients. It meant that the sick person had been given up to die:

Although half a century has passed since Dr. Newman ceased his labors among the people of Hampshire, yet the influence of his life and work has enlarged and increased to this day.

JOSEPH M. MILLER, M. D., of Romney, is of German extraction, both on the side of his mother and father; but the families were in America, probably before the Revolutionary war; at least at a very early date. His father, Rev. Peter Miller, descended from an old established family of Rockingham county, Virginia. The grandfather of the subject of this sketch, Joseph Miller, was born in Rockingham county, and there is no written record of the family further back. Rev. Peter Miller was born in 1828, and was married to Miss Margaret Lutz, of Rockingham county, whose father, George Lutz, was a native of Pennsylvania. Dr. J. M. Miller was born in 1853, in the old home county, Rockingham. When he was five years old his father's ministerial labors called him to Wardensville, in Hardy county, and he there resided many years in the work of the church.

The early life of Dr. Miller was spent at Wardensville where he attended such schools as the district afforded, and during vacations did farm work. The vacation took up the greater part of the year, and as a consequence, he had more opportunity to become acquainted with plows, pitchforks, horses and cattle, than with books. Nevertheless, he had ambitions which looked forward to better things. The drudgery of farm life gives little time for



books, and he embraced the first opportunity of taking up something else. He clerked in the store of M. Coffman at Woodstock, Virginia, during portions of 1873 and 1874. But having made up his mind to pursue one of the learned professions, and having chosen medicine, he looked about for means of acquiring an education fitting him for his work. He entered the graded school at Woodstock, and made excellent progress under the instruction of Professor Lindsay. An opportunity presenting itself, he entered the office of Dr. W. H. Triplett, at Woodstock. Dr. Triplett was a successful physician, and had a large practice. The three years which Dr. Miller spent in the office were of the greatest value to him in fitting him for his future work. So well was he instructed, not only in theory of medicine, but in its practice also, that he opened an office of his own and carried on a successful practice for two years without having attended any medical college. But not being satisfied with anything less than thorough instruction and training in his chosen profession, he entered the College of Physicians and Surgeons at Baltimore, and graduated in the spring of 1877.

Soon after this he located at Rio, on North river, in Hampshire county, and was soon in the enjoyment of a remunerative practice. He remained at that place till 1889, when he removed to Romney and has since lived there. On January 3, 1878, Dr. Miller was married to Miss Alberta C. Coffman, of Hampshire county, daughter of John C. Coffman who was born in Shenandoah county, 1805, and who was married to Miss Mary Thompson, of Hampshire county. Two sons were born to Dr. and Mrs. Miller, John Luther, 1880, who died at the age of five months, and Clyde Peter, born in 1882. Mrs. Miller died October 19, 1895.

SAMUEL R. LUPTON, M. D., was born near Winchester, Virginia, March 21, 1827. His ancestors were Quakers and belonged to that group of persecuted persons who



were imprisoned in Winchester during the Revolutionary war. Many of these were carried thither from Philadelphia, and the accusation against them was that they were friendly with the British and were furnishing information to the enemy. It is certain that this charge, if made against the Quakers as a body, was not well founded, although individual cases no doubt occurred in which persons of that denomination were friendly with the British. The persecution of the Quakers formed one of the unpleasant pages in the history of America during the revolution. Yet, in time of war, and particularly when the enemy was ravaging the land, as was the case when the British occupied Philadelphia, the most careful and just people may do that which at other times they would strongly condemn. Many of the Quakers who were imprisoned at Winchester were no doubt earnest sympathizers with the American cause. From that stock Dr. Lupton descended. Nothing eventful has been recorded of his early life, and while still a very young man he entered the Winchester medical college, and he graduated in June, 1848.

He began the practice of his profession in Pennsylvania, and remained eight years in that state. He then returned to Virginia and commenced practice in Romney. This was in 1856, and he brought with him a recommendation from Dr. H. H. McGuire of Winchester. He was soon in possession of a large practice and retained it till the end of his life, a period of more than twenty years. From the founding of the institution for the deaf and blind in Romney until his death, Dr. Lupton was its physician, with the exception of a brief interval. He was a regent of the institution, and for a brief period was its principal. In the latter part of his life he suffered from heart trouble, and knew that his end was not far off; yet, while in the grasp of death, he never neglected a patient, never let others suffer when he could help them; he would cheerfully answer calls day and night, in rain or sunshine, forgetful of his



own suffering while trying to relieve the suffering of others; and at last he fell dead while in the act of reaching to a shelf for a bottle of medicine for a patient who had called at his office. Dr. Lupton was buried in Indian Mound cemetery, but his grave is unmarked, and the stranger who seeks it is liable to search in vain. Yet he was one who was not dependent upon sculptured marble as a guardian of his fame. He had built a more enduring monument. He had secured the respect, the confidence and the love of the people among whom he labored. Man's most everlasting monuments are not erected in the cities of the dead, but in the hearts of the living.

J. M. SNYDER, M. D., was born at Clear Spring, Missouri, May 23, 1818, and was a son of Jacob and Margaret Snyder, of German origin. He was married September 22, 1841, to Miss Savinia Rizer, a native of Maryland. Their children were Anna M., Kate L., Robert D., Bettie S. and John. Mrs. Snyder having died, Dr. Snyder, on September 2, 1873, was married to Miss Virginia Boyd Kidd, daughter of James and Hester Kidd, in the Presbyterian church at Romney, by Rev. George W. Finley. The death of Dr. Snyder occurred October 19, 1877. He began the study of medicine when he was twenty-one years of age, and graduated from the university of Maryland. He then entered the office of the distinguished Dr. Samuel Smith, at Cumberland, Maryland, and read an extensive course of medicine. From the office of Dr. Smith he went to Romney and practiced medicine with Dr. McClintock, whom he subsequently bought out, practice, house and all. Dr. Snyder enjoyed the reputation of being an excellent surgeon.

EDWARD K. WILSON, M. D., son of James M. and Annie E. Wilson, nee Robinson, was born at Darkeville, Berkeley county, West Virginia. He belongs to a very old family in Virginia. His paternal grandfather, Samuel K. Wilson, was born May 19, 1783, in Virginia, and was the eldest son



of William Wilson. Samuel Wilson was a merchant at Gerardsville, and his son, the father of the subject of this sketch, was a farmer and afterwards a druggist. He is now a resident of Mineral county. Dr. Wilson was educated at North Mountain institute, in Berkeley county, taking the degree of A. M. in 1873. He then studied medicine under Dr. Samuel D. Marshall of Philadelphia, and afterwards graduated at Jefferson medical college, that city, 1877. He spent six years in Moorefield in the practice of his profession, then went to Kansas City, Missouri, where he lived several years, returning thence to Romney, where he has since been engaged in practice.

A complete list of the physicians who have made their homes in Hampshire county from the earliest times till the present cannot now be made out. The few names herein given have been gathered from various sources. The old court records contain the names of a few, but give no information concerning their births, deaths or family history. As far back as 1788 Dr. Unger was spoken of as "a reputable surgeon," in connection with a salaried position as surgeon of the Hampshire militia. Dr. Dyer was one of the early physicians. Dr. McDonald and Dr. Temple spent many years in the county, and both were reputed to be excellent doctors; but like many others, few facts concerning them can now be ascertained. Dr. Washington Williams lived in Romney in 1831. He was a brother of Dr. M. Williams of Moorefield. Dr. McClintock was one of the leading physicians of the county prior to 1842, He left Hampshire that year. Dr. Pratt was here about the same time. Dr. Kendall is well remembered by many people of the county. He died a few years ago at Pleasant Dale, but had not been in active practice for several years prior to his death. Dr. Townsend Clayton died at Springfield about thirty years ago. Dr. John W. Moore was also a resident of Springfield, as was Dr. Reuben Moore. Dr. Lemuel Moore practiced at Frankfort, now in Mineral



county. Dr. Trask was a successful physician residing in Romney, but he subsequently went to Mineral county. Dr. John Taylor died in Romney about ten years ago. Dr. A. B. Hayden was for a long time a successful physician of Hampshire. He was in the county as early as 1838, and in 1874 removed from North river to the state of Texas. Dr. Lyons, a native of New York, was at Pleasant Dale a few years, and moved away. Dr. John Monroe, a great uncle of Colonel Alexander Monroe, lived on North river about the beginning of the present century. He removed to Capon and died there. He was a Baptist preacher as well as doctor, Dr. F. P. Canfield's name is found as one of the successful physicians of Hampshire. It is said that there were two Dr. Snyders in Hampshire, one dying half a century ago.



# CHAPTER XLII.



## BAR OF ROMNEY.

BY HU MAXWELL.

The bar of Hampshire is the oldest in West Virginia. For almost a century and a half advocates have expounded the law in the courts of justice of the county. They have been men of ability, as a rule; and while in years of service they surpass all other bars of the state, in ability and learning they suffer in comparison with none. Attorneys who held their commissions under the crown of England pleaded causes in Hampshire almost a quarter of a century before the Revolutionary war. After the achievement of independence, the practice of law in Romney flourished under Virginia's first constitution for fifty years; then under the second constitution twenty years; and under the third ten years. West Virginia then took the place of the mother state and gave a constitution and a code of laws, following it later with a second. Under all of these the legal profession in Hampshire was recognized as in the front rank. Lawyers who began their work at that bar have risen to fame; and lawyers who have won laurels elsewhere have honored the old county's bar by giving it the benefit of their wisdom and long experience. Although the court is the oldest in the state, it cannot be claimed for it that it has had more litigation than the court of any other county of West Virginia. The people have been peaceful, and comparatively few of them have been brought into court for punishment. Land titles, often a source of long and expensive litigation, have never been much questioned or disturbed in Hampshire, probably

•



because the first settlers were chiefly men of business who took pains to clear the titles to their lands very early in the county's history; by this means being able to bequeath their property to their children, unincumbered and clear of dispute. A person who will examine this county's court records, and compare them with the records of some of the other counties of the state, will be impressed with Hampshire's favorable showing. Suits at law to clear titles to real estate have been few.

The purpose of this chapter is not to give a history of the courts of this county, for that has been done elsewhere in this book, but to present a list of prominent attorneys who have practiced at the Romney bar, in order that future generations may have information concerning an important profession and its members. Extended notice of each lawyer has not been attempted. The biographies of many of them will be found elsewhere in this volume. Four members of the Kercheval family practiced at the Hampshire bar, Samuel, Robert C., Andrew W. and John B. William Naylor was well known in his day, and was a successful advocate early in the present century. Angus W. McDonald, sr., and Angus W. McDonald, jr., were known in the legal profession before they became noted as military men during the civil war. William B. Street and William Perry are names often met with in the court records. Thomas C. Green, as a lawyer, has been an honor to Hampshire. His father, John W. Green, was on the bench of the court of appeals of Virginia in 1822. Thomas C. Green was a son-in-law of Colonel Angus McDonald, and commenced the practice of law in Jefferson county. He was in the confederate army, and while in the field was elected to the Virginia legislature and served two terms. Governor Jacob, of Romney, appointed him a judge of the supreme court of appeals of West Virginia, and he was subsequently twice elected to the same position. William C. Clayton, another lawyer which West



Virginia takes pride in accrediting to Hampshire county, was born in 1831. He was a pupil in Dr. Foote's school at Romney, and was there prepared for the Virginia university which he entered in 1846 and remained three years. He was subsequently principal of Washington academy at Charlestown, Jefferson county. He commenced the practice of law in Romney in 1859, and in 1873 removed to Keyser. He was a member of the West Virginia senate 1875 and 1877. Alfred P. White, Robert White, John B. White and C. S. White were all active and influential members of the bar of the county. Judge James D. Armstrong, both at the bar and on the bench, won the confidence and the esteem of the people, not only of his county, but of the neighboring counties and of West Virginia.

R. W. Varder, Robert N. Harper and Powell Conrad are names well remembered as members of the bar. Alexander Monroe, a man whose ability has attracted attention in both peace and war, was enjoying a lucrative practice in Hampshire before many of the lawyers of today were born. He was born in 1817, and read law with Alfred P. White of Romney, and was admitted to the bar at the age of forty-one. He was a member of the Virginia legislature of 1849; again in 1862 to 1865; a member of the constitutional convention of West Virginia, 1872; a member of the legislature of Hampshire, 1875, and was elected speaker; also in the legislature 1879, 1881, 1882. John J. Jacob, the first democratic governor of West Virginia, was a partner of Colonel Robert White in the practice of law in Romney. A full account of Governor Jacob's public services is given in another chapter. He practiced law in Romney about six years, from 1865 to 1871. George A. Tucker, F. M. Reynolds, William M. Welch, won their way into prominence as members of the Hampshire bar. Robert W. Dailey, born and reared in Romney, early gave evidence that he was destined to achieve success beyond that of a successful practitioner at the bar. The people of this



county were not slow in appreciating his worth, and when the opportunity to recognize his ability in a substantial way presented itself, they did it by electing him judge of the circuit court. Not only did Hampshire, his native county, confer this honor upon him, but he was given a handsome majority by the twelfth judicial circuit, composed of Hampshire, Hardy, Grant, Pendleton and Mineral counties. C. Wood Dailey, brother of Judge Dailey, began his career as a lawyer in Romney, afterwards removing to Keyser, and subsequently to Randolph county.

Samuel Lightfoot Flournoy, now of Charleston, West Virginia, studied his profession in Romney, and began practicing in 1873, when twenty-seven years of age. His life had been a busy one, and having spent part of it in the confederate army when a youth, he did not have an opportunity to acquire the classical education which he was determined to have, until after the war closed. He graduated from Hampden Sydney college with honors, and then took up the study of law. He is given additional mention in this book. Henry B. Gilkeson, by his example, has shown that industry, hard work, and close application to business are the surest and safest roads to success. Having served the people, first as a school teacher, then as county superintendent of Hampshire, he took up the study of law, and has the good fortune to acquire a substantial reputation, not only in his county but in the state at large. Robert W. Monroe, brother of Alexander Monroe began the practice of law in Romney, but he has extended his practice to other fields. He was appointed by President Cleveland Indian agent in Idaho, and removed to that territory. But becoming tired of the place he returned to Romney, and subsequently made his home in Preston county. William B. Cornwell studied law in the West Virginia university, and after practicing his profession a short time, was elected prosecuting attorney of Hampshire. John J. Cornwell, brother of the foregoing, is a





1. JUDGE R. W. DAILEY.

2. J. S. ZIMMERMAN.

3. H. B. GILKESON.

4. WILLIAM B. CORNWELL.

5. JOHN J. CORNWELL.







member of the bar. dividing his time between his profession and editing his newspaper. J. S. Zimmerman, a young man, has made a success at the bar of Hampshire, and A. J. Welton's name, although the last to be mentioned on the roll of resident attorneys, should not be classed as of the least importance.

A number of lawyers of note have practiced at the Romney bar who have never resided in the county, and it is due them and the Hampshire bar that mention be made of them. The list contains names well known throughout the state. James M. Mason, Robert Y. Conrad, Philip Williams, David W. Barton, Charles J. Faulkner, sr., James W. Green, J. Randolph Tucker, William Seymour, Andrew Hunter, J. W. F. Allen, Richard E. Byrd, General Thomas McKaig, L. T. Moore, Richard Parker, Josiah H. Gordon, Holmes Conrad, A. Hunter Boyd, A. R. Pendleton, Joseph Sprigg, Edmund P. Dandridge, Benjamin Dailey, George E. Price, W. R. Alexander.

No place more appropriate than in the history of the Hampshire county bar can be found for the mention of a lawyer of profound learning and national reputation, who was born in Romney about 1830, but who left the county early in life to achieve fame elsewhere. Creed Haymond, son of William Calder Haymond, was a native of this county. While yet young, he removed with his parents to Fairmont, in Marion county, where he resided several years. When gold was discovered in California he was among the first upon the scene. Having cast his lot on the Pacific coast, he took up the study of law, and rose to the head of his profession. He yielded first place to none, even when matched with the best lawyers of the west, such as General Barnes, Deuprey, Delmas and Foote. He was for years attorney for the Southern Pacific railroad. He was president of the commission which codified the laws of California and produced a work seldom equalled and never surpassed. He was attorney for several of California's millionaires, and he drew up the papers for the founding of Stanford university. He died in 1894.



# CHAPTER XLIII.



## LANDSCAPES PAST AND PRESENT.

BY HU MAXWELL.

This chapter, which deals with the physical features of Hampshire, will present a study of the county's hills and valleys, rivers and smaller streams, soils and products, the rocks which appear on the surface, and what is beneath the surface, so far as known, together with a few easily-understood facts of the county's geology and mineralogy.

*Altitudes above the Sea.*—While Hampshire county is hilly or mountainous, it yet has no mountains equalling in height and ruggedness those of some of the counties west, particularly Grant, Pendleton, Pocahontas, Greenbrier, Webster and Randolph. The most elevated point in Hampshire county is 3,100 feet above the sea. The lowest point is the bed of Capon river where it flows across the line from Hampshire into Morgan 510 feet. The county, therefore, has a vertical range of 2,590 feet. Every point in Hampshire lies somewhere between these two extremes. The average elevation is probably not far from 1,200 feet. It is a prominent feature of the mountains of this county that they have few peaks which rise sharply above the surrounding ranges. This is because the mountains of Hampshire county are very old, geologically considered, and peaks which may once have existed have been worn down till they now rise little above the ridges, and appear as broad, rounded domes. In the present chapter the altitudes of the most prominent points in this county will be given. This will include the elevation above the sea of the hills and mountains; of the beds of the rivers at different



points; and of the towns and postoffices. These calculations have been carefully made and are believed to be correct in every particular, as nearly as can be shown by a barometer. This chapter will also give the distances and directions from Romney of all the important points in Hampshire county, and of several places in adjoining counties. These distances have all been calculated from latitude and longitude, and thus are what are known as "air lines." That is, they are the shortest lines between the two points, and take no account of roads, nor of irregularities of the land surface. They are always shorter than any road can be constructed between the two points, because a road is always, in this county, more or less crooked, and therefore longer than an "air line." This difference often amounts to considerable. Sometimes the road is nearly twice as long as the direct line between the two points.

The elevation of some of the mountains and hills of Hampshire are shown in the following list: South branch mountain, one mile east of the head spring of Trout run, 3,100 feet; South branch mountain at the Hampshire-Hardy line, 3,000; High knob, near the head of Big run, 2,900; Capon mountain, two miles south of the Hampshire-Morgan line, 2,900; Short mountain, four miles west of Delray, 2,800; Capon mountain, at the Hampshire-Morgan line, 2,700; High knob, in Mill creek mountain, at the Hampshire-Hardy line, 2,600; Great North mountain, three miles southeast of Lafolletsville, 2,600; Great North mountain, two miles southeast of Capon springs, 2,500; the ridge on which is the common corner of Hampshire, Hardy and Mineral counties, 2,300; the mountain three miles east of Delray, 2,300; the mountain two miles northeast of Sedan, 2,200; Mill creek mountain, across the river opposite Romney, 2,000; Sandy ridge, the highest point of which lies west of the road leading from Forks of Capon to Cold stream, 1,800; the hill south of Romney one-fourth mile, 1,100.



In the following list will be found the altitude of the beds of streams at various points in their courses in Hampshire county: Capon at the Hampshire-Morgan line, 510 feet; North river at its mouth, 580; Little Capon at the Hampshire-Morgan line, 600; the Potomac at the Hampshire-Morgan line, 625; South branch at the mouth of Town run below Romney, 700; Capon, two miles above Cold stream, 700; South branch at Moorefield, 800; Mill creek, two miles above Moorefield junction, 800; Mill creek at Pargatsville, 900; Little Capon, where the road from Higginsville to Frenchburg crosses, 1,000; North river, two miles above Sedan, 1,000; Tearcoat, where the Northwestern pike crosses, 1,025; Capon, at the Hampshire-Hardy line, 1,040; North river at the Hampshire-Hardy line, 1,100; Grassy run at the Hampshire-Hardy line, 1,500.

The list which follows will show the altitude of towns, places and postoffices in Hampshire county: Forks of Capon, 600 feet; Cold Stream, 700; Higginsville, 700; North River Mills, 775; Glebe, 780; Springfield, 800; Moorefield Junction, 800; Capon Bridge, 800; Pargatsville, 900; Romney, 900; Sedan, 980; Yellow Spring, 980; Hanging Rocks, near North river, 1,000; Delray, 1,050; Frenchburg, 1,050; Pleasant Dale, 1,100; Mutton run, 1,100; Bloomery, southeast of the Forks of Capon, 1,100; Adams Mill, 1,150; Mill Brook, 1,200; Lafolletsville, 1,200; Lehew, 1,275; Slanesville, 1,300; Augusta, 1,300; Capon Springs, 1,400; Bloomery, northeast of the Forks of Capon, 2,500.

*Distances from Romney.*—The following list shows the distance in an "air line" from Romney to the several points named; and it also shows the direction of each from Romney. The directions are expressed in the general terms of "east," "southeast," "east of southeast," etc., and are not given in degrees. They are accurate enough for all practical purposes, although not strictly correct in all cases. From Romney to Springfield, north of northeast, 8 miles; to Greenspring run, north of north-



east,  $13\frac{1}{2}$  miles; to Higginsville, northeast, 11 miles; to Slanesville, east of northeast, 13 miles; to Frenchburg, east of southeast, 6 miles; to Augusta, east of southeast, 7 miles; to Pleasant Dale, east of southeast, 10 miles; North River Mills, east,  $13\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Hanging Rock, east of southeast,  $12\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Adams Mill, southeast, 6 miles; Ruckman, southeast,  $7\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Delray, southeast, 13 miles; Mutton Run, southeast, 17 miles; Sedan, southeast,  $12\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Mill Brook, southeast, 15 miles; Yellow Spring, southeast,  $16\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Glebe, south of southwest, 8 miles; Ruckman, southeast,  $7\frac{1}{2}$  miles; the Mineral county line, west, 4 miles; Moorefield junction, southwest, 5 miles; Pargatsville, southwest, 17 miles; Burlington (Mineral county), west 8 miles; Ridgeville, (Mineral county), west, 12 miles; Headsville (Mineral county), northwest,  $6\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Keyser (Mineral county), west of northwest, 13 miles; Old Fields (Hardy county), south of southwest, 15 miles; Hampshire-Hardy line crossing the South branch, south of southwest, 12 miles; Moorefield (Hardy county), south of southwest, 22 miles; Wardensville (Hardy county), south of southeast, 20 miles; common corner of Hampshire and Frederick counties, southeast,  $21\frac{1}{2}$  miles; common corner of Hampshire, Morgan and Frederick counties, east of northeast, 24 miles; the Virginia line, east  $21\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Bloomery, east of northeast,  $21\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Cold Stream, east,  $17\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Capon Bridge, east of southeast,  $17\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Capon Springs, southeast, 19 miles; Lafollets-ville, southeast,  $19\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Lehew, southeast, 19 miles; Winchester (Frederick county), east of southeast, 33 miles; Gerrardstown (Berkeley county), east,  $35\frac{1}{2}$  miles; Darkesville, (Berkeley county), 39 miles; the Virginia state line at the nearest point, east of southeast, 18 miles.

*The Soils of Hampshire.*—The soil of a country is usually understood to be the covering of the solid rock. It is very thin in comparison with the thickness of the subjacent rock, not often more than four or five feet, and fre-



quently less. This is not the place for a chemical discussion of soils; but a few plain facts may be given. What is soil? Of what is it made? In the first place, leaving chemical questions out, soil is simply pulverized rock, mixed with vegetable humus. The rocky ledges underlying a country, become disintegrated near the surface; they decompose; the sand and dust accumulate, washing into the low places, and leaving the high points more or less bare, until a soil of sufficient depth is formed to support vegetation. A soil in which little or no vegetable humus is intermixed, is poor, and it produces little growth. Sand alone, no matter how finely pulverized, is not capable of supporting vegetation, except a few peculiar species or varieties. This is why some of the hillsides of Hampshire are so nearly bare. The soil is deep enough, but is poor. The state of being poor is nothing more than a lack of humus, or decaying vegetation. Those poor hillside soils either never had humus in them, or it has been washed out. A soil tolerable fertile is sometimes made miserably poor by being burned over each year when the leaves fall. The supply of vegetable matter which would have gone to furnish what the soil needed, is thus burned and destroyed; and in course of time that already in the soil is consumed or washed out, and instead of a fertile woodland, there is a blasted, lifeless tract. Examples of this are too often met with in West Virginia, and as often in Hampshire as elsewhere.

Excessive tillage of land exhausts it, because it takes out the humus, and puts nothing back. It does not exhaust the disintegrated rock—the sand, the clay, the dust; but it takes out the vital part, the mold of vegetation. Fertilizers are used to restore the fertility of exhausted land. That process is misleading, in many cases. Too often the fertilizing material is a stimulant rather than a food to the land. It really adds no element of fertility, but, by a chemical process, compels the soil to give up all the



remaining humus; and when the vegetable matter is all gone from the soil, all the fertilizers of that kind in the world would not cause the land to produce a crop. The intelligent farmer does not need be told this. His experience has taught him the truth of it. No land is so completely sterile as that which, through excessive use of fertilizers, has been compelled to part with its vegetable matter. Something cannot be created from nothing. If a soil has no plant food in it, and a fertilizer contains no plant food, the mixing of the two will not produce plant life. The most apt illustration is that of alcohol and the human body. Let the body represent a soil, and alcohol the stimulant. There is no nutritive element in alcohol, yet when taken into the stomach it stimulates the body to greater activity for a while. It simply calls up the reserve force; but after a time the body has no more force in reserve, and no amount of alcohol can stimulate to further action. So, the soil, as long as it has strength in reserve, can be stimulated to activity; but when its reserve strength is exhausted, it cannot be further stimulated. It must have more food before it can do more work.

A crop of clover, of buckwheat, of rye, or any other crop, plowed under, fertilizes land because it adds vegetable matter to the soil. Then if the soil is stubborn about yielding up its fertility, a treatment of the proper fertilizing agent will compel it to do so. Bottom lands along the rivers and creeks are usually more fertile than lands on the hills because rains leach the uplands and wash the decaying leaves and the humus down upon the lowlands. The soil along the river bottoms is often many feet deep, and fertile all the way down. This is because the washings from the hills have been accumulating there for ages faster than the vegetation which annually drew from it could exhaust the supply. It sometimes happens that the surface of a deep soil is exhausted by long cultivation; and that a sub-soil plow, which goes deeper than usual,



turns up a new fertile soil which had lain beyond the reach of plant roots for ages. Occasionally a flood which covers bottom lands leaves a deposit of mud which is full of humus. This enriches the land where it lodges, but the mountain districts from which it was carried were robbed of that much fertility.

.Disintegrated rock of every kind cannot be made fertile by the usual addition of vegetable humus. Certain chemical conditions must be complied with. Limestone generally forms good soil because it contains elements which enter into plants. Strata of rock, as we now see them, were once beds of soil. They hardened and became stone. Sandstone is formed of accumulations of sand; shale is made from beds of clay or mud; limestone was once an aggregation of shells and skeletons of large and small living creatures. When these rocks are broken up, disintegrated and become soils, they return to that state in which they were before they became rock. The limestone becomes shells and bones, but of course pulverized, mixed and changed; sandstone becomes sand again; shale becomes mud and clay as it originally was. This gives a key to the cause of some soils being better than others. A clay bank is not easily fertilized; but a bed of black mud usually possesses elements on which plants can feed. So, if the disintegrating shale was originally sterile clay, it will make a poor soil; but if it was originally a fertile mud, the resulting soil will be good. If the disintegrating sandstone was once a pure quartz sand, the soil will likely be poor; but if it was something better, the soil will be better. The fertility of limestone soil is mainly due to the animal matter in the rock. It should always be borne in mind, however, that the difference of soils is dependent not so much upon their chemical composition as upon the physical arrangement of their particles.

Plants do not feed exclusively upon the soil. As a matter of fact, the principal part of the material which enters



into the construction of the stems and leaves of some plants is derived from the air. It is often said, but is not quite true, that the ash remaining when wood is burned represents the portion derived from the soil, while the invisible portions which escape as smoke and gasses, were derived from the air. Some plants prosper without touching soil. A species of Chinese lily flourishes in a bowl of water with a few small rocks in the bottom. On the other hand there are plants that will wither in a few minutes if taken from the ground. This shows that some plants extract more material from the soil than other. It is a common saying that buckwheat rapidly exhausts land,

Some lands are more affected by drought than others, when both receive the same rainfall. This may be due to the character of the underlying rocks, although usually due to a different cause. If the soil is shallow, and the subjacent rocks lie oblique and on edge, they are liable to carry the water away rapidly by receiving it into their openings and crevices, thus draining the soil. But if the subjacent rocks lie horizontally, water which sinks through the soil is prevented from escaping, and is held as in a tub, and is fed gradually upward through the soil by capillary attraction. This land will remain moist a long time. But the more usual reason that one soil dries more rapidly than another, is that one is loose and the other compact. The compact soil dries first. The smaller the interspaces between the ultimate particles which make up the soil, the more rapidly water rises from the wet subsoil by capillary attraction, and the supply is soon exhausted. The more compact the soil, the smaller the spaces between the particles. In loose ground the interspaces are larger, the water rises slowly or not at all, and the dampness remains longer beneath the surface. In the western countries where the summers are hot and rainless, the farmers irrigate their land, thoroughly soaking it from a neighboring canal. If they shut the water off and leave the land alone,



in a few days it is baked, parched, hard and as dry as a bone. But the farmer does not do this. As soon as the water is turned off, he plows and harrows the land, making the surface as loose as possible. The result is, the immediate top becomes dry, but a few inches below the surface the soil remains moist for weeks. The water cannot escape through the porous surface. The same rule applies everywhere. If two cornfields lie side by side, especially in a dry season, and one is carefully tilled and the surface kept loose, while the other is not, the difference in the crops will show that in one case the moisture in the soil was prevented from escaping and was fed to the corn roots, while in the other case it rose to the surface and was blown away by the wind, leaving the corn to die of thirst.

*The Romney Shale.*--A peculiar rock formation takes its name from Romney, because it reaches its typical development in the vicinity of that town. In the United States Geological survey it is called "Romney Shale." It rests upon the Monterey sandstone (which is seen in Hanging Rocks below Romney), and is next to the lowest formation in the Devonian age in this part of the state. The Romney shale extends through Maryland into Pennsylvania, and in the other direction is found as far as Greenbrier and Pocahontas counties, and is abundant in some portions of Grant county. It probably extends westward beyond the Alleghanies, but is there buried beneath vast beds of more recent rock and has not been seen. The thickness of this shale in Maryland, north of Hampshire, is about seven hundred feet. In Grant county the thickness is about thirteen hundred feet, and in Hampshire it is between these extremes. A description of this remarkable and almost worthless rock will prove of interest to the people of this county, who are already more or less familiar with it. It is popularly called slate, but it is not slate. It bears the same relation to slate that dried



clay bears to a burnt brick. Shale is indurated and partly pressed mud. Slate is burnt and completely pressed shale. If the beds of shale, as we now have them, were heated (from the internal heat of the earth), and, while in a semi-fused condition, were submitted to an enormous pressure and allowed slowly to cool, they would be slate, or schist.

Romney shale is found along the South branch valley, in the valleys of Patterson creek and New creek, in Mineral county, and along the flanks, near the bases, of the neighboring hills and mountains. It is usually black, but sometimes lighter colored, and in places is almost terra cotta. Near the base of the formation the color is darker. The lighter colors are near the top. It breaks and splits easily; and the typical mode of fracture is in long and slender pieces like slate pencils. In Romney it is used for sidewalks, and when newly made these sidewalks have the appearance of masses of broken slate pencils. The rock is easily pulverized, and is quickly ground to a powder so fine that the wind blows it away and the rain washes it off. It has been used in macadamizing roads, but it soon wears out, a covering a foot deep disappearing in a few years. However, when a road passes through a shale formation and the roadbed is cut from the solid rock, it makes an excellent highway, never becoming troublesome on account of mud or dust. The most solid roads in Hampshire are those which pass over strata of shale. The finest exposure of this formation in Hampshire county is at the river bluff, half mile, or less, from Romney, in a northwestern direction. There a perpendicular cliff, in places more than one hundred and fifty feet high, may be seen. The fissile nature of the rocks can be studied to advantage. The face of the precipice is shattered in multiplied millions of fragments, in size ranging from a few pounds to pieces like the smallest needle.

The manner in which these beds of shale were formed,



ages ago, is clearly indicated. A former chapter in this book describes the method of rock building, such as we had in this part of West Virginia. It was there pointed out that all the rocks were formed in the bottom of the sea; the sandstone was made of sand; limestone of shells that settled to the bottom, and shale was made of mud. The chief difference between sandstone and shale is, that the former is made of coarser material—sandstone is consolidated sandbars; shale is hardened mud flats. The Romney shale gives us a glimpse of conditions in this part of the world millions of years ago. The sea was then shallow over an area covering several counties, with Hampshire in the center. The land toward the east, from which the mud was washed by rivers, was low, and the rivers were stagnant or sluggish. Had their currents been rapid they would have carried sand into the sea, and we would have had sandstone instead of shale. The shores were swampy and low. In fact, the whole area under consideration was probably a vast, dismal swamp, with lagoons, swales, channels, currents and counter currents, caused by the ebbing and flowing of the tides. The mud accumulated in these semi-submerged swamps to a depth of a thousand feet or more, and then an elevation of the neighboring land gave currents to the rivers, and sand came pouring in and covered the mud to a depth of more than two thousand feet. This sand now exists as sandstone and overlies the shale in every part of Hampshire where it has not been stripped off by erosion. The deep beds of mud thus buried were pressed and hardened and became shale.

Vegetation was somewhat abundant at that time, as is shown by the carbon in the shale, giving it its black color. In places the rock resembles coal, and persons not acquainted with the geology of the section have attempted to open coal mines in this shale. Of course they never found any coal, except perhaps a thin and stony vein occasionally;



for coal, in paying quantities, does not exist in formations as old as the Romney shale. Had vegetation been as abundant at the beginning of the Devonian as in the middle of the Carboniferous age, it is probable that the area of the Romney shale would have been a field of enormous coal beds. But the vegetation was lacking, and mud flats took the place of peat bogs, and we now have shale instead of coal.

There is no clearly defined line in Hampshire county between the shale and the overlying formation—called the Jennings. The sandstone of the latter lies upon the shale, and occasionally a layer sandstone is included in the shale, or a bed of shale is found among the strata of sandstone. This shows that the change from the mud flats to the sandbars—from the swampy shores to the elevated coast line bordering the ancient sea—was gradual.

There is another paragraph in the history of the rocks which may be read by following the Piney mountain road about a mile from where it leaves the Northwestern pike. Halfway up Town hill, after passing over various grades of sandstone, a ledge of coarse conglomerate is met with. It rests upon and lies beneath finer-grained sandstone. The conglomerate is made up of rounded, water-worn, white quartz pebbles, cemented in a strong mass. The most careless observer will notice the difference between this and the neighboring rocks. Conglomerate is found in all countries of the world, and is not confined to any age of rocks. All have the same general history. They are formed of pebbles worn round in the beds of swift rivers or by the churning of waves on stormy coasts. That ledge on Town hill has its story to tell. The pebbles of which it is composed were probably worn and polished in the headwaters of the rivers which brought the mud to sea to form the Romney shale. But these rivers became sluggish when they reached the low-coasted plain, and could not carry the pebbles to sea, and they there lodged for ages, while the upper portion of the Romney shale and the



superincumbent sandstones were being deposited. Then a change in the elevation of the land increased the strength of the river currents, and the gravel was carried to sea and was cemented into rock as we now see it. Some of the pebbles are an inch in diameter. They are white quartz and originally were derived from veins of that beautiful rock which were formed in early ages of the earth's history. These white pebbles are remnants of mountains long ago ground down and which were scattered and spread over the bottoms of ancient oceans to form rocks for newer continents. The mountains from which the material was derived are believed to have stood east of the present Blue Ridge. Immense areas of very hard rock, supposed to be the remnants and foundations of ancient mountains, are still to be seen in that region.

There is another important series of rocks named from its abundance in this county. It is called the "Hampshire Formation." It lies above the Romney shale and is separated from it by the Jennings Formation more than two thousand feet thick.

*Mill Creek Mountain.*—The student of Hampshire county's geography and geology will be well repaid by careful study of Mill creek mountain and its relations to the South branch of the Potomac. In this chapter Mill creek mountain is understood to include that range which begins in Hardy county north of Old Fields, and extends parallel with the South branch, sometimes on one side of it and sometimes on the other, to the North branch, at the Maryland line, between Green Spring station and South Branch station. Different portions of the mountain have different names in the several localities, but the government charts, made in 1891, from the surveys of 1883, 1884 and 1885, give the general name, Mill creek mountain, to the range. The casual observer might suppose that the range is properly divided into several mountains. That which gives it the appearance of distinct mountains is the



fact that it has been cut through again and again from side to side, and in one instance cut down from summit to base lengthwise for seven miles—split open as it were—by the South branch. It therefore becomes a profitable subject for study. Instances are rare in this state, and rare in any part of the world, in which the relative ages of a mountain and a river can be so clearly seen, and for which the proof is so manifest. The proof is conclusive that the South branch was flowing along nearly its present course before Mill creek mountain had an existence.

The method by which rivers cut through mountains has been discussed somewhat at length in a former chapter of this book. The discussion will not be repeated here. It was formerly held by geologists that where a river has cut a gap through a mountain it first was stopped in its course by the sudden upheaval of the mountain across its channel, and formed a lake by the backwater which rose higher and higher until it found an outlet through the lowest gap in the obstruction, and then burst through with tremendous force, tearing the rocks out and cutting a passage through the mountain to its base, and draining the lake in a short time, perhaps in so short a time that the whole work partook of the nature of an explosion, bursting through the rocks and hurling them before the rushing waters from the pent-up lake. This view of the case is now known to be erroneous. The process was not one of violence. There were no lakes, except in rare cases. Had it been possible for a man to have lived so long, and had he stood at Hanging Rocks below Romney and watched the whole operation of the river cutting its channel through the mountain at that place, he probably would never have witnessed any more violence than can be seen at present. The work is perhaps going on today in the same manner as in past ages. The river was flowing before there was a mountain across its path. The mountain was formed by the upheaval of rocks from below the surface. Vast beds of limestone,



sandstone and shale, which once lay flat, were folded by stupendous pressure, and the folded part rose above the surface as a vast arch. This arch, as it now exists, forms the mountain. It can thus be understood how the gaps were cut through it by the river. The mountain rose out of the earth so slowly that as it appeared above the general surface of the country and across the channel of the river, the stream kept its old channel, cutting and wearing the rocks away as they rose higher and higher.

The most northern gap through this mountain, in Hampshire county, is that made by the North branch, between Greenspring and South branch station. The main line of the Baltimore and Ohio railroad passes through it, along the bank of the North branch. It will be presently shown that, had this mountain been older than the river the mouth of the South branch would be at Greenspring instead of where it is. If the mountain had been there first, the only method by which the river could have gotten through it would have been by backing up, forming a lake, until the water poured over the top of the mountain. Take the case of the lower Hanging Rocks, where the wire bridge used to be, and see what the result would have been, had the South branch attempted to back up before the gap existed, forming a lake till it overflowed the mountain where the gap now is. The general height of the mountain in that vicinity is now from eleven hundred to fourteen hundred feet above sea level. The bed of the South branch at that point is now about seven hundred feet above sea level—a few feet less, perhaps. Thus, the river would impound its waters and form a lake four hundred feet deep before finding escape over the mountain to commence cutting the gap. But, before the waters had risen in that lake to a depth of two hundred and fifty feet it would have flowed through the low gap at the head of Greenspring run and would have emptied itself down the present valley of Greenspring into the North branch, and it would not have cut



the gap at the wire bridge at all. This is conclusive proof that the gap was cut slowly, as the mountain rose out of the earth.

If further proof is wanted, take the case of the upper Hanging Rocks, four miles below Romney, and the same argument will lead to a similar conclusion. The South branch, for fifteen miles above Hanging Rocks, flows along the eastern base of Mill creek mountain, and at Hanging Rocks breaks through to the west side. If the mountain had been there first it would have been necessary that a lake form from the pent-up water till it overflowed the mountain at that place. The mountain is twelve hundred feet above sea level, or five hundred above the bed of the river. A lake must have formed five hundred feet deep to overflow the mountain toward the west. But, before the water had risen three hundred feet it would have passed out through the low gap, on the east side of the mountain, between the upper and lower Hanging Rocks. That gap is less than eight hundred feet above sea level, and the river would have made its channel there and would not have cut through the mountain, which is more than two hundred feet higher. Water always flows through the lowest gaps. This proof is conclusive that, had the South branch, when it first started on its course to the sea, found Mill creek mountain across its path at upper Hanging Rock, it would have continued down the east side of the mountain, and the gaps at both the upper and lower rocks would not have been made.

Mill creek gap, or Mechanicsburg gap, is another case to the point. This passage through the mountain was not made by the South branch, but by Mill creek, just before it empties into the river. Mill creek is a comparatively small stream, and the amount of labor it has performed, in sawing a passage for its water through that lofty mountain, is almost incredible. A river like the South branch may be expected to do great things; but so much work



seems out of the question with so small a stream as Mill creek. Yet, by working steadily through countless ages it has sawed a gap through the mountain from top to bottom. This stream is also older than the mountain. Its entire course, except the lower two miles, lies west of that range. It drains a basin of about sixty square miles, and empties through a pass cut to a depth of not less than twelve hundred feet. It is a much deeper gap than any of the three made by the South branch and the North branch below that place. The mountain on both sides of the pass is nearly two thousand feet above sea level, and the bottom of the pass is less than eight hundred, showing a perpendicular cut of twelve hundred feet. Had it been necessary for Mill creek to form a lake until it overflowed the mountain, before the cutting process began, the lake would have been more than a thousand feet deep. If no water had been permitted to escape, except by evaporation, the rain and snow of a thousand years would not have sufficed to accumulate water to that height. It would have been impossible for a lake to form at that place to a depth of a thousand feet; because before it had reached one-third of that depth it would have found two passages for escape, one through the low gap above Pargatsville into the South branch near Old Fields, and the other through the low gap toward the north, at the head of Dumpling run, a small stream which empties into the South branch about five miles below Romney, near the residence of Franklin Herriott. The divide between Dumpling run and the water of Mill creek is only nine hundred and seventy feet above the sea, and the divide between the water of Mill creek and Mud lick, near the Hardy county line, is eleven hundred feet above sea level. The mountain through which Mill creek made its outlet is two thousand feet; so it can be seen that the water, if sufficiently accumulated, would have passed through either gap long before it would have overflowed the mountain. Where rivers once fix their courses,



there they usually keep them, not suffering themselves to be turned aside by mountains thrust across their paths.

The cases already cited are those in which streams have cut across mountains, making a way through from one side to the other: Mill creek gap, the passes at the upper and the lower Hanging Rocks, and that between Green spring and South branch station. A remarkable and peculiar case of mountain cutting remains to be described. It is the Trough. There the river did not cut across the mountain, from one side to the other, but made a passage through it from end to end. It may be compared to a circular saw, cutting a log lengthwise. The narrow, trough-like gap made by the river is about seven miles long, partly in Hardy county and partly in Hampshire. The process by which the passage was made, was without doubt similar to that already described in the excavation of the other passes through the same range. The river was flowing upon its course before there was a mountain. When the folding rocks began to rise from the earth, the axis, or anticline, of the fold was directly beneath, and parallel with the river which began the work by cutting a trough along the backbone of the embryonic mountain. As the elevation of the range became greater, the river cut deeper, until at the present day the gorge is hundreds of feet deep, and the South branch flows in a narrow channel at the bottom, with nearly perpendicular walls of rock on either side.

It seems almost superfluous to examine again for proof that if the mountain had been their first, the river would have sought and found a channel very different from the one it now follows. It is out of the question that a stream would flow over a mountain, along its summit lengthwise when it could have found an outlet hundreds of feet lower on either side. Had the South branch, when it first started out upon its course, found itself confronted by the end of Mill creek mountain, below Old Fields, it would have



formed a lake, until the empounded waters escaped through the lowest gap. That gap would probably have been found near Pargatsville, although the gap on the east side of the river, through which the road from Romney to Moorefield passes, is on nearly the same level. Both gaps are about eleven hundred feet above the sea, or three hundred above the bed of the river at Moorefield. Had a lake been formed there, it would have found drainage down Mill creek before it attained a depth above three hundred feet. The mountain through which the Trough extends was split from end to end. Half the mountain is now east of the river, half west. But the larger half (if an expression so unmathematical may be allowed,) is west of the Trough. At least, it is the higher portion. It rises above the bed of the river to a height of nineteen hundred feet, culminating in High Knob, on the Hampshire-Hardy line. The portion to the east of the river rises nine hundred feet above the bed of the stream. There the two portions of the mountain stand facing each other, with a yawning chasm between them. The appearance is, that some terrific convulsion of nature had burst the mountain from end to end, and that the river, finding a channel thus ready made, adopted it. But convulsions of nature, especially in that region, have never burst mountains in such a way. The chasm was made by flowing water, through ages unnumbered; yet, the evidence does not contradict the theory that the work may have been facilitated by the rupture of the top of the strata under the immense strain as they were folded and thrust upward.

Without dwelling more at length on this subject, the conclusion may be thus presented: When the South branch first commenced flowing, near the close of the Carboniferous age, if it had found Mill creek mountain in its path at the south end of the Trough, the course of the river would have been very different from what it is now. It would have been as follows: Passing through Old Fields



it would have made a channel through the low gap near Pargatsville, thence down Mill creek valley, through the gap at the head of Dumpling run, down that brook, following the present course of the river from upper to lower Hanging Rocks, thence through the low gap above Springfield, and down Green spring run to the North branch of the Potomac. The fact that the river did not take that course is proof that it already had its course before the mountain came into existence, and the mountain could not deflect or obstruct it.

There is no doubt that the whole face of the country has been much worn down since the upheaval of Mill creek mountain, and the topography was different in early times from what it is now. The divides near Pargatsville, at the head of Dumpling run, and at the head of Greenspring run, were probably not so low as now; but the mountain was also higher once than it is now, and the logic of the argument is not changed.

*The Romney Terrace.*—The village of Romney stands on a river terrace, the average of which is about one hundred and fifty feet above the South branch. It was known as Pearsall's Flat before the town had an existence probably because a man of that name lived there at a very early time. Pearsall's fort, which was built under the personal supervision of Washington, did not stand on the terrace where Romney stands, but on a smaller and lower terrace one half mile further south, nearly opposite the present bridge across the South branch. These two terraces demand more than a passing mention when considered from the standpoint of geography and geology. The upper one, where the town stands, is the older of the two; that is, it was made first. They were both carved by the South branch. Each was in its turn a portion of the bed of that river. This may seem unreasonable, if considered in relation with the present land features; but geology takes into account ages almost unnumbered, and in that



immense time great results are accomplished. River terraces, far above the present channels of the streams, are found in many parts of the world, and are studied with interest and profit. They give us hints of former landscapes. The gravel and bowlders, now buried under soil, tell us what manner of rocks were brought down by the ancient floods, and whether they were different then from those now carried down by the same streams.

There was a time when the valley which now lies between Romney and the mountain on the other side of the river had not been scooped out. A plain level with Indian Mound cemetery then extended to the mountain west of the South branch—the bottom of that valley being about one hundred and seventy-five feet above the level of the present valley. It was no doubt a wide and beautiful plain but the evidence which remains is not sufficient to fix its exact boundaries or dimensions; nor to justify a conclusion as to its vegetable or animal life, except within certain wide limits. The ancient floor of that whole valley has been worn down and washed away, except one little fragment. This fragment is the terrace now occupied by Romney. The river has cut far below the ancient level; but the fragment of the old bottom remains to show where the river once flowed.

What is the evidence of this? The position, slope and general appearance of the terrace suggest its origin; but the direct and positive proof that the river once flowed there, is found in the beds of rounded bowlders covering the whole terrace. These bowlders are exactly like those found in the present bed of the river. Their rounded and polished surfaces show that they were rolled a long distance. They are typical water-worn bowlders, and cannot have any other origin. They rest upon the solid bedrock, and they are covered with several feet of soil. The solid rock was first cut out by the river. Next the bowlders accumulated. Then the river cut a deeper



channel and left the beds of boulders to be covered by soil. Any person who will follow the edge of the terrace, beginning at the ravine south of the cemetery, and passing northward for a mile, will find beds and layers of river boulders exposed in many places, usually where the soil has been removed or cut through by small ravines and gullies. Near the top of the grade where the Northwestern pike ascends the hill at the cemetery, the layer of boulders is exposed, resting upon the shale.

On the south side of the ravine at the same point, and all the way to its head, where it has cut back in the terrace, the boulders are exposed to view. The covering of soil at that place is thin. A person would not need dig deep, anywhere in that vicinity, to find river boulders and gravel. In many parts of Romney wells and cisterns have been dug through beds of boulders. In one place a well passed nearly fifty feet through soil, gravel and boulders before the bedrock was reached. From the cemetery northward, along the bluff for a mile, boulders are found in layers between the soil and bed rock. In many places they have rolled down and have covered the face of the bluff from top to bottom. There are a few places, however, where boulders are not found in large quantities; and some of the wells and cisterns in Romney reached bedrock without encountering many. This exception to the rule is not difficult of explanation. At the present day the river deposits gravel and boulders more bountifully in some portions of the bottom-lands than in others. It did likewise in ancient time.

The Romney terrace is not horizontal. It slopes from its highest part, near the cemetery, northward about one mile, reaching a much lower level. It seems to have originally been a series of terraces, one above the other, descending like steps in the direction of the flow of the river. But the erosion which has taken place, and the cross-cutting by ravines and gullies, have obliterated the dividing



lines between the different planes, if such ever existed, and at present the whole terrace, from north to south, has a general and uniform slope, much cut by gullies and ravines, but still appearing from a distance as if it were one unbroken, oblique plane. The probable explanation of the obliqueness of the terrace—its slope toward the north—is that the higher portion, where Romney stands, is oldest. The river having cut out that part—a platform in the side of the mountain—sank to a lower level, leaving the platform dry, and cutting another a little further down stream and a little lower; thus continuing one after another until the whole series was done. Since then the South branch has continued to lower its bed, cutting deeper and deeper into the bedrock, until it is found today almost two hundred feet below where it flowed when it cut the highest part of the Romney terrace.

An examination of the bowlders which cover the terrace shows that they were, in most cases, brought from a great distance. They were all carried to their present resting place by the South branch; and a comparison with the formations up the river warrants the conclusion that many of the bowlders came from the present limits of Pendleton county. The swift current of the river transported them, rolling them along the bottom until they found lodgment where they are today.

How long ago? The question cannot be answered. The time has been sufficient for the river to cut down through bedrock from the level of the cemetery to the present river-bed, and to widen the valley from hill to hill. The stream is probably still cutting deeper, and is certainly widening the valley. The evidence of this is open to every one who will inspect the almost perpendicular bluff north of the cemetery, where the river is undermining the terrace, and where the cliff of shale is constantly crumbling down. The stream is eating its way across the terrace. It is cutting away the base, and the top falls down. By that process



the valley is being widened. If the South branch continues to encroach upon the crumbling cliff, the time will come when the whole terrace on which Romney stands will be undermined and washed away. The work is rapid. The shale which forms the bluff is soft, and offers comparatively little resistance. That is, it perhaps is carried away twenty times as rapidly as would be possible with the sandstone and chert-lentel of the Hanging Rocks, four miles below. As the cliff crumbles down, now and then a boulder is loosened from the gravelly subsoil on the brow of the precipice and falls to the bed of the river, nearly two hundred feet below. One cycle of that boulder's history closes. It was originally torn from its native ledge, perhaps in Pendleton. It was then an angular rock. In the course of a few centuries it was rolled by the river, had its corners rounded, and found lodgment in the old channel of Romney terrace. There it was covered with soil; forests grew above it; ages passed; the river cut a deeper channel, undermined it, and it fell, to be rolled again, onward toward the Atlantic.

There are many fragments of river terraces along the South branch in more or less advanced stages of ruin. Some have almost disappeared; others are being undermined and will ultimately be washed away. Without doubt many that formerly existed have been entirely destroyed by the ever-encroaching and never-resting river. It is a work of stupendous destruction. Miles of level uplands have been carried away. It has not been done by violent convulsions of nature, but quietly, ceaselessly, resistlessly, just as the present Romney terrace is being destroyed and obliterated by the river, which seems eternal when compared with the crumbling rocks and mountains which it has carried away.

To the east of the road leading from the bridge to Romney lies a smaller river terrace, about one-half as high as the cemetery. This is more clearly defined and is more



nearly level than the larger one. It is not so old as the upper terrace, having been formed at a later period in the river's history.

*The Levels.*—In the northeastern part of Hampshire county is a region of fifteen or more square miles known as the Levels. It is a plateau, bounded on the north by the Potomac, on the east by Little Capon, on the west by the South branch, and on the south by the gradually rising ridges which skirt Jersey mountain. The average elevation of the Levels is about one thousand feet above the sea, a little more in places, and in others a little less. Viewed from the standpoint of geology and geography, the district appears to be an old base-level of erosion. That is, it was once worn down until it was little higher than the beds of the three rivers which then, as now, washed its three sides. It was then the bottom lands, with some slight irregularities, lying in the quadrilateral formed by the three rivers and the higher region of Jersey mountain. Long-continued rest at one altitude and never-ceasing erosion had worn down all the irregularities and made the district level. Without doubt the chief cause for the uniform surface over the area was the soft rock formation which underlies it. The rock is red shale, and it has comparatively little power to resist the action of the elements, rain, frost and wind; and consequently all wore down at a uniform rate and reached the same plane; while the harder rocks of the mountains beyond its borders resisted more successfully the wear and tear, and remained at greater altitudes, with more irregular outlines.

After the Levels had worn down nearly or quite to the plane of the rivers, there was an elevation of the land. The whole region rose together and became much higher than it was. The beds of the rivers of course rose with the land. But they continued to cut deeper, and have now reached a depth nearly or quite five hundred feet below the plateau. The bluff from the border of this upland



plain, down to the present channels of the three rivers is, in many places, very steep, and in a few places quite precipitous. Since the elevation took place, the erosive forces have been busy with the plateau. It has been cut with ravines all round the borders where the rainfall on the plateau flows over the brink of the bordering bluff to reach the rivers below. These ravines are deeper and steeper where they descend the bluff; gradually becoming shallower and wider as they are followed toward their sources near the center of the upland plain. The result is, the Levels have the general appearance of a rolling prairie, the water courses being wide, shallow troughs, and the intervening ridges low, with graceful outlines and regular curves. One may here observe the first stages in the process by which plateaus are gradually cut to pieces and destroyed by flowing water. The work has but lately begun, when compared with the much more ancient results of erosion in the county. Future ages will see the Levels very different from what they are now. The ravines which have already cut deep into the bordering bluffs, will, as the ages glide away, cut deeper and work their way further back toward the center of the plateau, until the whole region will become a network of deep canons and steep hills, and ultimately, but very gradually, the face of the country will change and will wear away, becoming a hilly district instead of a nearly level upland.

The result will be brought about by the irresistible but inconceivably slow process which, in the unmeasured past, have chiseled continents, worn away mountains, widened valleys, and changed again and again the face of the whole world. No man knows how long will be the time required to cut away that five-hundred foot plateau and bring it down to the level of the present bed of the Potomac. The best geologist will not risk an estimate in years. But that the ages to come will be sufficiently long to accomplish that result admits of no doubt. The past eras have been long



enough to accomplish greater results in the same place; for the unerring and indubitable records of geology, written in the rocks, soils and sands about us, show that from the top of that same plateau, the Levels, there have already been stripped no less than seven thousand feet of rock, which once were piled stratum on stratum, and if now replaced would reach to the clouds. That stupendous work of destruction has been accomplished since the close of the Carboniferous age, one of the recent eras of geology.

*Why Hampshire Has No Coal.*—All theories and the deductions from all experience teach that Hampshire county has no coal in commercial quantities. For a century, from time to time, explorations have been made, and in some instances money has been spent in digging, and always with the result that prospects fail to materialize. To the observer who is guided solely by local appearances, there are places which promise to yield coal; but a knowledge of the conditions under which coal is always found, and outside of which conditions it is never found, makes it plain that this valuable product of the earth is not to be expected in Hampshire county. A brief explanation of what these conditions are will be given, after stating that coal is to be looked for only in rocks of the Carboniferous age. It is not found in paying quantities in older formations; and good coal is seldom or never found in newer formations.

Geologists segregate the rocks on the earth into great groups, called ages, the rocks of each age having something in common—usually fossils—to distinguish them. The oldest rocks lie deepest, the next oldest on top of them, thus ascending, layer on layer, until the highest and newest are reached. The clastic rocks—those in layers and which can be taken to pieces without breaking them—begin with the Algonkian age, the oldest. On these lie the rocks of the Cambrian age, next to the oldest. Third comes the Silurian age; then the Devonian age; and next is



the Carboniferous age. There are later ages, but none of them ever had any representative rocks in this part of West Virginia, and it is not necessary to consider them. the oldest two ages—the Algonkian and Cambrian—are buried so deeply in this part of West Virginia that they have never been seen. Therefore, the only ages now represented in Hampshire are the Silurian and the Devonian. The Carboniferous rocks once were represented here. The rocks of each of these ages have a great thickness. It cannot be stated exactly how thick they are in Hampshire. They vary in thickness in different parts of the country. But partial measurements and estimates based on measurements elsewhere, indicate that the rocks of the Silurian age are thirty-five hundred feet thick, underlying Hampshire. More complete measurements show that the rocks of the Devonian age, resting upon the Silurian, are no less than sixty-six hundred feet thick.

If this is not plain already, it may be further explained that the rocks were formed on the sea bottom, layer upon layer, spread out flat. When these layers were piled up until their aggregate was thirty-five hundred feet thick, that completed the Silurian age. Then other rocks, layer on layer, were deposited on top of the Silurian rocks, and these newer strata reached a thickness of sixty-six hundred feet. That closed the Devonian age. But in all the rocks thus far formed there was no coal. Then came the Carboniferous age. Layers of rocks, aggregating thousands of feet in thickness, were deposited on top of the Devonian. At intervals, and in certain localities, beds of coal were formed among the layers of the Carboniferous rocks. The material of which the coal was formed was always deposited on top, and then was covered by a new stratum of rock. It is believed that the positions and the sequence of formation of the rocks are now sufficiently plain to render easily understood the reason why Hampshire has no coal. It is simply because there are no rocks of the Carbonifer-

•



ous age in the county. The formations all belong to the Silurian and Devonian ages, and they have no coal. They never had any and never will have any. In the first part of this book is a chapter dealing with West Virginia's geology, and the reader who cares to do so, may refer to that for additional facts and conclusions.

Did Hampshire ever have coal? There is no positive evidence that it ever had any, but the probability is that it once had as much coal as the counties lying west. The reason why it now has none is because the rocks of the Carboniferous age, which once rested upon the Devonian, and if now restored would extend across the county far above the tops of the present mountains, have all been stripped off and washed away. They once formed the surface of the ground here; but the vast number of years since then has been sufficient to wear away the last pebble of the once enormous strata. The veins of coal which probably were sandwiched in among the rocks, have all been ground to pieces, broken up and washed into the Atlantic ocean. The South branch, Capon, North river, and all the tributary streams were the agents by which this pulverized rock was carried away. These rivers have been at work for millions of years carrying back to the sea the sand and pebbles worn and broken from the mountains of Hampshire. They are at work now the same as then. They are the mills of the gods; they grind slowly, but they grind exceeding fine.

The work of denudation which has been done, even in the small space of Hampshire county, appalls the imagination. It seems impossible. Yet our reason compels us to believe it. Climb to the summit of some lofty eminence, as the writer of this has done—that conspicuous dome six miles southeast of Romney, rising with grandeur twenty-four hundred feet, fertile and cultivated to the very top. From that lofty watch-tower, on a clear day, read the open book of geology and it will teach a useful lesson. The



whole county lies below, and the eye can reach the rolling hills and sequestered valleys of four states. Far off toward the west stretch the Alleghanies, which seem eternal; farther away in the east the regular and unbroken summit of the Blue Ridge meets the sky which bends above the valley of Virginia. Toward the north the mountains of Maryland and Pennsylvania are crowded together in beautiful confusion. In the south, mountains are piled on mountains as far as the eye can reach. But it is not the study of distant objects which now claims attention, but of the landscape near at hand, all cut and scarred, furrowed and trenched, until the original form of the land can scarcely be restored, even in fancy. Yet there was a time when not one of those valleys had an existence; not one of those rocks, hills or cliffs had ever seen the light of day. Every object on which the eye now rests was buried thousands of feet beneath the vast beds of the Carboniferous rocks which then rested upon them. The only feature of that ancient land which would now seem familiar, if we could see it, were the rivers. They were flowing then. They were cutting channels and valleys in the Carboniferous formations. They were carrying the spoil to the sea. The sand was being worn from the surface of the ground, and age after age the surface of the country changed. The streams cut deeper; the valleys widened; the hills became rounded in form. The merciless hand of erosion was laid heavily upon the land. The larger rivers finally cut entirely through the Carboniferous rocks and reached the upper layers of the Devonian. Then all the streams cut through the Carboniferous formations and the intervening hills were worn down and washed out to sea as sand, and at length the last vestige of Carboniferous rock had been stripped off and was gone. Hampshire's coal went too. The Carboniferous rocks were worn further and further back toward the Alleghanies, until today the edges of those vast strata may be seen sticking out of the side of that



range, reminding one of a remnant of ice adhering to the bank after that which once crossed the entire stream has been broken up and washed away.

The work of erosion and denudation is going on now as rapidly as ever. The Carboniferous formations are gone; the Devonian rocks are going. The vastness of the work of destruction may be viewed from the summit of the mountain. On every side, in every direction, lie valleys, ravines and gorges. Each of them is the trench cut by some stream. The South branch, which lies in full view from one end of the county to the other, has cut entirely through the sixty-six hundred feet of Devonian strata, and is now attacking the upper layer of the subjacent Silurian. Beyond Mill creek mountain the wide, irregular valleys of Mill creek and Patterson creek show the work of erosion there. The rounding hills and intervening vales between the Mill creek mountain and Knobby, ten miles further west, are witnesses to the work of destruction, the grinding down of all the sharp angles of the hills, the scooping out of the valleys, the havoc of frost and rain, of flood and wind, throughout the unnumbered centuries of the past. It is the same in every direction. Trout run, a mere brook, with its source near the Hardy county line, lies in full view from head to mouth. It flows as straight as an arrow from its source, northward several miles, between two mountains, one of which is the highest in Hampshire county, thirty-one hundred feet. Then it turns to the west and reaches the South branch. That small stream has scooped out a ravine more than one thousand feet deep, several miles long, and two miles wide across the top, from summit to summit of the mountains between which it flows. This ravine lies entirely in Devonian rocks; but before the brook began the work which is now visible, it first cut through and carried away the thousands of feet of Carboniferous rocks which lay above the Devonian. The same may be said of the other ravines and valleys to the east and





DAVID H. HEFLEBOWER.



ANDREW WODROW KERCHEVAL.







south, and of Grassy Lick and Tearcoat in particular. Fully one-half, perhaps much more than one-half, of the Devonian rocks which once covered Hampshire has already been stripped off. The time will come when these rocks will all disappear, as has been the case with the Carboniferous rocks which once rested upon them. Then the forces of erosion will commence upon the Silurian formations, and when the Silurian has been stripped off, the same forces will attack the still lower Cambrian; then the underlying Algonkian; and finally, when that shall have shared the same fate, the attack will be made upon the lowest of all, the Archæan rocks, which have no bottom that has ever been reached, but are supposed to extend so deeply that their lower portions rest upon the fused or plastic interior of the earth.

The belief is common among some people, in Hampshire as elsewhere, that coal may be found "by going deep enough." This is a false doctrine. In some parts of the world coal is reached by deep shafts, but that is because the Carboniferous rocks lie beneath the surface. In Hampshire the Carboniferous rocks and their coal veins, if they still existed, would be found overhead, somewhere near the present clouds. It is, therefore, plain that the deeper into the earth one goes in Hampshire the further he is from coal. He is digging away from it rather than toward it.

The statement has been made, and no doubt truthfully, that coal has actually been found in Hampshire county. In the first part of this article it will be remembered that the writer always qualified his assertion that no coal exists in rocks older than the Carboniferous, by saying that it does not exist in "commercial quantities," or "paying quantities." Why this qualifying term was used will now be explained. Small and worthless seams and streaks of coal are frequently found in rocks older than the Carboniferous; and it is not uncommon to find beds of what is called "carbonaceous shale," which occasionally will burn



in an imperfect manner. But all efforts to develop such deposits and make them valuable, result in failure, because they are either too limited in extent or too poor in quality. Coal, as is well known, is formed of vegetation. Vast quantities were required to make thick and good veins. The climate and other conditions of the earth were not suited to luxuriant vegetation until the Carboniferous age. When that age came, coal was formed, usually in vast swamps near the sea level, where the accumulation of trees, leaves and plants of many kinds formed beds of great thickness. But before that time there had been comparatively little vegetation, and there could be only thin seams of coal. Carbonaceous shale was made of a mixture of mud and accumulated vegetation. If there was only a small amount of vegetable matter present, the shale is probably black in color, but with little other resemblance to coal. If vegetable matter was more abundant, the shale may now contain enough of it to burn imperfectly. But, in any case, these deposits are nearly or quite valueless. They excite but never satisfy the hopes of the prospector.

If a capping of Carboniferous rocks should be found on some mountain of Hampshire, there might be a vein of coal discovered in it. But it is unlikely that such a capping will be found, and if found it will be exceedingly small. It would be only a limited patch of such rock not yet entirely worn away; and the places to look for such are on the tops of the highest mountains. But the writer has made a tolerably thorough examination of the mountains of the county, and has been unable to discover one pebble that can be assigned to the Carboniferous age. The strata in places are much folded and broken, and the intelligent observer will examine the troughs of protected synclines as well as the tops of anticlines for remnants of coal-bearing rocks. But the probability is that the search will be forever in vain in the future as it has been in vain in the past.



Lest there be a misapprehension, it is proper to state that the presence of rocks of the Carboniferous age is by no means a proof of the presence of coal. There are places where these rocks lie undisturbed, and yet they may be bored through from top to bottom without encountering veins of coal worth working. Coal was not formed everywhere over the earth's surface during the Carboniferous age. Some portions were too deep under water; in others perhaps the conditions were not favorable to the growth of rank vegetation. In most cases the important beds of coal are believed to have been formed on low coastal plains, similar to the Dismal swamp in Virginia. Deep water and high and dry land were not favorable to the accumulation of vegetable remains in vast quantities.

Starting from the summit of the Alleghanies, west of Romney, and traveling eastward to the Chesapeake bay, it is found that the surface rocks become older the further east, with local and slight exceptions. Rocks of the Carboniferous age are never met with after leaving the Alleghanies. First, the Devonian is the prevailing formation. Further east, in the valley of Virginia, the principal rock is the Silurian. Further east the Cambrian, Algonkian and the Archæan are encountered. It is like going down stairs, beginning with the highest and newest, the Carboniferous, on the Alleghanies, and stepping first down to the Devonian in Hampshire, then to the still older Silurian in the valley of Virginia, and descending to yet older and older formations until the Chesapeake bay is reached. The deduction from this fact is this: These enormous platforms, or formations, or ages, or by whatever term we designate them, are wearing back toward the Alleghanies. The Devonian once extended further east than at present. It overlapped the underlying Silurian further toward the east than now. Its eastern edge is wearing off, thus uncovering more and more of the older rocks beneath. The same may be said of the rocks of the Carboniferous age.



They once extended further east, overlapping the subjacent Devonian strata. But they have been wearing away until the eastern edge has retreated and uncovered wide areas of Devonian rocks which they once covered. This much can be affirmed with certainty; but when we endeavor to be more specific, and to state just how far east the Devonian once overlapped the Silurian, and how far east the Carboniferous overlapped the Devonian, we are brought to a halt. It is not probable that Devonian rocks ever existed east of the Blue Ridge. It is believed that the region east of that mountain was land at the time the Devonian rocks were being formed in the bottom of the sea which then covered the Alleghanies. In fact, the sand and mud of which our rocks were formed were washed into the sea from land east of the Blue Ridge. What is said of the Devonian rocks is equally true of the Carboniferous. They once extended out across Hampshire toward the east; but what this eastern limit was cannot now be definitely determined.



# CHAPTER XLIV.



## INDUSTRIAL AFFAIRS.

BY H. L. SWISHER.

The manufacture of iron was among the first industries carried on in this county. Working in this metal engaged the attention of the people of this state and Virginia for many years until richer ores, discovered on the shores of Lake Michigan, displaced our own and the furnaces in this section then fell into ruins. At the present time little attention is given to manufactures of any kind within this county's limits, the energies of the people being devoted almost exclusively to agriculture. Brief notice will be taken of some of the industries that have had a more or less permanent foothold in the county.

*Hampshire Furnace.*—When the Baptist church at Three Churches was torn down a few years ago some one was curious enough to examine the old stove to see where it was made. It bore the mark of The Hampshire Furnace Company.. This company's employes, who delved in the most useful metal, are long since dead but they have left monuments in the useful work of their hands which serve to call them to mind. Early in this century or late in the last century Edward McCarty built the Hampshire furnace on Middle ridge, about twelve miles south of Romney. The forge for the furnace was near Keyser. The business carried on by this furnace must have been quite extensive. In the circuit clerk's office at Romney there are several ponderous ledgers filled with accounts of business transactions of the company. These account books cover the years 1816-1817, which goes to show that at that



time the establishment was flourishing. The time came, however, when too fierce competition compelled the Hampshire furnace to close down and now its former site is marked only by a few ruins.

*Bloomery Furnace.*—The ruins of this furnace together with the houses in which the employes lived, are yet to be seen and are in a fair state of preservation. The land on which the furnace stands was formerly the property of a man named Naylor. The first furnace was built and operated about 1833 by a Mr. Pastly. A few years later it passed into the hands of Passmoor. He put a man named Cornwell in charge and he ran the furnace until 1846. Large quantities of iron manufactured at this furnace, were transported to market over the Capon river on rafts and flat boats. S. A. Pancost purchased the property in 1846 and operated it until 1857, when upon his death his heirs continued to run it in company with others under the firm name of Pancost and McGee. John Withers was superintendent for several years up to 1875. About this time the furnace closed down and has never been in operation since. The furnace and land are still the property of the heirs of Pancost and McGee, of Philadelphia.

*Old Mills and Woolen Factories.*—Robert Sherrard built a stone mill at Bloomery in 1800. A woolen factory was built about the same time by him at Bloomery. Both are still in operation. The mill at Forks of Capon was built early in this century by Major John Largent. It is still in operation. There was a merchant mill built in Fox's Hollow by William Fox, father of Colonel Vause Fox, about the year 1818. This mill had the reputation of making the best flour made in the county. Timothy Starkey was the first miller, Jacob Doman next and then Barton Smoot, who was succeeded by Mahlon Lewis. Large quantities of flour were shipped from this mill to Georgetown by boat. Boats for this purpose were built in a yard near where Franklin Herriott now lives. This



mill is still in operation. The Abernathy mill, one mile from Springfield, now owned by Charles Milleson, was built by James Abernathy during the first quarter of the present century. It is still in operation. The Parker mill, further up the river, was built even earlier. Barnes' mills on Capon were built about 1813. Hammack's mills stood on North river about five miles above Blue's Hanging Rocks. There was a woolen factory and two flouring mills. The woolen mill is yet in operation. These mills were erected at a very early date. The Painter mill stood on North river about five miles above Hammack's mills. It was built more than seventy years ago.

North River mills are among the oldest in the county. The lower one owned by Robert Kidwell, and formerly known as Snapp's mill, is still running. Other old mills are the Maux mill, near Rio; the Poston mill, on North river, on the land of Mrs. Stuckey, and the Ginevan mill, near the mouth of Little Capon.

*Tanneries.*—There is an old tanyard in Fox's Hollow, not now used, which was established in 1816 by Colonel Vause Fox. Colonel Fox was an expert tanner, having learned the trade under William Jenkins of Baltimore. The yard never changed hands while he lived, though it was leased for a short time. Upon his death, his son, David Fox, took up the business and followed it until the Civil war. Since that time it has not been in operation. There was another tanyard on Dillon's run at a very early date. Archibald Linthicum was proprietor. Samuel Gard had a tannery at Capon Bridge before 1820. The work of tanning in these old yards was very tedious, but the quality of leather was much better than that produced by modern processes.

*Distilleries.*—The work of making spirituous liquors was at one time carried on much more extensively in Hampshire than it now is. Almost every neighborhood had a distillery to which the farmers could take their grain



and have it converted into whiskey, or their fruits and get brandy in exchange.

Near the present site of Springfield there stood an old stone still before the beginning of the present century. There was another on the land owned by James Burkett, built at an early day. It was operated by Thomas Burkett. Near the Rouzee property, on Town hill, James Mekans operated a still before 1835. Besides these there were many others in different parts of the county, but nearly all have now fallen into disuse.

*Sundry Enterprises.*—There was a pottery on North river, near the Hardy line, at an early date. A very superior grade of ware is said to have been manufactured there. During the first quarter of this century and up to 1840 there were numerous up-and-down saw mills in the county. The lumber turned out by them was very rough, yet it was a marked step in advance in the preparation of building material. At the Tar-kiln spring, near Hammack's mills, on North river, large quantities of tar were formerly burned for the market. From an old advertisement we learn that J. W. McNell had a tin, stove, copper and sheet-iron manufactory in Romney in 1850.

Thus we see, while the people of this county have never engaged extensively in manufacture, various industries have nevertheless flourished from time to time.



## CHAPTER XLV.



### SOUVENIRS AND CURIOSITIES.

BY HU MAXWELL.

In compiling the history of the county a number of interesting objects and relics were met with which are given a chapter to themselves because they do not belong anywhere else.

*Souvenirs of Lord Fairfax.*—Captain C. S. White of Romney, has in his possession a number of valuable souvenirs of Lord Fairfax, among them being a pair of andirons with heavy brass heads, artistically wrought. A fender, also Lord Fairfax's, is in the collection. These are a portion of the furniture with which the great landowner expected to equip his palatial residence, which he expected to build somewhere in the wilds of America, but which he never built, and perhaps never decided upon a site for it. The house in which he resided near White Post, in Clarke county, Virginia, was a small affair, and in no way corresponded with the fine furniture which he possessed. The larger house, called Greenway court, nearby, was never occupied by Lord Fairfax in person, but by his steward. It is probable that the andirons saw service in that house.

*Antique Table.*—Robert White was the owner of a richly inlaid table, made of different kinds of wood. Under the framework of the table he pasted a small slip of paper and on it wrote his name and the date, 1789. The table is now in the possession of his grandson, Captain C. S. White of Romney, and although more than a century has passed, the name and the date are as plain as if they had



been there but a year. The table is kept with care, as a venerable relic of a former century. It is of interest to note that the handwriting of Robert White has a strong resemblance to that of his son, John Baker White, and his grandson, C. S. White, the characteristic chirography descending through the family more than one hundred years.

*An Old Sugar Bowl.*—A sugar bowl which came from Switzerland, and is believed to have been imported into that country from China more than two hundred years ago, is among the family relics in possession of Captain C. S. White, of Romney. While the origin of the old piece of decorated China is lost in years, the bowl is known to have been in the family for two centuries. The lid is missing, and a number of cracks have made their appearance in the bowl, yet the paintings on it are as bright and perfect as when they were placed there by some devoted follower of Confucius perhaps before a white man had set foot upon the soil of West Virginia.

• *Silver Mug from Holland.*—John Blue, of Romney, possesses a solid silver mug six inches high, which dates back to the time when Holland's fleet claimed the mastery of the seas, more than three hundred years ago. The mug was made in Holland, and the almost effaced carving upon it shows that the decorative art was by no means in its infancy then. The weight of the relic is evidence that it was made for use as well as for show; and the worn and polished exterior is proof that it has seen use. One of Mr. Blue's ancestors ate his mush and milk out of it in the infancy of Hampshire county. He requested that the mug should always belong to "John Blue," and from that time till the present it has always been the property of a person of that name.

• *A Centenarian Pitcher.*—A china pitcher, dating back more than a century, is now the property of Dr. J. M. Miller, of Romney. It is not known whence it origin-



ally came nor when it was manufactured. The first owner for it whose name is now known was Mrs. Sperry, of Hardy county, who was Mrs. Miller's great grandmother. It descended to Mrs. Elizabeth Thompson, of North river, who lived to see her ninety-sixth year. She was a daughter of Mrs. Sperry and the wife of Elisha Thompson, once a member of the Hampshire court. Its next owner was Mrs. Mary Coffman, daughter of Mrs. Thompson and mother of Mrs. Miller, who lived on North river. From Mrs. Coffman it descended to Mrs. Miller.

*Commodore Decatur's Salt-Cellar.*—A blue glass salt-cellar, which was once the property of Commodore Decatur, is now in the possession of Mrs. G. L. Herndon, of Romney. It belonged to the commodore's table set, and without doubt it was on board his ship during the exciting times through which he passed. It descended to Mrs. Herndon who is grand niece of Commodore Decatur. The salt-cellar was once handsomely decorated with painted flowers, but they have all now faded, and the memento is a plain, blue glass salt-cellar.

*Famous Miniatures.*—Miss Lizzie Bonney, of Romney, is the owner of a locket in which are two small pictures, quaint and old-fashioned, but very handsome. The pictures were painted in the West Indies about one hundred years ago, but the exact date and the name of the artist are not now known. The pictures are the miniatures of Miss Seroxa and Miss Mary Decatur, daughters of Commodore Decatur, the famous naval officer who rendered valuable service to his country in the early years of the republic. The locket with its pictures were inherited by Miss Bonney who is a grand niece of Commodore Decatur.

*A Veteran Gander.*—James McCool, who lives twenty-eight miles from Romney, in Bloomery district, has a gander which has lived to a surprising age, and at this date is hale and tough. Forty-five years ago Mr.



McCool moved to the farm where he still resides, and he found the gander on the farm. He does not know how old he was then; but he has lived until the present time; and age has not yet dimmed the fire of his eye, nor toned down his warlike propensities.

*An Old Fort.*—Twenty-one miles from Romney, in Brushy hollow, Capon district, is the ruins of an old log house built by a man named Kisner, as a defense against Indians. It contains port-holes. It was no doubt built prior to 1765, because Hampshire was never invaded by Indians after that year. The land now belongs to William Haines.

*An Historic Pen.*—Captain David Pugh of Capon district, is the possessor of a quill pen with which Virginia's ordinance of secession was signed. It was never used afterwards, and the dried ink is still on it.

*Curious Whiskey Jug.*—Mrs. M. A. Herndon of Romney, has a peculiar whiskey jug which has been in the family for generations. It came from Massachusetts. It is a ring, about twenty-seven inches in circumference, as if a gun barrel were bent into a circle. It is hollow, and holds a quart. It is made of pottery, resembling porcelain. It is said the jug was made to evade an early Massachusetts law which forbade selling whiskey by liquid or dry measure. It was supposed this would prevent selling whiskey altogether, but the law was evaded by selling liquor by the yard. A man with a circular jug, measuring three-fourth of a yard around, would call for three-quarters of a yard of whiskey, and the jugful just made it.

*Turner Ashby's Letter.*—The following letter from Turner Ashby has never been published. It was dated at Martinsburg, February 10, 1862, and is now in the possession of Miss Lou McCarty of Romney:

“CAPTAIN SHEETZ: You will send Captain Shan's company, or Captain Harper's, as you think best, to Lockhart's, with instructions to report to General Jackson that



they are there; at the same time, to let me know it. I want the reports of your three companies sent down by return messenger. I wish you to take the earliest opportunity of seeing how many men of your command will re-enter. When any man re-enlists, you will have him mustered in; and, if he desires, give him a furlough of not more than thirty days, at this time; when, upon presenting this furlough or certificate to my quartermaster, he will pay him fifty dollars. These furloughs can be granted at the rate of one-third of the men fit for duty, but to none who do not re-enlist. I am having the proper papers struck off, when I will send them to you. In the meantime you can get the law; do all you can toward reorganizing. Once a week send a report to me as far as Winchester, when it will be brought on, and state how many men have re-enlisted.

“Respectfully,

“TURNER ASHBY.”

☐ *Stonewall Jackson's Letter*.—The following letter from Stonewall Jackson is now in possession of Miss Lou McCarty, of Romney. It is dated at Winchester, May 27, 1862:

“R. K. SHEETZ: Your letter of yesterday has been received. The loss of your noble son is deeply felt by me. Tears come to my eyes when I think of his death. In imagination I see him before me still. You have my sympathy and prayers. In his death not only you and I, but also his country, has sustained a loss. Apart from his worth as an officer, I was greatly impressed with the beauty of his character. In regard to the horse of which you speak, I suppose that it is the same one that was captured by your son with an Ohio lieutenant-colonel at McDowell. As your son's horse was lame, I directed the captured horse to be turned over to him at that time. He belongs to the Confederate States, and I will be obliged to you, if you will turn him over to Major J. A. Harman,



chief quartermaster of this district. Accept my thankful appreciation of your kind expressions.

“Very truly yours,

“T. J. JACKSON.”

*General Lee's Letter.*—The original of the following letter from General Lee is in possession of Miss Mary Gibson, of Romney. It is dated at Richmond, April 30, 1861, and is addressed to Major John P. Wilson:

“MAJOR: You will muster into the service of the state such volunteer companies, not to exceed ten, of infantry or artillery, as may offer their services in compliance with the call of the governor, with which you will be furnished a copy. Take command of them and proceed to the site of old Fort Powhattan, or such point in its vicinity on James river as will be selected for a battery by Colonel Andrew Talcott. Its construction will be assigned to Captain Cocke, with whom you are directed to cooperate in the completion and defense of the works. You will report the number of companies mustered into service, their arms and condition. You are requested to endeavor to give protection to the inhabitants and encourage a feeling of security.

“Respectfully,

“R. E. LEE.”



# Hampshire's Part

IN THE

## Civil War.

BY HU MAXWELL.







## CHAPTER LXVI

—«0»—

### BEGINNING OF THE STRIFE.

The great Civil war, which attracted the attention of the world for four years, was felt in Hampshire during the whole time. The county was never free from soldiers from the day the ordinance of secession was passed by the Richmond convention until peace was restored. At that time Hampshire included the present territory of Mineral; and the federal forces were stationed at Keyser, then called New Creek, and at Piedmont, early in June, 1861; and on the eleventh of that month General Lew Wallace, more renowned in literature than in war, led a force against and captured Romney. Up to that time the confederates had not been idle in the county. The militia had obeyed the call of Governor Letcher of Virginia, had been under arms, and were ready for battle. Companies were being organized for service in the regular army of the Southern Confederacy; for the Virginia forces had already been placed at the service of the confederate states. The people of Hampshire were mostly sympathizers with the south, and they expressed their sympathy by taking up arms. Half the men in Hampshire were in the confederate army. The exact number cannot now be obtained, but it can be stated in round numbers at twelve hundred. In the vicinity of New Creek and Piedmont there was a strong union sentiment, and the federal army received a considerable number of soldiers from there.

To write an accurate and full history of the war in Hampshire county is no light task. Few documents exist; there is almost nothing to be had on the subject, except from the



memory of the living. A third of a century has passed since the war closed, and the best memory fades with the lapse of years. Therefore, the greatest caution has been necessary in compiling data, lest errors should creep in. Conflicting accounts of the same occurrence are not unusual from persons who saw it. In such cases the historian must exhaust every available resource to ascertain the truth and reconcile the different versions. In the history, or more properly, the chronicle, of the war in Hampshire contained in this book, the aim of the author has been to present facts with as much accuracy as the available data will permit. There are gaps in the narrative which perhaps can never be filled. But the knowledge that much has been preserved from oblivion is ample reward for the months of labor spent in collecting and arranging the material. In this connection it is proper to state that valuable assistance was rendered by old soldiers, and by others, whose memories were the only store houses of the facts, or who possessed documents on the subject. Among such were Judge William H. Maloney, of McNeill's company; Lieutenant John Blue, of the Hampshire militia, and afterwards of the regular service; Captain Isaac Kuykendall, G. H. Houser, Lieutenant Philip Snarr, of Hardy county; B. F. McDonald, of Bloomery; John O. Thompson, editor of the Keyser Echo; V. M. Poling, circuit clerk; John O. Casler's book "Four years in the Stonewall Brigade;" Amos Robinson, of Grassy Lick; John Pancake, Colonel Alexander Monroe, Captain C. S. White, county clerk, and others. Special mention should be made of the valuable assistance obtained from the diaries of George W. Washington, one of the foremost citizens of the county. These books, eleven manuscript volumes, were placed at the disposal of the writer by Robert Washington. That journal was kept with remarkable regularity every day from 1833 to 1876; and while nearly the whole of it relates to individ-



ual and neighborhood affairs, yet many a date of war events has been fixed by a reference to that journal.

*Committee of Safety.*—Early in the spring of 1861 the people of Hampshire county foresaw trouble. The signs of the time portended evil, and no one could tell just what would come to pass. The vote at Richmond on the ordinance of secession left no doubt that a conflict was at hand; and the people of Hampshire, nearly all of whom favored secession, thought it the part of prudence to look out for themselves to the best of their ability. Accordingly, after much discussion, a meeting of citizens was held in Romney, April 27, 1861, and after a long and heated discussion, resolutions were passed, calling upon the people to prepare for the worst; and, in order that the movement might have tangible results, it was decided that a committee of safety ought to be appointed whose duty it would be to look out for the public good in any way that might become necessary. That far the movement had taken the same course as similar movements in other counties of the state; but in Hampshire something more was done. The county prepared for war, not only with men and arms, but also with money. This part of the proceeding was peculiar, for counties did not usually raise money by taxation for war purposes, but left that to the state or the general government. A second meeting of the committee of safety was held May 8, and a third on May 13. At this meeting money was subscribed to pay troops. It cannot be ascertained now how much was raised, as the records are fragmentary; but one gentleman paid on that day one hundred dollars "to equip volunteers," and five days later the same gentlemen paid one hundred more for the same purpose. If all contributed in the same proportion the sum must have been considerable. A full list of the members of the committee of that date is not now obtainable, but it is found on the court records as it existed a few days later. It appears that, up to that time, funds to meet



the committee's expenses had been subscribed by members of the committee, or by other citizens; but the whole matter was about to pass into the hands of the county court, as will be seen from the following order:

"At a court held for the county of Hampshire, Virginia, May 27, 1861; present, David Gibson, William Dunn, Isaiah Lupton, Robert Carmichael, J. C. Pancake, J. C. Poland, George W. Washington, John Hammack, William French, B. D. Stump, W. Donaldson, James Liller, John Starkey, Elijah Rinchart, Samuel Cooper, James Sheetz, George Spaid, N. Alkire, H. Alkire, H. Parrell, William D. Rees, E. M. Armstrong, J. W. Albin, S. Milleson, A. A. Brill and Thomas Crawford, Justices.

"It is ordered that the county court of Hampshire county doth appropriate the sum of ten thousand dollars, if so much be necessary, for war purposes, to be levied upon all the property of the county liable to state tax, except so much as is exempt from levy; that five thousand dollars of this sum be levied at this time, and the remaining five thousand dollars, together with an additional amount to cover the accruing interest, be levied at the May term, 1862; that bonds be issued, payable at the proper times, and that the bank at Romney be requested to cash the same as they may be required; and that James D. Armstrong, John M. Pancake, and Isaac Parsons be and they are hereby appointed to execute said bonds for and on behalf of the county of Hampshire; that the said sum be placed in the hands of the committee of safety, to be used at their discretion for the said purposes, and for the support of such families of volunteers of the county in actual service as may require assistance. The committee of safety are hereby directed to report their proceedings under this order to this court at its March term, 1862. The committee of safety consists of the following gentlemen: James D. Armstrong, Isaac Parsons, John M. Pancake, David Gibson, Dr. S. R. Lupton, John C. Heiskell, J.



W. Marshall, W. A. Vance, R. K. Sheetz, A. W. McDonald, James Sheetz, John T. Pierce, James W. Albin, Charles Blue, John A. Smith, Robert Hook, R. B. Sherrard, G. W. Gore, George W. Washington, and John Johnson, as appears by the proceedings of a public meeting held in Romney, Saturday, April 26, 1861. A roll call of the court on the foregoing order shows that all the members of the court voted aye, except Lupton, Hammack, Liller, Cooper, and Albin who voted no."

It is to be regretted that no record exists of any subsequent proceedings of this committee and by some it is believed that no meeting was held after May 29, 1861. George W. Washington in his journal mentions all the meetings up to that time, but none later.

*Romney's Remarkable Record.*—No town in West Virginia, and, except Winchester, Virginia, perhaps none in the United States, has a record surpassing Romney's in respect to changing hands during the Civil war. If the complete record could be obtained it is confidently believed that Romney would surpass Winchester, which changed hands seventy-eight times during the war. Romney has fifty-six times to its credit; and those who are acquainted with the facts say there were many more, but no record of them can be found, and the well-established fifty-six captures of the town must suffice. It will not be presumed that there was a battle every time the town changed hands. There was no hard battle, and the skirmishes were neither severe nor numerous. At times the troops of one side would march peaceably out and the other side would occupy. Again, a few shots would be exchanged; and on two or three occasions the fighting had considerable importance.

The table which follows will show in chronological sequence the captures and recaptures of Romney between June 10, 1861, and April 15, 1865. In another part of this book the important captures will be given more in detail.



Virginia militia, in the service of the Southern Confederacy, held the town from the beginning of the war till June 11, 1861. Then began Romney's vicissitudes of fortune, as follows:

June 11, 1861, captured by General Lew Wallace and held a few hours.

June, 1861, occupied by Colonel McDonald, with confederate militia.

July 21, 1861, Colonel Cain, with a federal force, took possession and remained a few hours.

July, 1861, Colonel Cummins came in with confederate troops.

September 24, 1861, Colonel Cantwell, with Ohio troops, took the town after a brisk skirmish.

September 24, 1861, Colonel McDonald recaptured it and drove the federals nearly to Keyser, fighting all the way.

October 27, 1861, General Kelley marched from Keyser and captured Romney after a fight which at that time was considered severe. The confederates retreated, with loss of cannon and wagons.

January 14, 1862, Stonewall Jackson took peaceable possession, General Lander having retreated. The Hampshire militia were a day or two ahead of Jackson in entering the town.

March 3, 1862, Colonel Downey of the union army, occupied Romney after General Loring, who had been left here by Jackson, marched back to Winchester. For the next four captures the dates cannot be definitely fixed.

Spring of 1862 Hampshire militia occupied when Colonel Downey withdrew.

Summer 1862, Colonel Greenfield, with the twenty-second Pennsylvania regiment, was the next.

Summer of 1862, Hampshire militia, or troops from the regular confederate army, occupied Romney after the Pennsylvanians had retired.



Fall 1862, General Lander sent Maryland troops to Romney (federal).

November, 1862, General Imboden occupied the town with a confederate force.

December 29, 1862, General Milroy, with a strong federal force, occupied the town for a day or two, as he was marching to Winchester.

During the first four months of 1863 there is no record that troops of either side entered the town, but that was a time of military activity, and in all probability Romney changed hands several times during these months.

June 7 (probably), 1863, Captain McNeill, with a confederate force, was in possession.

June 15, 1863, Colonel Campbell came in with a federal force.

June 16, 1863, General Imboden occupied Romney on his march to Gettysburg.

June 17, 1863, a federal company was in possession of the town one hour.

June 18, 1863, a confederate force took possession, and hurried on to join the forces then on the march to Gettysburg. It is believed that these men belonged to Imboden's brigade and that they had been scouting in the mountains of Hardy county.

June, 1863, a federal cavalry company entered Romney.

June 22 (probably), 1863, Captain Sheetz, with a confederate force, occupied the town.

June 22 (probably), 1863, Lieutenant Summers, with a federal force, took possession after Captain Sheetz withdrew.

July 12, 1863, a confederate force again took possession.

August 8, 1863, Romney occupied by federal cavalry.

August 15 (probably), 1863, confederates entered Romney.

September, 1863, federal troops, known as Blinker's Dutch, captured the place.



October 5, 1863, a confederate force was again in possession.

October, 1863, federal cavalry held the town for a short time. There is no record of further occupation of the town in 1863.

January 5, 1864, McNeill was in possession of Romney.

January 8, 1864, federal cavalry entered and took possession:

February 1, 1864, confederate cavalry held the town.

February 1, 1864, New York cavalry drove out the confederates.

February 3, 1864, the town was in possession of confederates belonging to General Rosser's command.

February 3, 1864, General Averell, who was hunting for Rosser, took the town.

May 10, 1864, McNeill was once more in possession.

May 10, 1864, McNeill departed and federal troops were in possession.

May 10, 1864, the confederates, whether McNeill or not cannot be ascertained, drove out the federals, making three times in one day that Romney changed hands.

July, 1864, federal cavalry under Ringgold held the town.

August 5, 1864, General McCausland occupied Romney on his return from his raid into Pennsylvania.

August 5, General Averell passed through Romney in pursuit of McCausland, having been only two hours behind him when McCausland set fire to Chambersburg, and having been in pursuit all the way to Romney. He overtook and signally defeated him at Moorefield, a full account of which will be found in this book.

August 29, 1864, McNeill occupied Romney.

October 31, 1864, federal cavalry from Springfield occupied the place.

November 1, 1864, McNeill occupied the town on his way to attack Springfield.



November 2, 1864, federals pursuing McNeill entered Romney.

November 28, 1864, confederates belonging to General Rosser's force occupied the town, the day that Keyser was captured.

January, 1865, federal troops from Cumberland were in the town.

February 1, 1865, a force of two hundred confederates were in possession of Romney.

February 5, 1865, Colonel Young with a federal force were in the town. This was the force which murdered Captain George Stump.

February 7 (probably) 1865, McNeill held the town.

February 13, 1865, the federal were once more in possession.

February 19, 1865, McNeill was once more in possession, carrying away Generals Crook and Kelley as prisoners, having captured them at Cumberland, a full account of which will be found in this book.

February 19, 1865, federal cavalry, pursuing McNeill, were in the town about one hour.

February 19, 1865, a small confederate force dashed into the town as the federals were retreating and drove out the stragglers, capturing one prisoner.

February 25 (probably), 1865, federals from Cumberland were in possession.

April 15 (probably), 1865, the town was held for the last time by armed confederates. They were the companies of McDonald and Sheetz, which had escaped from Virginia when General Lee surrendered.



## CHAPTER XLVII.



### LEW WALLACE TAKES ROMNEY.

The first union troops to occupy Romney were under General Lew Wallace, June 11, 1861. Prior to that time the Hampshire militia and several confederate companies had occupied the town, sometimes in strong force, and sometimes not. There were too few confederates in Romney when Wallace came, to offer much resistance, and no attempt was made to hold the place. A few men with rifles posted themselves on the bluff overlooking the South branch bridge, and fired as the federals advanced; but ran as soon as a few shots had been exchanged. The confederates who were in the town retreated, and nearly all the citizens went with them. It was the first view of the blue coats the people of Romney had, and they did not know whether they could safely remain, or whether they would be safer somewhere else. General Wallace, as is generally known, was author of Ben Hur and other famous works. If all soldiers were as gentlemanly as he, and as considerate of others, war would lose many of its horrors. It is appropriate in this connection to quote from the journal of George W. Washington under date of June 12, 1861. He says:

"I rode up to the upper end of the place, and on my return met Everett who informed me that the federal troops were in Romney. I rode on to Romney to see what was going on. Before I got there they left. I was told that the officers were gentlemen and that they informed the citizens they would be perfectly secure under this protection; that they had come to the county by invitation, and



that no unarmed person would be disturbed. The inhabitants had generally left before I got there. The brave soldiery of the county! The last heard of them they were fleeing toward Harper's Ferry."

It was during this occupation by the federals that the printing material of the South Branch Intelligencer was destroyed. There was not so much as a piece of type left. The paper had been strong in its support of secession.

*Richard Ashby Killed.*—On June 26, 1861, Richard Ashby, brother of General Turner Ashby, was mortally wounded by a bayonet thrust through the body, in an encounter on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad near the mouth of Dan's run, in what was then Hampshire county, but is now Mineral. A body of confederates from Winchester had reached Romney on June 17. The two Ashby brothers were of the number. A few days later the Ashby cavalry was sent to Patterson's creek, and was in that region until June 26. On that day Richard Ashby, Garrett Monroe and seven others encountered a large force of federals at the mouth of Dan's run. In attempting to ride across a cattle stop on the railroad, Ashby's horse fell, and the rider was thrown. He was attacked, wounded in seven places, and left for dead on the railroad. His companions escaped. After the federals had passed on, the wounded officer rallied and was able to walk to the side of the railroad where he concealed himself under bushes and lay there till evening. In the meantime his brother Colonel, afterwards General, Turner Ashby was scouting with a larger party along the railroad, and learned from the citizens that heavy firing had been heard that morning from the direction in which his brother had gone, and the colonel hastened to ascertain the fate of his brother. In a short time he discovered a camp of federal soldiers on Kelley's island in the Potomac river, and charged the camp, losing three men, but succeeding in dislodging the



federals. Among the spoils of the capture was Richard Ashby's horse, and from this it was concluded the rider had been killed. Search for him was made, and he was found near where he had been wounded. He was carried to the house of Mr. Cheshire one-half mile from Springfield, where he received every attention. There was no hope for his recovery, and on July 4, 1861, he died. He was buried in Indian Mound cemetery, Romney. Romantic writers, with more regard for sensationalism than for truth, have conveyed erroneous ideas of the death and burial of Richard Ashby; and it is the duty of the historian to correct these so far as he can. It has been represented that a dramatic scene took place by the open grave when General Ashby broke his brother's sword, threw the pieces in the grave, and registered a solemn vow to be avenged upon the murderers of his brother. Nothing of the kind occurred. The funeral was solemn and impressive, and General Ashby enacted no theatrical part. He knew that his brother had fallen in open battle; that it was the fortune of war, and that his fate was that which every soldier might expect. The body of Richard Ashby was removed to Winchester, Virginia, in October 1862, and was buried beside his brother, General Ashby. At the same time and in the same cemetery was buried the body of Captain George Sheetz. Richard and Turner Ashby were grandsons of Captain John Ashby who did service in Hampshire during the French and Indian war of 1755, and who was a personal friend of youthful George Washington.

*Colonel Cain's Visit.*—Colonel Cain of the federal army, paid Romney a visit on July 22, 1861. After Lew Wallace withdrew his troops, June 12, there had been no federals in the vicinity to dispute the possession of Romney by the confederates. In the latter part of July, however, there were no confederate forces in Romney, except a few stragglers. On the twenty-second of that month, it being Monday, and a court day, a few persons were stand-



ing around the court house, when a federal soldier rode up with a white flag and asked for David Gibson, who came forward and was handed a letter by the soldier. He read it and announced that it was from Colonel Cain, who wanted an interview with him. The news spread that the yankees were coming, and the people fled, and the federal soldiers were not opposed when they came in. No one now remembers what was the business which Colonel Cain talked over with Mr. Gibson. On that date, July 22, 1861, George W. Washington wrote in his journal: "Monday, court day. I doubt, however, whether there will be any court, as I understand everybody has run away from the town and county, nearly. \* \* \* \* I rode to Romney. As I expected, no court. Before I left there was quite a stir among what few people were there, from Mr. Gibson's having received a letter from Colonel Cain of the federal army, requesting an interview with him. The few that were left all made their escape."

*Fight at Hanging Rocks.*—A skirmish took place at Hanging Rocks, four miles below Romney, on Tuesday morning, September 24, 1861, between Hampshire militia and several companies of union troops under Colonel Cantwell of the eighty-second Ohio regiment. The militia was under Colonel McDonald. Captain Robinson and Lieutenant John Blue were also in the company. There were only twenty-seven men on the confederate side, but in addition to these, a large scouting party had been sent down the river. Rumors of the approach of the federals had been circulating for some time, and McDonald kept a sharp lookout. On the evening of September 23 he had received information which led him to believe that the federals would attempt to pass Hanging Rocks early the next morning. With his twenty-six men he climbed to the top of the rocks a while before day on the morning of September 23. The air being cool, some of the men built a fire, which was indiscreet, for they might thus have betrayed their presence.



But the fog was dense and the fire was not discovered by the enemy.

The Hanging Rocks rise perpendicularly more than two hundred feet, the top overhanging the base in several places. The South branch flows along the base of the cliff about half a mile, leaving a space between the water and the rocks varying in width from forty to one hundred feet. The road leading from Romney to Cumberland passes along the narrow strip of level land between the river and the base of the cliff. Since the war a railroad has been built there also; but at the time of the skirmish only the Romney and Cumberland pike occupied the narrow space. Troops marching to Romney from the north would naturally follow that road; and Colonel McDonald took advantage of the strong position to check the advance. Stones were piled near the brink of the precipice by the men who had taken possession of the summit, and they prepared to hurl them upon the federals who might attempt to pass below. Everything was in readiness by the break of day. As already stated, Colonel McDonald had sent a scouting party down the river the night before. The party was liable to return at any time, and the men on the cliff had been instructed to make no mistake by attacking their own scouts. Soon after daybreak cavalry was heard crossing the ford of the river at the north end of the pass; and presently the head of the column appeared, following the road up the river along the base of the cliff. The confederates on the rocks were lying flat, with their heads and shoulders over the brink, peering down through the fog, trying to determine whether the men below were enemies, or only the looked-for scouts who had been sent down the river. The federals were suspicious of the place, were expecting an attack, and consequently were on a sharp lookout. They saw the heads of the rebels projecting over the cliff, and instantly fired on them. That brought a furious attack from the militia above. Down



came a rain of stones sufficient to have crushed an army. The yankee cavalry saved itself by wheeling and rushing back down the road. But in so doing the horsemen rode over the infantry in the rear. Many rushed into the river to save themselves. Those who could swim got safely over; but many were drowned. The bodies of a dozen or more afterwards were taken from the river and buried in the sand on the west bank. During the high water on the following Saturday, September 28, other bodies were washed down the river and were taken out and buried. For years afterwards, at the place where the soldiers were drowned, muskets were occasionally entangled in the lines of fishermen and were drawn up.

The federals recrossed the river at the ford a short distance below and there halted. At that moment Garrett I. Blue, who lived just below there, father of Lieutenant John Blue, rode up the pike. As it happened, there had been a confederate camp a few days before at the ford, and Mr. Blue mistook the federals for confederates, and rode across the river to them. Seeing all in readiness for moving, he remarked: "Well, you are about to go, I see." He did not even then discover his mistake, nor did he when a yankee remarked: "That is a very nice rifle you are carrying. Let me see it." Mr. Blue handed it to the soldier, who examined it and asked: "Do you think you could hit a yankee with it?" "I think I could," was the reply. "Well," answered the soldier, "You might be so foolish as to do it, and I will take charge of your gun and you too. We are yankees." Mr. Blue submitted with the best grace he could. In a few minutes after, Garrett W. Blue rode up to the opposite side of the river. He was making off when they halted him. He refused to stop and was fired upon. His horse threw him and he was taken prisoner. Colonel Frazier, a union officer who was present, and who was acquainted with both prisoners, interceded for them and they were set at liberty.



After the check to the union forces at Hanging Rocks there was great excitement in Romney, where Colonel McDonald had about seven hundred militia. It was discovered that the federals had not retreated toward Cumberland, but had taken the road to Mechanicsburg, five miles southwest, and were preparing to advance on Romney through Mill creek gap, three miles southwest of the town—where Mill creek cuts through the mountain to reach the South branch. The confederates had two old cannon, and with these fired a few shells as the federals attempted to pass down the gap. The only damage done, so far as ascertained, was the sending of a shell through a house which stood in range. The house still stands as a witness of the fact. Colonel McDonald had doubts as to his ability to hold the town, and he removed the greater part of his stores, and in the evening withdrew nearly all his troops to Frenchburg, on the Winchester pike, six miles east of Romney, leaving a strong picket at Mill creek gap to oppose the advance of the federals. The pass is long and narrow, easily defended by a small force against an army. Later in the war a company of seventy confederates posted there, held Averell's army in check several hours. McDonald believed that his picket could hold the pass so long as there was no attack in the rear. But there was danger of that. The federals might force their way through the gap at Hanging Rocks, where they had been repulsed in the morning; and by crossing the hills, cut off the retreat of the confederates toward Winchester.

During the whole afternoon of September 24, McDonald's men held the pass at Mill creek. A force of Hampshire militia under Lieutenant John Blue was in Romney. During the night of September 24 the picket at the gap was on the alert. But just after daybreak on September 25, a blunder and a false alarm lost the pass to the confederates. A picket had been stationed in the woods, on the hillside to look out for federal flanking parties. In the



early morning, when the fog was dense, the picket discerned a large log which, in the semi-darkness, he mistook for a line of yankee soldiers drawn up among the bushes. He gave the alarm, and there was great confusion and excitement until it was ascertained that the alarm was false. But one blunder had scarcely been corrected before a more serious one was committed. A report came that Colonel Cantwell had forced the pass at Hanging Rocks and was getting in the rear of Romney. It was a false report, but it was acted upon by the confederates as though true. They retreated toward Winchester, abandoning the pass which they had held all night. The federals came through, and in a short time were in possession of Romney.

That was early in the morning. McDonald's troops were nearly all at Frenchburg, six miles east. Those who had held the gap hastened up the pike to join the main body. Lieutenant John Blue, with a few militiamen, was in Romney. As the retreating rebels ran through town, shouting that the yankees were coming, Lieutenant Blue and his few men took to the hills, barely escaping the enemy. Colonel Cantwell sent a cannon about half a mile up the Winchester road and fired a few times at the militia on the hill. The fire was returned, and one of the federals was wounded.

By this time the fog had cleared away. While the yankee cannon was wasting ammunition in a fruitless endeavor to drive the militia from the hill, a cloud of dust was observed where the pike passes down Jersey mountain toward Romney. McDonald's cavalry was coming on a charge. The yankees understood what it meant. They hooked to their cannon and out of town they went, faster than they had come in. McDonald's men came, shooting. The yankees returned the fire as they ran. Near the bridge which crossed the South branch the federals made a stand, and a brisk fight took place, but with little damage to either side. The confederates began crossing to Gib-



son's island, expecting to take the federals in' the flank. While executing this movement Robert J. Tilden of Captain Sheetz's company, had his arm broken. The federals gave ground, and the retreat and pursuit were continued through Mill creek gap. It was a running fight at long range. Colonel Cantwell took the road over Middle ridge for New Creek. Two or three times the rear guard made a stand and held the confederates in check. In one of those skirmishes Lieutenant Blue's horse was wounded and he was left on foot. He had been riding the horse from which Tilden had fallen when wounded. Captain Sheetz of Company F, undertook to lead a flanking party for the purpose of surrounding the federals near Headsville, on Patterson creek. But it resulted only in harm to his own men. After following a mountain road some distance, he fired, by mistake, upon his own men, mortally wounding one of them. The federals were pursued to the top of Knobly mountain, within a few miles of New Creek, now Keyser.



## CHAPTER XLVIII.



### GENERAL KELLEY'S CAMPAIGN.

The most important battle fought at Romney during the war was on October 27, 1861, between the confederate forces occupying the town and the union forces under General B. F. Kelley. General Lew Wallace had occupied Romney in June of the same year, expecting that it would not be again occupied by the confederates in strong force. But no sooner had he retired than the confederates took possession of the town. Colonel Cantwell with a union force crossed from New Creek in September to dislodge Colonel McDonald, the confederate officer in command at the town; but that expedition ended in a magnificent horse race from Romney to New Creek, the yankees getting into New Creek about four jumps ahead of the rebels. This state of affairs was not satisfactory to the government at Washington. As a town, Romney was not of enough importance to call for much exertion on the part of either side to hold it. But as a strategic point it was valuable. If the federals expected to keep the Baltimore and Ohio railroad open, which they were determined to do, it was dangerous to leave a confederate force ensconced at Romney, whence, in a few hours, they could cut the railroad, and cripple large operations elsewhere; for that railroad was of vast importance to the federal government. These were the considerations which induced General Kelley to move in October against Romney with a force deemed sufficient to overcome any resistance likely to be met. The warm reception given Colonel Cantwell caused Kelley to advance with caution.



On October 22, 1861, General Scott ordered General Kelley to concentrate his forces at New Creek and attack and capture Romney. In obedience to this order he left New Creek, now Keyser, early on the morning of October 27. The distance to Romney was about twenty-four miles. The confederates proposed to meet him. They planted a twelve pounder rifle cannon and a mountain howitzer in Indian Mound cemetery, ready to fire as the head of the federal column should emerge from Mill creek gap. But they did not idly wait for the federals to appear. A strong party was posted in the gap and the fight began there about four o'clock in the afternoon. This confederate outpost soon gave way and the soldiers retreated toward Romney, the federals following closely till they came out into the open country below the mouth of Mill creek. The confederate artillery opened fire; and Kelley unlimbered three guns, and placing them in the pike below the mouth of Mill creek gap, returned the fire of the confederates. Kelley's army did not pause, but proceeded to Romney. The infantry crossed the bridge, and the cavalry forded the river and charged up the road. The confederates abandoned their cannon and retreated toward Winchester. General Kelley captured two cannon; three wagon loads of new rifles; a considerable quantity of tents and other stores; two hundred horses; and sixty prisoners. Colonel E. M. Armstrong was among the prisoners. The loss was not heavy in killed and wounded on either side, but the exact number cannot be ascertained. Four days after that, General Kelley received from Assistant Adjutant General Townsend at Washington, the following telegram, dated October 30: "Your late movement upon and signal victory at Romney do you great honor in the opinion of the president and of Lieutenant General Scott. You shall be reinforced as soon as practicable. In the meantime, if necessary, call for any troops at Cumberland or New Creek."



General Kelley remained in Romney till January 1, 1862, organizing and drilling troops. He was succeeded at Romney by General Lander. The federals retreated from Romney a few days later at the approach of Stonewall Jackson. When General Kelley entered Romney October 27 he issued the following proclamation: "To the people of Hampshire county and the upper Potomac: My object in addressing you is to give you assurance that I have come among you, not for the purpose of destroying you, but to protect all your rights socially and politically. All persons who have taken up arms against the government of the United States are obliged to lay them down, and return to their homes, and if they will take the oath of allegiance, and conduct themselves as peaceable citizens they will be protected in all their rights under the flag which has so long and so well protected them. You have lived long happy, socially and politically, but if you attempt to carry on a general warfare against my troops by attacking my wagons, shooting my guards or pickets, you will be considered as enemies and treated accordingly here in your own country."

*The Wire Bridge Fight.*—A skirmish occurred in the latter part of October, 1861, at the wire bridge, seven miles below Romney, between Hampshire militia, under Colonel Alexander Monroe on one side, and several companies of union troops on the other. The union force formed the left column of General Kelley's army in its expedition against Romney. While the main division marched from New Creek by way of Mill creek gap, the left column proceeded by way of Springfield, with the intention of passing up the river to the objective point. Colonel Monroe's militia at that time was guarding the road leading up the river to Romney. The main force, with two pieces of artillery, was camped at Buffalo creek, about three miles below the town, while Colonel Monroe was in personal command of a smaller company at the wire



bridge. He placed his men in position to rake the bridge with their fire in case the federals should attempt to pass over it. As an additional hindrance to their progress, he removed several planks from the middle of the bridge. When the union troops arrived and reached the opening in the bridge, they were fired upon. One was killed and was left lying on the bridge, and others were wounded. There was a stampede. The federals fled, leaving the militia in possession of the bridge, and leaving thirty-five hats and caps on the bridge. In the meantime cannonading was heard at Romney, which announced that General Kelley was taking the town. The militia which had been posted to guard the road up the river saw that its services were useless there any longer, and that it was liable to an attack in the rear by the federal forces in Romney; and, therefore, a retreat was ordered. Colonel Monroe fell back from the wire bridge, crossed the mountains and reached Blue's gap on the Winchester road. The forces at Buffalo did likewise, hauling their two pieces of artillery up the mountain at the head of Buffalo creek that night, and by that route reached Blue's gap in safety.

When the federal forces approached Springfield, two miles from the wire bridge, on their march to that place, many citizens of the town concealed themselves in their houses. A minister of the gospel who occupied a pulpit in the town, was panic-stricken when he saw the blue uniforms coming, and with a wild yell, "Whoop! I can't stand that!" mounted the first horse he could find and fled, and never came back. Perhaps, in his new field of labor, if he ever found a new field, he preached his first sermon from the text, "The wicked flee when none pursue."

*Blue's Gap Captured.*—Although General Kelley had occupied Romney October 27, 1861, he did not advance to Blue's gap, fifteen miles east, for two months. A confederate force held the gap. It was General Kelley's purpose to protect the Baltimore and Ohio railroad and not to



waste his time and incur expense in useless expeditions up and down the back country where nothing was to be gained. The time had not yet arrived for an advance from Romney to Winchester, and the federal general was not disposed to push in that direction until the time came. He saw no reason why he should attack the few men at Blue's gap. If he should occupy the place it would necessitate keeping a strong force there to hold it, unless he should abandon it and return to Romney. This would be a useless campaign.

But, as the winter advanced, and the small parties of confederates continued to annoy the outposts and waylay scouting parties, it became a military necessity to drive the confederates from Blue's gap. Captain Sheetz was in command there, with a few hundred men, and had fortified the pass with two small pieces of artillery—the same guns that had been stationed at Buffalo to guard the Hanging Rocks gap at the time of General Kelley's capture of Romney. Fortifications, not very extensive, but naturally strong, were built in a position to command the gap. Then, when intelligence was received that an attack was to be made, Captain Sheetz moved three miles up the road to Pleasant Dale to meet the enemy. About daybreak the federals came in sight, and Captain Sheetz fell back toward Blue's gap, firing occasionally upon the advancing troops. The bridge across North river was four hundred yards in front of the gap. Having crossed this, it was set on fire by Captain Sheetz, who withdrew toward his fortifications, which he expected the militia to occupy and defend. But the federals came more rapidly than had been expected, and reached the fortifications before the rebel militia could get there, and all hope of successfully defending the pass was lost. The militia retreated toward Winchester, or scattered through the woods and mountains in all directions. Captain Sheetz was compelled to retreat, but withdrew his men in good order until he had gone a mile be-



yond the pass, where the country was more open. There he was charged, and was driven rapidly back. Pursuit was not long continued. The cannon abandoned by the militia fell into the hands of General Kelley's army. The troops returned to Romney. This expedition took place early in January, 1862. General Lander was in immediate command at the time. When he fell back from Blue's gap he burned between thirty and forty residences and outbuildings on each side of the road, between that point and Romney. He defended his course on the ground that it was a military measure rendered necessary because the residents of that part of the country aided and encouraged the confederates in attacking the union outposts.

*Frenchburg Burned.*—The small group of houses called Frenchburg, six miles east of Romney, on the Winchester road, was burned by federal soldiers late in 1861 on the pretext that the inhabitants were giving aid to rebel bushwhackers. The specific grounds for the charge were these: Sergeant John C. Leps with seven men left the confederate camp at Blue's gap, and concealing his force in a thicket near Frenchburg, fired upon a detachment of union cavalry, and killed and wounded several men, compelling the survivors to retreat. This greatly incensed the federal officers, who refused to recognize bushwhacking as a legitimate method of warfare. Warning was sent out that if the act were repeated, punishment would be inflicted upon the citizens of the district in which the bushwhacking was done. Captain Sheetz with a small party set out from Blue's gap a few days after and repaired to the vicinity of Frenchburg, where there was a strong federal picket post. He climbed a hill near the road and attacked four soldiers who were passing by, wounding one and capturing three. Captain Sheetz then returned to camp at Blue's gap. The result was, orders were given for the burning of the houses at Frenchburg, and the little village was wiped out.



*Capture of an Officer's Horse.*—During the early part of the winter of 1861-2, General Kelley with several thousand soldiers was stationed in and near Romney. There was little to do, except to keep a wary eye on Stonewall Jackson at Winchester, and to send out large scouting parties to look after the rebels under Captain Sheetz and others who roamed at will along North river. There was at that time a youth, sixteen or seventeen years old, named Elisha Shingleton, son of John Shingleton, living a few miles from Romney. This boy was desirous of joining the rebel army. He might have become an infantry soldier at any time, but he wanted to be a cavalryman, and that was not so easy to be done. The Southern Confederacy did not furnish horses for its cavalry; but each soldier must provide one for himself. Young Shingleton had no horse, and saw no prospect of procuring one by the ordinary methods of bargain and sale. But, as he had set his heart on joining the cavalry he was not disposed to submit to being checkmated by so small a thing as the want of a horse. He made up his mind that he would have one. He spied around the outskirts of Romney, and observed that the small boys of the town were in the habit of riding the officers' horses to water at the brook which the pike crosses at the foot of the hill below the cemetery. A deep pool at the base of a large rock was the favorite drinking place for the horses. Just before day young Shingleton concealed himself among some bushes and vines which hung in a dense canopy over the rock, and waited for his chance. Presently a small lad, riding a splendid horse which belonged to a union officer, came down the pike from the town, rode into the pool and the horse put down his head and began to drink. Shingleton reached out and caught the bridle and ordered the lad to get off the horse, which he did in a hurry, dropping in the water. Shingleton mounted the horse and disappeared up the hill in the woods. The boy ran bawling back to town and reported



his loss. The yankees galloped up and down the roads for miles around, trying to capture the daring thief; but they returned without success. Meanwhile Shingleton made his way through the woods and along unfrequented paths to the mountains a few miles distant, where he hid the horse in a thicket and kept him several days, carrying hay and corn to him at night from neighboring fields. When the excitement had died down he took the horse through the mountains to the confederate lines, and was soon a superbly equipped cavalryman.



## CHAPTER XLIX.

—»0«—

### SPYING FOR JACKSON.

When it became known, in the fall of 1861, that General Kelley had fortified Romney, and was preparing to occupy it permanently, Stonewall Jackson, who was at Winchester, began to lay plans to recapture the town. In order to carry out these plans it was necessary to obtain exact information regarding the forces at Romney, the position of the fortifications, and the best avenues of approach. General Jackson requested the commanding officer at Blue's gap to obtain this information, if possible. He thereupon selected Lieutenant John Blue, Major Isaac Parsons and William Inskeep, and instructed them to secure all the desired information possible by such method as they might think best. They were acquainted with every acre of the country around Romney. They procured a good spyglass, and early one November morning, 1861, took their post on Mill creek mountain, on the opposite side of the river from Romney, about one and a half miles distant. From that position they had full view of the town, all the surrounding country, the fortifications, the barracks, and everything of a military nature. Isaac Parsons was skillful at drawing, and he and William Inskeep climbed into a tree, made themselves as comfortable as possible, and with the aid of the spyglass, proceeded to make a map of the military camp, with all the converging roads, and the neighboring hills. Lieutenant Blue stood guard at the foot of the tree, on the lookout for objects nearer at hand. It was a warm day, although in November, and it was nearly sunset when the map was finished,



and the men were ready to come down from the tree. About that time the soldiers in Romney were called out on dress parade, and the spies had excellent opportunity of estimating their number, and they remained in the tree a short time longer for that purpose.

In the meantime Mr. Blue's ear had detected sounds of approaching footsteps, on the mountain side, below them. He called the attention of his companions to the noise, and they descended from the tree, put on their coats, took up their guns, and were about to follow Mr. Blue, who had gone up the mountain and was about forty yards above them, when two federal soldiers made a sharp turn round a clump of trees, and called to the spies to surrender. The soldiers did not see Mr. Blue, nor did they know of his presence. "You are our prisoners," exclaimed the soldiers as they jumped behind trees to protect themselves from the muskets of the spies. "I am not so sure of it; I guess you are our prisoners," replied Mr. Parsons. "Not a bit of it," returned one of the yankees; "throw up your guns and surrender." "You throw down your guns and surrender," said Parsons. It was an even match. All four of the men were behind trees, about forty yards apart. After standing awhile, each side trying to persuade the other to surrender, one of the yankees called out: "Hello, Reb!" "Hello, Yank," was the reply. "Suppose we shake hands and call it square. We don't want to hurt you fellows, and I guess you are not thirsting for blood." Mr. Parsons answered that he was not very blood-thirsty and was willing to let bygones be bygones, and was ready to have peace. "Who are you, anyhow?" inquired one of the yankees. "Citizens out hunting." "Well, there is no use to fight over it," answered the federal, "but that musket you have looks like a rebel's. How about it?" "The musket is all right, and if you want to shake hands with us, be about it." "Leave your gun and step out, and I will leave mine and step out," suggested the yankee. Both did



so; Parsons stepping out first, then one of the federals. Then Inskip stepped out unarmed, and called on the remaining yankee to do likewise. But the treacherous child of the frozen north sprang out with his musket leveled, and called out: "Now surrender. I have the drop on you!" "Drop that gun," came a command from the hill above. Lieutenant Blue had stepped from behind a tree with his gun leveled at the yankees. The table was turned. The yankee dropped his gun and began to beg. He said he was only joking and had no intention of shooting anybody. "I am not joking," replied Mr. Blue, "and if you want to save your hide, leave your gun where it is and strike a trot for Romney and don't dare look back until you get out of sight." The yankee did not stand on the order of going, but took to his heels. The other yankee was told to leave his gun and follow his comrade. He did so.

The spies went to the house of David Fox and stayed all night, leaving at daybreak next morning. They hid in a clump of pines on a point some distance above Hanging Rocks. By the aid of their glass they could watch the movements of the federals in Romney and vicinity. Numerous parties were sent across the river to search Mill creek mountain, supposing that the spies were still lurking there. But, of course, nothing was found of them on that mountain. The next night the spies made their way to Little Capon, where they had left their horses, and thence proceeded to Blue's gap. The map was sent to General Jackson.

*Lieutenant John Blue's Desperate Escape.*—It was afterwards ascertained that the two federal soldiers who were driven to camp by the spies were Lieutenant Cole and Lieutenant Freman. It so happened that they were soon afterwards taken prisoner by Captain Sheetz's company and were carried to Capon Bridge. They there saw and recognized Lieutenant Blue, and learned his name. Either by exchange or other means they returned to the



federal camp at Romney, and were there in the spring of 1862, after the confederates under General Loring had left the county. They had informed the officers that Lieutenant Blue was one of the spies who had been seen on the mountain, and it thereafter became an object of special importance to effect his capture. It was not deemed difficult to do this, as his father, Garrett I. Blue, lived a few miles below Romney, and it was reported that Lieutenant Blue occasionally visited his father. The house was watched. The lieutenant had no idea that any special effort would be made to discover and capture him; so, about ten o'clock at night, late in March or early in April, 1862, he stealthily entered his father's house. Three hours afterwards he was captured and was taken to Romney under guard, and was confined in a room up-stairs, nearly opposite the court house. As he entered the room he saw a two-pound iron weight on the mantle, and put it in his pocket, not with any particular object in view, but with a vague idea that it might be useful in breaking a door-lock if he had an opportunity. He remained in the room about a week, under guard, but suffered no hardships. His friends were permitted to carry him food, and to visit him, and he was tolerably well satisfied. But one day Colonel Downey came in and began questioning him about his business in that part of the country while his comrades in arms were in a distant place. Mr. Blue declined to answer, and the colonel became enraged, threatening to run him through with his sword. He accused Blue of being a spy, and said he had proof of it, and would send him to Wheeling for trial, and that would be the last of him.

The shutters of the windows from that time were closed. No friends were permitted to visit him or send him anything. His guard was doubled. He was fed on bread and water, and very little of that. He remained there till Easter Sunday. He had been told to prepare for the trip to Wheeling next day. His father had visited him, and had



warned him against attempting to escape, as he would scarcely be able to do so, and the attempt might cost him his life. But he had made up his mind to escape if he could, for he did want to go Wheeling to be tried as a spy.

When the guard came in for the night, ten of them, all armed, the prospect of escape was not bright. They prepared to spend the night in the room, as the air was cold outside. About midnight all lay down to sleep but two, one corporal and the other a soldier who sat with his back against the door. Blue lay down during the early part of the night, but toward morning, complaining of being cold, he walked across the floor. The corporal was sitting by the stand, resting his head on his arm, apparently asleep. All the others were snoring lustily, except the soldier with his back against the door. He was wide awake. Lieutenant Blue waited for his time to come; but day was breaking and his last hope of escape seemed to be passing. There was only one chance left, and that was a desperate one. As he passed the soldier at the door he struck him on the head with the iron weight which he had carried in his pocket. His purpose was to stun the soldier, seize his musket, bayonet any others who might awake, spring out at the door and trust luck to escape by flight. The soldier sank to the floor without a groan. No one awoke. Blue drew him aside, picked up a musket, a blue overcoat and a cap; put the cap on, threw the coat over his shoulders, opened the door and stepped out. The key was in the lock, outside. He turned the key, passed down stairs and found broad daylight outside. His first impulse was to run, but the street was full of soldiers, and to run would attract notice and lead to his capture. He walked carelessly along, turned into an alley, and reached the foot of the hill east of the old cemetery. Then, being out of sight of the soldiers, he took to his heels. He gained the top of the hill, when a dozen guns were fired, giving the alarm. Pausing a moment among some bushes where he was out of sight, he watched



the movements of the soldiers. He saw one squad of cavalry start down toward the river, another up the pike toward Frenchburg, while a squad of infantry took his track up the hill. There was snow on the ground. The pursuit was vigorous. Once he was so near a company of cavalry that he heard the men laying plans for his capture. He reached the brook which empties into the river near the residence of William Stump, and by wading in that he threw his pursuers off the track. A dense fog settled down and the snow melted, both favorable for his escape. He endeavored to follow the range of hills leading south, facing the river. In the afternoon the fog lifted, and, to his surprise, he found himself within half a mile of Romney. He had traveled in a circuit. He started again, and keeping certain well-known objects in sight, he reached the house of D. J. Parsons, seven or eight miles above Romney, and learned that his pursuers had been there a few minutes before. He procured a horse and rode to Joseph Archey's, where he spent the night. The next morning he was so stiffened by travel and exposure that he could scarcely move. That day he made his way to a shanty on Big mountain, a rendezvous for confederates who found it necessary to keep in hiding. He there found Isaac Pancake, George Stump and others, and he remained there a week.

He never ascertained to a certainty whether he had killed the guard whom he had struck. A prisoner named John Smith, who was in the room at the time, said that the man died soon after, but the statement was denied by others. The corporal who had permitted the escape was punished by being compelled to wear a barrel shirt, that is, a flour barrel with holes cut for his head and arms.

*Taking Chances.*—Constant association with danger makes men reckless. There is an element in the makeup of men which loves romance; it takes pleasure in doing unusual things; it runs unnecessary risks for the sake of the excitement. Of course, Lieutenant John Blue



was marked for destruction after his spying expedition became known, and especially after he had assaulted the guard in Romney and had made his escape. Word was sent among the union soldiers that they must be constantly on the outlook for him, and, if possible, take him at all hazards. Yet, in the face of this danger, which he well knew, he ventured again within the union lines in Hampshire county. It was after the second battle of Bull Run, in 1862. General Imboden was ordered into Hampshire county, and Lieutenant Blue accompanied him for the purpose of visiting his home. He approached his father's house in the night, and saw a soldier on the porch doing picket duty. The barn was a short distance from the house, and Blue went there, and climbing to the haymow, waited for his father to come out in the morning to feed the horses. At daybreak the old gentleman came, and was surprised to see his son; but urged him to make his escape, telling him that pickets were posted at the house day and night, during the night on the porch, and during the day on a hill some rods in front of the house. The lieutenant said he wanted to go to the house, and would take his chances. He asked his father for the red blouse he wore, which Mr. Blue gave him, and returned in his shirt sleeves to the house. Lieutenant Blue waited till the relief guard came on and took his post on the eminence in front of the door, and then, with the blouse on, he walked leisurely to the house, the guard not doubting but that it was the old gentleman. He went up stairs and remained a week. Frequently the soldiers were in the room below him, and he heard them talking about him and asking when he had been heard from. His sister told them the last letter she had from him he was in the vicinity of Richmond.

At length, one Sunday morning he was lying on the floor upstairs, listening to the guards who were in the room below. A soldier came down the road at a gallop, calling to the pickets, "Run, Imboden is coming." The soldiers



took to their heels up the hill, and when about one hundred yards off, Lieutenant Blue showed himself on the porch and told them not to be in a hurry, there was no need of running from rebels, as they had been in the same house with one for a week. They stopped, and seemed about to come back; but after considering the matter a moment, they again took to their heels. Lieutenant Blue left the county with Imboden.

*A Prisoner in Cumberland.*—Having made so lucky an escape, Lieutenant Blue concluded to tempt fate once more in Hampshire county, and accordingly came into the neighborhood below Romney and spent a few days visiting among friends. While there, Captain Stump's company of confederates came into the vicinity, and Lieutenant Blue felt safe. One evening he visited the house where Garrett Parsons now lives, to attend a social gathering. Isaac Parsons was then at home, and he and Blue rode down to Old House run, where they saw a small squad of soldiers, and mistook them for rebels, supposing them to be a portion of Captain Stump's company. But they were yankees. Parsons and Blue wheeled their horses and galloped back, the yankees after them. They were heard coming by the ladies of Mr. Parsons' house, one of whom ran out and opened a gate leading up a ravine to the left of the road. Blue and Parsons galloped in, and before the pursuers could enter, the gate was shut and locked by the young lady. The soldiers lost some time in breaking it open, and this enabled Isaac Parsons to make his escape; but Lieutenant Blue attempted to ride up a steep hill, could not do it, and was thus overtaken by half a dozen soldiers who had fired all the loads from their guns, and who came at Blue with their sabres, threatening to hack him to pieces. He had only a revolver, and that, too, was empty, he having fired all the loads during his retreat up the road. He sprang from his horse, laid the pistol across the saddle, and by threatening death, destruction, and all



general and particular terrors to any man who approached him, he kept the soldiers at bay. They seemed drunk, and swore dreadfully, but were afraid to approach him. Lieutenant Summers, who was in command of the party, came up and told Blue he would better surrender, as he was overpowered, and it was foolish to throw his life away. "I have been waiting," said he, "for a chance to surrender. These men seem to be drunk, and threaten to kill me." "I will see that you are not hurt," replied Lieutenant Summers, and Lieutenant Blue threw down his pistol and surrendered. He was taken to Cumberland, expecting to be tried on the old charge of spying; but the federals had either forgotten it or had decided to let it drop. He was treated with marked kindness by Colonel Porter and General Kelley, and instead of being sent to the guardhouse he was allowed to go where he pleased, upon his word that he would not leave Cumberland. Colonel Porter gave him ten dollars for expenses. As strange fortune had it, he met Lieutenant Cole on the street, the same who had discovered him when he was spying for Stonewall Jackson in 1861. He was invited to board with the yankee lieutenant, and did so, free of charge. In a short time he was called before General Kelley, who permitted him to return home upon his promise to stay there until further orders.

He returned home, and before leaving Cumberland bought gray cloth for a new uniform, paying for it with the ten dollars given him by Colonel Porter. He remained at home three months, assisting his father on the farm. One day a yankee soldier galloped up and gave him a letter from General Kelley, ordering him to come to Cumberland at once, or he would be arrested. Instead of reporting in Cumberland, Lieutenant Blue reported in Dixie. He and John Lynn, one of McNeill's men, made their way through the lines, and Blue had a new uniform made from his gray cloth, and wore it on the Gettysburg campaign, where he was wounded and sent to the hospital.



*Prisoners Rescued by McNeill.*—Lieutenant Blue had no sooner recovered from the wound received at Gettysburg than he again came into Hampshire county. He was not yet able to wear a boot on the crippled foot. There were no federal soldiers in Romney at that time, nor nearer than Cumberland, as far as he knew. But a troop of "Blincker's Dutch" came from Winchester and spread over the county. Having learned of the arrival of the union troops, Lieutenant Blue, accompanied by Ephriam Herriott and John Inskeep, started for Virginia by way of Hardy county, believing that to be the safest road. After dodging scouting parties some time, they succeeding in reaching Lost river, where they considered themselves safe. They stopped for dinner at Angus Wood's, a place where not a yankee soldier had been seen during the war, up to that time. They sat down to dinner, and were progressing well, when a yankee rode up to the house, and presently a dozen or more followed him. They came into the house and took them all prisoners, mistaking Blue for a colonel, because his new uniform was that of a colonel. They seemed very proud of their capture, and guarded Blue carefully. He had some letters in his pocket which if they should fall into the hands of the federals, might cause trouble for some of the people of Hampshire. At his first opportunity he passed them to Mrs. Wood, together with his pocketbook; but a soldier detected the movement and demanded that Mrs. Wood give the letters up. She said it was a pocketbook which had been passed to her. The soldier then demanded the pocketbook, saying that it was just what he wanted. Mrs. Wood handed her own pocketbook to the soldier and he was satisfied.

The prisoners, including George Turley, who was also in the hands of federals, were put on horses and the cavalcade set forward. It was soon ascertained by the prisoners, from the conversation of their captors, that the federals were in that country hunting for Captain McNeill;



and, as subsequently ascertained, McNeill was also in the country hunting for the federals. When two parties are in the same district, hunting for each other, and truly desirous of finding the object of their search, they are usually successful. During the day one of McNeill's men, Frank Maloney, was seen near the road, was fired upon and wounded in the thigh. But he continued to run, and having crossed a field in open view, and in a shower of bullets, reached a thicket and escaped. Joseph Williams, a prisoner, made his escape during the day by putting spurs to his horse and dashing into the woods. He was well acquainted with the county, and went straight to McNeill's men.

The union troops now began to grow uneasy. They were certain that McNeill knew more of their movements than they knew of his; and he had it in his power to fight where he pleased, while they must accept battle wherever offered. If the federals had entertained doubts that McNeill was in the vicinity, those doubts were soon expelled. While moving cautiously down the road, they met several small boys who were on their way home with buckets of huckleberries which they had picked in the woods. They stood in a row on the upper side of the road, watching the soldiers pass. At length one of them piped out: "Captain McNeill 's down the road a-waitin' for you." The federal officers were aware that children sometimes tell very important truths without being conscious of it. The children were questioned, coaxed and threatened, but not another word of information could be gotten from them. They had evidently believed at first that they were addressing rebels, but discovering them to be yankees, the boys' lips were sealed. After vainly trying to ascertain from the children where McNeill was, the soldiers marched on, and orders were given to shoot the prisoners in case of an attack.

McNeill was waiting by the road. He posted his men



on both sides, with orders not to fire until he fired first. He was afraid of killing the prisoners, and it was his intention not to fire at all unless he could ascertain whether the prisoners were in front or rear. He considered it better to permit the cavalcade to pass than to kill the prisoners. Night came on, a very dark one. Sometime after dark the federals were heard coming. McNeill had taken his position behind a tree near the road, and was peering out, trying to see where the prisoners were, when he was discovered by a yankee, who raised his revolver and fired. It was an unfortunate shot for the federals. It did not hurt McNeill, but his men took it for the expected signal to begin the fight. Instantly a volley was poured in from both sides of the road. The darkness of the night was lit by the flash of revolvers. The federals sprang from their horses and tried to fight, but the rain of lead came so thick and fast that what few were left fled for their lives. About a dozen got away, while between thirty and forty were left dead or wounded in the road. The prisoners escaped injury, except Ephraim Herriott, who was wounded in the arm. A boy who was acting as pilot for the federals, was shot through the lungs, but he recovered, and was afterwards pensioned by the government. Captain McNeill sent a prisoner to Moorefield for a surgeon to attend the wounded, and then passed up the South fork. The fight occurred near Howards lick, in Hardy county.



# CHAPTER L.



## STONEWALL JACKSON IN ROMNEY.

Early in January, 1862, Stonewall Jackson captured Romney. There was little opposition. General Lander left a few hours before the confederates arrived. Jackson was in command of this part of the state, and he regarded Romney as of considerable importance, and left General Loring to hold the town with a force deemed sufficient to resist successfully any union troops in the vicinity. Having established Loring in Romney, Jackson returned to Winchester, and soon after this resigned from the army of the Southern Confederacy. This is a point in history not generally known, and but imperfectly understood. A true account of his resignation, and his reasons for that step, is properly given in detail in the history of Hampshire county; for he was prompted to that action because the secretary of war for the Southern Confederacy interfered with his plans at Romney, and undid his work. Following is a history of the matter:

Jackson left Loring in Romney and returned to Winchester. Shortly afterward, January 31, 1862, J. P. Benjamin, secretary of war for the Southern Confederacy, ordered Jackson to recall Loring and his troops from Romney to Winchester, having taken this step without consulting Jackson or ascertaining what his plans were. This was resented by Jackson, who, under date of January 31, 1862, wrote to the secretary of war as follows:

“Your order requiring me to direct General Loring to return with his command to Winchester immediately has been received and promptly complied with. With such



interference with my command I cannot expect to be of much service in the field, and accordingly respectfully request to be ordered to report for duty to the superintendent of the Virginia Military Institute at Lexington, as has been done in the case of other professors. Should this application not be granted, I respectfully request that the president will accept my resignation from the army. I am, sir, very respectfully, your obedient servant,

“T. J. JACKSON.”

As soon as the secretary of war received Jackson's resignation he sent an officer to Governor Letcher to acquaint him with the fact, and the governor hastened to the war office and urged Mr. Benjamin not to take action in the matter until General Jackson could be heard from further. The secretary agreed to the governor's proposal, and the resignation was laid aside. Returning to his office Governor Letcher wrote a long and earnest letter to General Jackson at Winchester, urging him to recall his letter. Scarcely was this letter finished when a letter from Jackson, written January 31, the date of his resignation, was delivered to Governor Letcher, saying:

“Governor: This morning I received an order from the secretary of war to order General Loring and his command to fall back from Romney to Winchester immediately. The order was promptly complied with, but, as the order was given without consulting me, and is abandoning to the enemy what has cost much preparation, expense and exposure to secure, and is in direct conflict with my military plans, and implies a want of confidence in my capacity to judge when General Loring's troops should fall back, and is an attempt to control military operations in detail from the secretary's desk at a distance, I have, for the reason set forth in the accompanying paper, requested to be ordered back to the institute; and if this is denied me, then to have my resignation accepted. I ask as a special favor that you will have me ordered back to the institute. As a single



order like that of the secretary's may destroy the entire fruits of a campaign, I cannot reasonably expect, if my operations are thus to be interfered with, to be of much service in the field. A sense of duty brought me into the field and has thus far kept me. It now appears to be my duty to return to the institute, and I hope that you will leave no stone unturned to get me there. If I have ever acquired, through the blessings of Providence, any influence over troops, this undoing of my work by the secretary may greatly diminish my influence. I regard the recent expedition as a great success. Before our troops left here, January 1, there was not, so far as I have been able to ascertain, a single loyal man in Morgan county who could remain at home in safety. In four days that county was entirely evacuated by the enemy; Romney and the most valuable portion of Hampshire county were recovered without firing a gun, and before we had even entered the county. I desire to say nothing against the secretary of war. I take it for granted that he has done what he believed to be best, but I regard such a policy ruinous.

"T. J. JACKSON."

The letter which Governor Letcher wrote to General Jackson was carried by Colonel Boteler, and he returned with Jackson's reply, in which he consented to have his resignation withdrawn from the files of the war office. This was done. The resignation was entrusted to the keeping of Governor Letcher. When the confederates retreated from Richmond this paper was forgotten, and would have been lost had not the governor's mother secured it, with other papers, and carried it to a place of safety.

*Skirmish at Peter Poland's.*—In April, 1862, a fight occurred near Grassy Lick, at the residence of Peter Poland, between a company of federals and a dozen or more men who were preparing to enter the confederate service. At that time a man styling himself Captain Umbaugh was



in that part of Hampshire county raising a company for the confederate service. He claimed to have authority from Stonewall Jackson, but it was subsequently learned that he had no authority. He collected a dozen or more men and would perhaps have raised a company if his career had not been cut short. Colonel Downey of the union army, went out from Romney with one company, on April 22, 1862, looking for Captain Umbaugh's men, and any other confederates he might find. They came to the house of Peter Poland and took his son, Peter Poland, jr., prisoner. The young man was a confederate soldier and was visiting his father. Sometime after the federals left, Captain Umbaugh, with a dozen of his men, came to Mr. Poland's to spend the night. About three o'clock in the morning the federals returned and called upon the men to surrender. They refused to do so, and a fight immediately began. The yankees fired through the doors and windows. The walls were so thick that bullets would not come through. The members of the family protected themselves the best they could from the bullets, but one came through the door and struck Peter Poland's arm. The same bullet wounded Isaiah W. Pownall. Jasper Pownall, who was in the house, was also wounded. Peter Poland's wound proved fatal two weeks later. When daylight came the men in the house killed three federals and the others withdrew. Captain Umbaugh took advantage of the situation and retreated with his men. In a short time the federals returned with reinforcements from Romney, bringing artillery with which to batter the house down. Troops also arrived from Moorefield and Petersburg. But there was no one in the house to oppose them, and they notified Mrs. Poland and her daughters to take their furniture out of the house. They said they would give her two hours to get the things out. She commenced removing the furniture, but in less than fifteen minutes the building was set on fire. The soldiers loaded the household goods on wag-



ons and hauled them off. It is said there are persons in an adjoining county still sleeping on beds stolen from Mr. Poland's house. His property was destroyed or carried off, and the inmates were turned out of doors. Mr. Poland's family consisted of his sons, Richard, James C., Peter, William, Isaac, Jasper and Frank M. His daughters were: Elizabeth, who afterwards married John Haire, who was in the house at the time of the fight; Hannah, who married Isaiah Haire, and Mary C., who married Amos Roberson.

*Captain Umbaugh Killed.*—Captain Umbaugh, whose fraudulent claim to being an officer in the confederate service led to the death of Peter Poland and the burning of his house, continued to roam about Hampshire until he met his death and caused the death of others. In May, 1862, he was at the house of J. T. Wilson where he was surprised by the federals. He was shot and killed. At the same time and place John W. Poland was killed and William H. Poland was wounded and taken prisoner.

*The Grassy Lick Militia.*—When the Civil war began, the Grassy Lick militia was under Captain John H. Piles. It was the one hundred and fourteenth regiment of Virginia militia. It served one year and was then disbanded, many of the men joining the regular confederate army. Following are the names of the members of this company, as made up from memory, the official roll having been lost: John H. Piles, captain; William Pownell, first lieutenant; Mathew Combs, second lieutenant; Samuel Albright, first sergeant; J. J. Ruckman, corporal; privates: George Bowman, Andrew Bowman, Peyton Combs, Absalom Combs, James Cool, Joseph Civil, Elisha Heare, Frank Heare, Isaiah Heare, Jasper Heare, Jonathan Heare, John Heare, Lucas Hines, Jacob Hines, Henry Hines, David Hott, John Hott, James Hott, Peter Haines, John Herbaugh, William Loy, jr., Samuel Loy, Jackson Lee, Jared McDonald, James McDonald, Samuel McDonald, Archibald McDonald, Mordecai Orndoff, John Piles, Rector Piles,



John Park, Samuel Park, Solomon Park, Ashford Park, Benjamin Park, Peter Poland, sr., Craven Poland, Richard Poland, Peter Poland, William Poland, James Pepper, Hampton Peer, J. T. Ruckman, James Ruckman, James Starkey, Frederick Starkey, John Swisher, George Swisher, Stephen Swisher, John Tharp, Samuel Tharp, William Timbrook, Isaac Timbrook, Joseph Timbrook, David Wolford. James Yost.

*Captain Piles' Company.*—When the Grassy Lick militia disbanded in the second year of the war, Captain John H. Piles and a number of his men entered the regular army of the confederacy as Company K, electing John H. Piles as captain. The company became a portion of Colonel George Imboden's regiment, and belonged to General John Imboden's cavalry brigade. The roll of Company K, gathered from the memory of those living and from a partial record kept by B. F. McDonald, was as follows: John H. Piles, captain; Jere Monroe, first lieutenant; Jefferson Carter, second lieutenant; Jacob Carvell, third lieutenant; Benjamin F. McDonald, first sergeant; Benjamin Monroe, second sergeant; B. F. Klump, third sergeant, Bond Hook, fourth sergeant; Henry Hiett, fifth sergeant. Privates, Joseph Brill, J. T. Ruckman, S. H. Williams, Isaac Brill, W. P. Brill, Andrew Bowman, H. Brill, Mr. Bean, son of Aaron Bean; L. E. Brill, Lon Burch, Samuel Burch, L. P. Brill, Walker Saville, O. Bowman, Joseph Saville, Peter A. Saville, W. Garner, John W. Haines, James Haines, Bond Hook, Benjamin Hott, John Hott, David Hott, Edward Heare, Jasper Heare, Jonathan Heare, Velentine Kump, Amos Kump, Jonathan Lupton, James G. Lupton, George W. Maphas, Benjamin Monroe, Jared McDonald, George W. McDonald, Rector Piles, Hampton Peer, Peter Poland, William Poland, James Pepper, J. J. Ruckman, John W. Ruckman, Velentine Ruckman, Thomas Ruckman, Joseph Swisher, S. W. Swisher, Gibson Timbrook, Washington Walker, Jacob Emmart,



Courtney Garvin, G. W. Haines, Benjamin Heare, Benjamin Hott, S. J. Kump, W. B. Pepper, W. Pounall, J. W. Stump, Joseph Timberlake, G. Timberlake, William Hengleshee, S. H. Williams, Richard Poland, Joseph Pepper.

*McMackin's Militia.*—A company of militia, about eighty in number, was organized early in the war under Thomas McMackin as captain, Joseph Berry, lieutenant, and Conrad Wilbert, second lieutenant. No roll of the company exists, but among the members were Robert Noland, Henry C. Swisher, Adam Kaylor, William Ginevan, Peter Stump, Jacob Stump, John Stump, William Hass, Hugh Cowgill, James Saville, William Blaze, John Largent, William Sherwood, Luther Burkett, Kennison Bonham, George S. Arnold, Charles French, James I. Taylor, Thomas Kaylor, Andrew Kaylor. This company was delegated to guard the district along North river, and was occupied with that work during the summer of 1861 and the early part of 1862. After about one year of service the company went to Winchester, where it disbanded. Some of the men joined other companies and some returned to their homes.

*A Sentinel's Mistake.*—Rising several hundred feet above the channel of North river is a rock jutting out from the summit of Ice mountain. McMackin's militia company's camp was near the river at the base of the mountain. It was the custom to place a sentinel on that pinnacle, which is called Raven Rock, at daybreak and keep him there all day. It was his duty to watch the surrounding country for the approach of enemies. From that elevated station the region for miles around lies in full view; and a sentinel with a good glass could easily discover troops approaching and could give the alarm in time for the militia in the camp below to prepare for action. The duty of standing guard on the pinnacle usually devolved upon H. L. Swisher; but on a certain day, which the militia had occasion long to remember, an inexperienced man was placed



on the rocky watch tower, while the experienced sentinel, accompanied by William Sherwood, went hunting. The new man had not been long on his elevated post when he saw an unusual object rising over an eminence where one of the country roads crossed a ridge in the direction of Springfield. He had not long to wait before he satisfied himself that yankee cavalry was approaching. Down from the rocks he went to give the alarm in the camp below where the rebels were whiling away the time, unconscious of their danger. The startling intelligence produced the greatest consternation. The militia had been waiting a long time for a chance to fight the yankees, but they did not care to rush into the jaws of death by meeting the advancing cavalry, which, as the sentinel declared, "made the road blue for miles." They accordingly rushed the other way. They broke camp double quick, abandoning what they could not carry away, and up the road they went on a run, crossed the mountains and continued their retreat till they reached Sandy Ridge, several miles distant. Major Devers, who resides at the foot of Ice mountain, finally succeeded in rallying them, and they made a stand. But the yankees never put in an appearance, and a battle was averted. The yankees came suddenly upon William Sherwood and Henry Swisher, who were absent when the retreat began, and took the former prisoner, but the latter made his escape. Great was the mortification of the confederate militia when they learned that the federal cavalry which had "made the road blue for miles," consisted of only seven men. But these seven men had accomplished wonders. They had driven eighty militia and had burned a number of houses about North river mills, and then retired unpursued.



# CHAPTER LI



## ENLISTING COMPANIES.

Below will be found a list of the officers and men in Company I, Eighteenth Virginia Cavalry, in the confederate service. Nearly all the men were from Hampshire county: D. E. Beall, captain; Patrick McCarty, first lieutenant; Jacob Worden, second lieutenant; John Pennington, third lieutenant; John Horn, orderly sergeant; Joseph Godlove, second sergeant; Levy Crawford, third sergeant; William Wilson, fourth sergeant; Jonathan Tharp, corporal; John Sisler, second corporal; Benjamin Wilson, third corporal; Jacob Schafer, fourth corporal. Privates—David Godlove, Isaac Godlove, John A. Godlove, Abraham Ditawic, John Ditawic, Benjamin Ditawic, George Swisher, Benjamin Swisher, Simon Swisher, William Hishman, Philip Hishman, John Hishman, Nicholas Hishman, Noah Tunkhouser, James H. Tunkhouser, John Cline, Joseph Hetzel, John Wilson, Thomas B. Wilson, Tilberry Orndoff, John W. Orndoff, Jacob Harris, David Harris, John Harris, William B. Cleggett, James Cleggett, Benjamin Liggett, Baker Liggett, Adam Tharp, James Tharp, George Rhodeheffer, Isaac Shoemaker, Jacob Orndorff, Hezekiah Williams, John Williams, Perry Williams, Jacob Williams, John Williams, Albert Halterman, Ambrose Halterman, Jackson Halterman, Morgan Halterman, Joseph Siple, George Siple, Watson Stover, Sylvester Stover, William Armstrong, Gibson Armstrong, Edward Armstrong, Elias Cokenhour, Jacob Cokenhour, D. H. Knee, Cypress Tishwaters, Anthony Reid, Patrick McCormick, William Sisler, Charles M. Schnell, Jacob Rudolph, Charles



Rosebrock, John Grady, Abraham Wilkins, James McMahon, John Lawrence, James Roach, Arthur Wells, Malachi Hussey, William Varner, John Rankins, Perry Farrow, James Michaels, Jacob Michaels, John Rynwood, Abraham Barry, John Jones, William Finley, John T. Harroll, Jacob Conrod, John Tyler, Benjamin McKeever, Sason Frye, William B. Eggleson, Jacob Ludwich, Joseph Snyder, George W. Stubblefield, Simeon Sandaker, Joseph Hammon.

*Captain Mathew Ginevan's Company.*—Company C, Eighteenth Virginia Cavalry, confederate, was organized by Captain Mathew Ginevan, and the majority of the men were from the Levels and Little Capon. The roll of the company, as complete as it can be made out at the present time, is as follows: Mathew Ginevan, captain; S. B. Patterson, first lieutenant; D. K. Higby, second lieutenant; Luther Ginevan, third lieutenant; William Delaplain, first sergeant; A. T. Pugh, second sergeant; Frank Pownall, third sergeant. Privates—Valentine Gillespie, George Bowman, James Flora, Thomas Youst, Peter Youst, Peter Barnes, S. F. Hardy, A. R. Eli, Ezra Eli, Silas Shanholtzer, Minor Shanholtzer, Martin Shanholtzer, Benjamin Shanholtzer, John Robinson, R. T. Robinson, R. J. Householder, J. T. Pownall, F. Odnalt, Joseph McAtee, Willey McKee, Lewis Emmett, Samuel McKee, Isaac Pepper, John Ruckman, B. J. Powell, Thomas Messick, James Cheshire, Frederick Manck, John O. Saville, George Saville, William Thompson, R. J. Thompson, S. E. Pugh, S. J. Pugh, J. J. Pugh, P. C. Haines, Samuel Baker. Captain Ginevan's company saw active service from the first. In the battle of Gettysburg he was severely wounded, and it is thought by some that he never fully recovered. He died at Piedmont. David Ginevan was the miller at Ginevan mill, on Little Capon, two miles from the mouth; and when the company was made up he was excused from service in the army, according to law, that he might remain and grind



the people's grain. Lieutenant Luther Ginevan was a very strong man, active and courageous. Once, when his brother, Captain Ginevan, was surrounded by four yankees, who endeavored to take him prisoner, Luther ran in with his sword and compelled all four of them to beat a hasty retreat.

*A Fighting Horse.*—Luther Ginevan succeeded his brother as captain of the company. He had a remarkable horse, which he rode throughout the war. It soon learned to look upon a blue coat as an enemy, and it endeavored to do its share of fighting. This was particularly the case when, as happened on two or three occasions, the rider was dismounted and the federals tried to capture the horse. The animal bit, kicked and struck them and would not be taken, but fought its way back to the rebel lines and reached its owner. Captain Luther Ginevan brought the horse home with him at the close of the war, and it was looked upon as long as it lived as a war-scarred veteran. Luther Ginevan was killed twenty years after the close of the war by being thrown from a wagon.

*Captain Lovet's Company.*—This was Company E, Twenty-third Virginia Cavalry. It was organized in Hampshire county, and the following is the roll, so far as it can be made out from the memory of survivors: Captain, J. Mort Lovet; first lieutenant, Beverly Lockard; second lieutenant, Oscar Bywaters; third lieutenant, Walter Largent; first sergeant, Joseph Oliver, killed at Charlestown, 1863. Privates—Toney Hayden, killed at Darkville, 1864; John Staller, killed at Bunker Hill, 1864; James Brathwaight, wounded at Berry's ferry, 1863; Samuel Swartz, wounded in 1864; J. W. Short, wounded in 1863; Walter Nixon, John Nixon, Harrison Brill, Frederick Spaid, Asa McKeever, Dorsey Reed, George Pugh, Jonathan Pugh, George Elick, Hugh Pense, George Sheetz, Nicholas Goff, Berry Brine, William Newbanks, John Laire, David Laire,



James Baker, Andre Baker, killed in 1864; John Baker, Tip Lockhard, Algerne Lockard, Daniel Miller.

Captain Lovet was badly wounded in 1862, and never recovered, although he lived a few years. In 1863 he was taken prisoner, and did not gain his freedom until the close of the war. Soon after returning home he died from the effect of his wound and from hard treatment while in prison.

*Captain Sheetz's Company.*—Following is the roll of Company F, Seventh Virginia Cavalry: Captains, George F. Sheetz, killed at Brickston station, May 23, 1862; Isaac Kuykendall, captured while on recruiting service in Hampshire county, February 19, 1864; first lieutenant, Angus W. McDonald, resigned; second lieutenant, George H. Baker; first sergeant, John C. Leps; second sergeant, J. H. Cunningham, captured at Moorefield, December 3, 1862; third sergeant, Anthony Cain; fourth sergeant, Charles W. Smoot; fifth sergeants, G. F. Cunningham, captured at Moorefield, December 3, 1862; George Mathias; second corporal, D. W. Dawson, captured at Culpeper court house, September 13, 1863; third corporals, James D. Pollack, W. W. Houseworth; third and fourth corporal, Hiram Allen; first and second sergeant, Johnson John. These all enlisted in 1861. The officers who enlisted in 1862 were: First and second lieutenant and fourth sergeant, James T. Parker, captured while on detached service, February 21, 1864; second lieutenant and second sergeant, C. H. Vandiver, taken prisoner, April 19, 1862, and wounded, June 27, 1864; first sergeant, A. C. Harness; first corporal, James A. Parrill.

The following privates enlisted in 1861: Elijah Allen, John S. Arnold, Eugene Alexander, Samuel Berry, James A. Bane, Levi M. Baker, James Bonney, M. B. Y. Bowers, J. S. P. Bowers, Jacob A. Baker, captured at Moorefield, December 3, 1862; Henry F. Baker, John W. Baker, Thomas Chaney, Jesse Cupp, captured at Culpeper court house,



September 13, 1863; J. H. C. Cunningham, William H. Cahill, wounded, April 9, 1862, arm broken; Joseph A. Cahill, George F. Cunningham, B. F. Clark, Reuben S. Davis, D. W. Dawson, Robert Doustbill, C. B. Davis, Robert Edwards, William D. Ewing, George W. Everett, Samuel C. Engle, John B. Fay, James Gill, Thomas Goldborough, captured, December 25, 1863; Charles A. C. Gates, Jacob Gassman, William Grayson, C. H. Gates, A. C. Harness, Joseph Honmon, W. W. Houseworth, Samuel A. High, John F. High, W. B. Harrison, W. H. Harmon, taken prisoner; T. A. Hollenback, James Hiett, Malcolm G. Harmon, Thomas Harrison, Thomas M. Healey, Samuel I. Heltzel, wounded, July 3, 1863; Jacob B. Heironimus, Jonathan Harrison, Isaac E. Harrison, James S. Hutton, J. S. Harlan, James Inskeep, died, May 24, 1862; William V. Inskeep, wounded at Staunton, May 9, 1862; Elias L. Irving, John S. Inskeep, captured in Hampshire; Isaac H. Johnson, died, June 13, 1862; John Johnson, Robert Johnston, wounded at Charlestown, October 6, 1862; J. W. Kuykendall, captured, January 15, 1862; John T. Kelley, captured in Maryland, July 9, 1863; Patrick Kelley, wounded and captured, July 11, 1862; Joseph Kechley, captured at Culpeper court house, September 11, 1863; George A. Kechley, captured in Maryland, July 9, 1863; James F. Lease, John W. Lease, taken prisoner; George W. Lease, taken prisoner; William W. Leps, Isaac Liller, William L. Lamar, James C. Liggett, William Lyons, Joshua M. Lovett, Benjamin Milleson, Joseph L. Moore, Smith T. McKee, Harry C. Millen, George Mathias, B. F. McCauley, Michael I. Mortz, Samuel Myers, Thomas O'Neal, Jonathan Offutt, James O'Brien, Daniel Power, William H. Parrie, James A. Parrie, James H. Parrie, John T. Pearce, John C. Parran, Silas R. Pancake, John W. Pugh, James N. Pugh, R. C. Price, James H. Rines, wounded at Upperville, June 21, 1863; John D. Rines, John F. Stover, Washington M. Skelton, Amos Shillingburg, James D. Short, Isaac Smit



Henry I. Shriver, captured, January 24, 1862; John H. Shriver, John Shaw, John M. Seymour, Frederick W. Sheetz, William Smith, C. H. Sisk, captured at Culpeper court house, September 13, 1863; Robert J. Tilden, arm broken in fight at Romney, September 25, 1861; James H. Taylor, wounded near Charlestown, October 6, 1862; Burbridge C. Trenum, William W. Throckmorton, captured in Maryland, July 9, 1863; James H. Vance, Charles W. Vanmeter, captured in Maryland, July 9, 1863; David P. Vanmeter, captured in Maryland, July 9, 1863, R. B. Vanmeter, Isaac Vanmeter, John W. Vanhorn, Charles F. Vest, captured in Hampshire county, February 21, 1864; J. W. Vawter, Martin F. Wright, Jacob Worden, Robert W. Welch, Lewis Welch, James Worden, captured, November 1, 1862; William Worden, Aaron Welton, Patrick Digman, taken prisoner, November 1, 1862, and again in Hardy county, February 21, 1864; Thomas I. McCord, taken prisoner in Pennsylvania, July 6, 1863; J. D. Pollock, W. L. Parsons, George W. Shoemaker, captured at Moorefield, December 3, 1862; John Ullum, taken prisoner in Pennsylvania, July 6, 1863; D. G. Vanmeter, wounded, July 3, 1863; Joseph V. Williams, James S. Welton, captured at Culpeper court house, September 13, 1863; Charles I. Bowers, William I. Coyner, captured at Moorefield, October 1, 1863; Maurice Healey, David Jones, captured at Culpeper court house, September 13, 1863; James M. Maslin, J. Wesley Pugh, Rufus Taylor, taken prisoner at Culpeper court house, September 13, 1863; Edwin P. Vanmeter, captured at Culpeper court house, September 13, 1863; James A. Zell, captured at the same time; Robert R. Zell, William H. Maslin, L. H. Davis, E. C. Rinehart, R. V. Sherrard, John Tvalor, Hilton Vanmeter, James W. Wood.

*Captain Kuykendall Captured.*—While on picket duty near Charlestown, Jefferson county, the federals being in possession of Harper's Ferry, Captain Isaac Kuykendall was taken prisoner. A squad of a dozen



or more confederate cavalry encountered a force too strong, and set out upon a retreat, closely pursued. At the top of a hill Captain Kuykendall saw that he would be overtaken, and ordered a charge, hoping thereby to cause the pursuers to halt and give him and his men a chance to get away. He wheeled his horse and started upon the charge, not observing until too late that his men were not following him. He went down the road alone, right toward the yankees, and would willingly have turned back if he could; but before he was able to check his horse, a bullet killed the animal, and he fell, throwing the rider and bruising his face on the macadamized road. He sprang to his feet, fired once with his pistol at the advancing federals, and then took to his heels up the road, while bullets from the yankee carbines made the dust fly about his feet. It grew too interesting for him in the highway, and he sprang over a fence and started for a clump of trees some distance away. One of his men, who had failed to follow him on the charge, had ridden back and called to him to jump on the horse behind the saddle and both could escape. Kuykendall ran to the fence to do so, but observing that the horse was too small to carry two, he said to the man, "Make your escape. I will do the best I can." The man galloped off.

Captain Kuykendall started again for the timber, but the chance of escape was past. The yankees called on him to surrender, and, seeing no other course open, he did so, and walked slowly back to the fence. Half a dozen of them reached for his watch, and, in spite of the pain of his bruised face and the unpleasant sensation of being a prisoner, he laughed at the silly looks which came over the faces of the yankees as they examined the watch which they had so unceremoniously taken from him. When he fell from the horse, the jar broke the works of his watch loose, they fell out and he left them in the road. The



covetous yankees, therefore, found themselves in possession of an empty case.

His face was bleeding profusely, but it was not hurt as badly as appearances indicated. The bruises were not deep. "You'd better leave the rebels and join my company," were the first words addressed to him by the federal captain when he came up. "I would rather be left dead in the road than to do it," was Kuykendall's reply. He was taken to Harper's Ferry, where he was treated with the greatest kindness by the officers, one of whom shared his room with the prisoner. The brave fight he had made before surrendering had attracted the attention and won the favor of the officers. They supplied him with money with which to buy clothing, of which he was badly in need. He was sent to Fort McHenry, near Baltimore, and after a few days he was exchanged. In speaking of his captivity, he said: "I found that all the good men were not on our side. There were men among the yankees who were as whole-souled and brave as could be found anywhere."

Captain Kuykendall was taken prisoner a second time in 1864, and was exchanged only a few weeks before Lee's surrender. He was in Hampshire on furlough, with John Inskeep, and they were surrounded and captured while at Michael Blue's house, near Springfield.

*Captain Sauls Wounded.*—While the Hampshire troops were stationed at Blue's gap, in 1861, a body of United States cavalry occupied Springfield. Captain Sheetz, of Company F, ascertained that the federals were in motion toward North river mills, and made an attack on them. The yankees fell back toward Springfield and were pursued. Captain Sauls, in command of the Union cavalry, was shot through the thigh, fell from his horse and was taken prisoner. He asked if Isaac Kuykendall was among the confederate force, and being answered in the affirmative, asked to see him. When Captain Kuykendall



came to him, Captain Sauls requested that a sled be obtained and he be taken to some house where he could be cared for till his men could send and get him. This request was granted, and the wounded captain was taken care of.

At that time Captain Kuykendall's father lived in Springfield, and being a well-known sympathizer with the south, he was subjected to no small annoyance from the union troops. When news reached Springfield that the union force had been attacked and the captain wounded and a prisoner, the federal troops in the town were furious, and declared they would burn Mr. Kuykendall's house in revenge; but before they carried their threat into execution they received word from their wounded captain, who mentioned the kindness shown him by Isaac Kuykendall. Because of this kindness on the part of the son, the father's property was saved; another proof that a kindly act seldom falls on barren soil.

*A Dangerous Ambuscade.*—Near Pargatsville in 1863, a fight occurred between parts of several companies of confederates on one side and the Ringgold cavalry on the other. The confederates were under the command of Captain Isaac Kuydendall of Company F. A portion of McNeill's company took part, and there were soldiers from other counties, Captain Ware from Virginia being among them. The confederates were in the vicinity of Moorefield when about thirty union cavalry appeared near Old Fields and halted when they saw the confederates. Colonel Harness ordered Captain Kuykendall to go in pursuit; and he at once did so with parts of several companies. McNeill joined in the pursuit after it had commenced. The federals began to move off when they saw the enemy approaching, and passed up the road toward Pargatsville. This road led to the head of Mill creek and down that stream to the lower country, and it was naturally supposed that the



scouting party was shaping its course for Keyser or Cumberlandland.

Before the federals had been pursued far, Captain Kuykendall noticed something mysterious in their movements. They did not appear trying to get away, but kept just out of reach of their pursuers. When the confederates moved quickly, the federals increased their speed; when the former slackened, the latter did likewise. It was apparent that they were courting pursuit, and the captain suspected that their purpose was to lead him into an ambushade. For this reason he advanced with great caution. At length some of the men grew impatient and clamored to be led to the charge. By this time McNeill had arrived and some of the men wanted him to lead. But Kuydendall remained in the front, and a general rush to overtake the yankees ensued. No order of march was observed. Up the road, pell mell, the confederates went, and the federals increased their speed. It was just as the cooler heads expected. In a short time the rebels were going back as fast as they had come. Turning a point of a hill, beneath an old field, a long line of blue burst in sight. It was an ambushade. A strong force of federals poured a volley from the hill and threw the confederates into confusion. So great was the difference of numbers that Captain Kuykendall saw he had no show. The whole force saw the same, and they turned and fled. Fortunately for the confederates, the union fire went over their heads. The order of a few minutes before was reversed. The confederates, instead of being the pursuers, were the pursued. Several were killed, but the slaughter was not so great as might have been expected. Near the head of Mill creek a road led up the hill, and some of the men, by mistake, took that road. This mistake probabably saved many of the confederates, for their pursuers were afraid to pass that road, believing that a trap had been set for them. Only a few passed; and two determined cavalrymen, with daring which became fool-



hardiness, pressed hard upon the rear of the retreating confederates after the main body of the union forces had stopped. As these two cavalymen approached, Captain Kuykendall shot at one of them, who then stopped; but it could not be ascertained that he was struck. The other galloped on, and being mounted on a powerful horse, came up with Jesse Cupp, of Company F, and struck at him with his saber; but Cupp avoided the blow, and the soldier passed on. As he did so, Cupp struck him across the back with his saber and Captain Kuykendall shot at him with a revolver. The union soldier wheeled his horse, left the road and made his escape. Whether he was dangerously wounded could not be ascertained. Isaac T. Brady, of Romney, was wounded in that fight.

*General Averell Baffled.*—On February 1, 1864, General Rosser, with a strong force, visited Patterson creek to buy cattle for the confederacy. He expected to meet with resistance, and therefore came prepared to fight. But he had not calculated on fighting Averell; and as the sequence showed, he had a narrow escape. Had Averell succeeded in meeting him, there would have been an encounter of more consequence than a skirmish. General Rosser passed down Patterson creek within eight miles of Keyser, where there was a union force, and advanced within six miles of Cumberland. He kept a wary eye on both of those points, but did not believe that a sufficient force could be sent from either of them to endanger his position. He left a force at Burlington to prevent the federals from crossing Knobly mountain from New creek, and sent another force of seventy men, under Captain Isaac Kuykendall, to Mill creek gap, three miles above Romney, to hold that pass against any force that might come from the south or east. Thus protected on both flanks, General Rosser proceeded to gather all the available stock on Patterson creek and Mill creek.

Shortly after the confederates took possession of the



Mill creek gap, General Averell, with a strong force of cavalry, passed through Romney, having come from Winchester to cut Rosser off, and attempted to enter the gap. Confederate pickets had been stationed on the rocks overlooking the pass, and with long-range guns they fired at the front of the union column when it came in sight. The pass is narrow, and a small force, well posted, could hold it against a much stronger one. Averell did not know how strong the force was which opposed him, and he was exceedingly cautious how he advanced. No sooner would he attempt to go through the gap than he was fired upon, and he as often fell back. In the meantime, a federal force crossed Knobly mountain from New creek, and passing down by way of Burlington met the Confederate force posted there, and the fight began. Several times the federals advanced and as often they were driven back; but they gradually worked their way down, gaining more ground than they lost, and toward evening had pushed the confederates almost down to Moorefield junction, within four or five miles of Mill creek gap. Believing that he could not resist the federal advance from New creek much longer, the confederate officer at Moorefield junction sent word to Captain Kuykendall, at Mill creek gap, and told him to save himself if he could. Not doubting that he was about to be cut off, Captain Kuykendall retreated by an obscure road up Mill creek, leaving the gap open for Averell. The confederates at Moorefield junction made a final rally and drove the federals back in the direction of New creek, and removed danger of an attack from that quarter. Averell did not know that Mill creek gap had been abandoned, and he made no attempt to pass through that night. Rosser was thus given the opportunity to escape up Mill creek with his cattle, and he made his way with all speed back to Virginia.



## CHAPTER LII.



### THE FRONTIER RIFLEMEN.

Following is a roll of the Frontier Riflemen, known also as Company I, Thirteenth Virginia Infantry: Captain, Robert White; first lieutenant, E. L. Irvin; second lieutenant, Job N. Cookus; third lieutenant, Daniel T. Keller; first sergeant, Richard Roberson; second sergeant, H. B. Willis; third sergeant, B. W. Armstrong; fourth sergeant, Robert J. Pugh. Privates—James H. Atkins, A. F. Barnes, J. W. Bobo, M. V. Bobo, James Bonney, James E. Brown, Benjamin Brooks, Frederick Carder, Joseph F. Carder, Joseph Carder, Sanford Carder, Uriah Cheshire, George W. Cheshire, Newton Cherry, John S. M. Combs, Jesse Chilcot, J. W. Davis, Alfred Doman, Tobias Doman, Thomas B. Emmart, Thomas Kelly, Granville Friddle, John Greitzner, Thomas Gulick, W. H. Gerrard, William H. High, Andrew Hines, John W. Hannas, William Hickel, C. Hott, Benjamin Haines, A. J. Kreemer, Thomas Keely, J. N. Lewis, M. Lewis, William Loy, W. Loy, Samuel Loy, John Loy, J. W. Loy, Solomon Lopp, W. H. Ludwick, E. Liller, Samuel Mohler, Samuel McCauley, Arthur McCauley, Walter McAtee, Joseph Nixon, J. Nealis, H. H. Orndorff, W. T. Parker, V. M. Poling, T. S. Poling, Joseph S. Poland, William Pownell, Absalom Pownell, W. S. Purgett, Jacob Powelson, Michael Randall, Joel Roberson, G. W. Ruckman, Alonzo Shawen, Christopher Shanholtzer, W. F. Sheetz, James Starnes, Frank Shingleton, Thomas Scanlin, Stephen Swisher, Perry Saville, Gibson Timbrook, Hiram Terry, J. B. Trenton, John Thompson, Edward



Whiteman, J. L. Wilson, H. A. Wilson. Musicians—Levi Carder, G. McNemar, L. Johnson.

This company was organized in 1860, after the John Brown raid, with Robert White captain, Elias L. Irvin first lieutenant, Job N. Cookus second lieutenant and Daniel T. Keller third lieutenant. On May 18, 1861, by order of Governor Letcher, the company reported to Colonel T. J. Jackson (Stonewall), then commanding at Harper's Ferry. While there the company voted on the ordinance of secession, there being seven votes against it. The company was placed in the Fourth Regiment, under Colonel A. P. Hill, and was designated as Company I. It being found that there were two Fourth Regiments, this one was changed to Thirteenth. While at Harper's Ferry the first death occurred in the company, Henry Wilson, but it was by no means the last death, for this company was almost totally destroyed before the close of the war.

*The First Fight.*—Active service soon commenced. Colonel Hill, with the Thirteenth and Tenth Virginia and Third Tennessee Regiments, marched to Romney in June, 1861, and a detachment, consisting of Companies I and K and the Third Tennessee, was sent to New creek to destroy railroad bridges. The bridges were burned, and a skirmish occurred with the Cumberland home guards, in which the guards were defeated, with the loss of two small cannon, which fell into the hands of the confederates. These were the first trophies of war. Colonel Hill marched to Winchester, and Company I was soon in the command of General Joseph Johnston, who was falling back from Harper's Ferry. After a few days General Johnston eluded and deceived General Patterson, of the union army, and slipped away to Manassas in time to turn the tide of battle (July 21) from apparent defeat to certain victory. Company I did not take part in the battle, having been posted on the right to guard a ford. After the battle the Thirteenth Regiment did picket duty in the vicinity of



Alexandria. John Bobo died of fever at this camp, and Thomas Scanlon was accidentally shot in the foot. In the autumn of 1861 the army moved to Manassas, and here Thomas Kelly and Samuel McCauley died in the hospital. Captain White and Lieutenant Irvin resigned January, 1862, and left the army. Johnston's army moved from Manassas in the spring of 1862, and General Ewell's division, to which the Thirteenth Regiment belonged, was stationed on the Rappahannock river, and afterward fell back to Gordonsville.

The confederate army was here reorganized. The time of enlistment of many of the men had expired; but the confederate congress having passed the conscript act, it compelled the men to remain in the commands where they then were. Many of the men felt themselves much aggrieved at this, as they had volunteered, and they thought they should be allowed to choose the arm of the service in which they would fight. Company I reorganized by electing Job N. Cookus captain, Abraham Smith first lieutenant, James Moorehead second lieutenant and Abraham Barnes third lieutenant. The division to which this company belonged moved from Gordonsville to Swift run gap, Jackson's old camp, facing Banks' army at Harrisonburg, in the valley of Virginia. In all the fighting which followed, Company I did its full share. General Banks was forced out of the valley, with great loss of stores, artillery and prisoners. But General Fremont and General Shields coming upon the scene, there was continued and heavy fighting. The confederates gained a victory at Cross Keys. This was the first real battle taken part in by Company I, although it had seen much service. After the battle at Cross Keys, the division to which Company I belonged crossed the south fork of the Shenandoah and helped Jackson, who was fighting Shields. The federals had a strong position. A brigade of Ewell's division and a regiment of Jackson's took a battery of six pieces on Shields'



left, which proved to be the key to the field and decided the battle in favor of the confederates. The victory did not come too soon for them, for their army was completely exhausted, and it was with great difficulty that a pursuit of five miles was made, many of the men falling by the roadside. They had fought two days without a mouthful to eat.

*Adventures of Boney Loy.*—Among the well-known members of Company I was William B. Loy, nicknamed "Boney," who passed through many dangers and lived to see peace restored. He returned to Hampshire and proved by his life that the bravest in war are the best citizens in peace. He was of small stature, but of iron constitution, capable of enduring excessive fatigue; taking part in the hardest marches, the severest battles, and always at his post. In the battle above mentioned he had a long, hard time of it. When the fight was over he wrapped himself in a new rubber blanket and lay down among the dead and dying, and was soon asleep. During the night some stragglers who were robbing the dead, found him, and supposing him dead also, rolled him over, pulled his blanket out and began to fold it up. But Loy awoke and soon convinced the thief that he had tackled a very lively corpse. The straggler turned away, remarking, "take your old blanket; I thought you were dead." Loy wrapped the blanket about him and again lay down to sleep. When he awoke in the morning he found that his gun and boots had been stolen. Unarmed and barefooted he started out to forage, and soon found a rusty gun, which he took; but he was not so fortunate in procuring coverings for his feet, which were so small that he was hard to fit. But, finally he found a yankee with boots about the right size, and he proceeded to pull them off. He received a kick in the stomach from the yankee whom he had supposed dead, and the rebuke: "What are you about! Can't you let a man die in peace! Can't you wait till he is dead before you rob



him!" As Mr. Loy had no intention of robbing a wounded soldier, he let go the boot with many apologies and moved off. He found no other boots of the proper size, and returned to camp barefooted. It was not long after that that Banks' commissary stores were captured by the rebels, and Boney Loy had the pick of several hundred cases of yankee boots, and succeeded in finding a pair to fit him exactly.

*Death of George Cheshire.*—After the battle of Port Republic, many of the members of Company I joined the cavalry and did good service; others left and went home to remain. After a rest of a few days, Company I, now reduced in numbers, was sent to Richmond to defend the capital of the Southern Confederacy against McClellan. On June 27, 1862, when the company found itself on McClellan's right at Coal Harbor it had only eighteen men, including two conscripts. Although General Lee had forced General McClellan from his fortifications, his new position was a very strong one. In the battle which followed, Company I passed through many dangerous places. It had to cross a swamp hip-deep to attack the enemy's infantry posted on an eminence. The confederates were unmercifully raked by the artillery fire. The survivors of the terrible battle tell of the gallant manner in which Sergeant George W. Cheshire met his death. He is looked upon as one of the bravest of the one hundred and twenty-two Hampshire men who gave their lives in the cause of the South. He was killed near Richmond. The battle had raged with almost unprecedented fury, and seven ensigns had fallen. Cheshire seized the colors of his regiment and led the charge, calling to his comrades to follow. He held the flag until the staff was shot off in three places. It looked like a rush into the jaws of death, but they pressed forward. Cheshire fell, but the men who had followed him met the enemy and forced them back. The governor of Virginia made a special report on the gallantry



of the young Hampshire officer, and his name stands recorded in history. The flag, cut into ribbons by bullets was sent to Governor Letcher, who returned a new flag, remarking that the old one "was battle worn and bullet torn, and bathed in the blood of the gallant Cheshire." George Ruckman, another brave man of the company, fell in this battle, as did also one of the conscripts. Frank Singleton of Delaware, who had joined the company, Boney Loy and the other conscript were badly wounded.

Boney carried a Mississippi rifle which soon became foul. He was in the thick of the fight and had fired until he could not ram another bullet down. His gun was choked, and at that critical moment a retreat was ordered. Just then a bullet struck him in the thigh. It roused his ire and he turned upon the advancing yankees and putting his ramrod against a tree, tried to push the bullet down, and in the endeavor his ramrod became fast in the barrel. He raised his gin, fired ramrod and all at the enemy, and turned to run. A bullet struck his knapsack, passed through it and lodged in his clothing without hurting him. But another ball struck him a moment later and passed through his lungs. He dropped his gun, but continued running until he overtook his comrades. V. M. Poling asked him if he had been wounded, to which Loy replied with more vehemence than piety: "No, — —, I'm killed." His wounds, however, were not fatal, and after several months in the hospital he was back in his regiment, and ready for more fighting.

In this battle Joel Roberson was so severely wounded that he was unable to perform service in the infantry, but as soon as he had sufficiently recovered he joined the cavalry. He was a good soldier, and was liked by all who knew him. B. W. Armstrong, a man of superior education, died of a fever in August, 1861. He was in every way a gentleman.

The company took part in the battles of Malvern Hill,





1. DR. J. W. SHULL.  
3. HOWARD L. SWISHER.

2. T. G. POWNALL.  
4. V. M. POLING,  
ON FURLOUGH IN RICHMOND, 1884.



1

1



Charles City and Cedar Mountain; at the latter place Samuel Mohler and V. M. Poling were wounded, Mohler badly in the foot, Poling slightly in the side. His capbox saved him. This company took an active part in the second battle of Bull Run, and followed Lee and Jackson through the Maryland campaign, culminating at Antietam. At the second battle of Bull Run the company went with Jackson in his flank movement around Pope. All the confederate wagons were left behind to make better speed, and the only rations issued to the men were four roasting ears each per day. But when they camped near cornfields they helped themselves. However, they succeeded in capturing Pope's supply train and were then told to help themselves, which they did with an unsparring hand. Each man took all he could carry. On the retreat from Antietam the soldiers waded the Potomac. The water came to their cartridge boxes. Stonewall Jackson sat on his horse in the middle of the river encouraging his men. The soldiers cheered him as they struggled by, through the swift water, and he sat with his hat off, in a beating rain. The field of action for Company I changed to Fredericksburg. At this place the yankee and rebel pickets on the Rappahannock traded tobacco and coffee. The rebels on one side of the river put a sail on a plank, tied their tobacco to the staff, and the wind would carry the frail bark to the other side. The yankees took the tobacco and sent coffee back in exchange for it. The sail was changed each time so as to carry the boat straight across. This trading was kept up till the yankees moved their pickets back.

*Death of Lieutenant Morehead.*—In the spring of 1863 General Hooker left Sedgwick's corps at Fredericksburg and he crossed to Chancellorsville. Company I was left, in Early's division, to watch Sedgwick. In a battle at that place the thirteenth regiment was sent forward alone to attack a hill as a feint. The soldiers charged and took it three times; but on the top of the hill the regiment



encountered two lines of battle, and was forced to fall back. At this place Lieutenant James Morehead met his death. His last words were, "They are running! Come on, boys!" He was a gallant officer, and was very popular with the men. The soldiers procured boards from a barn, made him a coffin, and buried him. Captain Smith offered a prayer, while shells were falling and exploding on all sides. The company lost other valuable men in this charge. Samuel Loy was mortally wounded and died in a few days. Richard Roberson, Sanford Carder and Joseph Carder were badly wounded. During the retreat from the hill, hotly pursued by federals, Boney Loy and V. M. Poling, afterwards clerk of the Hampshire circuit court, were fighting the best they could to cover the retreat, when they were so hard pressed that they were compelled to conceal themselves in a deep gulley, while the yankees took possession of other gullies near by, and made a stand, not knowing that rebels were in an adjoining gully. The confederate troops rallied, and for some time there was the prospect of a sharp fight over the heads of Poling and Loy, but they were not uneasy on that score, as they could lie low and escape the bullets, but they did not feel comfortable when they considered the result if the yankees should see them and use the bayonet. They could hear the yankees talking near them, but did not dare raise their heads for fear of discovery. They thus hugged the bottom of the gully for hours. About five o'clock in the afternoon they heard a noise like the flight of a drove of pigeons, and a moment later saw that the rebel infantry were charging. The peculiar noise was made by soldiers running through the grass. General Gordon was making the charge. He drove the federals back and the men emerged from the gully and rejoined their comrades.

Company I, now reduced to a few men, was transferred to Winchester and took part in the battle with Milroy, which resulted in forcing him to retreat down the valley



with heavy loss. The thirteenth regiment was left at Winchester to guard military stores, and thus missed Gettysburg. The company moved east of the Blue Ridge after the Gettysburg campaign and spent the winter on the Rappahannock, 1863-4. At that time the confederate states were hard pressed for food and clothing, and the soldiers were on short rations, one day three-quarters of a pound of beef and no bread; next day they would get flour and no meat; then rice for one day, and no salt at any time. In February a detachment was sent to the Rappahannock to catch fish. They lived without salt or flour. They cooked their fish in various ways to see if some sort of flavor could not be given them; but a fish without salt is not good, no matter how it is cooked. In the spring of 1864 the confederate army commenced fighting Grant in the Wilderness. A member of Company I expressed in these words a truth which no doubt was clearly seen by many at the time: "After we had fought Grant a few days in the Wilderness, there was not an officer, nor an intelligent soldier, in our army who did not realize that the Southern Confederacy was doomed. But we fought on, hoping against hope that something would happen that would save us; some foreign power might help us; or some other assistance come from some quarter," On May 5 Company I was reduced to nine men, in ranks, and the captain, as follows: Captain Abraham Smith, R. J. Pugh, Richard Roberson, William Loy, W. Loy, William Sheetz, Samuel Mohler, Joseph Carder, Uriah Cheshire and V. M. Poling. The company was in the battle of Spottsylvania Court House in May, 1864. B. M. Haines had been detached with the signal corps.

*The Broken Line.*—At that battle there was desperate fighting. Grant was pressing Lee hard at every point. One foggy morning General Hancock led a charge which broke Lee's line. The confederates at that place had built fortifications in the shape of V with the point to the en-



emy. Company I was in the works on the left. Hancock came through on the right, and his victorious soldiers were sweeping everything before them and threatening to gain possession of the road to Richmond. It was a moment of extreme danger for Lee's army, and that great general saw it. Unless the federals could be checked and driven back, Richmond must fall. The confederates from the left were countermarched on the double-quick across the open space to get in front of the federals. Bullets and grape fell like rain. Boney Loy fell, shot through the leg, and was left on the field, while the rebels hurried on, and after running half a mile found themselves in front of the yankees. It was at this critical moment that General Lee appeared on the scene. He saw that everything depended upon checking the federal advance. It is believed to be the only instance during the war in which General Lee offered to lead a charge, and it is worthy of note, to the honor of Hampshire, that this old county furnished its share of the soldiers which Lee was to lead on that momentous occasion, the most critical, perhaps, in the whole war. No one had noticed the general as he came up. He suddenly appeared at the head of the thirteenth regiment, with his hat off and smiling, but did not say a word. He looked at the men and they understood that he was ready to lead the charge. General Gordon came up at the moment and exclaimed: "I will lead these Virginians; General Lee, go to the rear!" At once every man saw General Lee's danger, and called as with one voice: "General Lee, to the rear." Richard Roberson of Company I, caught Lee's horse by the bridle and turned him around. By that time several of Lee's staff officers came up. General Gordon then turned to the men and said: "Virginians, you have never failed before, and I know you will not fail today. Forward. Follow me."

The battle that day, to recover the lost ground, can be fittingly compared to the charge of Ney at Waterloo. It was



a stubborn, hand-to-hand fight, in which the finest troops of the South were pitted against the veterans of the North. The soldiers on both sides knew what war was. They had learned the trade on many a field, and they were now to fight inch by inch for the mastery of the captured works. For a long time it was a doubtful contest; but inch by inch the confederates pushed the union troops back, and finally recaptured the lost works which General Edward Johnson, with Stonewall Jackson's old division, had lost that morning. But the battle for the mastery did not end there. Three times the federals tried to retake the works, but were three times repulsed. Other brigades claim the honor of being the troops which General Lee offered to lead; and it is not impossible that he did offer to lead other brigades at other times; but it was surely the brigade in which Hampshire's Company I, thirteenth Virginia infantry fought, which Lee offered to lead at Spottsylvania Court House, May 12, 1864. Jones, in his memoirs of Lee, says he asked General Lee what brigade it was which he offered to lead, and that Lee answered: "General Gordon was the officer." General Gordon could settle the controversy as to the brigade, if he would, and it is due the brave men who followed him, and to the cause of history, that he speak on the subject.

Rain fell all night following the battle. The confederate soldiers slept sitting, with their backs against the breastworks and gum blankets over their heads and guns. There was thunder and bright lightning, which served to keep up the battle. The federals had taken up a position in a pine thicket about fifty yards in front of the confederate works, and they kept up such a constant firing that no one could show his head without danger of having it shot off. A dead union soldier lay a few yards below the breastworks, between the federal and confederate lines. He had a ring on his finger, and several attempts to get it failed. As soon as a confederate attempted to crawl down,



the yankees in the pines fired at him. At length Samuel Mohler, of Company I, watched his chances, between flashes of lightning, and crawled down and got the ring. He did not care for the value of the ring, but wished to exhibit his recklessness. Boney Loy, who was wounded in the charge, was taken prisoner and carried to a federal hospital near by. A few days later the confederates captured the hospital, and Loy climbed on a horse, behind one of the cavalrymen, and rode back to the camp. His wound in the leg rendered it necessary for him to spend some time in a hospital. He was then granted a furlough, and he set out for home. On the way he fell in with some troops under General Early, just as the fight at Fisher's Hill commenced. He took part in the battle; then proceeded to his home in Hampshire.

*Death of Captain Smith.*—The next day after retaking the works at Spottsylvania Court House, General Lee moved his line back half a mile. Company I was sent with Ewell's corps to make an attack on Grant's forces, seven miles distant. In the attack Captain Smith was shot through the lungs. He fell near V. M. Poling, and said: "Tell my wife my first thought, when I fell, was of her, my God and my country. I believe our cause is just, and I have given my life for it." That night the soldiers of his country carried him seven miles back to Lee's lines, there being no ambulance in which to send him. He died in the hospital seven days later. There were only seven of Company I left. On May 21 this company moved to Hanover Court House, where a charge by the brigade to which Company I belonged was ordered, to take a battery of six pieces. The charge was across an open field, without support. It was a disastrous undertaking, and unsuccessful. The federal position could not be taken, and the confederates were forced to retreat, with heavy loss of officers as well as men. The retreat was more fatal than the advance. Of the four hundred who went into the charge,



eight-one were left on the field. Company I suffered as usual. Joseph Carder lost his foot and R. J. Pugh was shot in the leg. It was an uncalled-for sacrifice of life. Pugh was a good fellow, liked by all. He died in Romney a few years ago. This left only five men in Company I, and the company lost its identity. It had not enough men left to elect officers. It had entered the army at the beginning of the war with eighty-six officers and men. On May 21, 1864, it had not an officer and only five men. It might be supposed that further history of the company would be unnecessary; but there were five brave men left, and it is proper to follow them through their vicissitudes of fortune till the close of the war. These five, not having an organization any longer as a company, joined the sharpshooters under Lieutenant Stringfellow. Each regiment, at that time, had twenty picked men as sharpshooters, under a lieutenant, and the whole division was organized and was commanded by a major. It was the duty of the sharpshooters to be in front in an advance and in the rear in retreat, creeping or running from shelter to shelter, always on the lookout for a good shot. Of course, the sharpshooters of the enemy were doing the same.

*The Coffee Spoiled.*—William Loy was one of the sharpshooters who had belonged to Company I. During a skirmish one day he thought he would snatch a few minutes and make a cup of coffee. He built a fire behind a rail pile and set his cup on. The truth is, it was cane seed, but he was playing that it was coffee. The cup was beginning to simmer, and Loy was blowing the coals to expedite matters when a yankee sharpshooter, with plenty of nerve, shot at him and sent a bullet through the cup of coffee. Loy exclaimed: "Drat that yankee! He spoiled my cup." The sharpshooters would climb trees, or old chimneys, or houseroofs to get a good shot. On one occasion V. M. Poling was at the gable window of a deserted house when Major Daniel, of General Early's staff, went



up to use his field glass. A yankee sharpshooter sent a bullet into the loft near their heads, through a feather bed, scattering feathers over the room. The major remarked that he had seen all there was to see, and departed. It has often been remarked that wounds received while fighting sharpshooters are nearly always severe, because sharpshooters aim at vital parts and are excellent marksmen. On the day before the second battle of Cold Harbor Samuel Mohler was shot through the brain and killed. This left only four men of Company I. In the fight General Hunter was forced back toward Salem. The confederate army moved down the valley to Maryland, fighting much of the way; advanced within a few miles of Washington; then up the valley; again down the valley to Charlestown. In all this marching there was scarcely a day on which the sharpshooters were not fighting. One night they captured thirty-one cavalymen behind a stone fence in the edge of Winchester. The yankee lieutenant asked where Winchester was, he being badly bewildered. Although the sharpshooters made the capture, Gilmer's Marylanders got the cavalymen's horses.

*General Mulligan Killed.*—General Mulligan, a brave federal officer, was killed near Kernstown. He had the respect of friend and foe. When he was in command at Keyser, Moorefield and Petersburg he had many opportunities to show kindness to captured confederates, and he always did so. Those who killed him did not know who he was until too late, and they regretted what they had done, although they did it while discharging their duty as sharpshooters in line of battle. Seven of them, William Loy, W. F. Sheetz and Joel Roberson being of the number, crawled two hundred yards down a ditch and reached a point from which they could see General Mulligan and his staff. All seven fired at one time, and the general was killed and one of his staff was wounded.

*Charlestown Captured.*—While General Early



was in the vicinity of Charlestown that place was taken by seven sharpshooters, four of them being the remnant of old Company I, William Loy, Joel Roberson, V. M. Poling and W. F. Sheetz. The exploit was somewhat remarkable. The sharpshooters had forced back the federal skirmishers toward the town, and supposing they had passed through the village, followed after them. When the squad of seven confederate sharpshooters reached a small bridge in the suburbs of the town they were surprised to find that they had run into a squad of cavalry not thirty yards distant. Luckily for the sharpshooters, the yankees were still more surprised, and ran without firing a shot. The sharpshooters fired and killed the federal captain and two of his men. The cavalry took refuge in town, and the sharpshooters followed. For an hour the fight continued, the seven confederate taking the place house by house and street by street, fighting in back yards, running over porches, and all the while the women were waving their handkerchiefs from windows and cheering. Finally the yankees were driven out.

In the fight at Winchester, September 19, 1864, General Early was forced to retreat before General Sheridan. The battle was a hard one and the sharpshooters had little rest. William Loy was wounded and taken prisoner. He was one of the toughest soldiers in the service, never giving out on the hardest march. This left three of old Company I. Sheetz was wounded in the arm by a spent ball. He had the remarkable record of never missing a battle during the war, up to that time, in which his regiment was engaged. After living through the war, he was killed on the railroad a few years ago. When Sheetz was wounded it left only two men of the eighty-six who went into the company at the beginning of the war. They were V. M. Poling and Joel Roberson. These two entered the battle of Fisher's Hill, where General Early's veterans became stampeded from some unknown and unaccountable reason,



and there was a disgraceful route. The two sharpshooters, Poling and Roberson, were doing what they could, in company with other sharpshooters, to save the day, when Poling was wounded. He became very sick and wanted to be left on the field. But his comrade, Roberson, would not desert him. They had fought many a day and many a night side by side; they had shared victory and defeat; and now, when only one of that company of eighty-six was left, he was not the man to abandon a comrade to the enemy. So he carried Poling off the field, put him in an ammunition wagon and landed him safely in Harrisonburg, where he was placed in the hospital. The union troops captured the hospital and Poling was a prisoner. However he was not sent to prison. After a few days he was exchanged and was sent to Hampshire on furlough, and he was there taken care of by James C. Poland and his wife and daughter. As soon as Poling could walk he went to his home in Romney, and on March, 1865, was taken prisoner by a scouting party from Martinsburg. They took him to Garrett I. Blue's, where they stopped for the night, the river being too deep to be crossed. About three o'clock next morning Poling ran out at the door and escaped, taking one of the yankee's guns with him, but left his own revolver and hat. He did not consider it a good trade, but it was the best he could do at the time. He and others surrendered in Cumberland soon after the surrender of Lee. During the last year of the war he had no clothing except what was made for him and sent to him by his sisters. The confederacy was unable to supply clothes for its soldiers. Mr. Poling's portrait in this book shows him in a suit of uniform sent him from home.

*The Last Man.*—It is in order that the history of the old company be followed to the end, and until the last man disappears from the scene. When Poling went home wounded, Roberson was the only one left in active service. But Sheetz recovered from his wound and went back and



took his place in the line of sharpshooters. At the battle of Bell Grove, near Strasburg, Sheetz and Roberson were trying to hold a bridge and prevent the federal cavalry from crossing. They said that one hundred men could have held the bridge and could have saved Early's artillery and wagons. But the necessary one hundred men were not there. The cavalry charged across the bridge and took Sheetz prisoner. Roberson tried to escape by climbing a steep bank of solid limestone, where the pike cuts through at the south end of the bridge. Before he could climb the rocks a yankee cavalryman was upon him striking at him with his sabre. Roberson was compelled to turn and fight. Neither had his gun loaded. Roberson would strike the horse, causing him to wheel; then he would attempt to climb the rocks; but before he could do so the cavalryman would be striking at him again. This was kept up until Roberson was about worn out. The yankee seemed determined to kill him, and did not offer him a chance to surrender. At length an officer came up and took Roberson prisoner. He and Sheetz remained in prison till the close of the war. But old Company I was not yet to pass out of active service. When Sheetz and Roberson surrendered, not one man was left; but in a day or two Uriah Cheshire had recovered from his wound and came back. He was the only man in ranks when Lee surrendered at Appomattox, and he there laid down his gun. James Starnes, Hiram Terry and Joseph Poland were teamsters during the entire war, and were faithful to their duty. Benjamin Brooks was an ambulance driver. All were included in Lee's surrender.

“When these heads are white with glory,  
When the shadows from the west  
Lengthen as you tell the story  
In the veteran's ward of rest,

May no ingrate's word of sneering



Reach one heart of all the brave,  
But may honor, praise and cheering  
Guard old valor to the grave."

*Unmaterialized Bonds.*—In 1864 the confederate government concluded to be generous with the veterans who had volunteered in the service, and congress at Richmond passed an act giving each veteran a bond for one hundred dollars. The few men still serving in the ranks of the Frontier Riflemen were called out in line and each was promised the bond as a present. They never received them. It was afterwards ascertained, or was so reported in the army, that the employes in the government printing office at Richmond were given all the bonds they could print after five o'clock each evening, as their pay for working the rest of the day for the government.

It was customary in winter to give ten days' furlough to two men at a time from each company. The young soldiers usually gave way to the married men who could thus visit their families. Those on furlough, if they remained in Richmond, had expenses to pay. Board at the hotels was fifty dollars a day in January, 1864; flour, one hundred and fifty dollars a barrel; oysters one dollar a dish; whiskey two dollars a thimbleful. As the soldiers received only twelve dollars a month they could not afford to go on furlough very often. The soldiers in camp were very often starved nearly to death, and when they obtained a supply of food their appetite was so ravenous that they ate to excess. After the battle at Port Republic, two days' rations were issued to the men. Some of the soldiers cooked and ate the whole at one sitting. Two brothers, in addition to the two days' rations, bought from a butcher a beef's liver weighing twelve pounds. They boiled this and ate the whole of it. They lay down and slept, never expecting to wake; but no harm came of their enormous meal.



## CHAPTER LIII.



### OTHERS TAKING THE FIELD.

Following is a list of the members of the Hampshire Guards, afterwards Company K: Captain, J. B. Sherrard; first lieutenant, D. W. Entler; second lieutenant, Felix D. Heiskell; first sergeant, William V. Herriott; second sergeant, James W. Poling; third sergeant, C. S. White. Privates—John A. Borley, Henry Burd, C. E. Blue, Isaac T. Brady, Edward Brelsford, Thomas Brooke, D. Carmichael, John Carroll, Felix R. Davis, John H. Davis, John Davis, William Davis, Samuel Fleming, John Florey, David Fox, William French, Isaac V. Gibson, Joseph Gill, Robert Gill, Joseph A. Hammen, Isaac Hartman, John W. Hass, Henry G. Houser, Joshua Johnson, Joseph Kern, W. Largent, James Linthicum, C. S. Lovett, Benjamin McDonald, E. H. McDonald, George Malick, B. F. Maloney, P. McCarty, Owen Millison, Robert E. Morehead, G. Mytinger, George Nealis, John Nolan, William Nolan, Pierce Nolan, James D. Parsons, John D. Parsons, John P. Parker, Isaac V. Parker, William C. Parker, William M. Parsons, John Peters, Peter L. Peters, James T. Peer, H. A. Powell, Jonathan Pugh, Joseph Pugh, Mahlon Pugh, Owen V. Pugh, Isaac Pancake, James W. Ream, Charles H. Ream, Frederick Sheetz, F. D. Sherrard, James E. Spaid, John F. Taylor, Isaac Taylor, D. K. Taylor, M. Taylor, E. Ullery, Edward Washington, John Washington, Alexander White, William Wills. Musicians—William F. Davis and Peter Miller.

The Hampshire Guards were organized before the commencement of the civil war, and saw service during the



excitement following John Brown's raid at Harper's Ferry. When the war began this company was one of the first in the field, and was one of the last to leave the field at the close of the war. It was called into service in May, 1861, to go to the front, and on the eighteenth of that month left Romney for Harper's Ferry. The trip down the south branch to the Baltimore and Ohio railroad at Greenspring was made in buggies, carriages, on horseback and in wagons, many citizens accompanying the soldiers that far on their journey. The baggage train was enormous, the prevailing opinion seeming to be that the trip was a combined excursion and picnic, and that enough provisions and sufficient changes of clothing should be taken along to render life enjoyable. The company carried a flag which was destined to pass through the war and survive till the present day. It was of heavy silk, elaborately worked and embroidered, and was presented to the company in 1858 by the ladies of Hampshire county. The presentation had been made by Captain Robert White with a speech appropriate to the occasion. He recited the duties of the soldier, his obligations to his country and his flag, and admonished the men to carry the banner with honor in war and in peace; and the survivors of the company now speak with pride of the manner in which they performed their duty. Within a year after the flag was presented it was taken to Harper's Ferry. Within the next two years—that is, in May, 1861—it was carried to Harper's Ferry again. It was brought back by Frank Sherrard. The flag, or what remains of it, is now in possession of Miss Mary Gibson, of Romney, daughter of James A. Gibson and granddaughter of David Gibson. The stripes have been cut off. They were divided among the members of the company as souvenirs.

In June, 1861, the company returned to Romney, after having marched from Harper's Ferry to Winchester. After occupying Romney for a few days an expedition was made



toward Piedmont, where a company of federal home guards was camped. The confederate force was made up of parts of the Third Tennessee and Tenth Virginia regiments. The expedition resulted in the capture of two small cannon from the Cumberland home guards and the destruction of a bridge on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad. A few days later the confederates left Romney and returned toward Winchester, camping the first night at Hanging Rock, on the Northwestern pike, and the next at Capon Bridge. The company did not take part in the battle of Bull Run, although in the vicinity. In August, 1861, the company was doing picket duty within sight of the dome on the capitol at Washington.

In 1862 an election of officers for Company K, formerly the Hampshire Guards, resulted in the selection of Felix Heiskell, captain; Frank D. Sherrard, first lieutenant; John H. Davis, second lieutenant. The company took part in the battle of Front Royal, May 23, 1862; the battle of Middletown, May 24; the battle of Winchester, May 26. On June 2, on the Capon Springs road, the company was in the fight against General Fremont; and on the sixth of the same month, in a fight near Port Republic, in which Colonel Ashby was killed while leading a counter-charge. On June 8 the company took part in a battle with General Shields near Port Republic, and also on the same day, in another battle with General Fremont. The next day there was a battle with General Shields. The company was in the fight at Cold Harbor, going in with twenty-six men, of whom seventeen were killed or wounded in the fight. Lieutenant Sherrard was killed; also John Washington, Thomas O'Farrell and Owen Milleson. Isaac Gibson, Isaac Armstrong and Thomas Brooks died of their wounds.

*Captain McDonald's Company.*—Company D, Eleventh Virginia cavalry, was raised by E. H. McDonald of Hampshire county. At first it was a part of the seventh battalion of the Ashby cavalry, and afterwards in-



incorporated in the Eleventh Virginia regiment. It contained a few men from Maryland and Pennsylvania. The roll of the company and a sketch of its history is as follows: Captain, E. H. McDonald; first lieutenant, William Taylor; second lieutenant, John Blue; third lieutenant, Isaac Parsons; first sergeant, Joseph Sherrard; second sergeant, Amos Roberson; third sergeant, R. B. Kidd; quartermaster sergeant, Samuel Bane; commissary sergeant, Conrad Umstett; corporals, Uriah Lease, James Ream, L. Nixon, George Hott; privates, John Adams, Philip Abbee, Isaac T. Brady, Mathias Brill, Frank Brown, Richard Brown, Frank Barnett, John Brown, John W. Bowers, J. W. Bobo, D. Carder, Frederick Carder, John Carroll, J. Carroll, Robert Cresap, W. R. Chapman, Charles Clayton, Charles Conrad, Holmes Conrad, John Casler, James Davie, Benjamin Dailey, George Duvall, John Davie, Maurice Davis, John Dailey, Randolph Davis, Samuel Freddle, Samuel Feshel, J. Groves, Henry Huddleson, Isaac Hartman, Healy Huddleson; S. Hannas, E. Herriott, G. Holt, I. V. Inskeep, J. Kelly, W. Lease, C. S. Lovett, Edward Light, W. N. McDonald, W. Morehead, Robert Morehead, F. Murphy, F. H. Myers, Bause McNary, Joseph A. Pancake, S. Pancake, John S. Pancake, A. Peer, John D. Parsons, James D. Parsons, John W. Poland, Amos Poland, Jasper Pownell, Joel Robinson, Simon Rudolph, John Rudolph, John M. Reese, Charles Riley, Herman Senoff, John Saville, Luke Spurling, Edward Swartz, John N. Seymour, Daniel Seymour, Ab Shingleton, Elisha Shingleton, J. Shelley, James Smith, Charles Seibert, John Stewart, John Starns, S. Dudley Taylor, John Taylor, Enos Taylor, D. K. Taylor, John Urton, Isaac Wolfe, Thomas White, H. M. Watkins, Charles Watkins.

A list of those of the company who were killed or died in the service, so far as ascertainable, is as follows: Robert Cresap, a native of Preston county, killed at Moorefield, in November, 1862. He always carried a double-barreled



shotgun. James Davis was killed in Hampshire county. Frederick Abbee was captured at Moorefield, and died of smallpox in prison at Cairo. He was an excellent swordsman. Mathias Brill was killed at Darkeville, Berkeley county, in his first fight. James Ream, known as "the boy preacher," was killed. John Groves fell in the battle of the Wilderness, May 2, 1863. H. M. Watkins was killed at Hagerstown, Maryland. George Hott was killed at the Forks of Capon. Edward Light, although in a Hampshire company, was from Berkeley county. He was killed near Richmond. James Carroll was killed at Moorefield Junction. Daniel Seymour, from Maryland, was killed at Petersburg, in Grant county. Ab Shingleton, James Shelley and Isaac Wolfe were killed at Brandy Station. Frank Myers was captured at Darkeville and died at Vicksburg, after being exchanged. John Rudolph died in the hospital at Charlottesville, Virginia. James Stewart died at Camp Chase. Enos Taylor, a prisoner, died on his way to be exchanged.

Amos Roberson, of this company, kept a diary during the service. The entries in it, during the last few days before Lee's surrender, may be of interest to show how the men then viewed occurrences which are now history. After detailing the many marches of the past month, he enters in his diary the following notes:

"March 29, 1865.—Left camp about twelve o'clock and marched all afternoon and most of the night in the direction of Petersburg. A battle is expected.

"March 30.—Still on the march; hard rain; camped at White Oak.

"March 31.—Continued the march till three o'clock, and then attacked the enemy and drove them four or five miles. Our loss is said to be heavy. The firing was terrific. We camped on the battle ground.

"April 1.—The battle continues. Our division was not engaged. Our troops fell back over the ground they drove



the enemy on yesterday. There was heavy firing all along the line on our left.

“April 2.—We continue to fall back, the enemy pressing our rear; roads almost impassable; in camp but a short time tonight.

“April 3.—Still fighting and falling back.

“April 4.—Still retreating.

“April 5.—Still on the retreat; had a hard fight, capturing a few prisoners and driving the enemy.

“April 6.—Had another hard fight near the long bridge. General Dearing was seriously wounded.”

This was the last entry. The end was then near, and General Lee soon surrendered.

*The Apron Flag.*—A battle flag carried by Company D has become famous in song and story. It was a child's apron, and it is still preserved as one of the most cherished mementoes of the war. Its history is briefly told. Lee's splendid and all but invincible army, with which he had crossed the Potomac and invaded Pennsylvania, had met the northern hosts on the hills of Gettysburg, and after one of the most desperate battles in the history of the world had been defeated and was slowly retreating southward to the Potomac. The army was yet powerful, but it had met disaster, and the soldiers realized that they were no longer led by the star of victory. Among the regiments that had passed through the storm of battle was the Eleventh Virginia Cavalry. It was making its way through a hostile country and among unfriendly people. The news of the battle had gone over the land, and the people along the line of retreat looked with scorn and hatred upon the weary soldiers as they made their way south. There was no friendly word or sympathetic look among all the citizens of the country through which they passed. Thus, with feelings of dejection and discouragement, the confederates marched through the streets of Hagerstown, Maryland, and out by a stone mill. Here their eyes caught sight of



the first token of friendship they had seen among the inhabitants in days. A little girl stood on a porch near the mill watching the soldiers pass. She wore a small confederate flag for an apron. The discovery was greeted by rousing cheers by the weary soldiers, who little expected to find a friend in that place, and several of them went up to the child and asked for pieces of the apron for souvenirs. She cheerfully took the apron off and gave it to them. Charles Watkins, of Hampshire county, took it, fastened it to a stick, and said he would use it for a battle flag and defend it with his life.

He little knew how soon he would be called upon to redeem his pledge. Scarcely had they passed beyond the town when union troops opened fire on them from the front. The battle began at once, and was fiercely fought for a few minutes, when the federals fell back and the confederates continued their retreat. But Charles Watkins, who was a youth of nineteen, marched no further. He had been cut down in the midst of a furious charge. The apron flag lay beneath his body and was stained with his life blood. The flag was preserved, and was often exhibited at confederate reunions throughout the south. The following poem, written by Virginia Frazer Boyle, has for its subject the flag and the death of young Watkins:

It is just a little apron  
That a tiny maid might wear  
When childhood dimpled on her cheeks  
And sunlight kissed her hair.  
Just a quaint, old-fashioned trifle,  
Blent with stripes of white and red;  
Wrought tenderly with careful hands  
And earnest, bended head.  
But the dust of years sleep on it.  
It is faded, rent and old;  
There are battle marks upon its field  
And blood stains in its fold.



Yet a dainty maiden wore it  
As she watched way up the hill,  
Standing in the ancient doorway  
Of the busy old stone mill.

And she saw the soldiers coming,  
Dispirited and slow;  
A sad, retreating army  
In the country of the foe.

Then a shout that waked the woodlands  
Stirred her heart and filled her ear.  
Down the line it rolled and echoed  
And re-echoed, cheer on cheer.

And the strong men dashed the teardrops  
That would come, and cheered once more  
For the girl who dared to wear it  
And the apron that she wore.

It had thrilled the weary legion,  
And from heart to heart it swept,  
Striking deep the languid pulses,  
Where their truth and valor slept.

And they paused, these men of battles;  
Paused with grave, uncovered head,  
Just to beg a piece, a token,  
Of the apron, white and red.

Then the blue eyes dropped their fringes  
On the modest, blushing face;  
Then the proud breast swelled with ardor  
As she tore it from its place.

Then they fixed it on the flagstaff  
And unfurled it for the strife,  
And the noble youth who bore it  
Pledged his valor with his life.

Onward moved the weary army  
Through the vale and down the hill;



Lost to sight the modest maiden;  
Past the village and the mill;  
On and on, where raged the battle,  
And where hearts must needs be true,  
Where the scythe of death was heaping  
High the mounds of Gray and Blue;  
On and on, with stately marching;  
On and on, they could not lag;  
For in front the youthful hero  
Bravely bore the apron flag.  
And above the black smoke, trailing  
Like a star, it beckoned on;  
Then the little apron fluttered,  
And the beacon light was gone.  
Then they lifted him, so softly,  
Smoothed the clustered curls apart;  
Found the tiny battle apron  
Closely pillowed on his heart.  
Then they bent to catch the whisper  
Through the storm and din of strife:  
"Take my pledge; 'tis not dishonored.  
I have kept it with my life."  
It is just a little apron,  
And its simple tale is told.  
There are battle marks upon it;  
Blood stains are upon its fold.

*Captain White's Company.*—Company C, Twenty-third Virginia cavalry, was raised for special service by Captain C. S. White. It was composed of men from several counties and from different states. In June, 1861, Captain White was a member of the Hampshire Guards, under Captain Sherrard, and left Romney with that company, and served with it four or five months, and was made sergeant-major of the Thirteenth Virginia infantry. He



was then reported for promotion to adjutant, and was appointed, but never received his commission. He was taken sick with typhoid fever and was ordered to the hospital at Staunton, and was discharged from the service. When able for work he went to Richmond and was given charge of a bureau in the treasury department. He remained there during the winter of 1862-63. While there he was sent for by President Davis, who wanted him to organize a company of scouts or spies. Captain White undertook the work. This company was wanted for special service, and among its duties was to range over the rough and mountainous region stretching from Monroe county, through Greenbrier, Pocahontas, Highland, Pendleton, Randolph, Hardy to Hampshire. With about twenty men from Richmond, mostly from the treasury department, as a nucleus, he commenced recruiting, and in a short time had three hundred men. He was not permitted to retain more than one hundred and twenty; consequently the others sought service elsewhere. A considerable number were taken by D. E. Beall of Hampshire county, who, with them, joined General Imboden's cavalry. Beall was made lieutenant colonel of the eighteenth regiment.

Captain White's company saw active service from the time it took the field till the close of the war, but particularly during the year 1864 and the early part of 1865. During the summer of 1864 it had fifty-six battles and skirmishes, including picket fights. In that time it had two men killed, twenty-six wounded, four died of wounds, ten were taken prisoner, and on the first of October the company had fifteen serviceable horses and seventy that were not serviceable. Below will be found a list of the company, as it existed October 1, 1864, together with the county to which each man belonged:

Captain, C. S. White, Hampshire, wounded June 21, 1864; first lieutenant, Alexander White, Hampshire county; second lieutenant, J. R. Baker, Hardy county; first ser-



geant, J. M. Binford, Norfolk, wounded; second sergeant, J. Heishman, Hardy county, wounded; third sergeant, C. E. Taylor, Richmond, wounded; fourth sergeant, J. C. Wood, Morgan county, wounded August 6, 1864; fifth sergeant, James Gochenour, Hardy county; first corporal, Stephen Runnells, wounded August 3, 1864; second corporal, Hulver Hayden, Pendleton county; third corporal, James Wetzel, died of wounds, July 6, 1864, from Hardy county. Privates, Benjamin Funk, Hardy county; Noah Albright, Nicholas county, supposed to have been killed at Fisher's Hill; Lewis Albright, Nicholas county, wounded June 5, 1864; John Allen, Hampshire county, wounded August 16, 1864; W. H. Bush, Hampshire county, wounded at Fisher's Hill and taken prisoner; Z. Curry, Hampshire county, wounded August 14, 1864; James Delaughter, Greenbrier county; James Devine, Greenbrier county, wounded June 5, 1864; J. W. Dyer, Pendleton county; Frank Lewis, Hardy county, killed at Forestville; Jacob Gochenour, Hardy county, supposed to have been killed; James Healy, Pocahontas county, taken prisoner June 7, 1864; E. F. Heishman, Hardy county, taken prisoner June 7, 1864; E. Hern, Randolph county, wounded June 5, 1864; Adam Hulver, Hardy county, wounded June 5, 1864; D. Holtzinger, Pendleton county, supposed killed; John Hansburger, Highland county, taken prisoner July 16, 1864; John Koogler, Randolph county, wounded; Richard Landers, wounded; Moses Longacre, Hardy county, wounded; L. Q. Murphy, Hampshire county, wounded May 15 and July 26, 1864; Joseph Rumburg, Hampshire; L. C. Rucker, Hampshire, taken prisoner at Winchester; Marcus Slate, Hampshire, wounded June 5, 1864; Michael Sayer, Pendleton county, wounded; W. A. Vaden, Hampshire, wounded; L. M. Vass; Abram Whitmore, Hampshire, wounded May 15, 1864; Peter Wetzel, Hardy, wounded; J. Wilson, Hardy; J. Wilkins, Randolph county, wounded at Winchester and taken prisoner. The following members were taken pris-



oner in the latter part of 1863 and early in 1864: William Henderson, Julius Hoskins, J. Copenham, John Jones, C. Graham, James McCarty, Robert Magee, Joseph McDonald, Robert Wheeler and John Wilbur.

Captain White's company was in the Alleghany mountains in the spring of 1865, when the order came to move eastward. The company marched toward Lynchburg, and when near that town received the news of Lee's surrender. It was believed that the end of the war was at hand, and the men were given permission to disband or go to North Carolina and join Johnston, who was still holding out. Captain White, with about twenty men, started to go to Johnston, but before proceeding far, the intelligence was received that Johnston had surrendered. They made their way to Highland county, Virginia, where it was understood General Rosser was collecting a force for the purpose of making a last stand. But they failed to find any army in Highland, so they disbanded and went home. Captain White reached Romney June 22, 1865. He never surrendered and was never parolled. He brought home with him his horse, sword and pistol. The horse lived twenty years after the war and finally met his death in jumping a fence.



## CHAPTER LIV.



### ENLISTING CONTINUES.

Below will be found a roll and brief history of Company A, Thirty Third Virginia infantry, which was composed of men chiefly from Springfield and vicinity: Captain, Philip L. Grace, promoted major September, 1862, resigned two months later and went home; first lieutenant, Simeon D. Long, left the command in 1861 and never returned; second lieutenant, Jacob N. Buzzard, died of pneumonia in 1862; third lieutenant, William Johnson, died in Charlottesville, 1862; first sergeant, James G. Parsons, promoted to third lieutenant in April, 1862, and soon afterwards resigned; second sergeant, William Montgomery, wounded at Manassas, July 21, 1861, served two years in Eighteenth Virginia cavalry, came back to Company A in January, 1864, and was taken prisoner at Spottsylvania Court House in May, 1864, and remained a prisoner till the close of the war; third sergeant, James P. Dailey, wounded at Kerns-ville in March, 1862, was taken prisoner and died; first corporal, Monroe Blue, promoted to second lieutenant in the Eighteenth Virginia cavalry, taken prisoner in 1863, and escaped while being carried to Fort Delaware, by jumping from a moving train, made his way across the lines and was killed at the battle of New Hope in June, 1864; second corporal, A. A. Young, wounded July 21, 1861, at Bull Run, left the company and went home in September, 1862; third corporal, James Connelly, left the company in 1862 and went home.

Privates—Herman Allen, went home September, 1862; Edward Allen, wounded at Bull Run, taken prisoner March



23, 1862, at Kernstowns, was exchanged and went home; Jacob Adams, went home in September, 1862; James Adams, killed at Bull Run, 1861; George Arnold, went home in November, 1863; Andrew Baker, died in the hospital in 1862; John Baker, went home November, 1862; William I. Blue, killed at the first battle of Bull Run; Michael Blue, hired a substitute in July, 1861; Joseph Berry, went home in September, 1862; Michael Bright, captured at Kernstown, exchanged, wounded at Antietam; Joseph Cadwallader, wounded at the first battle of Bull Run; John O. Casler, transferred to the Eleventh Virginia Cavalry January, 1865, captured in Hampshire county February 5, 1865, remained in prison until the close of the war; Elisha Carder, wounded at Fisher's Hill; Joseph Carder, in Lynchburg sick at the close of the war; William A. Dailey, joined rangers in 1863; Daniel Doran, discharged in 1862; Joseph Earsom, transferred from Second Virginia Regiment, elected second lieutenant in July, 1862, killed at the second battle of Bull Run August 30, 1862; Charles M. French, joined the rangers in 1862; Thomas Furlough, killed at the first battle of Bull Run; Thomas Gross, killed at Kernstown; John Grayson, went home in November, 1862; Robert Grace, wounded at Kernstown, was captured and died; James Gaither, killed at Spottsylvania Court House in 1864; George Gaither, died in the hospital in 1863; John Halderman, killed at the second battle of Bull Run; James Hass, died in the hospital at Lynchburg April, 1863; Edward Hartley, went home November, 1863; Elijah Hartley, killed at Kernstown; John Harris, went home September, 1862; Amos Hollenback, killed at the first battle of Bull Run; John Kelley, went home in November, 1862; Patrick Kenny, went home in the fall of 1862; James Linthicum, went home in 1861; John W. Long, went home in 1862; Emanuel Miller, went home in November, 1862; Martin Miller, wounded at Kernstown; Polk Marker, killed at Bull Run, Joseph McNemar, sick in the



hospital at the close of the war; Edward Montgomery, joined the rangers in 1863; Thomas McGraw, died in prison at Camp Douglas, Illinois; George Offutt, killed at the second battle of Bull Run; William H. Powell, elected first lieutenant in April, 1862, seriously wounded at Gettysburg July 3, 1863; David Pownall, transferred to Eighteenth Virginia Cavalry November, 1862; Hugh Pence, transferred to Eighteenth Virginia Cavalry September, 1863; Samuel Pence, killed at the second battle of Bull Run; David Pence, in prison when the war closed and died before he reached home; Ralph Perrin, aged sixteen years at the time of his death, which occurred at the second battle of Bull Run; Charles Perrin, died in the Charlottesville hospital in 1862; William Pollard, wounded in the battle of Winchester September 19, 1864; Thomas Powall, went home November, 1862; Joseph Parker, went home November, 1862; John Rhinehart, wounded at the battle of Bull Run, afterward joined the cavalry; John Rizer, sick and discharged; David Shelley, went home in November, 1862; William Sivills, sick at the close of the war; George Short, went home in September, 1862; David Simmons, went home in January, 1863; Culver Stockslager, went home in November, 1862; Frank Swisher, went home sick in December, 1861.

The Potomac Guards, under command of Captain Grace, marched from Springfield to Blue's gap about the middle of June, 1861. They found the Hampshire Riflemen, under Captain George Sheetz, already there. About that time Colonel A. P. Cummins was sent from Harper's Ferry to Romney to collect the confederate companies in Hampshire and adjoining counties and form a regiment. On June 19 the Potomac Guards and Hampshire Riflemen marched from Blue's gap to Romney to be placed under orders of Colonel Cummins. The Riflemen were organized before the war and were well armed, but the Guards had only old muskets and flintlock rifles which had been sent from Har-



per's Ferry. Two small cannon were also sent from Harper's Ferry. The Guards had no cartridge boxes and they carried their ammunition in their pockets. In addition to the two companies above named, Colonel Cummins had under his command the Independent Greys, a Moorefield company. He was able to furnish uniforms for the men, but good guns were scarce. He was proceeding nicely in his work of getting together a regiment, but before he had been in Romney a week, General Lew Wallace interfered with the confederate plans by sending a regiment of union troops from New Creek to capture the confederates in Romney. The plan would have probably succeeded had not the eagle eye of a citizen on Patterson's creek discovered the advance of the federals, and suspecting that they had designs against Romney, he hastened by short roads, and gave Colonel Cummins warning of his danger. The confederates were in no condition to fight such a force as was approaching, and they took the road for Winchester as fast as possible. The federals came in at one end of town as the confederates went out at the other. About a dozen shots were fired up and down the streets, but no one was hurt. The troops from New Creek soon returned to that place, and Romney was again quiet.

After Company A reached Winchester it received its supplies from Springfield, where they had been bought by private subscription. These consisted of knapsacks, blankets, cartridge boxes, canteens and tents. This company was attached to the Stonewall brigade, and took part in some of the hardest fighting of the war, being in the first and second battles of Bull Run, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg and many others.

After the battle of Bull Run there was a lull in military operations. A number of the members of Company A took advantage of the occasion to pay a visit to their homes in Hampshire. But they forgot to obtain permission from the officers. The result was that Lieutenant Buzzard was



sent after them. He succeeded in persuading sixteen of the men to return to their company. They had not intended to desert, but simply thought to take advantage of the lull to go home. They were not severely punished. It was the policy of the federals not to molest confederates who came home to stay. Speaking of this, Mr. Casler in his book says: "The federals told the absentees if they would remain at home peaceably and not go to bushwhacking, they would not molest them; for they knew if arrested and sent to prison they would be exchanged and put in ranks again; but if they did not molest them the probabilities were that they would remain at home."

*Monroe Blue's Raid into Hampshire.*—In the winter of 1862 Lieutenant Monroe Blue, formerly of Company A, but at that time belonging to the Imboden cavalry, came on a scout into Hampshire county by way of Lost river. He had a small squad of soldiers, and was joined by Thomas McGraw, Lieutenant Blue, William A. Dailey and John O. Casler, making about fifteen in all, with Edward Montgomery as a guide. They cautiously made their way across the hills to the road between Springfield and the Baltimore and Ohio railroad. They waylaid and captured three men, four horses and two sacks of mail. The next day they attacked a wagon train on Patterson's creek and captured two men and twelve horses. The union troops from Springfield gave pursuit and overtook them while ascending the mountain east of the South branch, fired upon them and took McGraw prisoner. After a running fight of several miles the others made their escape, but William Dailey had an eye put out by a limb of a tree. They lost several of their horses.

Company A was disbanded in January, 1865. Many had been killed, others had joined the cavalry, some had gone home, and when the last list was made out there was only one man in the company, Elisha Carder, and he was not in service, having been wounded. The company was, there-



fore, easily disbanded. During the winter of 1865 two companies of cavalry, one from Hampshire and the other from Hardy, were camped on Lost river, and occasional raids were made into the South branch country and toward New creek. In one of these raids a drove of twenty-four cattle were taken from a government contractor named McFern, on Patterson's creek, and he was made a prisoner and relieved of a large amount of money. The party was pursued by a squad of union cavalry and taken prisoner.

*Death of Monroe Blue.*—The escape from prison and the subsequent death in battle of Lieutenant Monroe Blue have been already spoken of in the history of the company to which he belonged; but the subject demands a more extended notice, as he was one of the bravest soldiers Hampshire sent into the field. Lieutenant Blue was one of a party of confederate prisoners who were confined at Johnson's Island, in the state of New York. After being in prison ten months, the order came to remove them to Fort Delaware, a prison near Philadelphia. For a long time Lieutenant Blue had meditated escape, but the opportunity did not come while at Johnson's Island. When placed on the train for the trip to Fort Delaware he undertook to cut a hole through the bottom of the car. He had hacked the edge of his pocket knife and had converted it into a saw. He was making good progress toward cutting through when the guard discovered him, and his plan was frustrated. He then resorted to the more desperate expedient of knocking down the sentinel on the platform and jumping off. The bell rope was cut by some one at the same time, and the signal to stop the train could not be given. The leap from the cars somewhat injured his side and hip, falling as he did upon the rails of the double track at that point. But in the excitement of the moment, and in his eagerness to see his native hills, he forgot his injuries. He fortunately escaped being shot, although the



sentinel on the next platform fired at him at close range. The yankee whom he had knocked down could not regain his feet in time to fire; and the train could not be stopped. He, therefore, made his escape for the present. This occurred at a point in Pennsylvania about seventy miles west of Harrisburg. After getting free from the train guard he still had dangers innumerable and hardships appalling ahead of him. The stoutest heart might have yielded to despair. He was in the enemy's country, and every man's hand was against him. He was without money. It was in the dead of winter. If he remained in the woods he was in danger of starving and freezing. If he ventured to houses for food he was liable to arrest. He set forward in a southerly direction, and traveled days and nights, by field, wood, road, path and wilderness. Four times in the four days hunger drove him to houses for food. He passed himself as a railroad hand and was kindly received. When he slept an hour or two occasionally from sheer exhaustion, he wrapped himself in his overcoat and lay upon the frozen ground. When he was obliged to pass a town he usually did so at night; but he walked through Bedford in the day time. In four days and nights he walked one hundred and fifty miles, and finally reached his home in Hampshire county. His relatives were taken by surprise. They had supposed him dead.

Detachments of federal troops at that time were overrunning Hampshire. Among them was Averell, with his cavalry, passing through on one of that general's accustomed dashing movements. Although Lieutenant Blue was weary and footsore, he did not hesitate to do all he could to retard the progress of the yankee general. He succeeded in blockading a point on Averell's line of march so securely that rocks had to be blasted before the union troops got through. Lieutenant Blue soon joined his regiment, and on June 5, 1864, took part in the battle of New Hope, in Augusta county. At the commencement of the



fight some of the **dismounted** officers of the brigade were ordered to take command of the **dismounted** men and **de-**ploy them as skirmishers, but they all seemed slow in obeying the command. Lieutenant Blue sprang from his horse and said he would lead the **dismounted** men. He thus entered the battle, but never returned. As he was leading his men he was shot through the neck and fell dead. On that day died as brave a soldier as ever gave up his life on the field of battle.

*Captain Muse's Company.*—Company F, Eighteenth Virginia cavalry, under Captain R. Bruce Muse, in the confederate service, was composed of men partly from Hampshire county and partly from Frederick county, Virginia. Captain Muse now lives at Mountain Home, near Heiskell postoffice, in Frederick county. No roll of his company is in existence, so far as known, but the captain prepared for this book, from memory, a list of the men from Hampshire who were in his company. The list is as follows: Tilbury M. Arnold, wounded; Lemuel Arnold, Harvey Arnold, died from wounds; Alfred Anderson, Daniel Anderson, slightly wounded; Westley Frank, Benton Frank, wounded, and now live in the west; David Griffin, Richard M. Johnson, wounded three times; William Scott Johnson, Eusabius Johnson, John Johnson, wounded; John Kelso, Elkanah Lafollett, Wood McKee, wounded; Daniel Miller, Thomas Miller, Seimon Marple, wounded twice; William Nixon, transferred to Captain Lovett's company; John Nixon, John Oats, Vincent S. Pugh, Francis M. Pugh, slightly wounded; George Pugh, Dorsey Reid, Martin Reid, died in the army, L. S. Spaid, Evan P. Ward, wounded, died at Lynchburg, Virginia. B. N. Lockart and J. O. Bywaters were sergeants in Captain Muse's company, but they were transferred to Captain Lovett's company and Lockart became first lieutenant and Bywaters second lieutenant.



## CHAPTER LV.



### ONE FEDERAL COMPANY.

When the civil war began Mineral county was a part of Hampshire, and Company I, Tenth West Virginia volunteer infantry, under Captain James A. Jarboe, was organized at Piedmont, May 5, 1862, and was mustered into the service of the United States May 19, 1862. There was not one company of union soldiers organized in the present territory of Hampshire, but as its limits at that time included Mineral, it is given credit for one federal company to offset thirteen companies and parts of companies mustered into the service of the confederacy. Following will be found a history of Captain Jarboe's company.

The field and staff officers were: Colonel, T. M. Harris; lieutenant colonel, M. S. Hall; major, Henry Withers; surgeon, George E. Ganes, died at Harrisonburg, Virginia, October 3, 1864; assistant surgeon, J. R. Blair; adjutant, O. P. Boughner; quartermaster, Samuel Adams; chaplain, John Branch; sergeant-major, Henry H. Detimore; quarter-master-sergeant, Herman Gregg; commissary sergeant, John P. Phillips; hospital steward, Antony Simon. The company officers were: Captain, James A. Jarboe, wounded September 6, 1863; first lieutenant, John M. Jarboe, wounded at Shafer's mountain, promoted from second to first lieutenant June 1, 1863; second lieutenant, Michael Ahern, promoted from first sergeant, June 1, 1863, taken prisoner; orderly sergeant, Isaac N. Trout, promoted from corporal June 1, 1863; second sergeant, John W. Rawlings; third sergeant, William I. Hilkey, wounded July 24, 1864; fourth sergeant, Benjamin F. Mayhew, captured and died



at Andersonville, Georgia; fifth sergeant, John H. Kitzmiller; first corporal, Henry Danner, taken prisoner; second corporal, George W. Miers; third corporal, John Likens, deserted; fourth corporal, David K. Crawford; fifth corporal, Joseph H. Aronhalt, taken prisoner; sixth corporal, William Hershman, taken prisoner; seventh corporal, John T. Cross; musicians, Richard H. Thrush, killed near Strasburg, Virginia, October 13, 1864; Ransom T. Powell; wagoner, Abram P. Byrd. Former officers, commissioned and non-commissioned: First lieutenant, W. Barclay, died at Winchester, Virginia, April 19, 1863; sergeant, William Turner, died at Winchester; corporal, James Shillenburg, died at Winchester; corporal, Michael Thrush, died from wounds received September 19, 1864.

Privates, Gabriel F. Arnold, Hezekiah P. Bailey, William Bartholow, Joseph Bobo, Silvertown Burns, wounded at Winchester, September 19, 1864; James S. Barrick, deserted; James Blackburn, deserted; George Blackburn, taken prisoner; Samuel T. Brooks, died in a confederate prison; Peter Bever, taken prisoner; Thomas Cornell, Orlando Chester, taken prisoner; William Drew, wounded at Leetown, Pennsylvania; Joseph Danner, taken prisoner; William J. H. Dye, taken prisoner; Theodore Elliott, deserted; Peter R. Greenwalt, wounded October 19, 1864; John Grapes, deserted; David Harrison, taken prisoner; Jacob H. Hull, discharged; James G. L. Harrison, Runnels Harrison, wounded at Winchester, September 19, 1864; George A. Harrison, died in the hospital; Henry Hall, taken prisoner; Francis M. Jarboe, Arnold Lyon, died at New Creek, West Virginia; Michael A. Liller, John Liller, taken prisoner and died at Andersonville, Georgia; Peter Mason, taken prisoner; Solomon Martin, George Martin, wounded September 19, 1864; Joshua J. Mayhew, wounded July 24, 1864; John W. Moore, died at Winchester; John McAnerny, George Miller, died at Philippi, West Virginia; Jacob Mungold, deserted; James May, deserted; Hugh O'Donnall,



John Poland, taken prison; Joseph Powell, Charles T. Powelson, taken prisoner; Jacob Rhodes, taken prisoner; John W. Rhodes, Samuel Steward, Isaac Shillenburg, William Shafer, William F. Staggs, taken prisoner; John F. Staggs, taken prisoner; Benjamin Tasker, wounded October 19, 1864; John D. Welch, deserted.

Captain Jarboe's company was in the following engagements: Timber Ridge, August, 1, 1862; Shafer's Mountain, August 22, 1862; Hedgeville, Virginia, July 26, 1863; Lunice Creek, September 6, 1863; McNemar's Church, January 3, 1864; Leetown, Virginia, July 3, 1864; Maryland Heights, July 5 and 6, 1864; Snicker's Ferry, Virginia, July 18, 1864; Winchester, Virginia, July 23 and 24, 1864; Martinsburg, West Virginia, 1864; Berryville, August 3, 1864; Cedar Creek, Virginia, August 15, 1864; Fisher's Hill, Virginia, September 22, 1864; near Strasburg, Virginia, October 13, 1864; Cedar Creek, Virginia, October 19, 1864.



# CHAPTER LVI.

—«0»—

## IMBODEN'S RAID.

Early in the summer of 1863 General Lee planned the Gettysburg campaign. It is worthy of note that his first written orders, relating especially to the preparation for that campaign, were in regard to a movement in Hampshire county. The letter given below, written by General Lee, is self-explanatory, particularly when viewed in the light of subsequent events. This is the letter:

“Headquarters Army of Northern Virginia,

“June 7, 1863.

“Brigadier General John D. Imboden,

“Commanding Northwestern Brigade,

“Staunton, Virginia.

“GENERAL: In view of operations in the Shenandoah valley, I desire you to attract the enemy's attention in Hampshire county, and proceed down to Romney, or such other point as you may consider best calculated for the purpose. After leaving a sufficient guard in the Shenandoah mountains, you can use the rest of your command for the purpose specified. In attracting their attention, and detaining whatever force they may have at New Creek, Cumberland, Cacapon, etc., you will, of course, do them all the injury in your power by striking them a damaging blow at any point where opportunity offers, and where you deem most practicable. It will be important, if you can accomplish it, to destroy some of the bridges so as to prevent communication and the transfer of reinforcements to Martinsburg. After accomplishing what you can in Hampshire, should you find it practicable or advantageous, you



can cooperate with any troops you may find operating in the valley, forwarding to the commanding officer of the force there any information that you may deem important, and comply with any requisition on his part. I desire you to move into Hampshire as soon as possible. Let me know the time of your departure and the time of your expected arrival. In connection with this purpose, it is important that you should obtain for the use of the army all the cattle that you can. Communicate with the agents of the commissary department you may find purchasing in the country west of Staunton, and let them make arrangements to assist you in purchasing and taking care of the cattle. Major Nolan is now in that region making arrangements for cattle. I wish you to communicate with him if practicable. I hope you will also be able in that country to collect recruits for your brigade, both cavalry and infantry, and bring them out with you. I am very respectfully.

“R. E. LEE, General.”

In obedience to the instructions contained in this letter, Imboden was soon in motion and came into the South branch valley. After a brush with federal scouts below Romney he divided his force, sending one division to Cumberland and the other down the South branch. The force sent to Cumberland approached the town and fired a few shells, but met with no resistance. The citizens surrendered the place and the confederates entered. They did not remain long. Imboden proceeded eastward and on his way burnt the railroad bridge at Patterson creek. Before this division of his troops had reached the mouth of the South branch the other division had arrived at that point and had battered down the railroad bridge with artillery. They planted a gun with a range at right angles with the bridge and cut the beams with cannon balls. At the eleventh shot the bridge fell. The bridge was of iron and steel, and the solid shot cut the beams as if they had been pine. The noise made when the cannon balls struck the



beams was heard many miles. It is said, indeed, that this noise was heard at a greater distance than the report of the cannon.

*John Greitzner's Horse.*—In June, 1863, General Imboden, with about seventeen hundred men, camped two and a half miles above Romney, on his way to Gettysburg. Among his soldiers was John Greitzner, who was acquainted in Romney. He was in need of a horse, and having saved a considerable sum of money, bought one in Romney. The animal was barefooted, and not being able to have shoes put on in town, he took the horse to a blacksmith shop on the Northwestern pike, a mile above Romney. The smith had nailed one shoe on, when federals appeared. They were so near that Greitzner could not escape. He wore a confederate uniform. He pulled off his coat and threw it behind the forge and assumed an air of innocence. The federals proved to be a scouting party of forty which had been riding about the country several days. Some of them entered the shop and asked Greitzner what he was doing there. He said he had brought a horse to have it shod. "What are you doing with gray clothes on?" was the next pointed question. "It is pretty hard times, and we boys in Romney have to wear anything we can get." "Do you live in Romney?" "Yes." The yankees took a good look at him and came to the conclusion that he was not a rebel, but had picked up a pair of confederate pants somewhere; so they started on. But a soldier with a lame horse came hobbling after, and seeing the horse in the shop, took it and left his in its place. Greitzner considered that he had made a lucky escape, even if he did lose the horse.

*Fight Near Romney.*—The union scouts who took Greitzner's horse proceeded to Romney, unaware that Imboden was in the vicinity. But some of the confederates were in town, and lost no time in communicating with Imboden, who sent two or three companies to surround and



capture the yankees, if possible. The latter had proceeded down the river on the road to Hanging Rocks. But Imboden's men were in the road ahead of them, and were placed in an advantageous position on the hill near the present residence of Garrett Parsons. The force was ample to surround and capture the scouts had the attack been properly made; but through some misunderstanding the men neglected to attack at the proper moment, and the yankees, taking in the situation at a glance, escaped with only one man wounded. But their force was cut in two, a number galloping back toward town, and by crossing over the hills through the woods reached the Jersey mountain road and escaped by that route, while the main body put spurs to their horses and went down the road toward Hanging Rocks. However, while escaping from one ambushade they ran into another. McNeill's company was at Hanging Rocks, and the scouts were caught between two forces—Imboden's from the rear and McNeill's from the front. There was only one avenue of escape, and that led across the river. The scouts attempted it, but McNeill headed them off, and they escaped up the mountain on the west side of the river, but were compelled to abandon fifteen horses, which fell into McNeill's hands.

*How Imboden Saved His Men.*—General Imboden occupied Romney several days in 1862. During that time General Kelley, with a large union force, was at New Creek. Among his troops was a body of Dutch cavalry, which had not been much in service. The men were poor riders, and in order that they might have grounds for exercise and practice, a horse corral was established outside the town, and the Dutch cavalrymen kept their horses there. Imboden sent his men to New Creek to procure, by capture, such horses as they could, and they found the Dutch horses an easy prey. They carried several off, and a few nights later returned and procured another lot. Not meeting with opposition, the rebels continued to pay



nightly visits to the corrals, until they had secured nearly a hundred. General Kelley grew tired of it, and set an ambuscade at the corral, and the next night caught three of Imboden's men and promptly sentenced them to be hung as horse thieves. A woman who lived near by informed Imboden of what had happened, and he wrote to Kelley, saying that the men had acted under orders, and that if anyone were guilty the guilt must rest on their general. He further stated that he held twenty-nine federal prisoners and could easily catch another, and that he would retaliate and hang ten yankees for every rebel hanged by Kelley. The union general replied that, inasmuch as the men had acted under orders, they were not guilty of horse-stealing and would be held simply as prisoners of war. Frank Pownall, of North river, was one of the three men sentenced to death by General Kelley.

*Attack on an Armored Car.*—On July 4, 1864, General Imboden made an attack on the railroad bridge over the South branch. He fired with artillery for some time, but was unable to do much damage, because a block house on the west side of the river, garrisoned by union troops with artillery, rendered it impossible for him to reach a position from which his guns were effective against the bridge. An armored car, covered with railroad iron and containing seven men and a twelve-pounder, stood on the track on the west end of the bridge. It was one of a number constructed to run up and down the road, guarding exposed and threatened places. The mission of this one was to guard the South branch bridge, as a sort of auxiliary to the block house. It was believed to be proof against small artillery. There was a porthole in each end, about six inches in diameter, just large enough for the muzzle of the cannon. Each porthole was provided with a trap door, which could be closed by a lever inside; and when closed, it was supposed that shells could rain upon the car all day without doing harm. There was a trap



door two feet square in the bottom, and through this the garrison went in and out. The men who constituted the garrison of the car on July 4, 1864, belonged to a Maryland company, and were James L. Croston, Albert Bigford, Alexander B. King, Benjamin Closs, Lieutenant Moses M. Bigford, Dennis Dehaven and John W. Croston.

When Imboden found that he could not bring his gun to bear on the bridge, he tried the range on the car, from the distance of half a mile. The first shell passed over the car. The next struck it near the roof. The third went in at the porthole; and as it did so, it jarred the trapdoor shut, rendering the car as dark as a dungeon, except that the shell had a long fuse of a peculiar pattern, which gave a diabolical light as it sputtered and hissed, and went spinning and gyrating about the floor of the car, scattering sparks and lurid smoke in all directions. The seven men in the car made a wild scramble for the trapdoor in the floor, trying to get out before the shell exploded, which it certainly would do in a few seconds, even if it did not set the car's magazine on fire and create a sudden and instantaneous volcano. While the men were scrambling for the place of exit in the floor, one of the portholes flew open from some cause, and on the spur of the moment John W. Croston tried to pick up the hissing shell and throw it out. But it spun about so rapidly that he could not get hold of it, although he severely burned his hands and face in the effort to grab it. By this time the other men had succeeded in opening the door in the bottom of the car, and out they went, Croston being the last to go, and barely escaped the explosion, being so near that his face was filled with powder. The car caught fire and what escaped the explosion was burned. The shells in its magazine kept up a furious bombardment for some minutes. The late garrison, after they escaped from the car, never looked back until they had crossed the Potomac into Maryland.

In the meantime Imboden had turned his guns on the



blockhouse, but, so far as he could see, he made no impression on it. However the garrison were hard put to it. The day was excessively warm, and the smoke in the building was stifling. They were about to raise the white flag when Imboden ceased firing and took his departure. He had done little damage to the bridge, and had not stopped travel on the railroad. After his departure, the union troops destroyed a portion of the pike up Breakneck mountain to prevent the confederates from bringing artillery by that route to the bridge in the future.



## CHAPTER LVII.



### MURDER OF CAPTAIN STUMP.

Following are the names of the members of Captain George W. Stump's company, B, Eighteenth regiment Virginia cavalry, copied from the official roll of the company, now in possession of Lieutenant Philip H. Snarr of Hardy county: George W. Stump, captain, Hampshire county; William H. Feller, first lieutenant, Hardy county; Robert Oats, second lieutenant, Hardy county; Philip H. Snarr, second lieutenant, Hardy county; Solomon Park, first sergeant, Hampshire county; Samuel W. Feller, second sergeant, Shenandoah county; John Park, third sergeant, Hampshire county; Henry Cobin, fourth sergeant, Hampshire county; Henry G. Houser, fifth sergeant, Hampshire county; Robert J. Damon, first corporal, Hardy county; James W. Tucker, second corporal, Hardy county; John Tharp, third coporal, Hampshire county; John T. Mathias, fourth corporal, Hardy county; David J. Buckley, quartermaster sergeant, Hardy county; William H. Davidson, blacksmith, Hardy county; Park Ashford, farrier, Hampshire county. Privates: John H. Anderson, Shenandoah; Jacob Brock, Hardy; Robert T. Burch, Hardy; Joseph Brill, Hardy; William W. Bean, Hardy; John W. R. Bean, Hardy; John H. Broll, Hardy; Asa C. Bean, Hardy; John T. Brown, Hardy; William F. Bean, Hardy; William W. Bean, jr., Hardy; George W. Bean, Hardy; Bennett Bean, Hardy; Alfred J. Bean, Hardy; John H. Combs, Hampshire; Charles Combs, Hardy; Jehu Combs, Hardy; George W. Combs, Hardy; Jeremiah Dove, Hardy; Abraham Delawder, Hardy; Jacob Delawder, Hardy; John Delawder,



Hardy; Samuel Delawder, Hardy; Amos Delawder, Hardy; Joseph H. Earls, Hardy; Cyprianus Fitzwater, Hardy; William H. Fitzwater, Hardy; John P. Gretzman, Hampshire; George Greaves, Augusta; Jeremiah Higgs, Rockingham; Elias Higgs, Rockingham; John Hunsbary, Hardy; William Hatterman, Hardy; George W. Harless, Hardy; Peter Kohne, Hardy; Philip W. Link, Hardy; John Link, Hardy; Joseph Lowery, Hardy; Joseph Linthicum, Hardy; Ambrose Lind, Hardy; Jacob Mathias, Hardy; Samuel Moyers, Hardy; Isaac Moyers, Hardy; John N. Mathias, Hardy; Samuel May, Hardy; Abraham Moyers, Rockingham; Elijah L. Nazelrod, Hardy; Benjamin Park, Hampshire; Joseph M. Parker, Hardy; James W. Poland, Hampshire; James A. Pepper, Hampshire; Jacob C. Stultz, Hampshire; Cyrus See, Hampshire; George W. Shireman, Hampshire; Allmon Sager, Hampshire; Abner Shireman, Jackson Strawderman, Hampshire; Leonard Strawderman, Hampshire; Jacob Smith, Hampshire; Joseph T. Tucker, Hampshire; James W. Taylor, Hampshire; Philip Whitmer, Hardy; Selestine Whitmer, Hardy; Jacob Walker, Hardy; David Witmer, Hardy; Adam Whitmer, Hardy; Abraham Whitmer, Hardy; Charles Wilson, Hardy.

*The Murder of Captain Stump.*—No soldier sent from Hampshire into the confederate army was more active than Captain Stump, whose home was on the South branch, a few miles above Romney. He was a man of wealth, and equipped at his own expense the men of his company, except a portion of their arms. He furnished the horses. He was wounded in the neck near Winchester late in 1864, and was incapacitated for service for some time. Early in 1865 he again took the field, but was still suffering from his wound. About the first of February he marched with his men to the vicinity of Moorefield, and thence to Hampshire, and on February 5. early in the morning, he arrived at William Stump's, two miles above Romney. His father lived there, and he stopped to see



his people. He rode into a lane, tied his horse and went into the house.

In order to understand the particulars of his death, it is necessary to go back and detail the movements of the federal force which pursued and overtook him. General Custer, afterwards killed by Sitting Bull, was then at Winchester, and about the first of February, 1865, sent spies to discover the whereabouts of Major Henry Gilmor, who was believed to have a small confederate force on the South fork, in Hardy county. The spies made their report, and Custer sent three hundred cavalry, under Major Young, across the mountains into the South branch valley. These men passed up North river in the night. There was a confederate picket in that part of the country under command of a man named Heiskell. One of his men discovered the union cavalry, and it was evident that they were striking for Gilmor or McNeill. This picket asked permission of Heiskell to go to McNeill and Gilmor and inform them of their danger. Heiskell refused to give his consent and ordered the picket not to go, saying that he was not doing picket service for McNeill. This selfishness on his part no doubt cost the life of Captain Stump and caused the capture of Gilmor. Major Young pushed forward with his cavalry and captured Major Gilmor, and then moved down the South branch to Romney. On the way he overtook and captured some of Captain Stump's men, and learned from them that the captain was ahead. These federals wore gray uniforms.

They proceeded to William Stump's, and seeing a horse tied, concluded that Captain Stump was there. The captain had just arrived and was entering the house, having only reached the porch when he observed that strangers were in the vicinity. He walked to the edge of the porch, and seeing several horses tied to the fence and hearing men talking on the other side of the house, he realized that he was in danger of capture, and started toward his horse.



His wound prevented him from running and he walked up the yard. By that time the federals had entered the house, and several were in the yard. One of them said to William Stump: "Who is that man and what is he running for?" Mr. Stump made no reply. Captain Stump had by this time reached his horse and had untied him. At this moment he was fired at with a revolver, but was not struck. The shot brought several yankees round the house and they fired as the captain was mounting his horse. The animal was struck and the captain fell heavily on the frozen ground. The federals surrounded him, and as he was trying to rise, one of them shot him in the side. He was overpowered and taken prisoner. They carried him to the lane below the house. He asked permission to see his father, who was sick in the house. His request was denied. They mounted him on a horse and started with him down the road. The manner of his death was learned from those who took part in it. He had gone but a short distance when he became too sick to ride. One of the guards so reported to Major Young, who is said to have replied: "Make him sicker." At any rate, he was murdered on the spot, and the soldiers claimed that they did it in obedience to the orders of Major Young. Captain Stump was shot more than a dozen times, was stripped of his clothes and left dead in the road. His brother removed the body. Not only did the friends of Captain Stump consider that he was murdered, but the union soldiers regarded it as murder and spoke of it as such.

All of Captain Stump's papers fell into the hands of the federals. None of his property in the valley of Virginia was ever recovered by his friends. It was known that he had many horses there, as well as other property; but in the excitement and danger of the time, nothing was saved. Shortly after the war Colonel Young went to the border between Mexico and the United States, and was caught by the Mexicans and hanged.



*Taxing Citizens.*—An example of how the innocent sometimes suffer for the guilty was seen on December 2, 1864, in the lower part of the South branch valley. When McCausland passed through that country in August, 1864, some of his men burned the residence of Mrs. Huffman. No one ever accused the citizens of the surrounding country of having anything to do with it. Yet, on December 2, 1864, a squad of union soldiers were sent into the valley and levied and forcibly collected a tax from the citizens from Michael Blue's to the mouth of the South branch to reimburse Mrs. Huffman for her loss. It was done in war, and many things are tolerated in war which would not be endured in peace; but, nevertheless, a proceeding like that outrages every sentiment of justice.



## CHAPTER LVIII.



### AVERELL DEFEATS M'CAUSLAND.

Early in August, 1864, an important military movement took place in Hampshire county, but the battle occurred in Hardy. It was the most important battle fought in the South branch valley during the war, and deserves mention somewhat in detail. The confederate generals engaged were McCausland and Bradley T. Johnson, while General W. W. Averell was in command of the union forces. McCausland had been on a raid into Pennsylvania, and had burned Chambersburg, after plundering it. General Averell, with a force of cavalry, was ordered to pursue, and if he could overtake McCausland to fight him to a finish. The confederates retreated from Pennsylvania, passed south of Cumberland, attacked the union forces at New Creek and moved leisurely to Moorefield, where they went into camp a few miles below the town, General Johnson on one side of the river and General McCausland on the other. They evidently did not expect pursuit, as no precaution was taken against surprise. General Averell crossed the Potomac at Hancock on August 4, and took the route to Bath, in Morgan county, by Bloomery gap. He reached Springfield, in Hampshire county, the next day, losing one hundred horses from exhaustion. On August 6 he moved to Romney, and during the afternoon his scouts captured a messenger with dispatches from McCausland, and from these he learned the position of the confederates near Moorefield, and he moved at once to the attack, routing the confederates, capturing all their cannon, four hundred horses, thirty officers, four hundred and twenty prisoners,



killing many, retaking nearly all the plunder carried from Pennsylvania and pushing the southern forces hurriedly up the mountains east of Moorefield. General McCausland came near being court-martialed for allowing himself to be surprised and whipped. He had notice of the advance of Averell nearly four hours before the union forces came up; yet he suffered his forces to remain separated by the river, and they thus were defeated in detail by the enemy. The fact probably is that, although notified that Averell was coming, McCausland did not expect him so early in the morning. Information of the approach of the federals had been carried to McCausland by W. H. Maloney, of McNeill's rangers. Following will be found Mr. Maloney's account of the affair, as he saw it:

"I was in Romney when General Averell arrived. As he came in at one end of the town I went out at the other. I suspected his design, and hid in the woods near the bridge over the South branch above town and watched his movements. His men halted and fed their horses, and then crossed the river and took the Mill creek road, in the direction of Moorefield. I estimated his force to be between seventeen hundred and two thousand. As soon as Averell was out of sight I started up the river road for Moorefield. I had gone only a few miles when I met Isaac Parsons, and persuaded him to go with me. We reached Moorefield at midnight, and I went at once to the house of Samuel A. McMicken, General McCausland's headquarters. I informed the general that Averell was coming. He seemed to doubt it at first, but I heard him send an order to the camp to get ready to meet the enemy. I was acquainted with Mr. McMicken, having been frequently at his house. I told him that I was very tired and would like to take a sleep. He directed me to a room, where I found a bed, and I was soon asleep. That was the last I knew until daybreak. I arose, and was told that the officers who had slept at the house were all gone. I went out in the yard



and listened, but heard no firing or any commotion of any kind, and I concluded that Averell's expected arrival had not yet taken place, and that McCausland was ready for him. I went to the barn and saddled my horse, ready for an emergency. I then returned to the house, just as breakfast was called, and sat down to eat. No one else, except the family, was there. I had buttered a biscuit and was taking the first bite when a young colored girl rushed in and exclaimed: 'Run, Mr. Maloney! De town am full ob yankees!' I ran out at the back door to the stable for my horse, and as I went I heard cavalry advancing, the clatter of sabers against the saddles and the voices of men; but there was no firing and no yelling. I peeped through a crack of the stable to see where the yankees were and which way I should skip; but, to my surprise, I saw the streets full of rebels and not a yankee in sight. I mounted my horse and went out to the street, and realized the situation. Our men were retreating, and were panic stricken. Every man was trying to save himself.

"I was unable to understand why they were running and so much excited. The street was so crowded and jammed that I was afraid to enter it. Every man was exclaiming, 'Go on! go on!' Nearly opposite me was a street that was not open, except for a short distance. It was closed by a fence. Our men entered this cul-de-sac, and when the front men came to the fence there was a jam. Those behind were crowding forward, yelling, 'Go on! go on! the yankees are sabering us! Go on! go on!' I called to them that they could not get out that way, and they turned back in the street, and made the jam and panic worse than ever. The horses were running the best they could, but so crowded was the street that everybody was in danger of being crushed. While I was standing on the sidewalk I caught sight of Isaac Parsons, who had come up with me the day before. He had been caught in the retreat, and was being swept along with the rest. Edward Washing-



ton was riding a horse and leading another. The horse which he rode ran on one side of Isaac Parsons, and the horse he was leading ran on the other side; the leading rope was stretched under Mr. Parsons' body, across the saddle. Washington's horses were going a little too fast for Parsons, and the rope was nearly lifting him out of the saddle at every jump. In vain did he try to free himself from the rope, but he could not; and the last I saw of him he was riding the rope instead of the saddle as he went bobbing and bouncing up and down in the distance.

"In all this time not a yankee was in sight, nor was a gun heard. The noise of the galloping horses had wakened the people of the town, and they appeared at their doors and windows and on their porches. Nearly all of them were our friends, and they looked with disgust at the panic, while not a blue coat was in sight. A lady standing on a porch called to the soldiers: 'Shame! Shame! Oh, shame! Go back and fight! Don't run! Go back and fight! If we had our South branch men here they would not run!' A soldier who heard her looked up and answered: 'Madam, if your South branch men had been over in Pennsylvania stealing as much as we have, they would run, too.'

"I was still by the street, afraid to enter because of the danger of being trampled to death. Just then Lieutenant Gibson came up, with his hat off, and calling me by name, asked me to help him rally the men. I told him it was no use trying, as they were in a panic. He wheeled his horse, rode into the street and tried to stop the stampede. They rode over him and his horse and threw them down. The last I saw of him he was on his feet trying to fight the men back. I think he regained his horse and escaped with the rest of them. When the worst of the rout had passed, I followed after and climbed a hill near by, from which I could overlook the town. The yankees soon appeared and quietly came up the street. They went no further, and after a short time withdrew, and returned the way they



had come. In all this time I did not hear the firing of a single gun. The fight several miles below Moorefield took place while I was asleep. After Averell left the town I went to the battlefield with others, and brought off the wounded and buried the dead, union as well as confederate."

*Keyser Captured.*—On November 28, 1864, General Rosser with a force of confederates captured New Creek, now Keyser, and destroyed large quantities of military stores. That town was among the first places occupied and fortified by the federal forces in the war. General Lew Wallace took possession of it early in June, 1861. Its importance, from a military standpoint, is easily understood. It lies at the eastern base of the Alleghany mountains, at the mouth of New creek. Roads lead to that place from Franklin in Pendleton county; from Petersburg, Grant county; Moorefield, Hardy county, and from Romney, Hampshire county. At the period when Lew Wallace occupied New Creek, all of the towns mentioned were in possession of the confederates, or, at least, were not in possession of union forces, and might be occupied at any time by the confederates, who were masters of the situation east of the Alleghanies. A march of eighteen miles from Romney would have placed them at New Creek. Petersburg was forty miles distant; Moorefield not so far; while Winchester was only sixty miles distant. It can thus be seen that New Creek was exceptionally open to attack from the confederates; and if once in their possession, and so long as in their possession, the Baltimore and Ohio railroad would be useless to the federal government. It was, therefore, early determined by the government that New Creek should be occupied and held, and this policy was never departed from throughout the war. At times the place was strongly garrisoned, and it was frequently made the center from which important military movements were made. From there the troops were sent which occu-



pied Romney in June, 1861. Again, in September of the same year, Colonel Cantwell marched to Romney from New Creek. In October General Kelley went from the same place to attack Romney. From there General Milroy marched to Petersburg, Grant county, and made a fortified camp. From the same place marched General Fremont into Pendleton county early in 1862. General Averell started from New Creek on the famous Salem raid in December, 1863. The troops were sent from New Creek which overtook McNeill below Moorefield when he was carrying Generals Crook and Kelley off, but they failed to retake their generals. Various other circumstances and movements might be mentioned to show the importance of the place as a military headquarters; and it is not to be wondered at that the confederates considered it very much in the way of their operations. They never seriously contemplated capturing it and holding it for themselves; but they cherished the hope of destroying the stores at that place and harrassing it as much as possible. General McCausland made an attack upon it in August, 1864, while returning from his Chambersburg raid; but was defeated with considerable loss.

In November, 1864, General Rosser prepared to attack the town and moved against it from Moorefield. His design was unsuspected by federal officers. They did not know that a strong confederate force was at Moorefield, otherwise they would not have sent a small body of troops to certain destruction; for they dispatched several companies to Moorefield, presuming that the only confederates there were McNeill's men, with perhaps a few others. The particulars of this ill-fated expedition may properly be given here, as it was directly connected with Rosser's march to New Creek: Colonel Latham, acting under orders from General Kelley, ordered Colonel R. E. Fleming to Burlington, thirteen miles from New Creek, with instructions to march to Moorefield and endeavor to capture Mc-



Neill, who was believed to be in the vicinity with his company. Colonel Fleming undertook to surround McNeill, the more certainly to effect his capture, and for that purpose sent Major Potts with two hundred men to the rear of Moorefield, while, with the remaining one hundred, Colonel Fleming proceeded directly to Moorefield, reaching the north bank of the South branch on the evening of November 27, 1864, and there encamped. Within less than half an hour the intelligence was brought by scouts that a large force of confederates had been seen just south of Moorefield. Colonel Fleming remounted his men, sent a small detachment across the river to gain more exact information, and awaited developments. He had not long to wait. The scouts came back with the report that General Rosser, with more than three thousand men, was in the vicinity. The federals had only one piece of artillery. This was placed in position on the river bank, and as the confederates approached, fire was opened upon them. General Rosser returned the fire from the opposite bank. Colonel Fleming held his ground until he discovered that Rosser was about to surround him by sending troops across the river, both above and below. Retreat in double-quick time was all that remained for the federals, and they fell back, hotly pursued by the confederates.

The only avenue of escape was a narrow wagon road leading through a gap between two mountains. The artillery was placed in front and the retreat began. It was a running fight all the way to the gap. The narrowness of the road prevented Rosser from making use of his superior numbers, otherwise the whole command of Fleming would have been captured in a short time. In the gap the artillery broke down and was abandoned. A hand-to-hand fight with sabers occurred in the narrow pass, as darkness was closing the scene. Only one termination was possible. The federals were defeated and almost annihilated. Fifty men were left dead or wounded on the field. The fugitives



fled in the darkness, and reached New Creek in four hours, a distance of nearly forty miles, carrying the report that General Rosser, with at least three thousand men, was advancing. The report proved correct. Colonel Latham, who was in command at the place, had little time in which to prepare for the attack.

General Rosser stripped the uniforms from the dead, wounded and captured union soldiers, and dressed his own soldiers in blue, and sent them as an advance guard toward New Creek, while his main army followed. This was done for the purpose of getting into New Creek before the garrison should discover that the men were rebels in disguise. The plan succeeded. The front of the rebel column, dressed in yankee uniform, approached the town. The union pickets supposed some of their own men were getting in, and allowed them to approach unchallenged. In fact, so little did they suspect the truth that as Rosser's men drew near New Creek a yankee picket, supposing that he was addressing yankees, called out familiarly: "Well, you got whipped again, did you!" The pickets, taken by surprise, were overpowered, and the capture of New Creek was quickly done. The chief part of the garrison escaped across the river into Maryland, where, from the wooded hills, they witnessed the destruction of the military stores and the burning of public property. General Rosser set fire to the magazines, and the bursting of shells made the mountains echo for twenty miles around, leading the citizens to believe that a heavy battle was in progress. George W. Washington wrote in his diary that day: "I heard heavy firing in the direction of New Creek;" and later he added: "The report is that General Rosser has captured New Creek and burnt the government stores there. I think it is doubtful."

General Rosser did not attempt to establish himself there, but withdrew his force after a few hours, having destroyed many thousand dollars' worth of military stores and rail-



road property. The next day the union troops returned and re-established the camp. Colonel Latham, who had given up the place almost without resistance, was relieved from duty and Colonel Fleming placed in command, and remained there till January 12, 1865.



## CHAPTER LIX.



### CAPTAIN MCNEILL'S COMPANY.

The history of the McNeill Rangers would fill a volume, but only a few of the men were from Hampshire county, and it is impossible to give a full history of the company in this book. However, as some of the best soldiers in McNeill's command were from Hampshire, and as some of his most important movements were within Hampshire county, it is proper to give an account of the movements, some of which were the most remarkable in the war. The Hampshire men in his company numbered seventeen, as follows: Joseph L. Vandiver, George Vandiver, J. W. Markwood, James Crawford, Isaac Oates, Herman Allen, W. H. Maloney, Patrick Kenney, Sanford Rollins, George Carroll, John C. High, John L. Harvey, Martin Ohaver, Thornton Neville, W. C. Bierkamp, George Markwood, James Welch.

In 1863 General Milroy was moving his army down the South branch from the direction of Pendleton county, and had advanced into Hardy without meeting any rebels. He had a large wagon train, which moved in the middle of his army, half his troops being behind and half in front. Captain McNeill, with sixty men, was a few miles below Moorefield, and conceived the idea of attacking Milroy, but of course without any expectation of gaining any advantage over him. He well knew that the federals would make quick work of his men if given the opportunity. He accordingly selected a spot near Old Fields where he could attack and escape. When half of Milroy's army had passed and the wagons were exposed, McNeill's men made



a descent upon them, and captured forty-seven horses before a general alarm was given. The union troops were taken as much by surprise as if an enemy had dropped from the clouds. Some of the teamsters were panic-stricken and cut their horses from the wagons and mounting them, fled along with the rebels, in their confusion mistaking them for friends. Several were thus taken prisoner. McNeill made his escape.

*Hay Train Captured.*—In 1862 the federal forces in Romney were in the habit of procuring hay from Mill creek. It was known that bodies of confederates occasionally came into the county, and as a precaution a guard was always sent with the wagons when they went after hay. Late in the winter a number of teams made the usual trip, and a guard of about twenty-five men accompanied. The wagons proceeded to the vicinity of Moorefield Junction, where they loaded with hay and set out upon the return. Captain McNeill had been on the lookout, and charged the train, scattering or capturing the guard, securing the horses and wagons, and taking several of the drivers prisoner. It was impossible to carry the wagons away, so the horses and harness were taken and the wagons and hay were burned.

*Capture of Piedmont.*—On the night of May 3, 1864, Captain McNeill, with sixty-one cavalry, set forward from near Moorefield with the design of burning the railroad shops at Piedmont. He went by way of Elk Garden and Bloomington, and arrived within a mile of Piedmont at daybreak May 4. At that time a large force was at New Creek, five miles distant, and Colonel James A. Mulligan, with a union force, was at Petersburg, in the present county of Grant. At the moment when McNeill reached the Baltimore and Ohio railroad a train, loaded with horses, was passing, and it refused to stop in obedience to orders. The engineer threw open the throttle and ran through at full speed. McNeill saw a valuable prize escape. He left ten



men, under command of John C. Pierce, as a guard at Bloomington, and with the rest of his command hastened into Piedmont and set the railroad shops on fire. Before they could cut the wires, the alarm was sent to New Creek. The columns of smoke from the burning shops confirmed the report that the rebels had captured the town. While this was taking place two freight trains came down the Seventeen Mile grade from the west, and were run on the switch by the men under Pierce at Bloomington and set on fire. Scarcely had the match been applied to the freight cars when a passenger train, loaded with United States troops, came thundering in from the west. It stopped in obedience to a demand from Pierce. Captain Buck had command, and there were one hundred and three men under him. They had been on furlough and were returning to the field. They had guns but no ammunition.

When the train came to a stop, it was boarded by Pierce, who demanded an immediate surrender, threatening to fire on the train with artillery in case of refusal. Captain Buck accordingly surrendered. The men were marched out, gave up their guns and were parolled. When the captain learned that he had surrendered to a squad of ten men, he vented his rage in the most tremendous oaths, and declared that had he known how few the rebels were he would have fought them with the butts of the guns. But it was then too late, and he submitted with great disgust. Among the passengers on the captured train were the wife and two daughters of General Schenck. They were permitted to proceed on their journey. By the time the prisoners were parolled, Captain McNeill had returned from Piedmont, one mile distant, and was preparing to retreat, for he knew he could not hold the place against the force which would soon arrive from New Creek. The yankees came sooner than was expected. They appeared on the Maryland side of the river and opened fire with



artillery and repeating rifles, and made it too hot for McNeill, who had several horses killed, but saved his men by getting out as quickly as possible. The union fire had one deplorable result, a somewhat common one in war—several women and children, who were standing in their yards watching the soldiers, were wounded. McNeill made good his retreat and was not pursued. He captured a number of horses from Henry G. Davis, who was at that time buying horses for the government, and who afterwards represented West Virginia in the United States Senate.

Four weeks after the capture of Piedmont—that is, June 1, 1864—Colonel Mulligan withdrew his force from Petersburg. That was the last large body of union troops to occupy the upper part of the South branch valley during the war, although other troops occasionally marched through it, remaining a day or two.

On June 25, 1864, a troop of federal cavalry passed through Romney on the way to Springfield. Captain McNeill followed down the South branch to the wire bridge and sent out scouts, who discovered the federals in camp near Springfield. They evidently were not in fear of an attack, as they posted but few pickets, while the greater portion of them proceeded to take a bath in a brook nearby. Their horses were turned into meadows in the vicinity. Seeing that he could strike them before they could get into position to fight, Captain McNeill made a charge, drove in the pickets and broke into the camp. The union soldiers not only were unarmed, but most of them were without clothes, and, after a vain endeavor to escape by flight, about sixty of them surrendered. McNeill captured two hundred and forty horses, nearly all the arms in the camp and retreated up the South branch.

On October 30, 1864, a cold and bleak day, McNeill's men made a dash to Green Spring, on the Baltimore and Ohio railroad, between Patterson creek and the South



branch, and surprised a company of union cavalry at that place. There was some resistance, but McNeill won the fight, capturing eighteen prisoners and forty horses.

*The Wire Bridge Cut Down.*—On August 2, 1864, the wire bridge which spanned the South branch at the lower Hanging Rocks, about eight miles below Romney, was cut down by order of Captain McNeill, who had his orders from General Early. Twice before that time McNeill had been ordered to destroy the bridge; but not wishing to do so he had found excuses for disobeying orders, and the bridge remained unharmed. But about the time McCausland went on his raid, General Early sent a peremptory order to McNeill to destroy the bridge. It was claimed by the confederates that the citizens of that vicinity, who sympathized with the south, had frequently and urgently demanded that the bridge be destroyed, giving as their reason that yankee scouting parties and horse thieves were in the habit of crossing the bridge to steal and plunder. Be this as it may, McNeill destroyed the bridge. One of the cables was cut with an ax and the structure fell into the river. This was two days before McCausland came by on his retreat from Pennsylvania. Since the war there has been much controversy as to who was responsible for the destruction of the bridge. Captain McNeill shifted the responsibility to General Early; General Early said the citizens in the vicinity had urged him to destroy the bridge, and he had given the order at their request. No citizen has been found since the war who can remember that he ever made any such request or that he knew anything about it till it was done. It is fortunate that there is a contemporaneous document showing how one of the prominent citizens felt on the subject. George W. Washington, who lived just above there, and who kept a diary, and who had kept it for thirty years, and who continued to keep it several years after the war closed, made this entry in his book August 2, 1864: "I heard a lot of rebels



had gone down this morning on their way to Cumberland. I met Michael Blue, who informed me the rebels had thrown down the wire bridge. When I got there, sure enough, I found it in the river. What could have induced so foolish an act is a mystery to me. They must have known it would be a great public loss. I wish, from the bottom of my heart, the originator of the thing had been caught under it and sent to the bottom of the river. I heard they were fighting in Cumberland. About twelve o'clock there came a lot of Gilmor's men stealing horses, and I expected to lose everything on the farm in the shape of a horse. They succeeded in getting two, and finding they could not catch the others, the devils shot at them and tried to kill them. Here we are. The artillery camping in my fields; the men stealing everything they can lay their hands on. From the beginning they have made, they will leave us nothing. All the men below me, through whose neighborhoods they have passed, are here hunting horses they stole from them. They stole every horse they could find as they passed up. So I am not alone."

*A Soldier Reading Prayers.*—Early in 1865 Colonel Young of the union army, was passing down the South branch and a portion of his men stopped at the house of David T. Parsons, seven or eight miles above Romney. It happened that W. H. Maloney, one of McNeill's company, was in the house at the time. The federals wore gray clothes, and were mistaken for confederates until so near the house that escape was impossible. They were unusually rough, and came in, flourishing their pistols and kicking doors open, threatening the people of the house, and demanding money and jewelry. Mr. Maloney looked upon his case as hopeless, but he ran into a back room and shut the door. He wore a confederate coat, but had on citizens' pants. The case was urgent, and what he intended doing he must do quickly. He pulled off his coat and hid it, and picking up a prayer-book, threw himself on the lounge, and



began to read prayers with the apparent devotion of an octogenarian anchorite. At that moment a yankee kicked the door open and bolted in. Maloney sprang up as though much surprised. "What command do you belong to?" demanded the soldier. "I don't belong to any command," replied Maloney, letting the book fall, in not altogether feigned consternation. "Who are you?" demanded the soldier. Maloney gave some name. The soldier had a cocked revolver in his hand, and he demanded: "What are you doing here?" "Working on the farm." With this the soldier punched Maloney in the face with his revolver and holding it to his head, said with an oath, "Give me your money." "I have no money." "What do you do with your money if you are working on the farm?" "I support my mother with it." By this time another yankee had come in, and was punching Maloney in the ribs with a pistol and ordering him to give up his money. But the young rebel was lustily denying that he had any money, and was dancing about the room in such a lively manner that the yankees could not get their hands in his pockets, although they were trying to do so. He was not concerned so much about his money as about certain letters which he was carrying from citizens of Hampshire to soldiers in the south, and which would at once have betrayed his identity. Finally an officer in the outer room, seeing the soldiers besetting him, ordered them to let him alone. They reluctantly gave up their fight for his money and left the room. He thus made a narrow and unexpected escape. These were the soldiers who an hour later murdered Captain Stump.

*Captured and Recaptured.*—In May, 1864, a squad of federal cavalry made a raid up the South branch toward the Hardy county line, and captured several of McNeill's men who were caught some distance from camp. This was considered a valuable capture, for McNeill's command was genuinely hated by the federals. With



their prisoners they retreated down the South branch, passed through Romney, and stopped a short distance above Springfield. In the meantime McNeill had collected his men and gave pursuit, overtaking the federals at their camp, and after a sharp engagement, recaptured the prisoners.



## CHAPTER LX.

—«0»—

### CROOK AND KELLEY CAPTURED.

The capture of General George Crook and General B. F. Kelley, at Cumberland, Maryland, February 21, 1865, by the McNeill Rangers, was a remarkable performance, and attracted much attention. That sixty men could carry away two generals, surrounded by an army of eight thousand, was a subject for much wonder. The names of those who took part in the raid, so far as they are now remembered, are J. G. Lynn, G. S. Harness, J. W. Mason, R. G. Lobb, H. P. Tabb, John Taylor, J. C. McNeill, I. S. Welton, William H. Haye, William H. Poole, J. W. Duffey, I. S. Judy, Sergeants C. J. Dailey and John Cunningham, John Acker, J. W. Markwood, D. E. Hopkins, Charles Nichols, Joseph A. Parker, Isaac Parsons, I. E. Oats, J. G. Showalter, J. W. Kuykendall, Benjamin E. Wotring, G. F. Cunningham, I. H. Welton, John Mace, Mr. Tucker, F. W. Bean, J. W. Crawford, George H. Johnson, C. R. Hallar, W. H. Maloney, Jacob Gassman, I. L. Harvey.

“To enable the reader to form a correct idea of the military situation at the time, February 21, 1865, a slight retrospect at the outset is necessary,” says J. B. Fay, one of the participants. “The debatable ground between the two opposing armies in Northern Virginia ran parallel with the Potomac, and embraced, sometimes, the length of two or more counties southward. During the latter part of the war this region was dominated by three famous confederate partisan leaders—Mosby, Gilmor and McNeill. Their forces sometimes intermingled; but ordinarily the operations of Mosby were confined to the country east of the



Shenandoah; those of Gilmor to the valley of Virginia; while McNeill's special field of action lay to the westward, along the upper Potomac and South branch. McNeill's command was composed principally of volunteers from Virginia and Maryland, though nearly every southern and not a few of the northern states had representatives in the ranks. Moorefield, on the South branch, was the principal headquarters of this command. In a daybreak attack on a company of Pennsylvania cavalry, who were guarding a bridge over the Shenandoah, near Mount Jackson, in the fall of 1864, Captain McNeill met his death. His son, Lieutenant Jesse C. McNeill, was next in command.

"In February, 1865, Lieutenant McNeill consulted me about the feasibility of going into Cumberland and capturing Generals Kelley and Crook. After giving McNeill every assurance that his design could be successfully carried out, he determined to make the attempt. I was commissioned to proceed at once to Cumberland, or its vicinity, and prepare the way for our entry, by learning the number and position of the picket posts, the exact location of the sleeping apartments of both generals, and any other information deemed necessary. Selecting C. R. Hallar as a comrade, I started. A few nights after we left Moorefield found us upon the north bank of the Potomac, a few miles west of Cumberland. At this point the desired information was procured, and we retraced our steps.

"Hallar was dispatched to intercept Lieutenant McNeill, who, during our absence, was to have twenty-five well-mounted men prepared to move leisurely in the direction of Cumberland, ready to act on my report. At the time of which I write, six or eight thousand troops occupied the city. On the night of our entry, in addition to the resident commander (Major-General Kelley), General Crook, General Hayes (since president of the United States), General Lightburn and General Duvall were tem-



porarily in the city. A greater harvest of generals might have been reaped had we been aware of the fact. At that time General Sheridan's army lay at Winchester, and a considerable force of federal troops were entrenched at New Creek, now Keyser. Both of these points are nearer Moorefield than Cumberland is. This shows the hazzard of a trip from our headquarters to Cumberland and the probability of being cut off.

"When McNeill and party arrived at the rendezvous, in addition to those of our own command, there were with him a number, probably a dozen, belonging to Company F of the Seventh and D of the Eleventh Virginia cavalry, of Rosser's brigade. The men and horses were fed and rested. The shades of that evening saw us upon our ride. Our route lay over Middle ridge, across the valley of Patterson creek, through the ridges beyond the base of Knobly mountain, where, taking a northerly course we came to a narrow gap leading up to open fields on the mountain top. Passing up this gap, over an icy road, we found the fields above covered with snowdrifts of uncertain depth, which forced us to dismount and lead our struggling horses. Having reached the road through a lower gap to the Seymour farm, we quickly descended the mountain into the valley and crossed the Potomac into Maryland.

"At this juncture Lieutenant McNeill held a council of war with some of us, and after saying that there was not time to reach Cumberland before daylight by the route laid down by me, the lieutenant proposed that that part of the expedition be abandoned. But to prevent the trip from being an entire failure, he suggested that we should surprise and capture the pickets at the railroad station near by, at Brady's Mills. The prizes for which we had come so far were estimated by quality, not quantity, and a company of infantry was not considered a fair exchange for two major generals. His proposition met with an emphatic and almost unanimous dissent. It is proper here to say that my



route contemplated flanking the neighboring village of Crepsatown, moving on to the well-known National road and taking that thoroughfare, which was not picketed, to enter Cumberland from the northwest by way of the Narrows, a pass through Will's mountain. This would have doubled the distance to be traveled from the point where we passed the river, but it was the only prudent and reasonably safe route, and but for several unnecessary delays already made, for which Lieutenant McNeill himself was responsible, ample time had been left to pursue it. The fact then remained, however, as McNeill declared, that we could not then get to Cumberland by that route in the required time; and if we were to proceed further on our expedition we must take the shorter route, the New creek road, and try our chances by surprising and capturing the pickets on that road, and get into the city without giving the alarm. The attempt to pass quietly through two lines of pickets promised but doubtful results, but we determined to try it. McNeill and Vandiver, followed by Kuykendall and myself, rode ahead as an advance guard, the rest of the troop, under Lieutenant I. S. Welton, keeping close behind. A layer of thin crusty snow was on the ground, and although it was an hour and a half till dawn, we could see very well for a short distance. The New creek road skirts the base of Will's mountain, running almost parallel with the railroad and river, and all three come close together at the mouth of a deep ravine. About two miles from Cumberland the road deflects to the left and winds up through a ravine and over the hill to the city. A cavalry picket was stationed at the mouth of the ravine, and as we neared this point a solitary vidette was observed standing on the roadside, and who, upon noticing our approach, gave the challenge: 'Halt! who comes there?' 'Friends from New Creek,' was the response. He then said: 'Dismount one, come forward and give the countersign.' Without a word Lieutenant McNeill put spurs to



his horse, dashed forward, and as he passed, being unable to check his horse, fired his pistol in the man's face. We followed rapidly and secured the picket, whom we found terribly startled at the peculiar conduct of his alleged friends. Two comrades, acting as a reserve, had been making themselves cosy before a few embers under a temporary shelter in a fence corner about one hundred yards in the rear. Hearing the commotion in front they hastily decamped toward the river. They got no further than the railroad, however, for we were close upon them, and in response to our threats of shooting, they halted and surrendered. Examining them apart, and under threats of instant annihilation at the end of a halter, they gave the countersign for the night, which was 'Bull's Gap.' Mounting these men upon their horses, which we found hitched nearby, we took them into Cumberland and out again, when one was turned loose, without a horse, but richer in experience.

"The imprudent action of Lieutenant McNeill in firing a shot which might have caused a general alarm and forced us to abandon our design, created some displeasure among the men. Sharing in this feeling I insisted that Kuykendall and myself should take the advance in the approach to the next inner post. This was assented to, and we moved on with the determination that no more unnecessary firing should be indulged in on our part. The second post was fully a mile away, over the high intervening hill and located at the junction of the road we were on with the old Frostburg pike. This post consisted of five men belonging to the First West Virginia infantry, who were comfortably ensconced in a shed behind a blazing log fire, and all busily engaged at cards. As we drew near the circle of light one of the number was observed to get up, reach for his musket and advance in front of the fire to halt us. To his formal challenge Kuykendall answered: "Friends, with the countersign.' We kept moving up in the meantime,



and when the command was given for one of us to dismount and give the countersign, I noticed an impatient movement among our men in the rear; and to mislead the picket and enable us to get as near as possible before our intended dash was made, I shouted back in a loud voice: 'Don't crowd up, men! Wait until we give the countersign.' We did not find it necessary to give it, however. There was an open space around the picket post which allowed no chance of escape, and we were close upon them. The next instant a swift forward dash was made, and, without a single shot, they were surrounded and captured. Their guns and ammunition were taken and destroyed, and they were left unguarded at their post, with strict instructions to remain until our return.

"On its face this would appear to have been a very unwise thing, but it was the best we could do. We had no intention of returning that way; but we rightly trusted that before the men could realize the situation and get to where an alarm could be given, our work in the city would have been done. We were now inside the picket lines, and before us lay the slumbering city. The troop was halted here for a short time while McNeill hastily told off two squads of ten men each, who were directly charged with the capture of the generals. Sergeant Joseph W. Kuykendall, Company F, Seventh Virginia cavalry, a special scout for General Early, and a soldier of great courage and coolness, who had once been a prisoner in Kelly's hands and had a personal acquaintance with him, was placed in command of the men detailed to secure that general. To Sergeant Joseph L. Vandiver, a man of imposing figure and style, was given the charge of capturing General Crook.

"An interesting fact in connection with this affair is that among the number detailed to capture General Crook was Jacob Gassman, a former clerk in the hotel where General Crook lodged, and whose uncle then owned the building,



and Sergeant Charles James Dailey, whose father was landlord at the time, and whose sister, Mary, afterwards became Mrs. Crook, and was probably then his fiancée. The duty of destroying the telegraph lines was intrusted to me, while Hallar and others were detailed as my assistants. These preliminaries being arranged, we moved on down the pike, rode into Green street and around the court house hill; then over the chain bridge across Will's creek and up Baltimore street, the principal thoroughfare of the city. Taking in the situation as they rode along, the men occupied themselves whistling such yankee tunes as they knew, and bandying words with isolated patrols and guards that occasionally passed. Some of our men were disguised in federal overcoats, but in the dim light no difference could be noticed in the shades of light blue and gray.

"Part of the men were halted in front of the Barnum house, afterwards the Windsor hotel, where General Kelley slept, and the others rode on to the Revere house, where General Crook reposed in fancied security. A sentry paced up and down in front of the respective headquarters, but took little notice of our movements, evidently taking us for a scouting party coming in to report. J. G. Lynn of Kuykendall's squad, was the first to reach the pavement, where he captured and disarmed the sentry, who directed the party to the sleeping apartments of General Kelley. Entering the hotel the party first invaded a room on the second floor, which proved to be that of the adjutant general, Melvin. Arousing him, they asked where General Kelley was, and was told that he was in the adjoining apartment, a communicating room, the door of which was open, and they entered at once. When General Kelley was awakened, he was told that he was a prisoner, and was requested to make his toilet as speedily as possible. With some degree of nervousness the old general complied, inquiring as he did so, to whom he was surrendering. Kuy-



kendall replied: 'To Captain McNeill, by order of General Rosser.' He had little more to say after this, and in a very short space of time both he and Adjutant Melvin were taken down into the street and mounted on horses, the owners of which courteously gave the prisoners the saddle, and rode behind. In this manner they were taken out of Cumberland, but as soon thereafter as separate horses could be procured, they were given them.

"At the Revere house an almost identical scene took place. The sentry having been taken and disarmed, the capturing party ascended the stone steps of the hotel and found the outside door locked. The door was opened by a small colored boy and the party entered. The boy was greatly alarmed at the brusque manner of the unexpected guests, whom he evidently suspected of improper intentions. When asked if General Crook was in the hotel, he said: 'Yes, sah, but don't tell 'em I told you,' and he afterwards made the inquiry: 'What kind o' men are you all, anyhow?' While Vandiver and Dailey were getting a light in the office below, Gassman went to No. 46, General Crook's apartment, and thinking the door was locked, knocked at it several times. A voice within asked: 'Who's there?' Gassman replied: 'A friend,' and was told to come in. Vandiver, Tucker and Dailey arrived by this time and all four entered the room. Approaching the bed where the general lay, Vandiver said in a pompous manner, 'General Crook, you are my prisoner.' 'What authority have you for this?' inquired the general. 'The authority of General Rosser, of Fitzhugh Lee's division of cavalry,' said Vandiver in response. Crook then rose up in bed and asked: 'Is General Rosser here?' 'Yes,' replied Vandiver, 'I am General Rosser. We have surprised and captured the town.' That settled the matter as far as the bona fide general was concerned. He was immensely surprised at the bold announcement, but knowing nothing to the contrary, accepted Vandiver's assertion as the truth.



He submitted to his fate with as much grace and cheerfulness as he could muster. Speaking to me afterwards of his sensations at the time, the general said: 'Vandiver was just such a looking person as I supposed Rosser to be, and I had no reason to doubt the truth of his statement. I was very much relieved, however, when I learned the real situation and that the city and garrison had not been taken.' "

When the sidewalk was reached a clerk in the hotel, who had evidently been asleep and had just awakened, came out on the sidewalk with a lantern, and holding it up to get a good look, asked: 'How many Johnnies have you got, boys?' He quickly realized that he had made a mistake. John Taylor snatched his hat off his head; John Cunningham ran through his pockets; while W. H. Maloney caught him by the back and jerked his overcoat over his head. They left him standing dumbfounded.

"General Kelley and his adjutant were taken some time before General Crook was brought out and mounted; but when this was finally done, and headquarters and other flags were finally secured, the entire party rode down Baltimore street in a quiet and orderly manner to the chain bridge. A large stable was located here, and from this several fine horses were taken, among them 'Philippi,' General Kelly's charger, which had been given him by the West Virginia soldiers, in honor of his victory over Colonel Porterfield at Philippi. The taking of the horses caused some delay, which greatly excited Lieutenant McNeill, who, calling for me, ordered that I should lead them out of the city at once. Turning the column to the left, I led it down Canal street and on to the canal bank, where, a few hundred yards below, we came unexpectedly upon a dozen or more guards, whom we surrounded and captured. We destroyed their guns and ammunition, but did not encumber ourselves with more prisoners. From this point the column went at a gallop down the tow path, until halted by



the picket posted at the canal bridge, a mile below town, on the road to Wiley's ford. The column not halting, one of the pickets was heard to say: 'Sergeant, shall I fire?' when Vandiver, who was in front, shouted: 'If you do, I'll place you under arrest. This is General Crook's body guard, and we have no time to waste. The rebels are coming, and we are going out to meet them.' This explanation seemed satisfactory. We passed under the bridge, beyond the picket post, which was the enemy's outmost guard, and crossed the Potomac. We were four or five miles away before the boom of a cannon was heard, giving the alarm."

General Crook was riding bareback. When they were well across the Potomac, he called to W. H. Maloney and asked him to ride ahead and get a saddle, remarking that he was very tired. Maloney said he did not know where to get one. To this General Crook replied: 'Take one from the first man you meet, and tell him that General Crook ordered you to do it.' Maloney dashed ahead to Jacob Kyle's, and, waking him, told him he wanted a saddle for General Crook. Mr. Kyle answered: 'Your men took the only saddle I had yesterday.' 'We are not yankees,' said Mr. Maloney. 'General Crook is a prisoner. I will search your house, and if I find you are lying to me, I will burn your house.' 'The saddle is on the porch in a flour barrel,' replied Mr. Kyle. Mr. Maloney got it, and General Crook had to ride bareback no longer.

"Sixty rugged miles intervened between us and safety, but I doubt if there was a man in the troop but now felt at his ease. Elated, proud and happy, all rode back that morning over the snow-clad Virginia hills. Our expedition had been a grand success, and every wish was realized. A mounted force from Cumberland, in pursuit, came in sight on Patterson's creek, but kept at a respectful distance in the rear until after we had passed Romney, when they pressed upon our guard, but upon the exchange of a few



shots they retired. On reaching the Moorefield valley a detachment of the Ringgold cavalry, sent from New Creek to intercept us, came in sight. We were on opposite sides of the river, in full view of each other, and soon our tired horses were being urged to their utmost speed, the federals endeavoring to reach Moorefield and cut off our retreat, while our great desire was to pass through the town with our prisoners and captured flags, and exhibit to our friends and sweethearts the fruits of our expedition and the trophies of our success.

"It soon became evident, however, that the fresher horses of the other side would win the day. Convinced that the town could not be reached and safely passed, McNeill suddenly led his men into the woods skirting the road, and taking a well-known trail, passed through the ridges east of Moorefield to a point of security seven miles above, where we camped for the night. In the preceding twenty-four hours we had ridden ninety miles over hill and valley, mountain and stream, with very little rest or food for men or horses. Our prisoners received the best possible care and attention, and early the next morning pursued their enforced march to Richmond by way of General Early's headquarters at Staunton."

On February 24, 1865, General R. E. Lee sent the following dispatch to the war department of the Southern Confederacy: "General Early reports that Lieutenant McNeill, with thirty men, on the morning of the twenty-first, entered Cumberland, captured and brought out Generals Crook and Kelley, the adjutant-general of the department, two privates and the headquarters' flags without firing a gun, though a considerable force is in the vicinity."

The following dispatch was sent from Cumberland by Major Kennedy to General Sheridan, at Winchester, within a few hours after McNeill's men had left the city: "About three o'clock this morning a party of rebel horsemen came



up on the New Creek road, about sixty in number. They captured the picket and quietly rode into town, went directly to the headquarters of Generals Crook and Kelley, sending a couple of men to each place to overpower the headquarters guard, when they went directly to the room of General Crook and, without disturbing anybody else in the house, ordered him to dress, and took him downstairs and placed him on a horse, saddled and waiting. The same was done to General Kelley. While this was being done, a few of them, without creating any disturbance, opened one or two stores, but they left without waiting to take anything. It was done so quietly that others of us who were sleeping in adjoining rooms to General Crook were not disturbed. The alarm was given in ten minutes by a darkey watchman at the hotel, who escaped from them, and within an hour we had a party of fifty cavalry after them. They tore up the telegraph lines, and it required more than an hour to get them in working order. As soon as New Creek could be called, I ordered a force to be sent to Romney, and it started without any unnecessary delay. A second force has gone from New Creek to Moorefield, and a regiment of infantry has gone to supply the place of the cavalry. They rode good horses, and left at a very rapid rate, evidently fearful of being overtaken. They did not remain in Cumberland over ten minutes. From all information, I am inclined to believe that instead of Rosser, it is McNeill's company. Most of the men of that company are from this place."

General Sheridan sent four hundred cavalry across the mountains from Winchester in the direction of Moorefield, in hope of capturing McNeill and releasing the prisoners; but no success attended the expedition. McNeill was in the mountains and eluded his pursuers, who were trying to close in on him from four directions.



# CHAPTER LXL



## CLOSING EVENTS OF THE WAR.

On the day of the capture of Generals Crook and Kelley, a daring but successful charge was made in the streets of Romney by two confederates of Company D, Robert Moorehead and John Urton. The cavalry which had pursued McNeill from Cumberland gave up the pursuit a few miles south of Romney, and the men returned to Cumberland. Their horses were very tired and stragglers were plentiful. A few of them remained awhile in town after the main body had passed down the road toward Cumberland. At that moment Robert Moorehead and John Urton came in on the Winchester road, on a scout. The union cavalry saw them, and supposed they were the front of a column and galloped off. Urton and Moorehead followed, and observing that two of the yankees could not keep up with their comrades, determined to take them. Their horses being fresh they gained upon the yankees, who left the road to take a short cut across the fields, and ran their horses into a snow drift and stuck fast. They surrendered and were parolled. One of them proved to be Lieutenant Luther Griffith, who for many years afterward was cashier of a Cumberland bank.

*A Young Soldier's Escape.*—On February 5, 1865, when Colonel Young, in charge of a division of General Custer's troops, made a dash into Romney, there were many southern sympathizers who were taken by surprise. Among them was V. M. Poling. He had come home on furlough to see his parents who lived in Romney. He was sitting by the fire reading when his father came hurriedly



in and announced with considerable excitement that the town was full of yankees. Mr. Poling, the elder, had always been a union man, although two of his sons were in the confederate army. The young soldier had no chance to escape by flight; but provision had been made for just such an emergency. The old log kitchen, built perhaps in the days of the Revolutionary war, had a log cut partly off, making a small opening by which it was supposed a man could crawl under the floor. Mr. Poling made for the hole as the yankee cavalry galloped up the street. He tried to crawl in but could not push his shoulders through. The ostrich pokes its head in the sand and thinks it is hid. Not so with Mr. Poling. Although his head was in the hole he knew he was not out of sight. With the courage of despair he pulled off his coat and jacket, and by a superhuman squeeze he pushed through. His sister, with presence of mind suited to the occasion, covered the opening with boards. He remained in his cold quarters about two hours, and nearly froze. The yankees had left town by that time, and he undertook to crawl out. But either he had grown larger or the hole was smaller, for he could not get through no matter which way he turned or how persistently he squeezed. They brought him a saw and a chisel, and after chipping an hour or two he was again able to emerge from his hiding place.

*Remarkable Record.*—Near the close of the war the records of the confederacy at Richmond showed that McNeill's company up to that time had captured more than twenty-six hundred prisoners. That was about thirty persons for each man in active service in the command. The number in the company was not always the same. Sometimes it was more, sometimes less; but usually there were between sixty and seventy men in active service with McNeill. Perhaps no better illustration is furnished in the whole history of the United States of the efficiency of a small band, operating in a rugged country, full of hiding



places and natural defenses. Against such a force numbers are sent in vain. A rapid retreat over mountain trails baffles pursuit; while the ability to strike unexpected blows, suddenly and with every advantage of position, makes the situation of the pursuing forces always one of danger. McNeill and his men knew every trail. They might be hemmed in on every road, as was the case when they were carrying Generals Crook and Kelley away as prisoners in 1865, yet they could leave all roads and take to the woods, bidding defiance to twenty times their numbers. They carried no baggage except what was tied to the saddles. Every man conducted his own advance and retreat. Yet all acted in concert. If scattered, they vanished among the hills and woods, and reassembled at well-known rendezvouses. They could make marches which surprised veterans; could appear and disappear here, there and everywhere with such celerity of movement that the most carefully planned efforts to resist or intercept were always defeated. It has been a mystery how they operated so long, so successfully, in a territory often occupied by overwhelming forces of the enemy; and yet they seldom or never made a miscalculation or a fatal blunder. Whether they were assailants or acting upon the defensive, they were equally successful. Although they did an almost incredible amount of fighting, they lost few men. Their policy was to select their point of attack and then strike so suddenly that resistance came too late. The citizens of the country in which they operated were nearly all friendly with McNeill and gave him information whenever they could. Without this source of information he must have failed very often in his undertakings.

*Surrender of McNeill.*—McNeill's men surrendered soon after General Lee. It was arranged that they should lay down their arms on the South branch above Romney. A company of federals from New Creek met them for that purpose. Two or three officers and a half



dozen men crossed the river where McNeill's men were, while the main body of the company remained on the north side. There was no unnecessary ceremony. The confederates threw down their arms and were parolled. The implements of war piled on the ground looked as if they had come out of a museum a hundred years old. They were flint-locks, broken-stocks, bent-barrels, no ramrods, triggerless, rusty, big, little, horse-pistols, deringers, pepperboxes, choke-bores, and others beyond description. The federal officers were aware that these were not the guns with which McNeill's men had done their fighting. They had hidden their good guns and had gathered up these superannuated, pre-revolutionary traps in junk-shops and garrets and were surrendering them for form's sake. A competent judge who saw the arms piled on the ground declared they were not worth ten dollars a ton. However the yankees hauled them to New Creek.

After they had thrown down their worthless guns, one of McNeill's men asked the union officers: "What would be the result if I would keep a little powder to shoot coons and such things, and it should be found in my house, and an old shotgun or something?" The officer told him it would go hard with him if he went to bushwhacking. To this the soldier replied: "I won't hurt any of you fellows, but the Swamp Dragons from North Fork better not come fooling around me." The Swamp Dragons were the union guerrillas who infested the mountain fastnesses around the headwaters of the South branch and Cheat river. Between them and McNeill's men there was war to the death. Neither side asked or gave quarters.

By the terms agreed upon between General Lee and General Grant, the confederates were permitted to keep their horses, but must surrender their arms and equipage. This rule was understood to apply to McNeill's men as well as to the others. A controversy arose at the time of McNeill's surrender as to how for this understanding



should go. Everyone of the men rode a United States saddle, captured in battle, and had United States blankets, and full outfits taken as spoils of war. The federal officers insisted that those should be given up; and McNeill said he would not surrender them, as he did not intend that his men should ride home bareback. The discussion of this point became so animated that it threatened to cause trouble. The federal officer was firm in his demand that the saddles and blankets should be given up, and McNeill was equally positive that they should not be given up. Finally McNeill declared that he would not surrender at all unless permitted to keep the saddles. It might be presumed that the confederates, having already surrendered their arms, were powerless to resist, and that they were in no position to enforce their demand that they retain their saddles. But such was the case in appearance only, and the union officers knew it very well. McNeill's men had at that time revolvers under their coats, and the pistols were so poorly concealed that the federals had no doubts on the subject. Add to this the fact that the river was deep, and that a small skiff was the only means of crossing, and that the main part of the small union force was on the other side, and it can be seen that the federal officers who had crossed over to parol the men were really in the power of McNeill, and knew it. Of course, if the confederates had resisted, it would have gone hard with them in the end, for they must have been captured sooner or later. But the federal captain made a merit of necessity and permitted the men to keep their saddles and equipage. They rode off and disbanded, and the famous McNeill company had ceased to exist and had taken its place in history.

*The Timber Ridge Robbers.*—During the war, in Hampshire county, there was an organized band of thieves and robbers with headquarters on Timber ridge, but with places of meeting in various other parts of the



country, in Morgan and Berkeley counties, and occasionally in Hardy. They did not belong to either army, and were outlawed by both. They numbered from fifteen to twenty, and robbed whenever and wherever they could, and sold their plunder wherever a buyer could be found. They were despised by the soldiers and dreaded by the citizens. Their hand was against every man, and every man's hand against them. The result was that they brought destruction upon themselves. One by one they were killed, some by soldiers and others, perhaps by citizens, until only a few were left and the gang was broken up.

*Degenerate Warfare.*—War is degenerating in its effect. It is destructive of morality as well as of physical force. It is savagery that cannot be disguised in the most civilized country. Men accustomed to scenes of carnage and destruction grow to have smaller and smaller regard for the rights of man as they are understood in time of peace. This was illustrated in Hampshire county near the close of the war. The longer the conflict continued the less were personal rights considered. At first the property of citizens was taken or destroyed under the plea of military necessity; but later in the conflict the taking of property degenerated into highway robbery. This should not be applied to all the soldiers on both sides, nor to a majority on either side; for there were many, both northern and southern, who came out of the army as they went in, honest, conscientious soldiers. But pillage and robbery grew alarmingly frequent toward the close of the war. Soldiers entered private houses and compelled citizens to give up their money and jewelry. Numerous instances of this could be cited. Indeed, families in this county found it necessary to keep their valuables hidden. Hampshire was on the border during the whole war. Its war was that of the frontier. It was considered doubtful ground by both sides. It was first in possession of the federals and then the confederates. Neither could hold it or protect it



from incursions and raids from the other. Thus, it experienced all the horrors of frontier warfare. It has been remarked by one who knew the situation that, had the war continued much longer, Hampshire would have been like Kansas in its border troubles and the carbine and the revolver would have been the only recognized law.

*Last Armed Confederates in Romney.*—When Lee surrendered, in April, 1865, General Rosser, with a considerable force, made his escape, avoided the numerous federal detachments with which the country was filled and reached Lynchburg, Virginia, without any serious opposition. From there he proceeded toward Staunton, making his way through a country devastated by war. He saw that further resistance was useless and dismissed his men, each regiment being left free to do what seemed best. Each regiment broke up into companies, and each company pursued its way. There was a vague notion among the men that General Johnston, in North Carolina, would still hold out, and he was looked upon as the general around whom the scattered soldiers should rally. Some started to join him, but there was no concert of movement. Two Hampshire companies that had escaped with Rosser came through to Romney. They had shaped their course for home, without any definite plans for the future. So long as they were on the road and in motion, they did not find it necessary to decide on future movements; but when they reached home and found themselves at their journey's end, the time had come to decide. The two companies met in front of the court house in Romney to deliberate whether they would surrender or endeavor to reach General Johnston. The members were about equally divided among those who wished to lay down their arms and those who were still for war. Few who marched away with the companies at the beginning of the war were among those who came back. The troop was one of the remnants of a powerful army, which had fought as long as there



was hope. The two Hampshire companies wished to act in concert, all make their way to Johnston or all surrender. They could not agree, and the dispute ran so high that they almost fell to fighting among themselves. About that time, however, news was received that Johnston had surrendered, and there was no longer an army around which to rally. The Hampshire companies thereupon went to Winchester and surrendered. This was the last armed confederate force to occupy Romney. The town changed hands fifty-six times during the war.

*The Confederate Monument.*—It is believed that the first decoration of confederate graves and the first monument erected to the confederate dead are credited to Hampshire county. Immediately after the war, while the southern sympathizers were still under the ban, and were not allowed to vote or hold office, the people of Hampshire, at the risk of incurring the displeasure of the federal authorities, raised money and built a monument to the memory of their dead who gave their lives in the cause of the south. The idea originated in the house of Colonel Robert White, in the early spring of 1866. It was discussed by Colonel and Mrs. White, Captain C. S. White, Miss Bessie J. Schultze, who afterwards became the wife of Captain White, and Miss Fannie White, now Mrs. S. L. Flournoy. Others afterwards became interested, and the project was discussed and a course of procedure decided upon. The first public meeting was held in Romney in the spring of 1866; a constitution was adopted and the association went to work, appointed committees and arranged to decorate the graves of confederates. The decoration took place June 1, 1866, in Indian Mound cemetery. The graves have been decorated every year since. Few persons attended the first decoration, because the people were afraid. Many persons refrained from taking part in the work of erecting the monument because they were afraid of incurring the displeasure of the federal authorities. There



were others who were expected to assist, but who refused to do so; but the workers who were not afraid kept at it. Funds were solicited; a sewing circle was held; a fair was held; and money was turned into the treasury at an encouraging rate. On October 15, 1866, there was on hand \$1,170.91, of which \$421.58 was appropriated to the relief of the orphans of confederate soldiers. Other public exhibitions were given, and on June 6, 1867, it was resolved to proceed with the erection of the monument. In July the committee considered three inscriptions, one of which spoke of the soldiers as having "died in defense of what they believed to be right;" another one being "our sons and brothers, who fell as soldiers in the confederate army;" the third, which was adopted and was engraved on the monument, was in these words: "The Daughters of Old Hampshire Erect this Tribute of Affection to Her Heroic Sons Who Fell in Defense of Southern Rights." On September 26, 1867, the monument was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies. It cost the association about fourteen hundred dollars in money, besides large donations in labor. It was made in Baltimore, is twelve feet high and is made of white marble. The names of the dead are engraved upon it. A number of those who fell in battle are not represented on the monument, because it was not known to a certainty that they were dead when the monument was made. The list of dead is as follows:

Captains—G. F. Sheetz, A. Smith, G. W. Stump, J. M. Lovett.

Lieutenants—M. Blue, J. Buzzard, J. Earsom, H. Engle, W. F. Johnson, J. N. Moorehead, F. D. Sherrard, Rev. J. S. Reese.

Sergeants—B. W. Armstrong, J. C. Leps, G. Cheshire.

Privates—A. T. Pugh, J. W. Park, S. Park, J. W. Po-



land, J. Peer, R. J. Parran, C. Parran, H. Powell, N. Pownall, J. W. Ream, G. W. Ruckman, L. Spaid, P. Stump, H. Senoff, A. Shingleton, J. Stewart, S. Swisher, E. Gaylor, M. Taylor, J. Taylor, E. P. Ward, I. Wolfe, J. Washington, M. Watkins, H. Wilson, G. Shoemaker, L. D. Shanholtzer, J. Strother, W. Unglesbee, B. Wills, J. Haines, J. F. Hass, M. Harmison, A. Hollenback, G. Hott, E. Hartley, B. Hare, —. Householder, M. V. Inskeep, J. Johnson, J. H. Johnson, T. Keely, J. Kern, S. Loy, E. Milleson, O. Milleson, S. Mohler, F. M. Myers, J. W. Marker, T. McGraw, I. Mills, J. Merritt, J. W. Pugh, O. V. Pugh, J. Kump, M. Orndorff, S. McCauley, L. Snodgrass, J. Pugh, V. Kump, P. Noland, J. Rudolph, J. M. Reese, M. V. Reid, W. O. Lupton, J. Noreland, J. Starns, F. C. Sechrist, G. W. Strother, J. D. Adams, I. P. Armstrong, E. Allen, J. W. Baker, H. Baker, J. W. Barley, H. Bird, W. J. Blue, T. T. Brooks, R. Brown, J. W. Boro, I. D. Carroll, J. Cupp, J. S. Davis, J. A. Daily, J. Davy, S. Engly, J. Floury, J. Furlow, I. V. Gibson, R. C. Grace, T. T. Gross, R. Gill, J. P. Greitzner, A. Haines, J. J. Arnold, F. Abee, A. J. Baker, William Baker, J. Bumgarner, Morgan Brill, Mat Brill, G. Delaplains, J. Doughett, J. Engle, C. Garvin, G. R. Garvin, J. Hammock, T. Harrison.

As far as can be gathered from the minute-book, which is incomplete, the following have been the officers of the association:

Presidents—Mrs. Robert White, Mrs. Abraham Smith, Mrs. J. P. Wilson, Mrs. J. L. Vance, Mrs. G. W. Parsons.

Vice-Presidents—Mrs. Margaret V. Taylor, Miss Miranda Taylor, Mrs. C. E. Blue, Mrs. C. S. White, Mrs. J. L. Vance, Mrs. John J. Inskeep.

Secretaries—Misses Bessie J. Schultze, Tillie Kern, Mary V. Foote, Ellen Kane, Mary Heiskell, Lou McCarty.

Treasurers—Mrs. J. D. Armstrong, Mrs. Michael Blue, Miss Virginia Parsons, Mrs. Julius Waddle.



It would be impossible to give the names of all persons who contributed labor and money to build the monument; but it is no injustice to those omitted to name as worthy of special notice the following: Mrs. James D. Armstrong, Mrs. James N. Morehead, Misses Susie M. Pancake, Susie Poling, Louise Greitzner, Lizzie Inskeep, Lieutenant C. W. Pattie, D. W. Endler.







**PART III.**  
**Family Sketches.**







## Family Sketches.

---

**DAVID C. AGNEW**, of Mill Creek district, son of Samuel K. and Sarah G. Agnew; born at Birmingham, Pennsylvania, May 5, 1847, of Scotch and Irish ancestry; a plasterer; married, 1869, to a daughter of Mr. and Mrs. George Hartman, of Hampshire County; children, John W., Floyd D., Susan N., Martha M.

**FRANK P. ALLEN**, of Mill Creek district; a merchant; born in 1860; son of Mr. and Mrs. Judge Allen; of German ancestry; married, 1887, to Lucy, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Alfred Taylor, of Moorefield; children, Alfred T., Caroline B., and Lucy V. Mr. Allen married twice, the second time to Annie, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John W. Hartman. He owns twelve hundred and sixty-five acres of land.

**DANIEL ARNOLD**, son of Zachariah and Elizabeth Arnold, was born eight miles west of Romney, in what is now Mineral County, in the year 1838. He now resides on Beaver Run, in Mineral County, on the Beaver farm, from whom the Run takes its name. His ancestors came from Germany about one hundred and fifty years ago. On December 14, 1859, he was married to Sallie Ludwick, of Hampshire County. They have seven children living and two dead. They are Ann F. R., George E. E., Mary T. R., Effie M. W., Sallie N. W., James H. T., and Daniel A. Z. The oldest and the youngest are dead. In 1876 Mrs. Arnold died, and Mr. Arnold married Mary Ann Keys Tutwiler, of Hampshire, daughter of Martin Tutwiler.

**ULYSSES S. ANDERSON**, engaged in saw-mill and carpenter business, resides near Capon Bridge; son of Benjamin F. and Rachel Anderson; German and Irish ancestry; born 1872; married Cordelia S., daughter of Theodore and Martha Larrick, 1893. Their child's name is Pearl V.

**LEWIS ARNOLD**, carpenter, son of A. and Mary Arnold, English descent, was born in Capon, 1828; married Emeline, daughter of Enos and Rosanna Spald, 1852; children, Emma A., Miranda I., Mary F., Sarah C., Iven C., Maggie V., Albert S., and Edward T. He was three months in the Confederate service.

**EDWARD T. ARNOLD**, farmer of Capon, son of Lewis and Emeline Arnold, Irish and English descent, was born 1858; married Nellie, daughter of John and Elizabeth Lafollette, 1886. Their daughter's name is Naomi. He resides on a farm of eighty acres.

**ALFORD ANDERSON**, farmer of Capon, son of Amos and Sarah Anderson, English ancestry, was born 1839; married Jemima, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Bumgarner, 1870; children, Hunter S. and Carlmey H. Mr. Anderson served four years in the Confederate army; in Imboden's cavalry, and nine months a prisoner.

**ALFORD S. ANDERSON**, farmer of Capon district, son of Paul P. and Maria Anderson, was born 1834; English and German ancestry; married Mary F., daughter of Robert and Mary Hook, 1865; children, Armintha M., Martha M., Mary J., Angie M., and L. H. Mr. Anderson's farm of five hundred and forty acres was one of the first settled in the county. It was first occupied by Paul McKeever.

**RUSSELL C. ANDERSON**, by occupation a carpenter and saw-mill man, son of Benjamin F. and Rachel Anderson, was born 1856; German and English ancestry; married Lillie, daughter of Robert H. and Sarah E. Lang, 1887; children, Lisle C., Claud R., and Roy R.

**W. S. ALKIRE**, farmer of Gore district, son of Peter and Alcinda Alkire, was born of English ancestry, 1848; married, 1872, to a daughter of Mordecai and Julia A. Orndorff; children, Charles W., Theodore H., Truman B., Annie E., Edward V., Virgil F., Gertrude C. M., Minnie M., Bertha L., Edith M., and Golda F.

**I. V. ALDERTON**, of Paw Paw, tanner by trade, son of William H. and Rebecca F. Alderton, was born, 1870, in Hampshire; English ancestry; married 1890. Their child's name is N. P. Alderton.

**ROBERT E. L. ARNICK**, farmer of Gore, son of Jacob and Jane Arnick, was born in Frederick County, 1870; Irish parentage; married, 1894, Fannie, daughter of James and Jane Moorehead; children, Sadie M. and Bertie V.



**FRANCIS M. ALDERTON**, now of Indiana, was born on Capon River, 1873; son of William H. and Mary Alderton; married Vera, daughter of George and Harriet Laue, of Indiana, 1896. Their child's name is Francis Deekin. Mr. Alderton lived in Chicago during the world's fair, 1893, and held a position as overseer of a portion of the grounds.

**GEORGE S. ARNOLD**, farmer of Springfield district, son of David and Mary Arnold, was born, 1843, of German and Irish ancestry; married, 1882, to Virginia B., daughter of Isaac and Susan Parsons; children, Mary L., George S., Susan B., and Isaac Parsons. Mr. Arnold's farm is one of the finest in the South Branch Valley.

**M. H. ADAMS**, of Springfield district; merchant; son of David C. and Emily J. Adams; born in Virginia, 1857; English ancestry; married, 1890, to Anna M., daughter of Hector and Sarah E. Bell, of Virginia; children, Georgia Belle, Pauline M., and Russell.

**JOHN F. ARNOLD**, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of Joseph H. and Climenta Arnold, of Irish ancestry, was born in Hardy County, 1870; married, 1891, to Mollie A., daughter of William and Sarah Sisler; children, William H. and Ethel L.

**JACOB ALLEN**, tanner, resident of Romney district, son of Frank and Viola Allen, was born at Moorefield, 1821; married, 1852, to Matilda, daughter of Edmund and Sarah Granison; children, Henry, Viola, Sarah, Belle H., Mary, and Guy.

**JACOB R. ARNOLD**, stone-mason, Gore district, son of J. S. and Martha Arnold, German ancestry, was born 1849; married Hattie F., daughter of Moses H. and A. E. Core, 1873; children, William L., Mettie M., Fannie E., Paul A., Alwilda, and Joseph.

**JOSHUA R. ARNOLD**, farmer of Sherman district, son of George W. and Sarah A. Arnold, Scotch and Irish ancestry, was born 1841; married Mary H., daughter of James and Emeline Haines, 1867; children, Laura M., James E., Crenetta R., Sarah E., and John. Mr. Arnold served three years in the Union army, and took part in several battles, among them the battle of South Mountain, Antietam, Chickamauga, Missionary Ridge, and Dalton.

**DAVID A. ARNOLD**, stone-mason, Gore district, son of J. S. and Martha Arnold, was born 1853; married Anna M., daughter of Peter and Rebecca Snyder, 1877; children, Virginia M., Edward R., and Daisey M.

**PETTER BAUER**, a manufacturer of woollen goods, resides in Mill Creek district. He is a son of Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Bauer, and was born at Heidelberg, Germany, 1832. In 1865 he married Kate, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Henry Weckert, of Wurtemberg, Germany; children, James H. and Frederick W. Petter Bauer served four years in the Union army, and belonged to the Kelley Lancers, Company A., First West Virginia Cavalry. He engaged in many battles, from first to last, among them being that at Romney, October 26, 1861; Blue's Gap, January 7, 1862; Winchester, March 23, 1862; Port Republic, June 9, 1862; Rapidan, August 7, 1862; Cedar Mountain, August 9, 1862; Kelley's Ford, August 21, 1862; Waterloo Bridge, August 24, 1862. He came from Germany, 1852, and has lived in Hampshire ever since, except ten years in Grant County. He had never seen Miss Weckert before she left Germany. She came to America in 1853.

**CHARLES H. BISER**, a farmer of Mill Creek, son of Mr. and Mrs. Solomon Biser, was born 1859; English ancestry; married, 1880, to Susan C., daughter of Mr. and Mrs. James Hartman, of Hampshire County; children, Lulu F., Nasby L., Dorothy B., Marvin A., and Ethel I.

**GEORGE W. BOWERS**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Daniel and Mary E. Bowers, was born 1840; German ancestry; married, 1866, Mary C., daughter of Israel and Elizabeth Hardy; children, Elmer, Warren, Mead, Lottie, John, Mary E., Elizabeth, May, George, and Emma G. He owns one thousand acres, one hundred and twenty-five improved.

**JOHN B. BENNETT**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Isaac N. and Margaret Bennett, was born 1859; German ancestry; married, 1890, Lallie, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Reaves Whitlock; children, Ray and Viola. He owns two hundred and sixty acres, one-fourth improved.

**JOHN B. BUCKWALTER**, of Bloomery district, carpenter by trade, was born 1830; son of Anthony and Mary Buckwalter; German ancestry; owns two hundred and sixty-eight acres, half improved.

**EDWARD BRETSTFORD**, farmer, but formerly a blacksmith, son of Jesse and Mary E. Bretsford, was born 1838; French ancestry; married, 1872, to Barbara, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Swancy (the name in English is Twenty), of Maryland; children, Edward E. and John M. Mr. Bretsford owns four hundred and eight acres, forty improved; was a Confederate soldier twelve months, and lost an arm from a wound received while on furlough, near Slanesville.

**JAMES F. BLAKER**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Finton and Eveline Blaker, was born 1846; English ancestry; married, 1873, Iny Z., daughter of Jesse and Elizabeth Pugh; children, Jettie W. and Arlie L.

**H. J. BRILL**, farmer of Capon district, residing on the head of Dillon's Run, was a soldier in the Confederate army.



**CHARLES N. D. BENNETT**, minister of the United Brethren Church, son of Isaac N. and Margaret Bennett, was born of German ancestry, 1869; married Nannie O., daughter of F. D. and Emeline Blaker, 1888; children, Beulah C. and Julius M. He has been in the ministry since 1886. He lives near Capon Springs.

**HARRISON BRILL**, farmer of Capon, son of Michael and Ellen Brill, was born 1840; German ancestry; married Anna E., daughter of David and Harriett E. Nixon, 1870; children, James A., Robert C., Anna L., and Minnie B. Mr. Brill served three years in the Confederate army.

**JOHN L. BURKETT**, farmer of Gore, son of Samuel and Catherine Burkett, was born 1852; German and Irish parentage; married, 1888, Ella, daughter of John and Mary Burkett; children, Samuel F. and Ethel.

**T. D. BLOOM**, farmer of Gore, son of Jonathan and Martha Bloom, was born in Pennsylvania, 1873; married, 1895, Edith, daughter of Robert and Elizabeth Offutt. Their child's name is Alta E.

**JASPER N. BUZZARD**, farmer of Gore district, son of Mr. and Mrs. William Buzzard, was born 1842; married, 1867, Susan M., daughter of James I. and Rebecca Pownell; children, Mary R., Robert W., Ida A. L., Lula M., and Ethel S.

**L. P. BARNES**, farmer of Gore, son of William and Susanna Barnes, was born 1823; German ancestry; married, 1851, Mary Figans; children, Barbara E., Franklin P., James N., Isabella M., Susanna, Barnes W. H., Minor G., Minerva, and Ida L.

**THE BLUE FAMILY.**—The Blue family were among the earliest settlers in Hampshire County, if not the very earliest. There were three brothers, John, Uriah, and Michael, the two latter making their homes near Shepherdstown, while John settled about five miles north of Romney, and was the founder of the Blue family in Hampshire County. They came from New Jersey to Virginia early in the seventeenth century. They came to New Jersey from Holland in the early years of the colonization of the United States. They were, therefore, among the pioneers upon the Western continent; and in all the generations since then they have been influential and useful citizens. The family, so far as their history can be traced in Holland, were in affluent circumstances.

The date at which John Blue came to Hampshire County is fixed partly by tradition and partly by family record. His son John (grandfather of the present John Blue) was twelve years old when he came with his father to Hampshire. He died in 1791, aged seventy-eight years. That would prove that he came to Hampshire in 1725. If such was the case, he was about eight or ten years earlier than the usually accepted earliest settlement of the South Branch Valley. This John Blue, who died in 1791, left his property by will to his wife and his thirteen children. The names of these children were as follows: Uriah, Abraham, John, Jacob, David, Michael, Garrett, William, Jesse, Benjamin, Elizabeth, Hannah, and Margaret.

**L. G. BURKETT**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Henry and Harriet Burkett, was born, 1832, of German ancestry; married, 1852, Eliza A., daughter of James and Jane Malcolm, of Ireland; children, S. Jane, James H., Charles M., Thomas M., L. Dora, William H., and Harriet A.

**C. E. BURKETT**, of Three Churches; farmer; English ancestry; son of Mr. and Mrs. Thomas A. Burkett; born 1856; married, 1884, to M. E., daughter of H. D. and Annie Collins; children, Nannie V. and O. T.

**JAMES R. BLUE**, of Springfield; farmer; son of John L. and Eliza M. Blue; Dutch and English ancestry; born in Maryland, 1855.

**JAMES P. BLUE**, a farmer of Springfield district, was born 1833; son of Thomas and Sarah A. Blue; Dutch ancestry; married, 1861, Mary E., daughter of Simon and Eliza Blue; children, Susan G., Kirk, Thomas L., Sarah C., Mary E., and Maud C.

**J. H. BLUE**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Charles and Mary C. Blue; English ancestry; born 1847; married, 1881, Sarah G., daughter of George W. and S. A. Washington; children, C. W., Charles J., and Lucy R.

**MICHAEL BLUE**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Michael and Frances Blue, was born in 1819, of Dutch ancestry; married, 1857, to Mary, daughter of William and Sarah A. Blue. Further mention of Mr. Blue will be found in this book.

**LAWSON BLUE**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Michael and Frances Blue, was born 1821, of Dutch ancestry.

**A. C. BAKER**, of Springfield district; farmer; son of Isaac and Susan Baker; German and Scotch ancestry; born 1851; married, 1882, Kate R., daughter of William and Mary Donaldson.

**A. F. BARNES**, of Three Churches; farmer; son of William and Susanna Barnes; born 1833; German ancestry; married, 1865, Margaret, daughter of Andrew and Elenor Bowman; children, J. D., O. A., Verdie E., William E., G. H., A. W., and A. G.



**WILLIAM BANKS**, farmer of Romney district, son of David and Sarah Banks, was born 1831, married, 1867, to Agnes, daughter of Samuel and Juda Diggs, of Virginia; children, Lydus and Nora.

**EWING BUSH**, of Romney district, hotel waiter; born in Missouri, 1839; married, 1866, to Judith Washington; children, Anna, Arthur, and Minnie.

**JOHN BLUE**, assessor of Hampshire County; son of Garret I. and Sarah A. Blue; born 1834, of Holland Dutch ancestry; married, 1868, to Annie E., daughter of Vause and Rebecca Fox; children, Sarah V., Edwin H., William F., George C., Rebecca H., Mary E., John D. Further mention of Mr. Blue will be found in this book.

**B. B. BROOKS**, carpenter, Romney district, son of David and Elizabeth Brooks, was born in Hardy County, 1835; Irish ancestry; married, 1865, to Ellen, daughter of Isaac and Matilda Keller, of Virginia; children, Annie B. and Nettie F.

**JOHN BONNEY, SR.**, farmer of Romney district, son of Reuben and Martha J. Bonney, was born in Pennsylvania, 1836, of Scotch and Irish ancestry; married, 1859, to Mary, daughter of John and Mary Brown; children, Lucretia, John R., Charles E., Tirzah, Sarah C., and Martha J.

**ISAAC T. BRADY**, farmer of Romney district, son of S. D. and Susan P. Brady, of Irish parentage, was born 1840; married, 1865, to Sallie L., daughter of Isaac and Susan Parsons; children, James B., Edna E., Samuel D., Isaac P., Robert D., Kate, and Susan. Further mention of Mr. Brady will be found in this book.

**ERASMUS BEAN**, farmer of Sherman district, son of Joseph Bean, English ancestry, was born in Hardy County, 1822; married Mary E., daughter of Jacob and Rachel McKeever, 1885; children, Luella and Jacob S.

**ISAAC N. BAKER**, farmer of Sherman, son of James and Rebecca Baker, was born 1842; married Catherine, daughter of George and Nancy Nealis, of Ireland, 1876; children, William C., James H., Fannie C., Rosa A., George N., Sallie R., Norman F., and Mary E.

**GEORGE O. BOWMAN**, farmer of Sherman district, son of Andrew and Catherine Bowman, German ancestry, was born 1846; married Jemima Shingleton, 1882; children, Eddie, Reuben, Stella, Frank, Thomas, Martha, and Griffith.

**J. W. BLOXHAM**, farmer of Sherman, son of Thomas and Nancy Bloxham, English ancestry, was born in Hampshire County; married Susan, daughter of Henry and Elizabeth Rudolph, 1897.

**CHARLES L. BAKER**, farmer of Sherman, son of Warren and Eliza Baker, German ancestry, was born in Hardy County, 1867; married Lucy B., daughter of John and Flora Shane, 1888; children, Alonzo E. and Vernon O.

**E. T. BYRD**, blacksmith of Sherman district, son of Emanuel Byrd, was born of English parentage, 1867; married Celie E., daughter of B. F. and D. C. Kline, 1893. Their child's name is Benjamin F. Byrd.

**SILAS BUCKLEW**, a miller of Sherman district, son of William and Emily Bucklew, German ancestry, was born in Preston County, 1862; married Mary L., daughter of Elias and Rachel Peer, of Virginia, 1885; children, Ada F. and Owen L. Mr. Bucklew has charge of the roller flour-mill at Augusta. He learned his trade in Preston County.

**ELZY F. BUCKLEW**, farmer and blacksmith of Sherman, son of Marcellus and Lutissia Bucklew, English and German ancestry, was born in Pendleton County, 1876; married Maggie, daughter of Jacob W. and Jane Smith, 1895; their child's name is Renza J.

**THE COOPER FAMILY.**—Two brothers, named Keiser, emigrated from Germany a little before the Revolutionary War. One settled near Frederick City, Maryland; the other near Lancaster, Pennsylvania. Both families adopted the English name Cooper. James Cooper, United States Senator from Pennsylvania nearly half a century ago, was a grandson of the Pennsylvania Cooper. Near the close of the eighteenth century, the Maryland Cooper sold his property and purchased land and located in Hampshire. He left three sons and two daughters; John, Adam, and Christopher were the sons. Adam married Catherine Kertz, of North River; the late Rev. Christopher Kertz, so prominent in the early history of Methodism on North River, was her brother. They left four children, Sarah, Charles, Mary, and Samuel. Sarah married Rev. John Engle. They left four sons and three daughters. Their eldest son, Rev. J. J. Engle, now owns and lives on a fine farm near Berryville, Clarke County, Virginia. He has been a prominent minister in the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, for over forty years. He was chaplain to Colonel Burk's regiment, Stonewall Jackson's brigade, in the Confederate service. His brother, Lieutenant B. Holland Engle, belonged to the same brigade, was wounded and died. The youngest brother, Samuel Engle, belonged to the cavalry commanded by Captain Sheets, and was killed at Brandy Station. Mary Engle married James Carter. They left four sons and two daughters. Their eldest son, Lieutenant Jefferson Carter, belonged to Imboden's command. The well known and successful merchant of Pleasant Dale, this county, John W. Carter, is one of



the four brothers. Charles Cooper, now eighty-five years old, lives on his fine farm seven miles southwest of Cooper Bridge.

Samuel Cooper, the youngest of the family, was born 1824, and retains physical and mental faculties seldom enjoyed by one of his age. He has been in the mercantile business at Capon Bridge nearly forty years. In his youth, schools were few in Hampshire, and education was obtained with difficulty. He saved his money and invested it in books, and by close application he qualified himself for teaching school long before he was twenty. He taught in winter and attended school in summer. In 1851 he was nominated by the Democrats of Hampshire for county surveyor. The Whigs also placed his name on their ticket, and he was elected by one thousand majority over two good men. He was justice of the peace, member of the old county court, and member of the board of education and its presiding officer. He was twenty years president of the Capon district board of education. He also held the office of sheriff of the county. In 1866 he was elected to the legislature with Henry G. Davis, afterwards United States Senator, as his colleague. They were Hampshire County's first representatives after the war. Colonel Cooper, being a Democrat, was on the minority side in the legislature; but his course won for him the respect, confidence, and esteem not only of his constituents, but of the whole State.

J. C. CUNNINGHAM, farmer of Mill Creek, son of Samuel and Mary C. Cunningham, was born, 1872, in Greene County, Pennsylvania, of Irish parentage; married, 1894, Sarah C., daughter of Nicholas and Catherine Leatherman; their child's name is Lyle. Mrs. Cunningham taught thirteen terms of school.

W. H. CLAYTON, of Mill Creek, by occupation a plasterer, was born in Missouri, 1869; son of Mr. and Mrs. J. M. Clayton; English ancestry; married, 1894, to Lillie J., daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John W. Hartman.

JOSEPH T. CLARK, farmer of Bloomery, son of Sampson B. and Mary E. Clark, English and German descent, was born 1841; married, 1865, Margaret E., daughter of Stephen and Annie Miller; children, James M., Mary A., Alice V., John W., and Clara M. He owns one hundred acres, sixty improved.

A. C. COWGILL, farmer and school-teacher, Bloomery district, son of James A. and Frances Cowgill, was born of English and Irish ancestry, 1854; married, 1873, Frances M., daughter of Azariah and Jane Woolford; children, Leonora, Ira V., James L., Ethel N., Grady E., and Edna F. He owns one hundred and seventy-five acres, sixty-three improved. Mr. Cowgill has taught twenty-one terms of school, of which sixteen were on a number one certificate. He was three times a member of the county board of examiners and once secretary of the board of education.

C. H. CAUDY, merchant at Elk Garden, in Mineral County, son of James and Margaret Caudy, was born in Hampshire. In 1880 he was elected sheriff of Mineral. He was several years conductor on the West Virginia Central Railroad, and in 1896 he was placed in charge of the company's store at Elk Garden.

J. B. COOPER, merchant and saw-mill man, residing near Capon Springs, was born 1861; son of M. B. and Rebecca Cooper; German parentage; married Alice M., daughter of William and Eliza Anderson, of Virginia, 1883; children, Carson N., Dallah F., Nelson B. He resides in a stone house on a farm of twenty-three acres.

ASA CLINE, farmer, residing at Yellow Springs, son of Philip and Elizabeth Cline, was born 1827; German, Scotch, and Irish parentage; married Margaret R., daughter of Hugh and Lucinda McKeever, of Hardy County, 1849; children, Irvin M., John W., Jennie, Alice, Bertie, Hugh P., Frank, and Sarah. Mr. Cline was married again, 1882, to Jemima, daughter of Jacob Heishman, of Hardy County; children, Winifred, Daisy, Ernest, Clarence, Ross L., and Bryan. He was in the Confederate service seven months. He owns one thousand acres, three hundred and fifty improved.

JAMES CRESWELL, tanner and farmer of Capon district, son of Abraham and Mary Creswell, English and Irish ancestry, was born 1816; married Margaret, daughter of Philip and Elizabeth Cline, 1848; children, Mary V., Charles W., Alverdie C., James B., Edward P., Cordelia E., Bessie O., Ida R., and Lydia I. Mr. Creswell died 1878. Mrs. Creswell resides on the home farm of two hundred and eighty acres on Capon River.

J. W. CARTER, merchant, residing at Pleasant Dale in Gore district, son of James and Mary Carter, was born 1845; English and German ancestry; married, 1873, Jennie, daughter of William S. and Nancy Taylor. Their son's name is William A. Carter. His father, James Carter, was born in Loudoun County, 1803, and moved with his father in 1810 to Hampshire and settled at Hanging Rocks, on North River.

EDWARD B. CUMMINS, farmer of Gore, son of Edward and Sarah Cummins, was born of English parentage, 1860; married, 1885, Margaret, daughter of Alexander and Mary Sanders; children, Myrtle M., Harry C., and Dwight E.

BENJAMIN CORNWELL, a minister of the old school Baptist Church, moved to Jersey Mountain, from Fauquier County, 1859, with his wife and two sons, Jacob H. and Jesse. His wife died in 1869, and is buried at Three Churches. He died several years later in Fauquier County, and is buried there.



**JACOB H. CORNWELL**, son of Benjamin Cornwell, was married, 1864, to Mary E. Taylor, daughter of John Taylor and granddaughter of Jesse Monroe. To them were born four sons and one daughter, all of whom are living, except one son who died in infancy.

**WILLIAM B. CORNWELL**, son of Jacob Cornwell, and prosecuting attorney of Hampshire, was married April 30, 1891, to Miss Nannie Dellinger, of Middletown, Virginia, who, with two children, died three years later.

**JOHN J. CORNWELL**, son of Jacob Cornwell, was married June 30, 1891, to Miss Edna Brady, of Romney.

**PHILIP CLINGERMAN**, farmer of Springfield, son of Peter and Mary Clingerman, was born of English ancestry, 1846, in Pennsylvania; married, 1870, Sarah A., daughter of Theodore and Susanna Mellott, of Pennsylvania; children, John W., Frederick W., Joseph P., Sherman, Charles G. C., George H., and Maggie E.

**WILLIAM W. CORDER**, merchant of Green Spring, son of J. W. and Julia A. Corder, was born at Old Town, Maryland, 1863, of Irish and German ancestry; married, 1896, Nettie V., daughter of Elias and Catherine Begle, of Ohio.

**L. A. CORDER**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Abner and Emma A. Corder, was born 1864; English, Irish, and French descent; married, 1889, Mary S., daughter of Alexander and Mary A. Sanders; children, F. E., Beatrice A., and Noah S.

**JAMES M. COWGILL**, of Springfield district; farmer; son of F. H. and N. J. Cowgill; born 1857; German ancestry; married, 1897, Harriet E., daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Jacob Bowman; children, F. T. G., P. R. W., M. B. A., V. E. T., and E. D. N.

**J. H. CHESHIRE**, son of Elias and Katharine Cheshire, of English ancestry, was born 1859; farmer, residing near Junction; married, 1884, Kate E., daughter of Daniel and Sallie Arnold, of Burlington; children, Edith B. and Harry W.

**J. ROBERT CHESHIRE**, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of James F. and Sarah A. Cheshire, was born 1863; married, 1877, to Harriet E., daughter of Samuel S. and Mary O. McDonald; children, Anna B., Burr W., Mary B., Charles E., Gustava N., Maud M., and Nina M.

**C. H. COOKUS**, teacher, resident of Romney district, son of John T. and Susan B. Cookus, of German ancestry, was born in Virginia, 1859; married, 1882, to Sue N., daughter of Bernard and Caroline Fetzer, of Virginia; children, Lester B. and Harry H.

**ABRAHAM CHESHIRE**, farmer of Sherman district, son of Elias and Catherine Cheshire, German extraction, was born 1850; married Eliza A., daughter of John W. and Mary E. Daugherty, 1877; children, Ada F., John W., Lucinda K., Howard C., Martha E. F., and Maud V.

**CHARLES A. CARLILE**, farmer of Sherman, son of Isaac and Sarah Carlile, German ancestry, was born 1835; married Julia, daughter of George H. and Leah Slonaker, 1869. Mr. Carlile was born in Hampshire County; moved to Missouri, resided there twenty-eight years, and was moving back to Hampshire in 1895, when he died.

**J. W. COFFMAN**, farmer of Sherman district, son of John and Mary Coffman, German ancestry, was born 1845; married S. V. Frye, daughter of Benjamin P. and Mary Frye, 1881; children, M. L., Ira W., Otis E., Charles M., and Jettie L.

**G. T. CUMMINS**, merchant of Gore, son of Edward and Sarah Cummins, was born 1857; married Frances E., daughter of James W. and Eliza Orndoff, 1883; children, Wilhelmina, Edward M., and Ethel G.

**M. L. COMPTON**, farmer near Slanesville, son of A. R. Y. and Mary E. Compton, English parentage, was born in Rappahannock County, 1858; married Rachel A., daughter of John A. and Sarah L. Corder, 1881. Their child's name is Austin M.

**HOWELL F. DEEVER**, farmer of Bloomery, son of George and Lucinda Deaver, was born at Ice mountain, 1851; Irish and English parentage; married, 1892, to Ida, daughter of Peter and Rebecca Snyder; children, Leonidas R. and Edna F. He was married twice, the first time to Annie Slane, in 1878; children, Franklin W., Icie T., Attha E., and George L.

**JOHN W. DAVIS**, farmer and shoemaker of Capon district, son of Samuel and Marie Davis, Irish and German ancestry, was born 1845; married Eliza A. V., daughter of George and Rebecca Spald, 1868; children, Robert F. L., Fannie R., Lillian C., and Benjamin F. He resides on a farm of three hundred acres.

**GEORGE DEEVER**, farmer and stock raiser of Gore district, son of Alexander and Nancy Deaver, was born 1825; English and Irish ancestry; married, 1848, Lucinda, daughter of Jeremiah and Lucinda Hiatt; children, Francis A., Howell F., and Sarah V. Mr. Deaver, about 1855, was major in the Hampshire militia, under Colonel Alexander Monroe. In 1872 and the following year, he was a member of the legislature.



G. P. DARR, farmer of Gore district, son of William H. and Catherine M. Darr, was born in Rappahannock County, 1853; German ancestry; married, 1880, Eliza A., daughter of James and Ann Nealis, of Ireland; children, William N., Minnie E., and James E.

JOHN W. DAY, farmer of Gore, son of Alexander and Caroline Day, Irish descent, was born 1868; married, 1893, Mollie E., daughter of S. A. and Ann J. Rowzee, of Virginia; children, James E. and John N.

JOHN P. DARR, of Green Spring; farmer; son of W. H. and Catherine Darr; German ancestry; born 1847; married, 1873, Mary F., daughter of Ammon and Lucinda Clem; children, Anna L., Lovary B., Mary E., James W., George H., Sarah E., John R., Samuel E., and Lucy M.

G. M. DUVALL, of Green Spring; railroading; son of William and Mary J. Duvall; French and English ancestry; born 1861; married, 1886, Anna M., daughter of John and Martha J. Nixon, of Maryland; children, Ashby W., Missouri L., Florence A., Myrtle M., Isabella V., Viola D., Blanche B., Benjamin M., Ernest S., Daisey E., Mary W., and Irwin.

JACOB DAILEY, of Springfield; merchant; son of Jacob and Jane Dailey; Scotch-Irish and English parentage; born 1844; married Tomazine, daughter of John and Eliza Pearce, of Maryland. Their son's name is R. W. Dailey.

H. B. DAWSON, farmer of Romney district, son of James and Elizabeth Dawson, of German ancestry, was born in Alleghany County, Maryland; ancestry, German; married, 1870, to Elizabeth, daughter of John J. and Eliza Rodruck. Their son's name is John J.

D. H. DAUGHERTY, farmer near Augusta, son of John W. and Eliza Daugherty, was born 1862; Irish and English parentage; married Ella B., daughter of Henry and Rachel Sowers, 1882; children, Nora V., Bertie A., Benjamin O., Ira R., Grover C., and Cora R.

GEORGE W. DANDRIDGE, farmer of Gore district, son of Mr. and Mrs. A. C. Dandridge, was born 1838; married Harriet, daughter of William and Anna Brooka, 1870. Their son, Charles, was born 1872.

GEORGE W. EMMART, of Gore, son of Henry and Rebecca Emmart, was born 1822; German and Welsh ancestry; by occupation a millwright and miller; married, 1859, to Barbara A., daughter of Henry H. and Eleanor Adkins; children, Henry M., Rebecca E., Robert L., Charles W., Mary E., George E., Lucy A., and John A. Mr. Emmart was a school-teacher for fourteen years before the Civil War.

LUTHER C. EWERS, farmer of Gore, son of Franklin and Virginia Ewers, of Welsh and Scotch ancestry, was born in Loudoun County, 1854; married, 1875, Susan V., daughter of Jacob and Sarah Swisher; children, William T., Annie M., Ella B., and Jacob F. Mr. Ewers was twice married. His second wife, whom he married 1890, was Mrs. Annie Swisher, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Michael Scanlon; children, Albert Luther and Annie Carson.

FRANKLIN EWERS, of Three Churches; farmer; son of William and Nancy Ewers; born in Loudoun County, Virginia, 1824, of Welsh and Scotch descent; married, 1850, Virginia, daughter of Thompson and Catherine Furr; children, Kate F., William T., Luther C., Agnes, Jonathan, Loudoun, Nannie F., and Lizzie B.; stepchildren, Laura and Isaac Ewers.

JAMES L. EDMISTON, of Green Spring, farmer, was born in Hampshire County, 1812; son of Jerry and Rosanna Edmiston; married, 1865, Martha, daughter of Nathan and Maria Coleman, of Maryland; children, James B., John C., William L., and Vandever. Mr. Edmiston's first wife was Emily A. Washington, whom he married 1848.

W. O. EVANS, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of John and Mary Evans, of German ancestry, was born in Hardy County, 1861; married, 1882, to Sarah C., daughter of Samuel and Rachel Loy; children, John W., Oliver D., Mary R., Elizabeth A., Sarah J., and George H.

L. B. EMMART, teacher of Sherman district, son of Samuel and Elizabeth Emmart, was born of German parentage, 1869; has taught seven years, one year as principal of the Romney school.

H. M. EMMART, carpenter and teacher, son of George W. and Barbara A. Emmart, of Gore district, was born of German and Welsh parentage, 1860; married Mary F., daughter of Abram and Elizabeth Thomas, 1893; children, Thomas Rives, Turley Leon, and Georgia Elwilda.

JOHN P. EVERETT, farmer of Gore, son of Asa and Frances Everett, German extraction, was born in New Jersey, 1813; married Mary C., daughter of John I. and Sarah Pownell, 1864; children, Lupton, Richard S., Julius P., John P., and Sallie F.

G. T. FEASTER, farmer of Mill Creek; German ancestry; son of Henry and Eliza Feaster; born in Grant County, 1846; married, 1867, to Catherine, daughter of Aaron and Sarah May, of Grant County; children, Albert W., Arthur C., Miranda B., Luther T., Sarah E., James H., Annie G., Carrie F.



**JAMES W. FLEMING**, farmer of Mill Creek, was born 1854; of German ancestry; son of John and Mary Fleming; married, 1876, to Mary C., daughter of Andrew and Evaline See, of Hardy County; children, Nora F., Albert R., Martha J., Mary E., John W., and Bertha M. Mr. Fleming owns two hundred and eighty-two acres of land, one hundred and fifty acres improved, three miles east of Purgitsville.

**WILLIAM V. FOX**, farmer, Vernon County, Missouri, was born in Hampshire, 1843; son of Vause and Rebecca Fox; English ancestry; married, 1874, Ursula, daughter of Garrett I. and Sarah A. Blue. Their son's name is William V. Fox. Mr. Fox left Hampshire, 1878, for Kansas, and in 1884 moved to his present home in Missouri.

**SAMUEL J. FARMER**, Bloomery district; a farmer; son of Samuel and Anna Farmer; born, 1846, in Missouri; married, 1872, Margaret E., daughter of Minor and Mary Furr; children, Minnie B., Lelia A., Minor L.; owns two hundred and eighty acres, half improved.

**ELIHU C. FLETCHER**, farmer of Capon district, son of Lewis and Martha Fletcher, German and English ancestry, was born in Frederick County, 1855; married Susanna, daughter of Harmon and Sarah Oates, 1882. Their child's name is Albert A. Mr. Fletcher was married again, 1887, to Martha A., daughter of Henry W. and Anna M. Oates; children, Lafa L., Sadie S., and Ray R. He owns three hundred acres, one-half improved.

**W. D. FOLTZ**, farmer of Gore, son of Levi and Matilda Foltz, German parentage, was born 1855; married, 1876, to a daughter of William and Caroline Haines; children, Warren Z., Charles W., Herman L., Dalley L., Lulu L., Ocy F., Gordy L., and Grover Cleveland.

**C. M. FRENCH**, farmer of Springfield district, son of William and Susan T. French, was born, 1841, of Welsh and English parentage; married, 1873, to Hannah E., daughter of Joseph and Harriet A. Taylor. Their son's name is Joseph W. French; second marriage, 1876, to Miss Mary Susan Taylor; children, Susan T., Harriet B., C. M., and Mary C. French.

**DAVID FAIRFAX**, of Springfield district; farmer; born 1848; son of Zacharias and Phillis Fairfax; married, 1869, Mary, daughter of Vincent and Nancy Bartlett; children, Belle, William, Flora, Lannis, Wordlaw, Mary N. V.

**JOSEPH W. FRENCH**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Charles M. and Hannah E. French, was born September 24, 1874.

**W. T. FRENCH**, farmer of Springfield district, son of William and Susan French, was born 1824; married, 1870, Florence M., daughter of John and Sarah C. Myers, of Virginia.

**S. L. FLOURNOY**, of Charleston, West Virginia, was formerly a resident of Hampshire County, representing this district in the State Senate from 1884 till 1890. He is by profession a lawyer; son of Richard W. and Sarah P. Flournoy; French and English ancestry; born in Chesterfield County, Virginia, 1846; married, 1875, to Frances A., daughter of John Baker and Frances White, of Virginia; children, R. Parke, Harry L., Frances Z., Samuel L., and Alexander. Mr. Flournoy joined Otey Battery, Confederate army, in the spring of 1864, and fought till the close of the war. He graduated from Hampden Sidney College in 1868, receiving the speaker's medal. He came to Hampshire in 1870, and taught school two terms before commencing the practice of law.

**DAVID FOX**, farmer of Romney district, was born 1838; son of Vause and Rebecca Fox; English, German, and Irish ancestry; married, 1867, to Nannie J., daughter of Abraham and Susan M. Johnson; children, Susan R., Carrie B., Edwin J., Bessie M., and David V.

**WILLIAM L. FELLER**, farmer of Romney district, son of W. H. and Margaret E. Feller, was born, 1855, in Shenandoah County; German ancestry; married, 1881, to Mary B., daughter of Isaac and Sarah Mills; children, Mary E., Harry C., Wrennie G.

**ROBERT S. FISHER**, of Romney; carpenter; German ancestry; born, 1859, in Augusta County; son of J. A. and Sarah Fisher; married, 1885, to Jemima, daughter of Silas and Abigail Lewis; children, Robert A., Firman D., Roy C.

**SAMUEL A. FREDERICK**, miller of Sherman district, son of Lewis and Sibell Frederick, German parentage, was born in Hardy County, 1859; married Julia A., daughter of Decatur and Eleanor Steed, 1881; children, Edna M., Walter F., and Harry A.

**F. M. FRAVEL**, teacher, son of Moses B. and Eliza A. Fravel, was born at Pughtown, Virginia, 1836; Swiss descent; married Leah C., daughter of Philip and Diadem Hockman, of Virginia, 1869; children, C. N., Lena M., Aldine S., Laura B., and Ada L. Mr. Fravel is one of Hampshire's oldest educators. He began the work in Hampshire at the close of the war, and taught in this county until 1892, when he removed to Edinburg, Virginia, where he is still teaching. He has taught forty-three years; and his son, C. N. Fravel, is at this time a teacher in Hampshire. Mr. Fravel was two years in the Confederate army.

**R. LEE FRYE**, farmer of Sherman district, son of Benjamin and Mary I. Frye, German descent, was born 1863; married Hattie J., daughter of William H. and Sarah Pepper, 1892; children, Ina L. and Mary.



HENRY N. GRAY, farmer near Sedan, son of Spencer R. and Sarah Gray, German and English descent, was born 1859; married Regina S., daughter of Hiram and Jemima Spaid, 1893; children, Carrie M., Katie J., and Coddie G.

A. R. GOOD, miller of Capon district, son of James W. and Priscilla Good, was born 1832; German and English ancestry; married Mary E., daughter of Henry and Eliza Rosenberg, of Frederick County, 1878; children, Daisy H., Elsie E., Mamie M., Margaret R., and Sarah V. O.

D. W. GIFFIN, farmer of Capon, son of James and Eliza Giffin, Irish and German ancestry, was born in 1844; married Margaret, daughter of Joseph and Christina Seechrist; children, Mary A., Isalah R., Lina L., Rittie, Robert, Bertha A., Samuel R., Blanche E., and Walter J. Mr. Giffin was a Confederate soldier. He took part in forty battles. He has a sword presented to Captain George R. Lang, in 1844, by the Highland Blues.

SILAS W. GARDNER, millwright of Capon, son of William P. Gardner, German ancestry, was born 1844; married Mary E., daughter of John and Margaret Larrick; children, Edward F., Annie L., Clarence W., and Luella M. Mr. Gardner died 1886.

THOMAS E. GULICK, farmer of Gore, son of N. F. and Jane A. Gulick, French ancestry, was born 1842; married, 1865, Almira C., daughter of John and D. A. Haines; children, Charles N., John N., William T., I. M., Virginia L., Clara B., Howard E., Granville G. M., and H. V.

W. B. GRANT, of Morgan County, was born in Hampshire, 1859; German parentage; son of James M. and Elizabeth Grant; married, 1885, Jennie B., daughter of David C. and Emma Adams, of Virginia; children, William M., Karl M., Floyd, and Mabel.

PERRY W. GESS, a mason, Bloomery, was born of German parentage in Shenandoah County, 1851; son of William and Catherine Gess; married, 1873, Phoebe A., daughter of Dorsey and Nancy Whitacre; children, John H., Andrew S., Noah L., Ada B., Lina, Artie V., Cora, Miller, Nannie, and Holland D.

DAVID GIBSON was of Scotch-Irish descent. One of his ancestors was the Rev. Hugh Gibson, of Scotland, a cotemporary of John Knox, with whom he shared the persecutions of those troublesome times, and finally took refuge in the north of Ireland, whence the father of the deceased, Andrew Gibson, emigrated to this country about 1765, and lived several years at or near Lancaster, Pennsylvania, where he married, and thence removed to Winchester, Virginia, at which place his son David was born, July 22, 1795. His father died away from home when David was about a year old, leaving his mother with eight children and in very straightened circumstances. With a resolute spirit, she addressed herself to her arduous work; and, by her own exertions, succeeded not only in making comfortable provision for her children, but also in giving them a good English education. About the age of thirteen David commenced his mercantile career in the store of James Little, then doing an extensive business in Winchester, with whom he continued about four years, when, on the breaking out of the War of 1812, Mr. Little closed his business, and David was thus deprived of employment. "I could not think of living on my old mother," he writes; and by dint of strenuous exertion he procured employment at White Post; afterwards with another firm at Winchester; and finally he was led to Romney, where his main life's work was to be done. He alludes in touching terms to his desolate feelings on reaching that place. "On February 20, 1814, I arrived at Romney. It was Saturday night. My heart was sad. I was a poor boy, compelled to do as I could, not as I would; but I determined to support myself by my labor." He entered the store of Frederick Steinback; but some seven months after he was drafted for Norfolk, and with his company, commanded by Captain Cockerell, left Romney, August 9, 1814. Soon he was appointed orderly sergeant of the company, and was afterwards promoted to the rank of sergeant-major of the regiment.

He returned to Romney when peace was declared, but seeing no prospect of getting into business there, he spent several months in a store at Winchester, when John Jack, then cashier of the South Branch bank, offered him the charge of his store in Romney, with a share of the profits. This offer he accepted. The business prospered in his hands, and he continued with Mr. Jack until May, 1818, when two well known lawyers of Romney, Samuel Kercheval and Warner Throckmorton, proposed a partnership with themselves, in another store. Some of his best friends were strongly opposed to his leaving Mr. Jack; but the young merchant reasoned shrewdly on the subject. "If I remain with Mr. Jack, and build up a good business, the benefit of my labors will accrue to his son, who will eventually succeed his father. But these two lawyers know nothing about the mercantile business, and anticipating larger profits than they are likely to realize, they will become tired, and, by the time I shall have made enough to buy them out, they will be ready to retire." The event justified his sagacity. In much less time than he expected he became sole owner of the store, giving his bonds for the value of the goods. Having borrowed one thousand dollars he replenished his stock; "and by my constant attention to business," he continues, "was greatly encouraged, and built up a trade which continued to increase. This, May, 1819, was the date of my start in life."

In 1825 he was ordained a ruling elder of the Romney church, and continued to act as such up to the time of his death. In June, 1820, he was appointed by the county court a justice of the peace, and remained such until 1852, when, by a change in the State constitution, the office became elective by the people. He was re-elected, and served continuously until the commencement of the war, occupying, by the choice of his fellow-justices, the position of presiding judge. The services Mr. Gibson rendered to Hampshire County in this capacity were invaluable. He was gifted with that rare common sense which arrives at just conclusions, without a distinct



consciousness, at all times, of the intervening mental process; and a mind like his could not but absorb a large amount of legal knowledge in the trial of the numerous cases argued before him.

In 1823 he was elected a director of the Valley Bank, and in 1837 became its president. In December, 1833, he was married to his second wife, the daughter of Isaac Vanmeter, of Hardy County, who died in August, 1859. Of her six children, two died in infancy. Her elder son sleeps in the grave of a Confederate soldier at Richmond.

In 1836 Mr. Gibson retired from the mercantile business, in which he had greatly prospered, and bought the valuable South Branch farm, upon which he resided during the rest of his life. His native energy and sound judgment, and the systematic habits contracted in his former employment, were brought successfully to bear upon the management of this novel enterprise. Here he dispensed a generous hospitality and died November 10, 1870.

**JAMES A. GIBSON**, son of David Gibson, was born in 1844. He was successively justice of the peace, assessor, commissioner of the court, and postmaster. His wife, Mrs. Sallie E. Gibson, died November 24, 1884, at the age of forty-eight. Isaac, a brother of James A. Gibson, was killed in the Confederate army. Miss Mary Gibson, daughter of James A. Gibson, is the possessor of an autograph letter from General Robert E. Lee, not written to her, but which came into her possession, and is preserved as a souvenir. The family were all admirers of the great Confederate general.

**JOHN W. GRACE**, of Springfield district, farmer, son of John and Catherine Grace, was born 1834; married, 1864, Catherine, daughter of Jacob P. and Hannah Daniels; children, Emma V., Robert C., Jacob D., William H., Clarence E., Virgil J., and Walter L.

**N. B. GUTHERIE**, of Springfield district, merchant, son of William and Isabella Guthrie, was born in Pennsylvania, 1813; English and Irish ancestry; married, 1855, Mary E., daughter of Solomon and Mary Parker; children, Belle, R. E., M. T., and N. B.

**CONRAD GLAZE**, farmer of Green Spring, son of Andrew and Nancy Glaze, was born 1845; German ancestry; married, 1867, Eliza, daughter of John and Ellen Wince, of Virginia; children, John M., George W. W., James A., Edward, Nancy V., Maria, and Walter C.

**W. N. GUTHRIE**, merchant, resident of Romney, son of N. B. and Elizabeth Guthrie, of Scotch and Irish ancestry, was born 1849; married, 1875, to Susan, daughter of James and Hannah Kuykendall; children, N. B., W. F., Hannah B., Elizabeth F., Fannie T., James K., Robert F., and Mary L. Mr. Guthrie was a merchant for many years at French's Station, on the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad. He moved to Romney in 1895.

**JAMES A. GIBSON**, of Romney, son of David and Ann M. Gibson, of Scotch and Irish ancestry, was born near Romney, 1842; married, 1872, to S. E. Gilkeson, daughter of John Bell and Mary Gilkeson, of Moorefield; children, Mary, Ann M., Bell, David, and Sarah H. Further mention of Mr. Gibson is made in this book.

**G. A. GIBBONS**, clergyman, resident of Romney, son of Alexander and Rebecca Gibbons, of English ancestry, was born at Aquasca, Maryland, 1843; married, 1873, to Laura A., daughter of William H. and Jane E. Whaley, of Virginia; children, Page A., Hugh Kent, Mabel Earle, and Ruth A.

**H. B. GILKESON**, lawyer, resident of Romney, son of Robert W. and Sarah E. Gilkeson, of Scotch ancestry, was born at Moorefield, 1850; married, 1884, to Mary K., daughter of J. J. and E. J. Paxton, of Virginia; children, Laura P., Robert W., and Henry B. Further mention of Mr. Gilkeson will be made in this book.

**J. T. GOLDSBOROUGH**, agent Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, resident of Romney district, son of Thomas and Hannah A. Goldsborough, of English and German ancestry, was born on Patterson Creek, 1859; married, 1890, to B. W. Parker, daughter of I. V. and Gertrude Parker; children, Bessie Ward, Blanche Parker, John Waldo, and Katie Marie.

**JOHN R. GRAPES**, farmer and teacher of Gore district, son of Isaac N. and Elizabeth Grapes, English parentage, was born 1861; married Lillie M. Wills; children, Flossie B., Nellie F., and Benjamin M.

**MISS NELLIE HIGH**, of Mill Creek district, was born 1877; daughter of Northman and Ellen High; of German and Scotch ancestry; has taught three years in the public schools of Hampshire, and has attended two terms at the Shenandoah Normal School.

**ALPHEUS HIGH**, farmer of Mill Creek; son of John and Mary A. High; of German ancestry; born 1831; married, 1866, to Sarah A., daughter of George and Susan D. Lloyd, of Patterson Creek; children, Elizabeth, Dorothy A., Annelia K., Sarah D., Jacob R., and Myrtle M. Mr. High owns one hundred and sixty acres of land near Purgitsville.

**ROBERT C. HOOK**, farmer of Bloomery, son of A. M. and Mary C. Hook, was born 1864; married, 1890, Sarah E., daughter of C. B. and Eliza B. McDonald; children, Alonzo L., Walter C., and Ulu M. Mr. Hook owns four hundred acres of land, three hundred improved.



**EDWARD HOOK**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Mr. and Mrs. David Hook, was born in Virginia, 1839; English ancestry; married, 1866, Bridget, daughter of Michael and Catherine Biscoe, of Maryland; children, Thomas E., Mary C., Rosie E., David M., Alice, James L., Harry A., Annie, and John W. Mr. Hook served three years as justice of the peace in Bloomery district.

**CHARLES HAWKINS**, wagon-maker of Bloomery, son of Ephraim and Elizabeth Hawkins, was born of Irish descent, 1822; married, 1848, Rebecca, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John Light, of Virginia; children, Margaret A., George W., Elizabeth M., Louis E., Benjamin B., and Endora V.

**JOHN S. HIETT**, farmer of Bloomery, son of John and Julia Hielt, was born 1843; French ancestry; married, 1863, Mary E., daughter of Charles J. and Catherine A. Noland; children, Edgar M., John W., Charles E., Sarah E., Samuel F., Mary E., and Joseph P. He owns three hundred and fifty-three acres, sixty improved. He was a Confederate soldier thirteen months; was held a prisoner twenty-four hours at Sir John's Run, and was then released.

**HENRY HAWKINS**, farmer of Bloomery, son of James and Elizabeth Hawkins, was born 1832; German ancestry; married, 1868, Louisa, daughter of Christopher and Mary Slonaker; children, Martha V., Clara B., Mary F., Annie L., Amanda J. Mr. Hawkins died July 8, 1894. He served in the Confederate army three years. His farm contains one hundred and eighty acres.

**JACOB A. HITE**, a farmer of Bloomery, son of Isaac and Mary A. Hite, was born 1850; German ancestry; married, 1872, Fannie M., daughter of James M. and Eliza J. Pangle, of Virginia; children, Clarence G., Charles C., Eleonora V., William A. M., and Fannie L. He owns one hundred and eighty-five acres, one hundred improved.

**JOHN W. HIETT**, farmer of Bloomery, son of John S. and Mary E. Hielt, was born 1866; married, 1891, Annie, daughter of Robert and Margaret Wilson, of Maryland; children, Florence M. and Esrom R. He owns one hundred and sixty acres, seventy improved.

**JOHN W. HITE**, shoemaker of Bloomery, son of Isaac and Mary A. Hite, was born of German ancestry, 1838; married, 1865, Amelia C., daughter of Joseph and Lucinda Sole, of Virginia; children, Annie B. and Joseph I. He was married three times,—the second, 1878, to Bertha Jane, daughter of Martin G. Sole; children, Mary E., John D., and Bertha J. His third marriage, 1890, was to Mary L., daughter of John and Nancy Smith.

**DANIEL B. HAINES**, of Bloomery; merchant; son of Henry and Phoebe J. Haines; born 1856; married, 1886, Elizabeth F., daughter of James H. and Eveline Williams, of Maryland; children, Lesty C., D. Blanche, Alice M., Bryan W. Mr. Haines has been in business at Capon Bridge eleven years.

**GEORGE A. HOTT**, farmer and teacher of Bloomery; son of Levi and Sarah Hott; German ancestry; born 1852; married, 1880, Cordella V., daughter of William T. and Susau A. Riley; children, Estella, Omor L., Ernest W., and Chloe. Mr. Hott was a member of the West Virginia legislature in 1891 and in 1893. He has taught twenty-one terms of school, never applied for but one school, and did not get that. He was a member of the county board of examiners one term.

**TILBURY HEISHMAN**, farmer of Capon, son of Jacob and Lavina Heishman, English and German ancestry, was born, 1865, in Hardy County; married Bessie, daughter of Lemuel and Sarah Kline, 1892; children, Mabel and Sadie.

**HENRY W. HAINES**, farmer and carpenter of Capon, son of Jefferson and Mary Haines, was born 1849; English and Scotch descent; married Elizabeth A., daughter of Hiram and Catherine Easter, 1874; children, Dora W., Lulu M., Clara B., Cora L., Ada L., Minnie D., Ellis E., and Maud L. He owns four hundred acres, one hundred and fifty improved.

**M. L. HEATWOLE**, carpenter of Capon, son of John Heatwole, served several years as justice of the peace in Capon district.

**M. F. HANNUM**, merchant at Capon Springs, son of Joseph and Elizabeth Hannum, Scotch and Irish parentage, was born 1830; married Margaret, daughter of John and Frances Lafollette, 1851. Mr. Hannum, for a second wife, married Barbara E., daughter of William Pifer, of Frederick County.

**R. A. HENDERSON**, farmer residing near Barnes's mills in Gore district, son of James G. and Jane Henderson, was born 1861; Irish parentage; married, 1891, Minnie, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Eli McBride; children, Benjamin F. and Lottie J.

**J. W. HAINES**, farmer near Pleasant Dale, Gore district, son of James and Evaline Haines, was born 1854; married, 1894, Maria V., daughter of Jeremiah and Emily Hielt; children, Virgil E. and Marvin D.

**HENRY H. HIETT**, farmer of Gore district, near Hanging Rocks, son of Evan and Barbara Hielt, was born of English parentage, 1841; married, 1877, Anna, daughter of S. and Mary J. McDonald, of Virginia; children, Holmes B., Harry E., Mary W., Maurice C., and Maud O.



**J. A. HAINES**, farmer of Gore district, son of Philip and Catherine Haines, was born of German ancestry, 1854; married, 1893, Maggie A., daughter of Arthur and Elizabeth Fleek, Their son's name is Arthur W.

**WILLIAM HASS**, of Okonoko, a farmer, son of Peter and Mary Hass, was born of German parentage, 1820; married, 1848, Sarah J., daughter of David and Mary Arnold; children, David A. and Sarah A. Mr. Hass married a second time, 1861, Miss Ann M. High; he married his third wife a few years later; and in 1896 he married his fourth wife, Mrs. Ettie Sperow.

**JOHN W. HOCKMAN**, of Pleasant Dale, a teacher by profession, son of Philip and Diadem Hockman, was born 1848; German and Irish parentage; married, 1879, S. Alice, daughter of Abraham and Lavina Godlove; children, Cora A., John F., Stella B., Charles W., Alva M., Philip Stein, and India L.

**JAMES E. HAINES**, farmer of Pleasant Dale, son of James and Aveline Haines, was born 1857; married, 1876, Elizabeth Walford; children, Bertha F., James A., Olive L., Nora E., and Montie I.

**L. H. HEARE**, farmer of Gore, son of Matthew and Mary Heare, Irish parentage, was born 1831; married, 1861, Zulemma, daughter of Silas and Joanna Shanholtzer; children, Johnson T., Augusta F., Lillian E., Minor G., George W., Lorenzo H., Bertha V., Wade V., Walter R., and Virgil H.

**NOAH W. HAINES**, school-teacher of Gore district, son of John and Ladema Haines, English ancestry, was born 1856; married, 1879, Annie W., daughter of Hiram and Catherine Easter; children, Gertie L., Granville L., Elmer L., Calvin C., Gilmer T., Victor C., and Conrad R.

**CHARLES N. HIETT**, of Slanesville; fire insurance agent; son of Joseph S. and C. E. Hielt; French and Scotch ancestry; born 1847; married, 1874, Rosa P., daughter of John and Ladema Haines; children, Carrie W., Henderson, V. B., C. N., F. H., Nettle, Edith, and Ethel Lillian.

**THE HARPER FAMILY.**—The founder of the Harper family, well known in Hampshire County, was Goodlow Harper, a native of England. Prior to the Revolutionary War he came to America, married and settled in Philadelphia. He had two sons, George K. Harper and Goodlow Harper. At the beginning of the Revolutionary War he became a Tory, and sympathized with England in its effort to subdue the colonies. Mr. Harper returned to England, leaving his wife and two sons in Philadelphia. He corresponded with his wife, sending the letters in care of a British officer stationed at or near Philadelphia. After two years, letters ceased coming from him. Mrs. Harper's letters to him were unanswered. She finally concluded that he was dead, and she married the British officer. At the close of the war, Mr. Harper returned to Philadelphia, only to learn that he no longer had a wife. He went to see his children, bade them and their mother good-by, and departed. He was never again heard of.

**GEORGE KENTON HARPER**, son of Goodlow Harper, lived at Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, where he was editor of a newspaper, influential in its day, the *Franklin Repository*, which he published for more than forty years. He supported Adams against Jefferson for President of the United States. He was opposed to the declaration of war against England in 1812; but when hostilities began, he upheld the administration in the prosecution of the war, not only through the columns of his paper, but he shouldered his musket and marched to Canada and fought till the close of the war, when he returned to Chambersburg and resumed the editorship of his paper. He was in the battle of North Point, where the British were defeated and the city of Baltimore saved from capture. He died in 1858.

**WILLIAM HARPER**, son of George Kenton Harper, was born at Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, in 1808, and, like his father, became a publisher. When about sixteen years old he went to Staunton, Virginia, to learn the printing business under his brother, General Kenton Harper, who then published the *Staunton Spectator*. He remained with his brother till about 1829, when he was twenty-one years old. He then set out in business on his own account, and in 1830 issued the first number of the *South Branch Intelligencer* at Romney. With the exception of about four years during the war, when he could not publish a paper in Romney, he continued to edit the *Intelligencer* till his death in 1887, a period of fifty-seven years. Mr. Harper was twice married, first to Miss Nancy Newman, daughter of Dr. Newman, who dying in 1865, Mr. Harper, in 1867, married Miss Sallie L. Kane. He had seven children: Bruce, who died in Romney; Robert and Granville, who died in Baltimore; William, who died in Las Vegas, New Mexico; Lee, also dead; Nancy, who married Mr. Pattie, of Iowa, and Almira, who married James Sheetz, of Romney, who was several terms sheriff of Hampshire County.

The Romney branch of the Harper family was closely related to the Newmans. A sketch of Dr. Newman is given elsewhere in this book, and it is proper at this place to speak somewhat fully of Mrs. Newman and her ancestors and descendants. She was a remarkable woman, one of those who, in dying, leave an unfilled place. In this world, some people, who seem important, die and are not missed. Others are never replaced. Mrs. Newman was of the latter class. She was of English descent, her grandfather, John Ocle, having emigrated from England to Philadelphia in the early part of the eighteenth century. His daughter Anna was the mother of Mrs. Newman, and married Thomas Neale, of Virginia, and in her old age lived in Romney, in the latter part of the seventeenth century. Her eldest daughter Elizabeth married John Hancock, of Fair-



fax, in 1784. Upon the death of Mr. Hancock, she married Dr. Newman, and resided at Old Town, Maryland, and later, in Romney, where she died in 1866, aged ninety-nine years, having been born in 1767.

C. S. HOUSER, of Okonoko, a telegrapher, was born 1871; son of Peter and Ruphina Houser; Swiss ancestry; married, 1895, Bertha, daughter of Levi and Etta Sperow. Their child's name is Ruth.

FRANKLIN HERRIOTT, farmer of Wappacomo, son of Ephraim and Eliza Herriott, was born in 1844, of Scotch, Irish, and Welsh ancestry; married, 1881, Susan E., daughter of J. M. and Margaret Bees, of Virginia; children, Wade R., Charles F., Lillie E., and William D.

J. W. HASS, farmer of South Branch, was born 1836; son of Abram and Mary A. Hass; ancestry, German, Scotch, and Irish; married, 1870, Roberta C., daughter of Joseph and Harriet Taylor; children, Mary Belle, Hattie I., Charles T., William R., and Sarah C.

J. W. HAINES, of Green Spring, farmer, son of Isaac and Jane Haines, was born 1844; married, 1866, Sarah, daughter of George and Rosanna Smith; children, Anna J., Susan E., Bertha V., George E., Lucy C., William G., and John I.

T. L. HOWSER, of Green Spring; railroading; son of Solomon and Nancy Howser; born of German ancestry, in Maryland, 1864; married, 1886, Annie E., daughter of Joseph and Susan Shumate; children, Cynthia V., Allie M., Charles V., C. Margaret, Daisy B., and William T.

J. T. HANSELL, farmer of Wappacomo, son of Solomon and Rebecca Hansell, was born in Maryland, 1842; German ancestry; married, 1886, Jennie, daughter of Alexander and Eliza Jeffrey; children, William P., Lloyd H., Flocie R., and Garret H. Mr. Hansell's first wife was Mary Chaney, of Maryland; children, Emma, Jennie, Joseph H., John, Paul, and Annie.

T. R. HENDERSON, of Higginsville, mechanic, son of James J. and Jane Henderson, was born 1845, of Scotch and Irish ancestry; married, 1865, Mary J., daughter of Peter and Elizabeth McBride; children, Lizzie J., Margaret A., J. L., and R. H.

O. W. HAUGH, of Old Town; railroading; son of Wesley and Elizabeth Haugh, born 1860; Irish and English ancestry; married, 1872, Lydia, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. David Piper, of Maryland; children, James A., John W., Charles F., Cora M., Edgar M., Benjamin O., and Bessie E.

D. F. HEFLEBOWER, now a Kansas farmer, was a former resident of Hampshire. He was born in Jefferson County, this State, of German ancestry, in 1828. He is a son of David and Mary A. Heflebower. In 1846 he married Margaret E., daughter of Samuel H. and Mary A. Frayler; children, William H., Frances K., and Luella.

DAVID H. HEFLEBOWER was born in Jefferson County, West Virginia, January 1, 1836. His parents were David and Mary Heflebower, and he was the eighth in a family of eleven children. His family was of German descent, and the original American home of the Heflebowers was Pennsylvania. In 1842 the family moved from Jefferson to Hampshire County, settling in the eastern portion near Capon Bridge. Here, on the farm, David grew to maturity. On reaching the age of twenty-one years the charm of the new west, rich in possibilities of development, drew him to Missouri, and thence in the course of a year to eastern Kansas, where he located in Miami County. Under the energetic labors of himself and others, who like him sought fortunes in what the geographers of the day oddly enough called the "great American desert," the raw and virgin prairie became a garden, and among the most prosperous was the young West Virginian. He witnessed the rise of the border troubles and served honorably in the ranks of the Unionists during the war. David H. Heflebower and Lucy A. Holdern were married December 12, 1860, in Miami County, Kansas, and their union was blessed with seven children,—one son and six daughters. Born a Democrat, Mr. Heflebower remained consistent in that faith until the Greenback party was formed, when he became a member of that organization and was the party's candidate for the office of State Treasurer in the campaign of 1884. He joined the ranks of the People's party when that movement came into prominence, and in 1896 was the party nominee for the same office. One of the most intense and exciting campaigns in the State's history, during which his party was deeply indebted to his wisdom, popularity, and generous liberality, resulted in victory for the Populist organization, and in January following the newly elected Treasurer assumed his official duties. About the State House at Topeka, "Uncle Dave," as he is familiarly called by a large circle of admiring and affectionate friends, is a prominent and welcome figure. He is the kind of a man that children instinctively follow, to whom those in trouble tell their griefs, while at the same time his counsel is sought by the chief financial magnates of the State. His jealous guardianship of the public interests has brought him a well-earned fame and the entire confidence of the people of Kansas. But his official honors are modestly borne, and he is still the plain and jovial farmer of former years. His magnificent series of farms in his home counties, consisting of over two thousand acres, still constitutes his home, and witnesses the exercise of the large-hearted hospitality which preserves the traditions of his earlier Virginian home.

GEORGE L. HERNDON, of Romney, bookkeeper, was born in Fauquier County, 1853; Scotch and Irish ancestry; son of Richard and Elizabeth J. Herndon; married, 1879, to Mary A., daughter of Reuben and Martha Bonney; children, Reuben B., Richard N., Janet S., and Mar-



tha R. Reuben Bonney came from Norfolk to Hampshire in 1849. He was born in Princess Anne County, Virginia, August 23, 1812, and was educated at Alleghany College, Meadville, Pennsylvania. While at school he was married to Miss Martha Jane Hull, daughter of Jacob Hull, and niece of Commodore Isaac Hull. There were seven brothers. Mrs. Bonney's mother's name was Stowe, and she was a sister of Mrs. Decatur, wife of Commodore Decatur. Thus the families of the two commodores were closely connected. Mrs. Bonney was educated at Steubenville, Ohio. Mr. Bonney was for many years a magistrate in Hampshire County.

J. H. HAINES, farmer of Romney district, son of William and Catherine Haines, was born 1848; married, 1873, to Lucretia, daughter of George W. and Catherine Shank; children, George W. F., Charles E. P., Fannie, Annie, Sallie B., Mary J., Eliza E., John F.

A. D. HAYS, of Romney; teacher; son of John W. and Elizabeth Hays, of Monongalia County; born in Marion County, 1856; married, 1883, to Grace O., daughter of C. W. and Susan Smith, of Gowanda, New York; children, Walter Lee and Grace Dudley. Mr. Hays has been connected with the West Virginia schools for the deaf, dumb, and blind for twenty-six years; six years a pupil; three years foreman of the cabinet shops; thirteen years a printer of the *Tablet*. He has taught seventeen years in the institution.

C. E. HEATWOLE, justice of the peace in Romney district, was born 1851; son of John E. and Jane M. Heatwole; English and German ancestry; married, 1877, to Helen, daughter of A. J. and Elizabeth A. Kreemer, of Virginia; children, Cora B., Robert L., E. M., F. I., and Charles.

WILLIAM B. HOUSEHOLDER, of Romney; railroading; German and Irish descent; son of William F. and Hannah A. Householder; born in Maryland, 1870; married, 1894, to Minnie L., daughter of Samuel and Rebecca Swisher; son, Clarence C.

W. V. HERRIOTT, of Cumberland, Maryland, was born in Hampshire County, 1828; son of Ephraim and Eliza Herriott; Scotch ancestry; occupation, miller; married Margaret A., daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Jacob Hightman, of Maryland. Their daughter's name is Ellen.

C. W. HAINES, merchant of Romney, son of Silas and Elizabeth Haines, was born 1863, of German and Irish ancestry; married, 1893, to Sallie E., daughter of Alexander and Maggie Monroe; children, Blair M. and Lysle M.

J. S. HEATH, of Romney; butcher; German ancestry; son of W. P. and Mary Heath; born 1863; married, 1891, to Priscilla, daughter of Edward and Caroline Brown.

JAMES HOWARD, farmer of Romney district, son of Frederick and Grace Howard, was born at Paw Paw, 1809; married, 1870, to Mary, daughter of Harry and Maria Bias; children, Charles S., Rowena B., Aaron F., Charlotte C., Abraham H., and Susanna.

M. G. HARMISON, farmer of Romney district, was born in Harrison County, 1868; son of Charles and Elizabeth Harmison; married, 1891, to Kate, daughter of Isaac and Emma Parsons; children, Robert W., Emma W., and Phillip C.

FRANCIS E. HEARE, farmer and trader of Sherman district, son of Francis L. and Grace A. Heare, Irish ancestry, was born 1861; married Abigail J., daughter of James and Elizabeth Davidson, of Hardy County, 1884; children, Claude K., Sephrone M., Clara D., Lulu G., and Viola F.

GEORGE H. HOTT, farmer and mechanic of Sherman district, son of David and Malinda Hott, German and English ancestry, was born 1848; married Abbie J., daughter of Elisha and Matilda Heare; children, Garrett D., Robert C., Carrington E., Donald E., and Georganna G.

JAMES C. HEARE, merchant of Sherman, son of John A. G. and Elizabeth A. Heare, Irish ancestry, was born 1858; married Mary V., daughter of Nathan and Elizabeth Walker, of Hardy County, 1889; children, Fannie W. and Lucy E.

DAVID M. HAINES, farmer near Kirby, son of Peter and Catherine Haines, German parentage, was born 1845; married Catherine, daughter of John and Elizabeth Lockender; children, John L., Peter, Sarah, Edward E., Hampton, Lillie, and Hannah; owns four hundred and eighty-five acres, one hundred and fifty improved.

J. T. HOWARD, cabinet-maker, residing near Rio, son of William H. and Mary Howard, English and Irish parentage, was born in North Carolina, 1840; married Emma, daughter of Joseph and Emeline Emmons, 1868; children, Helen F., William M., Annie B., Mary E., Charles O., Thomas D., Edgar B., Joseph C., James L., Hota H., and Bessie.

J. W. HAINES, farmer of Sherman, son of Philip and Catherine Haines, German extraction, was born 1844; married Sarah A., daughter of James and Rebecca French, 1875; children, Minor W., Loretto M., Flora B., Henry E., Leonard F., Berzelia H., and Granville H.

I. MINOR HAINES, farmer near Pleasant Dale, son of Philip and Catherine Haines, German descent, was born 1849; married Bettie M., daughter of Mordecai and J. A. Orndorff, 1874; children, Carrie B., A. Gilbert, Myrtle A., Rumsey S., Theodore A., Mary E., Bessie C., and Robert D.



**BENJAMIN M. HAINES**, son of Philip and Catherine Haines, German ancestry, was born 1840; married Nancy E., daughter of Zephyrine and Eliza Offutt, 1867; children, Lee, Etta, William, Catherine, Maggie, Ambrose, Daniel, Albert, Edward, Benjamin O., and Rosa.

**BEAZIN HAINES**, farmer near Slanesville, son of Daniel and Elizabeth Haines, German ancestry, was born 1819; married Elizabeth, daughter of Michael and Susan Tusing, 1842; children, Margaret A., Salemma J., John H., Jennie, Malissa, and Jasper F.

**A. C. HAINES**, farmer of Gore district, son of Philip and Catherine Haines, German parentage, was born 1855; married Chloe M., daughter of Jacob and Margaret Shanholtzer, 1884; children, Salemma M., Rosa B., Stella M., Elmer P. L., and Wilda C.

**JOHN W. HOTT**, farmer of Gore, son of David and Mary A. Hott, English ancestry, was born 1850; married J. E. F. Hott, daughter of James and Caroline Hott, 1876; children, Charles T., Austin E., Verdle V., Marshall, William D., Rosa M. B., Osee V., and Ida F.

**FORMAN INSKEEP**, farmer of Romney district, son of William and Susan B. Inskeep, of English ancestry, was born 1804; married, 1849, to Alverdah, daughter of Levi and Mary A. Cain.

**R. M. JOHNSON**, farmer of Capon district, son of Elias Johnson, was married to Sarah, daughter of John Larrick; children, Fannie Cordelia, Bradley E., Evan O., Nettie E., Rena, Blanche, Montie, Bertha J., and Jessie. Mr. Johnson was in the Confederate army, was wounded at Grassy Lick and at Bunker Hill, and was in the battle of Gettysburg.

**ZACHARIAS E. JOHNSON**, farmer of Gore district, son of Zacharias and Rebecca Johnson, was born 1869; married, 1891, Elizabeth B., daughter of Franklin and Virginia Ewers, of Virginia; children, J. E., Nannie V., and Zacharias F.

**ZACHARIAS JOHNSON**, farmer of Gore district, son of Israel and Mary Johnson, Scotch and German descent, was born, 1830, in the house where he still resides. The house is about one hundred and fifty years old, perhaps the oldest in the county. It has always been in the Johnson family. In 1860 he married Rebecca, daughter of George and Elizabeth Stickley; children, Ella, Lucy, I. F., Susie, George B., Zacharias E., Isaac B., Thomas K., E. M., Lake, Verna E., and Cora B. Mr. Johnson is a large stock raiser, and owns sixteen hundred acres.

**CLARK JACKSON**, teamster, resident of Romney district, son of Solomon and Eliza Jackson, was born 1842; married, 1880, to Martha, daughter of Richard and Jane Jackson; children, Jennie, William H., Solomon, and Georgia A.

**JOHN J. JACOB**, the first Democratic governor of West Virginia, and a citizen whose name is connected with both the political and business interests of the State, was born in Hampshire County, December 9, 1829. His father was a minister of the Methodist Church, and was the author of "Jacob's Life of Cresap," mention of which will be found in another part of this volume. The family, as far back as any record exists, has been one of ability and influence. Governor Jacob's father was a soldier in the Revolutionary War, belonging to a Maryland regiment. It has been said that the song "Yankee Doodle" was composed to satirize this regiment, because the soldiers were better dressed than those of any other regiment in the American service. But this cannot be vouched for in serious history. It is well known that "Yankee Doodle," at least the tune, was popular long before the Revolutionary War. If it was applied in any way to the soldiers of the Maryland Regiment to which Mr. Jacob belonged, it was simply as "an old song turned up again." Rev. Jacobs married, as his first wife, the widow of Michael Cresap, and as his second wife married Miss Susan McDavitt, who was the mother of Governor Jacob. She died in 1880. In 1839 she took up her residence in Romney, and her son was sent to school at the "Classical Institute." The Literary Society of Romney was then in the zenith of its power and usefulness, and the school under its management was one of the best in the State at that time. After completing the course at Romney, Mr. Jacob entered Dickinson College, at Carlisle, Pennsylvania, and graduated 1849. He taught school in Hampshire, studying law in the mean time. In 1853 he was appointed to a professorship in the Missouri University, and filled a chair in that institution until 1860. The beginning of the Civil War broke up the university, and he resumed his law practice and remained in Missouri until 1865, when he returned to Romney and opened a law office. In 1869 he was elected on the Democratic ticket to the legislature, and at once attracted general notice for his abilities.

The next year, 1870, he was nominated for governor of West Virginia, and was elected to fill a term from March 4, 1871, to March 3, 1873. In 1872 the Democratic party was split. There were two candidates for governor, Johnson N. Camden and John J. Jacob. The Republicans supported Jacob, and he was elected. He served until 1877. On the expiration of his term he opened a law office in Wheeling, and resided there until his death. He was elected to the legislature from Ohio County, 1879; and in 1881 Governor Jackson appointed him judge of the first circuit to fill the vacancy occasioned by the resignation of Thayer Melvin, and in 1882 he was elected to fill the office to the end of the term, 1888.

**HENRY CLAY KUYKENDALL**, vice-president of the Vicksburg (Mississippi) Bank, was born near Ridgeville, Hampshire, now Mineral County, 1833. He is a son of Nathaniel and Sally Kuykendall, and is of German parentage on his father's side, and Scotch and Irish on his mother's side. Her maiden name was Abernathy. In 1868 he married Letitia Kate, daughter of Alexander H. and Sarah C. Arthur, of Vicksburg. Their children are Sallie, who died in infancy, and Carrie Belle.



**FREDERICK T. KEITER**, farmer of Bloomery, son of John and Emily Keiter, was born 1857; English ancestry; married, 1882, Lucy, daughter of John and Dolly Clark, of Virginia; children, George L., Grace B., Clark, Elsie M., Dolly E., and Edgar L. He owns two hundred and twenty-five acres, seventy-five improved, twenty-eight miles from Romney.

**ISAAC P. KELLEY**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Thomas and Rosanna Kelley; Irish and German ancestors; born 1852; married, 1884, Lydia, daughter of Washington and Elizabeth Whitacre; children, John H. and Pearl E. He owns ninety acres, forty improved.

**LORENZO W. KIDWELL**, farmer of Bloomery, son of James and Mary Kidwell, was born of English parentage, 1845; married, 1876, Lucinda, daughter of Evan and Sarah Kidwell; children, Della M., Ida A., Daisy M., Lily M., Odis T., and James O.

**B. F. KUMP**, farmer of Capon district, son of Jacob and Julia A. Kump, German parentage, was born 1841; married Frances M., daughter of Sylvester and Nancy Rudolph, 1873; children, Garnett K., Herman G., Valonta V., and Otelia V. Mr. Kump fought through the war as a Confederate. His grandfather was a soldier in the Revolution, his father in the War of 1812. He owns five hundred acres, one-half improved, twenty-eight miles from Romney.

**A. L. KELSEOE**, farmer of High View, son of James and Annie C. Kelseoe, was born 1837; Scotch and Irish extraction; married Hannah M., daughter of Enos and Rosa A. Spaid, 1861; children, Curtis E., Jennie C., Luella B., Harry T., Mahlon L., Edward P., Lemuel S., Albertis L., Flossie M., and Evan M. The first four named are dead.

**JOSEPH A. KELSEOE**, farmer of Capon, son of James and Annie Kelseoe, Irish descent, was born 1828; married Elizabeth C., daughter of Samuel and Joanna Milsagie, 1850; children, Sarah V., Annie R., Ida C., Laura E., John N., Carter G., Isaac E. G., and Olive Willetta. Mr. Kelseoe was a Confederate soldier, and died 1894.

**LEMUEL F. KLINE**, farmer of Capon, son of Phillip and Elizabeth Kline, was born 1841; German and Irish parentage; married Sarah A., daughter of Jacob and Lydia Burkholder, of Rockingham County, 1867; children, Isaac N., Clement H., Bessie M., Annie R., Mary E., Phillip T., Signora A., and Madison B. Mr. Kline was in the Confederate service.

**THOMAS KUYKENDALL**, merchant of Paw Paw, son of James and Hannah L. Kuykendall, was born in Maryland, 1854; married, 1883, Kate T., daughter of Edward and Mary McGill, of Maryland; children, James E., Mary W., William W., Lucy B., Helen M., and Harry R.

**THEODORE KLEIN**, farmer of Gore district, son of Joseph and Catherine Klein, was born at Hagerstown, Maryland, 1871; German descent; married, 1892, Minnie, daughter of Joseph and Susan Borringer; children, Vancie and Zaney V.

**A. J. KLEIN**, of Gore district, near Okonoko; railroader; son of Henry and Catherine Kline; German parentage; born near Frostburg, Maryland, 1857; married, 1882, Annie M., daughter of Edward and Mary E. Northcraft, of Maryland; children, Charles A., Clement, Edith M., Mary C., Henry E., Eva L., Paul H.

**JACOB F. KLINE**, farmer of Gore district, residing near Paw Paw, son of Joseph and Catherine Kline, was born at Chambersburg, Pennsylvania, 1859; German ancestry; married, 1885, Nannie J., daughter of Thomas A. and Martha A. Largent; children, Zella M. and Maggie V.

**JAMES W. KAYLOR**, farmer of Gore, near Spring Gap, son of A. J. and Mary E. Kaylor, was born 1855; married, 1889, Elizabeth A., daughter of James W. and Priscilla Montgomery, of Pennsylvania; children, Lily M., Arthur A., Maggie B., Clarence G., and Eliza V.

**ADAM KAYLOR**, farmer of Gore district, son of Josiah and Mary Kaylor, was born in Frederick County, 1831; German descent; married, 1866, Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel and Kishiah Largent. Mr. Kaylor was married in 1890 to Miss Mary E. Floyd.

**FREDERICK L. KERNS**, farmer residing near Okonoko, in Gore district, son of Frederick and Margaret Kerns; German and Welsh descent; born 1833; married, 1862, Mary E., daughter of Thomas and Catherine Hartley, of Maryland; children, Ellsworth, Margaret A., Eddie, Isaiah, J. F., Rachel C., Annie M., and Susan C.

**F. A. KENNEY**, farmer, resident of Springfield district, son of Patrick and Mary J. Kenney, of Irish ancestry, was born 1869; married, 1892, to Eliza, daughter of William and Frances Sherwood.

**JOHN KAYLOR**, of Springfield, farmer, son of Nicholas and Rebecca Kaylor, of English ancestry, was born 1840; married, 1858, to S. Elizabeth, daughter of William and Annie Day; children, Thomas W., Mary E., Edward, and Hattie.

**J. L. KUYKENDALL**, merchant of Springfield, son of James and Hannah Kuykendall, of German ancestry, was born in Maryland, 1849; married, 1887, to Ida R., daughter of Samuel and Susan McGlathery. Their child is Susan G. Kuykendall.



LEMUEL KERNS, of Springfield, mechanic, son of Amos and Sevilla Kerns, was born 1858; married, 1887, to Laura P., daughter of Mr. and Mrs. C. T. Banister, of Massachusetts; children, Myrtle V., Dicker, Edith M., and Virgil E.

T. P. KEYS, son of J. W. and A. M. Keys, of German ancestry, was born at Keyser, June 18, 1874.

HENRY OLAY KUYKENDALL, a former resident of Hampshire, and at present vice-president of the Vicksburg Bank, at Vicksburg, Mississippi, was born near Ridgeville, in the present county of Mineral, in 1833; son of Nathaniel and Sally (née Abernathy) Kuykendall; ancestry, Scotch and Irish; married, 1868, to Letitia Kate, daughter of Alexander H. and Sarah C. Arthur, of Vicksburg, Mississippi; children, Sallie, born November 15, 1869, died July 16, 1870; and Carrie Belle.

ASHBY KAVE, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of Isaac and Eliza Kave, of Irish ancestry, was born at Luray, Virginia, 1868; married, 1889, to Ida L., daughter of William and Sarah Maphis; children, Ettie, Bertha V., Annie F., and Isaac G.

JOSEPH A. KELLEY, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of Larkin C. and Fannie Kelley, of Irish and German ancestry, was born 1843; married, 1867, to Mary M., daughter of Tobias and Maria Stickley, of Virginia; his daughter's name is Maria R.

WILLIAM KUYKENDALL, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of James and Hannah L. Kuykendall, of German ancestry, was born in Alleghany County, Maryland, 1852; married, 1878, to Hannah P., daughter of James and Maggie Sloan; children, James S., Michael B., Richard S., and William F.

J. I. KELLER, hotel keeper, resident of Romney, son of Thomas A. and Margaret A. Keller, of German and English ancestry, was born near Oakland, Maryland, 1852; married, 1888, to Louisa A., daughter of A. C. and Mary De Witt, of Maryland; children, Mary B. and Margaret I.

EMANUEL LILLER, farmer of Mill Creek district, was born, 1848, of English parentage; son of Henry and Charlotte Liller; married, 1869, to Mary C., daughter of George and Elizabeth Bobo; children, Mary E., Amelia A., Martha A., George T., William, Clara, Joseph, Nora, and Niota.

MISS LENA LEATHERMAN, of Mill Creek, a teacher by profession, was born, 1876, of German and English parentage; daughter of John M. and Amanda J. Leatherman. Miss Leatherman has attended the Shenandoah Normal College three terms, and has taught four terms of school.

GEORGE W. LEATHERMAN, son of John Lewis Leatherman, of English and German descent, was born in Hampshire, 1835. In 1851, when his father died, he decided to seek his fortune in the west; and with pluck and perseverance made the trip to Missouri, travelling till late in the fall through rain and mud. He and his brother took charge of the family in the new country, and endured much sickness and privation. Mr. Leatherman returned to Hampshire to sell the home farm, but failed to sell it. He then made up his mind to buy out the other heirs, which he did, and, having married Mary S. Whip, he settled down to an industrious life, and would have worked on had he been let alone. But he was drafted for the rebel army, and not choosing to fight on that side, he hurried away to Indiana. In 1862 he came back and was not molested. His wife died some time afterwards, leaving him six children. He kept his family together, and in 1877 married Catherine Thrush. His children are Warren W., John W., Zedekiah A., Mary Elizabeth, George S., and Emma Margaret. He is an ordained minister of the German Baptist Church.

SAMUEL H. LARGENT, of Bloomery; farmer; son of Thomas F. and Sarah Largent; French ancestry; born 1842; married, 1868, Lucy A., daughter of Deskin and Ann Wills; children, G. S., Thomas D., Albert H., Nannie M. He owns nine hundred and eighty acres, four hundred improved.

JOHN LARGENT, farmer of Bloomery, son of Joseph and Mary Largent, was born 1826; French parentage; he owns three hundred acres, with interest in other lands.

ALBERT O. LOVETT, farmer of Bloomery, son of Jonathan and Nancy R. Lovett, was born in Frederick County, 1847; married, 1869, Mary S., daughter of Harvey and Esther Park; children, Nettie R. and Harry P. He was married the second time, in 1877, to Annie, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Hiatt Loy; children, Joel G., Hetzel H., Albert Brown. He owns eighteen hundred acres, half improved.

JOHN A. LEWIS, of Bloomery; painter; son of William and Margaret F. Lewis; German ancestry; born 1868; married, 1883, Fannie L., daughter of Eli J. and Margaret E. Nelson; children, Roy A. and Leslie A.

P. W. LOY, farmer of Bloomery, son of Hiatt and Sarah Loy, was born 1857; Irish ancestry; married, 1883, Sarah V., daughter of Jacob and Jane Ziler, of Virginia; children, Roy S., Bessie H., and Clyde. He owns five hundred and twenty-five acres, three hundred improved. He served two terms as president of the board of education.



**SILAS LARGENT**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Samuel and Mary Largent, was born 1829; English ancestry; married, 1858, Sarah E., daughter of Robert M. and Mary Powell; children, Mary E., Henrietta, and David S. In 1864 his wife and three children died within three months. He served three years as a Confederate soldier; was taken prisoner in Martinsburg in 1863.

**GEORGE A. LUPTON**, farmer of Capon, son of Jonathan and Catherine Lupton, was born 1862. He taught nine terms of school; was elected magistrate of Capon district, 1888, and elected commissioner of the court, 1892.

**THOMAS L. LARRICK**, farmer of Capon, son of John and Margaret Larrick, Irish ancestry, was born 1863; married Louisa, daughter of Harmon and Sarah Oates, 1888; owns one hundred and fifteen acres, seventy-five improved.

**LUTHER LINEBURG**, farmer of Capon, son of Louis and Eliza Lineburg, English extraction, was born in Frederick County, 1872; married Elizabeth, daughter of Madison and Martha Elliott; children, Nellie and Ollie.

**T. S. LAFOLLETTE**, farmer of Capon, son of Amos and Rachel Lafollette, French ancestry, was born 1854; married Fannie, daughter of Louis and Emeline Arnold, 1875; children, Delina L. and Lower E. P.

**BENJAMIN S. LARRICK**, farmer of Capon, son of Jacob and Harriet Larrick, German ancestry, was born in Frederick County, 1842; married Elizabeth, daughter of David and Jenima Farmer, of Frederick County, 1866. Their child's name is Smith. Mr. Larrick served four years in the Confederate army. He owns one hundred and eighty-seven acres, seventy-five improved.

**SILAS LAFOLLETTE**, farmer of Capon, son of William and Jane Lafollette, was born of French and Irish parentage, 1820; married Sarah J., daughter of Richard and Hannah Johnson, 1860; children, Richard, Lemou L., William, and Iven S. He was in the Confederate army. He owns two hundred acres, one-half improved.

**PETER LARGENT**, of Gore district, near North River Mills, son of Thomas F. and Sarah Largent, was born 1839; German descent; married, 1863, Eliza J., daughter of Robert and Eva Edwards; children, Sarah E., Mary L., Margaret E. H., Anna L., Robert T., and George E. F.

**T. S. LARGENT**, farmer residing near Slanesville, son of Thomas F. and Sarah Largent, was born of German parentage, 1862; married, 1883, Leona S., daughter of William and Frances Wills; children, Edna M., Flournoy L., Charles B., and Brady W.

**JOHN J. LARGENT**, farmer residing in Gore district, near Paw Paw, son of John and Jennie Largent, was born 1827; Irish parentage; married, 1855, Mary, daughter of George and Sallie Moorehead; children, Anna E., Mary C., Nettie V., R. B., Jeremiah, J. W., and Amanda F.

**HERMAN LEDERER**, farmer of Springfield district, son of John and Johannah Lederer, of German ancestry, was born in Germany, 1864; married, 1889, to Laura V., daughter of Jesse and Rebecca Lewis; children, Jesse L., John M., Elizabeth J., and Virginia B.

**MIDDLETON LEWIS**, farmer, resident of Springfield district, son of Silas and Louisa Lewis, of German ancestry, was born 1833; married, 1856, to Eliza A., daughter of John and Mary Hanners; children, John N., Silas F., Sophia H., Hannah E., Maria C., and Virginia G.

**T. J. LEWIS**, farmer, resident of Springfield, son of Silas and Louisa Lewis, of Irish and German ancestry, was born 1844; married, 1878, to Barbara E., daughter of Pierce and Mary Barns; children, M. C., Estella M., and Thomas G.

**WILLIAM J. LONG**, farmer, resident of Springfield district, son of David and Christina Long, of German and French ancestry, was born 1829; married, 1849, to S. M., daughter of Jacob and Mary Taylor; children, Mary C., Simon, David W., W. F., A. L., Thomas J., John A., and Charles T.

**URIAH LONG**, farmer, resident of Springfield district, son of Isaac and Charity Long, of German ancestry, was born in Maryland, 1865; married, 1893, to Hannah L., daughter of Isaac and Fannie B. Taylor; children, Isaac T., Francis C., and Mary S.

**W. F. LEARY**, of Romney district; miller; son of Benjamin and Virginia Leary; Irish and German ancestry; born in Maryland, 1864; married, 1889, to Victoria, daughter of James and Maggie Shull; children, Otie, George W., and Maggie.

**GEORGE A. LINCH**, farmer of Romney district, son of Charles and Mary Linch, was born in Hardy County; married Caroline, daughter of Alexander and Anna M. Malcom; children, Laura V., George W., John E., William A., and George F.

**B. F. LINTHICUM**, of Romney; stage-driver; son of Joel and Jane H. Linthicum; ancestors, German and Irish; born 1847; married, 1881, to Rebecca, daughter of W. J. and Achsah Poland; children, Charles W., Anna B., and Katie E.



**WILLIAM LOY**, farmer of Romney district, was born 1834; son of Samuel and Leah Loy; German parentage; married, 1863, to Jane P., daughter of W. H. and Mary A. Smith; children, James R., Mary C., Martha L., Bettie R., Cornelius C., Minerva C., Jane P., Georgia M., Daniel M., Sadie M., and Nannie E.

**I. W. LAMBERT**, teacher and farmer residing near Augusta; son of L. W. and Mary Lambert; born in Pendleton County, 1868; married Sarah F., daughter of John W. and Virginia Haines, of Maryland, 1893; children, Charles E. and Ansel C.

**EDGAR J. LOY**, farmer and teacher of Sherman district, son of William and Rebecca Loy, was born of German and Irish parentage, 1868; married Martha R., daughter of James T. and Caroline Ruckman, 1891. He has taught nine terms of school.

**WILLIAM L. LUPTON**, farmer residing near Rio, English ancestry, was born 1845; married Eva A., daughter of Frederick and Sarah Mank; children, Lucinda C., Harriet R., Walter C., Ada A., Robert E., William F., and Clarence F.

**U. L. MILLER**, a farmer of Mill Creek, son of Jacob and Annie Miller, was born near Keyser, 1854, of German ancestry; married, 1893, to Amanda, daughter of S. and Damoris Biser; their child's name is David F. Mrs. Biser has been twice married, her first husband being David Walker, who was born in 1861 and died in 1886; children, Lillie F., Homer A., and Walker.

**GEORGE W. MERITT**, farmer of Mill Creek, son of George and Annie B. Meritt, was born 1862, of German ancestry; married, 1889, to Rosetta, daughter of Joseph and Mary Shoemaker; children, Ethel C. and Georgia L.

**CHARLES J. McGEE**, farmer of Mill Creek, son of Charles and Hannah McGee, of Irish and German ancestry, was born in Pennsylvania, 1843; married, 1865, to Margaret C., daughter of George and Susan Hartman; children, George S., Charles A. Mr. McGee's second wife was Harriet, daughter of John and Molly Fleming.

**CHARLES F. MILLER**, farmer near Purgitsville, son of Charles and Louisa Miller, was born, 1856, in Hardy County, of German ancestry; married, 1877, to Sarah F., daughter of John and Eliza Shoemaker; children, Samantha L. and Lafayette C., who is an adopted child. Mr. Miller owns one hundred and seventy-six acres of land.

**OLIVER MESSIC**, a farmer near Romney, was born in Hampshire County, 1861, of German ancestry; son of Thomas and Rachel Messic; married, 1887, to Tabitha, daughter of Isaac and Hannah Timbrook; children, Garret I. T., Osceola, Hildred, and Mildred.

**E. J. McATEE**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Robert and Drusilla McAtee, was born of Irish parentage, 1854; married, 1877, Charlotte A., daughter of John and Margaret L. Bradfield; children, Hettie M. and Sarah B.

**S. C. McDONALD**, merchant of Gore district, son of Sidnor and Mary J. McDonald, Irish ancestry, was born in Frederick County, 1850. He has been in the mercantile business at Hanging Rocks six years.

**JAMES D. MCCOOL**, farmer of Bloomery, son of John and Cassandra McCool, was born 1823; Scotch and Irish; married, 1852, Emeline C., daughter of Joseph S. and Mary Baker, of Virginia; children, John S., Perry C., Mary C., Elizabeth, Theodore, Thomas, Virginia, Lucy K., Ida, Leslie, and Ora. He owns twelve hundred and fourteen acres, two hundred improved. He belonged to the Hampshire militia under Colonel Alexander Monroe, was in the fight at Hanging Rocks. He was afterwards in the regular Confederate army, in Captain Ginevan's company. He has several times filled the office of justice of peace; was president of the board of education five years; for thirty years was road overseer.

**MARION McDONALD**, farmer of Bloomery, son of J. H. and Mary V. McDonald, was born of Scotch parentage, 1870; married, 1894, Sarah E., daughter of Luther and Elizabeth Bennett. Their child's name is Mary E.

**HUGH McDONALD**, carpenter and farmer of Bloomery, son of Hugh and Elizabeth McDonald, was born in Pennsylvania, 1842; Irish descent; married, 1869, Louisa, daughter of Josiah and Margaret A. Surbaugh; children, Alpheus A., Fannie A., Joseph E., George W., Mary S., and W. M.

**LARKEN G. H. P. MILLER**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Jeremiah and Mary Miller, was born 1854; English ancestry; married, 1881, Mary A., daughter of Nimrod and Susan Day; children, Bessie E. E., John H., Addie, Robert, William, Mamie, Ora, and Larken D.

**J. S. MCCOOL**, farmer of Bloomery, son of J. D. and Emeline McCool, was born 1852; Irish and German ancestry; married, 1877, Louisa M., daughter of Israel and Elizabeth Hardy; children, Gertrude B., Edna I., Herbert A., Robert B., Edith, Emma, and Grayson. He owns six hundred and ninety-eight acres, eighty-six improved.



**JOHN H. MILLER**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Stephen and Anna Miller, was born 1833; English and Scotch ancestry; married, 1868, Elizabeth Miller; children, Ira T., Robert E., Mary F., Annie E., George W., Dora S., John M., Daniel A., Minnie B., Ezra C., Bertha E., Ruth I., F. C., and Allen P. He served twenty-one months in the Union army, in a Pennsylvania regiment. He was severely wounded in the battle of the Wilderness, and was confined to his bed two years, and was a cripple seven years. He receives a pension of twenty-four dollars a month. He owns two hundred and fifty acres, one hundred and seventy-five improved.

**HIRAM L. MASON**, carpenter of Yellow Springs, son of William and Mercy Mason, Irish and English extraction, was born 1855; married Jennie, daughter of Wesley and Mary Frank, 1879; children, Edgar W., Nellie A., Charles W., Arthur L., Ira W., Ashby V., and Nelson W.

**JOHN J. MONROE**, farmer of Capon, son of Dr. James and Margaret Monroe, Scotch ancestry, was born 1833; married Lydia T., daughter of Joseph and Elizabeth Kackley; children, James A., Joseph T., and John J. Mr. Monroe died 1892. He was elected, 1871, as a member of the county court, and was subsequently elected to the legislature, and was sheriff of the county. Mrs. Monroe and her son John J. reside on the home place of four hundred and seventy acres.

**L. T. MORELAND**, farmer of Capon, son of George W. and Sarah Moreland, Irish ancestry, was born 1830; married Mary E., daughter of George and Rebecca Spaid, 1862; children, Lemuel H., Ella B., George W., Rebecca S., John A. O., Mary M., Martha M., and Aramintha A. He served in the Confederate army; owns one hundred and fifteen acres, seventy-five improved.

**WASHINGTON MILLER**, farmer of Gore district, German descent, son of Jacob and Elizabeth Miller, was born in Pennsylvania, 1826; in 1854 married Catherine, daughter of John and Eleanor Fisher, of Maryland; children, Nervi, Ellen, Theodore, Amanda, Mary, Ira, Agnes, Ama, Augusta, and Alberta.

**WILLIAM P. MORELAND**, farmer of Gore district, near Spring Gap, son of Evan and Ellen Moreland, was born 1865; married Caroline, daughter of J. A. and Sarah E. Largent, 1892; children, Lavinia, Wilbert, and Arthur.

**JOSEPH MONTGOMERY**, farmer, residing near Spring Gap, son of James and Priscilla Montgomery, was born, 1863, in Clearfield County, Pennsylvania. He married Lena, daughter of Eli and Margaret Sunderland, of Pennsylvania; children, Bertha M., Willie, Mary E., and Dora E.

**J. M. MILLER**, of Higginsville; merchant; son of Oliver J. and Eveline J. Miller; born in Hardy County, 1868; German ancestry; married Ida, daughter of John P. and Amanda Miller, 1896. Their child's name is Hilda.

**ALBION MORTON**, farmer of Gore district, son of Thomas and Elnira Morton, English ancestry, was born in Parish St. David's, New Brunswick, 1864; married Lala A., daughter of Moses and Helen E. Barrows, of Maine, 1892; children, Levi B., Moses I., Lecta L., Charles I., and George I.

**ALEXANDER W. MONROE**, surveyor, lawyer, and farmer, residing near Barnes's Mill, Gore district, son of Robert and Elizabeth Monroe, Scotch descent, was born, 1817, in Hampshire County; married, 1852, Sarah A., daughter of John and Eleanor French; child, James W. Mr. Monroe was married a second time, in 1866, to Margaret E. Pugh; children, Robert P., Sallie E., Ella G., and Annie H. Alexander Monroe was the oldest colonel, by his commission, in the Virginia militia. He commanded the 114th Regiment, which disbanded in 1862. He fought in the war till the close, and was in command of the rear guard on the retreat from Gettysburg, and his duty was to protect the wagon-train, which was twenty-seven miles long. Further mention of Colonel Monroe will be found in this book.

**F. P. MORELAND**, farmer residing in Gore district, near Hanging Rocks, son of George and Jemima Moreland, was born of English parentage, 1855; married Mary M., daughter of John and Caroline Kline, 1875; children, Sadie J., Harriet A., Marion M., Minnie B., John F., Hettie L., Virginia E., Elsie C., and George E.

**JAMES W. MONTGOMERY**, residing near Spring Gap, Gore district, son of Robert and Sydna Montgomery, was born in Pennsylvania, 1831; Irish and Scotch descent; married Priscilla, daughter of John and Ellen Hockenberry, of Pennsylvania, 1863; children, John, Isabella M., Robert, James, Samuel T., Mary L., Elvira, Margaret, Elizabeth A., and Achey.

**DAVID E. MORELAND**, farmer residing near Spring Gap, Gore district, son of Evan and Eleanor Moreland, was born 1851; married Rachel E., daughter of Kenner and Martha E. Seaton, 1878; children, William W., Cora B., Amy E., Charles E., Benjamin A., Anna M., Victor G., and Joseph C.

**WILLIAM McDONALD**, farmer residing near Higginsville, son of Samuel and Catherine McDonald, English ancestry, was born 1871; married, 1891, Linnie, daughter of Taylor and Cinda Shanboltzer; children, Ethel L. and Bertha P.



**WILLIAM MILLER**, of Gore, son of John B. and Sarah Miller, was born 1845; Irish descent; married, 1868, Sarah B., daughter of Thomas and Rebecca Wills; children, Cora, Anna, Holland, Ettie, Ella, Alma, Willie, and Charles. Mr. Miller has several times been deputy sheriff.

**B. F. MARTIN**, farmer of Gore district, near North River Mills, son of John and Ellen Martin, was born 1843; Irish parentage; married, 1865, Jane, daughter of Stephen and Mary Queen; children, John C., Stephen W., Hettie V., Taylor B., Sallie L., R. S., Cordelia M., and Howard W.

**CORNELIUS MILFORD McCARTY**, contractor and builder, of Romney, was born at Kerna-town, 1846, but subsequently moved with his parents to Winchester. He is a son of Joseph S. McCarty, who was born at White Post, 1815, and who married Miss Mary Sticker, of Winchester, 1835. He moved to Winchester before the Civil War, joined the Confederate army, was captured, and was a prisoner at Fort McHenry. After the war he became mayor of Winchester and justice of the peace. His second wife was Miss Lucinda Bron, of Winchester. He died 1895. C. M. McCarty married Miss Mary C. Brown, of Charlottesville, Virginia, 1869. They had four children, Nannie Gertrude, Bertha Irene, Olar Belle, and Daisy Virginia. Mrs. McCarty was born at Paris, Virginia, 1845. Her father, John W. Brown, was born at Winchester, 1815, and in 1837 married Margaret Manuel, of Prince William County. They both died in 1864. Cornelius McCarty was in the Confederate army, was taken prisoner, and was confined at Fort Delaware at the time his father was a prisoner there. The family is related to many of the oldest families of Virginia. The great-grandfather of the subject of this sketch was named Groff, which is now Grove. He owned large bodies of land in Virginia; and was also owner of the land on which Shepherdstown stands. His descendants entered suit to recover the Shepherdstown land, but were defeated by the plea on the part of the citizens that they had been in undisputed possession the number of years required by statute to perfect a title.

**THOMAS F. MULLEDY**.—In 1795, Thomas F. Mulledy, son of Thomas Mulledy, was born in Romney, Irish by birth and in religion a Catholic. His life is a shining example of what industry and perseverance can do. With no advantages not enjoyed by the average youth of that time in the secluded inland village, he applied himself to books, overcame obstacles, entered Georgetown College, and graduated with honors in 1815. He went to Europe and studied several years in Rome, becoming one of the ripest scholars in Italian literature which this country has produced. He served two years as tutor to the crown prince of Naples; and twice after his return to America was sent by the Catholic Church as ambassador to Rome. In 1829 he was chosen president of Georgetown College, and was connected with that institution nearly all the time till his death, which occurred July 20, 1861.

**SAMUEL MULLEDY**, a brother of Thomas F. Mulledy, was also born in Romney, and he became little less distinguished than his brother. He finished his education in Europe, and was first president of the Holy Cross College at Worcester, Massachusetts. Few men, if any, have gone from Hampshire County who accomplished so much as they as scholars, educators, and ecclesiastics.

**JAMES MONROE**, of Scotch ancestry, settled in Hampshire County near the close of the eighteenth century. He was grandfather of Colonel Alexander Monroe of this county, and R. W. Monroe, of Preston County. He had four brothers, Dr. John Monroe, a Baptist preacher, who resided on North River and died on Capon; George Monroe, who lived in Fairfax County; Alexander Monroe, Baptist preacher, who went to Kentucky; and Robert Monroe, who was born near Slanesville, 1796, and died in Harrison County, 1876.

**W. T. McGRUDER**, farmer of Springfield district, born 1849; children, Fad S., Martha E., Minnie, and Almeda.

**J. R. MARTIN**, a farmer near Higginsville, son of Benjamin and Margaret Martin, was born 1846; Irish ancestry; married, 1879, Sarah, daughter of Jacob and Catherine Shanholtzer; children, H. T., J. B., G. S., J. F., and Margaret O.

**A. W. McCAULEY**, farmer near Three Churches, son of Jacob and Mary McCauley, was born 1844, of Irish ancestry; married, 1867, Priscilla, daughter of David and Jemima Shelley; children, Bessie L., Charles E., and George W. E.

**NERI MILLER**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Washington and Catherine Miller, was born in Pennsylvania, 1857; German and Irish ancestry; married, 1883, Addie S., daughter of Abram and Elizabeth Thomas, of Pennsylvania; children, Anna G., Espy W., Abram W., Catherine E., Chester N., and Rose E.

**JOHN G. MONROE**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Jesse and Eleanor Monroe, was born 1824; ancestry, Scotch and Irish; married, 1853, Mary, daughter of James and Catherine Allen.

**S. T. McGLATHERY**, farmer of Green Spring, son of Allen and Martha McGlathery, was born in 1835, in Pennsylvania; ancestry, Scotch and Irish; married, 1858, Susan V., daughter of Rev. Moses and Sarah Raymond, of Connecticut; children, Martha C., I. R., and Edgar A.



**JASPER N. MARTIN**, of Three Churches, farmer, was born 1849; son of Benjamin and Margaret Martin, of Irish parentage; married, 1878, Sarah, daughter of William and Mary King; children, Stella M. and Luther G.

**B. N. MORELAND**, farmer, Springfield district, son of Bassil and Margery Moreland; born 1842; German descent; married, 1880, Rhoda, daughter of John W. and Mary C. Whitacre, of Virginia; children, Delsie L., Isaac S., William K., Benjamin O., Annie, Lettie C., Hettie V., Joseph H.

**EDWARD W. MCGILL**, farmer of Springfield district; son of Patrick and Mary McGill; of English ancestry; born in Maryland, 1817; married, 1847, Mary E., daughter of Benjamin and Rachel Chiswell, of Maryland; children, E. Franklin, Edward W., Wallace H., Arabella W., Mary H., Kate T., and Ella C.

**WERNER MARTIN**, farmer, son of Christian and Elizabeth Martin, of German ancestry, was born 1834; married, 1868, Miss A. E. Elliott, daughter of James and S. J. Elliott. Mrs. Elliott was a daughter of Peter Lions. They have had six children,—three living, three dead. Mr. Martin came to Hampshire in 1850, and lived at Hartmansville twenty-eight years; then moved to Keyser, where he keeps a hotel.

**JAMES A. MONBOE**, Sheriff of Hampshire County, was born 1864; son of John and Lydia T. Monroe; Scotch and Irish ancestry; married, 1890, to Virginia, daughter of John W. and Mary M. Monroe; children, Mary L. and James W.

**M. A. MILLAR**, farmer of Romney district, son of John D. and Sarah Millar, was born 1872; Scotch ancestry; married, 1893, to Martha E., daughter of John M. and Amanda Peer; children, Sarah A., Scotland, and Edith C.

**CHARLES MATTHEWS**, farmer of Romney district, son of Harry and Lettie Matthews, was born 1841; married, 1861, to Clemmie, daughter of John and Gracia Notes; children, Harry and Matthews.

**DANIEL MATTHEWS**, of Romney district, teamster, was born 1844; son of Harry and Lettie Matthews; married, 1869, to Harriet Jackson; second wife was Drusilla Johnson; children, Mollie, Cora, Roxie, William, Martha E., Sullivan, Garret, Lawson, Floyd, Annie B., and Hoppie.

**FRANKLIN MESSICK**, farmer of Romney district, born of German and Irish parentage, 1851, is a son of Thomas and Rachel Messick; married, 1872, to Belle, daughter of Philip and Emily Hartman; children, Charles W., Emma S., R. Lula, Irene, Rittie V., Lillian O., George F., and Isaac B.

**I. K. MILLS**, farmer of Romney district, son of Evert and Elizabeth Mills, was born of German ancestry, 1863; married, 1888, to Sydna, daughter of William J. and Susau Hartman; children, Annie B., John W., Ettie E., and Effie.

**JOHN D. MILLAR, JR.**, farmer of Romney district, son of John D. and Sarah L. Millar, was born 1860; married, 1883, to Nannie, daughter of Robert and Catherine Sheetz; children, Catherine, Edwin, Nannie, Frederick, and Thomas. "Lot 4" was granted by Lord Fairfax to William Millar, June 15, 1749: by him conveyed by will to his son, Isaac Millar, 1789; by him conveyed to his son, Michael Millar; Michael conveyed it to his son, John Decker Millar. Isaac Millar was president of the county court until his death, and twice declined the office of sheriff.

**F. T. McBRIDE**, of Romney; railroading; son of Joseph and Sarah McBride; born 1854; married, 1879, to Anna, daughter of Washington and Mary S. Fisher, of Pennsylvania; their son's name is Robert.

**J. W. MUNDAY**, of Romney; railroader; son of Patrick and Catherine Munday; Irish parentage; born in Maryland, 1828; married, 1849, to Hester A., daughter of Edward and Eliza Brady, of Maryland; children, Charles F., Ella M., Margaret J., and Anna B.

**WILLIAM H. MALONEY**, by trade a carpenter; at present justice of the peace in Romney; son of Daniel and Caroline Maloney; ancestors, Irish and Scotch; born 1845; married, 1873, to Margaret, daughter of James and Catherine Cool; children, Fannie M., Robert J., W. H., A. M., and D. H. Mr. Maloney belonged to Captain McNeill's company, in the Confederate army, and mention of him will be found in other places in this book. He was severely wounded in a night attack near Moorefield upon a much stronger force of Federals under Colonel Thoburn. September 13, 1863, where the Unionists had five companies taken prisoners. Mr. Maloney was left in Moorefield on account of his wounds, when McNeill withdrew, and he soon fell into the hands of the Federals as a prisoner of war. But not being able to take him away without endangering his life, the Federals left him there, and he subsequently recovered, and took part afterwards in many of the most daring raids known in border history; the most noted of which was the capture of Generals Crook and Kelley in Cumberland, February, 1865, by sixty-four men under Lieutenant McNeill, and carrying them out of the city, which was occupied at the time by about eight thousand Federals. A full account of this may be found elsewhere in the book.



**A. J. MILLER**, farmer of Gore district, son of Stephen and Celia Miller, German ancestry, was born in Morgan County, 1846; married Leah, daughter of David and Mary Hott, 1890; children, W. L., James A., and Sylvester.

**B. F. MILLESON**, farmer of Gore district, son of William and Sarah Milleson, was born 1832; married Lizzie E., daughter of John and Sarah Engle, 1863; children, Sallie B., John W. T., George B., Joseph M., Mary M., Charles C., Samuel H.

**ISRAEL MAPHIS**, farmer near Delray, son of George and Elizabeth Maphis, German ancestry, was born in Shenandoah County, 1850; married Lettie M., daughter of Timothy and Sidna A. Bradford, of Virginia, 1884; children, C. C. S. and S. M.

**JOHN A. McBBIDE**, farmer and teacher of Gore district, son of Robert and Mary McBride, Irish parentage, was born 1855; married Virginia, daughter of E. and Elizabeth Sandy; children, Robert W., Laura B., Charles A., Wendell L., Bessie J., and Martha E.

**HIRAM MICHAEL**, farmer of Gore district, son of Andrew and Elizabeth Michael, German extraction, was born in Morgan County, 1815; married Nancy, daughter of Jacob and Mary Ullery, 1856. Their son's name is G. T. Michael.

**J. J. MARTIN**, farmer of Sherman district, son of Blackney and Lucinda Martin, was born 1843; Scotch, Irish, and Welsh ancestry; married Florence V. Grim, of Kernstown, Virginia, 1867; children, Virginia B., Blackney H., Annie L., Lillie M., Thomas F., M. Lunettie, Copsy V. B., Laura E., and Edgar F.

**VICTOR L. MYERLY**, farmer of Sherman, son of Jesse and Jane Myerly, English and German parentage, was born in Maryland, 1860; married Rena, daughter of J. B. and Martha Everheart, of Clarke County, 1889; children, Eva P. and James R.

**W. B. NESMITH**, of Bloomery; miller by trade; son of John and Rebecca Nesmith; English parentage; born 1856; married, 1880, Mary, daughter of Amos and Anna Cloud; children, George W., Ada L., Icie A., and Lena M.

**JACOB L. NOLAND**, stock dealer, resident of Davis, West Virginia, was born in Hampshire, 1850; son of E. G. and Jennie Noland; German and Irish ancestry; married Fannie R., daughter of Bailey and Elizabeth Catlett, 1872; children, Naomi L., Viola P., and Paul I.

**JAMES P. NEALIS**, teacher of Gore district, residing near Barnes's mill, son of Timothy and Sarah Nealis, Irish descent, born, 1839, in Philadelphia; married Mary D., daughter of Peter and Sedena Miller, 1861; children, John A., James G., Joseph E., Fannie L., Sallie, Christian, Robert M., Lula, Frances I., and Annie.

**ROBERT B. NELSON**, farmer of Gore district, near Augusta, son of Jackson and Caroline Nelson; German descent; born 1861; married Victoria E., daughter of B. M. and Nancy E. Haines, 1885; children, Fannie M., Elmer P., Cora N., Irwin R., and Edith B.

**JAMES A. NEWHOUSE**, blacksmith, resident of Romney, of German ancestry, was born in Ohio. His children are George W. and Joseph H. Newhouse.

**ROBERT D. NOLAND**, farmer of Gore, son of Pierce and Mary Noland, Irish and Scotch ancestry, was born 1831; married Elizabeth J., daughter of Abraham and Sarah Moore, of Kentucky and West Virginia, 1868; children, E. W. and Minnie.

**D. W. OGLESBEE**, merchant of Bloomery, son of Hillery and Sarah Oglesbee, was born of English and Irish ancestry, 1846; married, 1873, Portia J., daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Fenton D. Baker; children, Althea S., Floyd B., Mary, Grace L., Herbert W., and Lillian. Mr. Oglesbee resides at Capon Bridge.

**WILLIAM L. OATES**, farmer of Capon, son of Jacob and Eliza Oates, English parentage, was born 1845; married Mary, daughter of Henry and Catherine Loar; children, James, George, Ella, Jefferson, Edward, Albert, Emma, Ollie, Altha, Maggie, and Gertrude. He was in the Confederate army.

**T. K. OATES**, physician of Capon Bridge, son of Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Oates, was born 1869. He graduated at the Shenandoah Normal School, and afterwards at the Maryland University, and at once entered upon an active practice.

**JOHN OATES**, farmer of Capon, son of Samuel and Mary J. Oates, was born of English ancestry, 1850; married Almira R., daughter of William and Elizabeth Fletcher; children, Albert G., Ella G., and Frederick. He owns one hundred and sixty-four acres, fifty improved. He is president of the board of education.

**JAMES F. OATS**, farmer of Sherman district, son of Jacob and Mary E. Oats, German and English ancestry, was born 1854; married Hannah E., daughter of Isaac and B. A. Saville, 1876; children, Fannie R., Bettie A., Hattie E., Franklin E., Albert W., and G. L. P.



**L. D. PURGIT**, a farmer of Mill Creek, son of William S. and Amelia Purgit, was born 1851; married, 1888, to Susan J., daughter of John and Susan Rogers, of Mineral County; children, Lucy K., Ella K. Mr. Purgit was married twice, his first children being Grace, Olive, and Orin C.

**JOHN W. PARKER**, farmer near Mechanicsburg, son of Abraham and Mary C. Parker, was born 1846; German and English parentage; married, 1872, to Verlenda M., daughter of John and Sarah Lingo, of Cumberland, Maryland; children, Mary L., Ella, Flora W., Walter W., Lillian, Edward A., Elizabeth, Edith, Fannie, Harry A., and Charles O.

**ALBERT B. PUGH**, of Mill Creek, farmer and teacher, was born near Keyser, 1875, son of John W. and Caroline Pugh; ancestry, English.

**WILLIAM S. PURGIT**, who for forty years was postmaster, and justice of the peace for an equal time, was born near Purgitsville, 1832; son of Mr. and Mrs. William Purgit, of German and Irish ancestry; married, 1852, to Amanda H., daughter of Jacob and Margaret Statton; children, Isaac, William, Martha K., Nashville S., Edgar, and Minnie.

**SAMUEL B. PARKER**, farmer of Mill Creek, son of John A. and Elizabeth Parker, was born 1842; German ancestry; married, 1877, to Mary C., daughter of Nicholas and Martha J. Biser, of Beaver Run; children, Albert L., Lucy B., Clara C., William, Isaac C., Florence D., Andrew J., Samuel H., and George S. A.

**JAMES PARKER**, farmer near Mechanicsville, son of John and Ellen Parker, was born near where he now resides, in 1815; ancestry, English and German; married, 1865, to Eliza J., daughter of Ephraim and Eliza Herriott; children, Alford B., James M., Ephraim H., John P., J., and George O. F.

**C. F. POLAND**, son of W. J. and Achsah Poland, German descent, was born 1855; married, 1887, Mary J., daughter of Bernard and Caroline Fetzer, of Martinsburg, West Virginia. Mr. Poland graduated, 1877, at Shepherd College Normal School; taught six terms in Hampshire; established the *Hampshire Review*, owned and edited it till it was sold to Cornwell Brothers, 1890; took theological course at Randolph-Macon College; was persuaded by Rev. George E. Tyler to purchase the *Episcopal Methodist South*, the organ of the Baltimore Conference, M. E. Church South, 1892. The next year it was sold to Rev. J. J. Lafferty, by which Mr. Poland lost all he had, and more. He edited the *South Branch Intelligencer* from 1893 to 1897, when it was consolidated with the *Review*. Mr. Poland then moved to Baltimore to take a position with a publishing company.

**GARRETT W. PARSONS**, farmer one mile below Romney, son of Isaac and Susan Parsons, was born 1852; Irish ancestry; married, 1878, Mary A., daughter of John and Anna Covell, of Virginia and Rhode Island; children, John C., Garrett W., Annita E., Charles H., Mamie A., and William P. Mr. Parsons owns the old Parsons's homestead, one of the oldest and most valuable in Hampshire. It has been in the family about one hundred and fifty years. The house was built in 1774, and is still occupied and in good condition.

**M. F. POLING**, now of Hardy County, was born in Hampshire, 1841, of German descent. He is related on his mother's side to the Mills family, she being a daughter of Rev. William Mills, an Englishman. Mr. Poling was manager of the Hampshire almshouse fourteen years, and was justice of the peace eight years. He was in the Confederate army, Company K., Thirteenth Virginia Infantry, and took part in nearly all the battles in which Stonewall Jackson was engaged, he being in Jackson's corps. He was captured at Fredericksburg, 1863; was taken to Fort Delaware; exchanged; captured again; again in Fort Delaware, where he remained till just before Lee's surrender. Mr. Poling was married to Miss E. H. Sticklef, 1878. Their son's name is M. F. Poling.

**JOHN H. PILES** was born in Hampshire County, August 27, 1832; and was married to Jane, daughter of William and Rebecca Roberson, January 17, 1856. He removed with his family from Hampshire to St. Clair County, Missouri, in September, 1870, and is a farmer by occupation. His children are, William T., Rebecca S., Mary E., Richard J., Martha E., Robert L., Dora A., Ida M., John Russell, and Estella H. The subject of this sketch was captain of the Grassy Lick militia, and afterwards of a company in Imboden's brigade, as is more fully detailed in another chapter of this book. Captain Piles was severely wounded at the battle of Malvern Hill, July 1, 1862, which caused him to be sent to the hospital at Richmond.

**OFFUTT PEACEMAKER**, merchant of Bloomery district, son of Adam and Elizabeth C. Peacemaker, was born in Virginia, 1867; German ancestry; married, 1892, Minnie, daughter of J. W. and Jane Bageant, of Virginia. Their child's name is Raymond C. He owns thirty acres, twenty-eight miles from Romney.

**LEMUEL PUGH**, farmer of Bloomery, residing thirty miles from Romney; son of David and Esther Pugh; Scotch and English ancestry; born 1841; married, 1864, Mary E., daughter of James C. and Melinda L. Nixon; children, James C., Florence B., Minnie V., Martha A., David W., Sarah E., Mary E., and Gertrude E. He owns fifty acres of land, twenty improved.

**ROBERT D. POWELL**, of Bloomery, miller, son of Robert M. and Mary Powell, was born 1835; Scotch and Irish descent; married, 1870, Lizzie, daughter of George W. and Sallie



Gore; children, Bertha M., Mary L., A. Laura, Nettie G., William R., Bessie H., Robert T., Charles T., Andra L., and Fannie C. Mr. Powell resides at Forks of Capon, where he owns two hundred and seventy-three acres, one hundred improved. He has held the office of justice of the peace, county commissioner, and sheriff.

IVEN L. PUGH, of Bloomery, farmer, son of Mr. and Mrs. M. Pugh, was born of Scotch and English ancestry, 1874; married, 1891, Louisa L., daughter of Elijah and Eliza Fletcher, of Virginia. He owns one hundred and ninety-two acres, seventy-five improved, thirty miles from Romney.

WILLIAM H. POWELL, farmer of Bloomery, son of R. M. and Mary Powell, was born 1835; Scotch and Irish ancestry; married, 1870, Mary E., daughter of Lemuel and Margaret Pugh. He owns one hundred and sixty acres, fifty improved. He was in the Confederate army, captain of Company A., Thirty-third Virginia Infantry, and was wounded at Gettysburg. He took part in the battles of Winchester, around Richmond, Fredericksburg, Wilderness, and others. He has been twice sheriff of Hampshire County.

CAPTAIN DAVID PUGH, tanner and farmer, Capon district, son of Marshall and Margaret Pugh, was born at Capon Bridge, 1807; married Mary W. Keniford, 1830. He was married a second time, 1835, to Jane, daughter of Abraham Creswell; children, Preston, John, Mary C., Maria L., Almira V., Martha J. He was married to Elizabeth A., daughter of Hugh and Annie Garbin, 1851; children, Florence M., David C., Annie L. Mr. Pugh was a member of the convention which signed the ordinance of secession, 1861. He was many years member of the county court. In 1876 he was elected to the State senate. He had been in the Virginia legislature in 1841. He was personally acquainted with Andrew Jackson, and was a visitor at the White House while Jackson was president.

JOHN V. POWELL, farmer of Capon, son of Robert D. and Catherine M. Powell, German ancestry, was born 1857; married Mary J., daughter of Christopher and Sarah J. Slonaker, 1878; children, Bertha O. L. and Myrtle V. He owns two hundred and eighty-three acres, one hundred and fifty under cultivation.

MARION PUGH, farmer of Capon, son of Robert J. and Jane Pugh, Welsh and Irish descent, was born 1844. He was in the Confederate army. The home place, on which he and his sister Emeline reside, has been in the family many years, the deed dating back to Lord Fairfax, 1760.

S. J. PENNINGTON, farmer of Capon, son of Enoch and Phoebe Pennington, English ancestry, was born 1836; married Margaret Michael, 1868; children, Louisa J., John O., Nina B. He was in the Confederate army. He died 1891.

ALBERT D. PUGH, teamster of Bloomery, son of George and Vortie Pugh, English parentage, was born 1871; married Maggie, daughter of Joseph and Mary Eaton; children, Joseph F., George L., and Lucille M.

C. M. PULTZ, teacher and farmer, residing in Gore district, near Barnes's mill, son of Jacob and Rebecca Pultz, was born 1856; German descent; married Dora E., daughter of John A. and Eliza Pownell, 1893; children, Ada M. and Marshall.

JAMES H. POWELL, farmer of Gore, son of Henry and Precious Powell, was born of English parentage, 1813; in 1836 he married Delilah, daughter of Alexander and Annie Patterson; children, Margaret A., Henry A., Benjamin J., John B., Edward B., Jane A., Albert P., and Alverda. Mr. Powell was married a second time, 1866, to Sarah A. Saville; child, Bessie.

JAMES W. POWNELL, farmer of Gore, son of Isaac J. and Rebecca Pownell, was born 1858; in 1880 he married Amanda B., daughter of J. A. and Eliza A. Pownell; children, Blanche, Nettie M., Bessie P., George W., Holland L., and James W.

THE PARKER FAMILY.—The history of Hampshire County is interwoven with that of the Parker family and the many connections and interrelations. The founder of the family in America was Robert Parker, who came from England. He had four sons and two daughters. His sons were Peter, Robert, Solomon, and Nat; his daughters, Katie and Susan. In the Revolutionary War Nat was a Tory, and disappeared. It was never ascertained what became of him, as he was never again heard of. But the other children married, and their descendants are now found not only in Hampshire County, but in the distant States. The family of each of these children will be traced separately.

Peter Parker married Miss Dimmitt, and they had several daughters and one son, Solomon. The daughters married and went west, where their descendants are respectable and numerous. Solomon Parker married Miss Taylor, and they had six children, four sons and two daughters. The sons were Peter, Taylor, Isaac, and Joseph; the daughters, Elizabeth and Mary Ellen. Peter married Miss Boyce, of Texas; Taylor married Miss Swisher; Isaac was twice married, first to Miss Thompson, and then to Lydia Cain. Their daughter is Mrs. Jane Thompson, of Three Churches. Joseph married Ellen Grace; Elizabeth married Enoch Rinehart; Mary Ellen married Mr. Guthrie.

Robert Parker married Sarah Campbell. They had three sons, Clausen, John, and Richard, and two daughters, Hannah and Katie. Clausen married Rebecca Taylor and settled on the



Ohio River; John went to Ohio; Richard went to Kentucky; Katie married Mr. McCracken and went west; Hannah married John Brady, and they had one son, James, and six daughters, Sallie, Katherine, Mary, Harriet, Hannah, and Rebecca. James never married; Sallie married Mr. Middleton and afterwards Mr. Neville; Katherine married Mr. Wheeler; Mary married Rev. C. Parkison; Harriet married Joseph Taylor; Hannah married Alonzo Fowler; Rebecca married Dr. John Daily.

Solomon Parker married Miss Wright, and had four sons, Isaac, Robert, John, and William, and four daughters, Harriet, Lucinda, Mary, and Sarah Katherine. Isaac married Miss King and went west; John died young; William married three times, first Miss Higgins, then two Miss Shepherds. He went to Missouri. Robert married Katherine Mytinger; Harriet married Mr. Stump; Lucinda died unmarried; Mary married Mr. Higgins; Sarah Katherine married Mr. Hoffman. Robert had four sons, John Hite, Daniel, William, and Edgar, and three daughters, Lizzie, Roberta, and Jennie. John Hite married Miss Grace and went to Missouri; Daniel married Lizzie Rees and lives at Frankfort, Mineral County; Lizzie married Rev. L. Butt; Roberta married Dr. Hodgson, of Cumberland, Maryland; William never married; Jennie never married; Edgar married Effie Singhass.

Katie Parker married Mr. Johnson, and their descendants are numerous on Patterson Creek. Their children were Okey, Joshua, William, Susan, Charity, and Polly. Okey married Miss Turley; Joshua married Miss Sheetz; William married Miss Taylor; Susan married Mr. Hollenbeck; Charity also married a Hollenbeck; Polly married Mr. Carscaddon.

Susan Parker married Captain William Forman, an account of whose death while fighting Indians near Wheeling, in September, 1777, is given elsewhere in this book. They had eleven children. Isaac was bitten by a mad dog and died; Grace married Mr. Casey. Through her the Parkers and Parsons are related. Elizabeth married Mr. Taylor, and they had nine children, three sons, Simon, William, and Joseph; six daughters, Mary, Katie, Susan, Rebecca, Betty, and Sarah. Simon married Miss Fleming and went to Kentucky; William married Miss Glaze; Joseph married Miss Corcoran and went to the Ohio River; Mary married Mr. Parker; Katie married Mr. Lawson; Susan married William French; Rebecca married Mr. Parker; Betty married Mr. Johnson; Sarah married Mr. Mytinger.

**E. S. PARKER**, merchant, resident of Springfield, son of Robert W. and Catherine E. Parker, of German and English ancestry, was born 1867; married, 1894, to Effie R., daughter of C. W. and Virginia R. Singhass; child, Virginia C.

**JOHN C. PARRAN**, of Green Spring, by occupation a farmer, was born of Scotch and German ancestry, near Moorefield, 1837. His parents, N. D. and Adeline Parran. He married, 1872, Addie L., daughter of Isaac and Susan Baker. Their daughter, Kate Beulah.

**ISAAC PARSONS**, farmer, son of Isaac and Susan Parsons, of English ancestry, was born 1839; married to Emma, daughter of Julius and Mary Waddle; children, Mary K., J. Clifford, Isaac B., Maude W., Susan B., and Alice H. He was a resident of Springfield district.

**J. W. PULTZ**, son of Jacob and Rebecca Pultz, was born, 1849, near Slanesville; by occupation a clerk; German ancestry; married, 1871, Mary Florence, daughter of John B. and Rebecca A. Fenten; children, Will Ed, H. Leslie, Frank E., W. Fenten, and Beri K. H. Leslie Pultz was drowned 1889. Mr. Pultz removed to Wheeling, 1883.

**R. W. PARKER**, farmer, resident of Springfield district, son of Solomon and Sarah Parker, of English ancestry, was born 1815; married, 1842, to Catherine, daughter of Daniel and Sarah Mytinger; children, John H., Daniel M., Virginia W., Roberta S., Edgar S., Sarah E., and William C.

**W. H. PATTERSON**, paper finisher, Springfield district, son of Robert Patterson, of Irish ancestry, was married, 1887, to Florence, daughter of Jonathan and Caroline Bryan; children, Edgar, Benjamin, Jeremiah, Flora, and Grover.

**J. S. POLAND**, farmer, resident of Springfield district, son of James and Rachel Roland, of English ancestry, was born 1842; married, 1866, to Mary S., daughter of Isaac and Nancy J. Huines; children, Elizabeth J., Charles D., James W., Lula E., and George I.

**AMOS LUTHER PUGH**. The subject of this sketch is a son of the late Lemuel Pugh. His father died in 1877. His mother, Elizabeth A., whose maiden name was Twiford, is still living. He is the oldest of a family of eleven children, eight of whom are still living. Two half sisters, older than himself, are Mary Ellen, the wife of Captain William H. Powell, one of the foremost and most influential citizens of the county, who has figured prominently in its public and political affairs for a number of years, and Virginia A., the wife of Taylor Urton, a prosperous farmer and stock raiser and dealer in Cass County, Missouri. The names of his full brothers and sisters, stated in the order of their respective ages, are: Arthur Benton, Margaret Catherine, Dora Charity, Lemuel Willie, Roberta Agnes, Sarah Elizabeth, and Martha Bell.

Amos L. Pugh was born January 23, 1853. His father on the paternal side was of Welsh descent and his mother on the same side was of Scotch descent. He was married April 12, 1877, to Miss Alma Garvin, daughter of the late David J. and Margaret Garvin, of High View, Hampshire County. To them was born one son, Robert Beall Pugh, September 7, 1879. Mr. Pugh's only educational advantages were such as were afforded by the public schools of the county prior to 1873, and a three months' term, in 1874, in Eastman's Business College at Poughkeepsie, New York, in which time he graduated in the business course. In 1873—then twenty years of age—he was appointed a deputy for William H. Powell, sheriff of the county, which office he co-



tinued to hold under the succeeding sheriffs until October, 1888, when he resigned, having agreed to become a candidate for re-election to the State legislature, and some doubts having arisen as to his eligibility to that office, while holding the office of deputy sheriff. He was elected in 1886 to represent the county in the House of Delegates in the State legislature, and was re-elected in 1888, serving two sessions during each term. He was appointed a member of the board of regents of the West Virginia Schools for the Deaf and Blind, by Governor E. W. Wilson, June 4, 1887, and was reappointed to the same position by Governor A. B. Flemming, April 17, 1890, serving as a member of the Board for six years. He was a member of the Executive Committee of the Board, and a member of the Building Committee, appointed to take charge of the erection of the new buildings which were built in 1892. At the general election held November, 1893, he was elected Sheriff of Hampshire County, and served in that office for the term beginning the 1st of January following.

**ARTHUR BENTON PUGH**, brother of Amos Pugh, is a lawyer. He studied law at the University of Virginia, and first located for the practice of his profession, at Petersburg, Grant County, in 1877, when he formed a partnership with Wilbur F. Dyre. The firm for a number of years had a large practice in the counties of Grant, Hardy, and Pendleton. He was married in 1886 to Miss Louisa Anderson, the only daughter of David C. Anderson, of Franklin, Pendleton County. In 1888 he was appointed to and accepted the position of assistant attorney in the Department of the Interior at Washington, D. C. This position he filled for nearly three years, when he resigned to enter again upon the practice of his profession at Salem and Roanoke, Virginia. He soon obtained a large and lucrative practice in this new field; taking his place at once in the front ranks of the bar, and in a few years was regarded as one of the leading lawyers in that section of the State.

The mountainous climate did not agree with his wife, however, and, owing to her falling health, he determined to leave Salem. He had been offered his old position at Washington several times, and had each time declined it. In 1896 the offer came again, without solicitation, and in view of the necessity of a speedy change of climate on account of his wife, he, after some hesitation, accepted it. The year 1896 brought him severe afflictions. His little boy, Benton Anderson, a bright and handsome boy of eight and a half years, died in Salem, in February, and he had the still greater misfortune to lose his wife by death the November following. Two little girls, Mary Anderson, aged seven years, and Louise Benton, born in August 1896, are his only living children.

**LEMUEL WILLIE PUGH**, son of Lemuel and Elizabeth A. Pugh, after receiving such education as could be acquired in the public schools of the day, attended and became a graduate of Eastman's Business College, New York, in 1888. He served four years as deputy sheriff of the county under William H. Powell, during his second term in that office, from 1885 to 1888 inclusive. In 1891 he went west as far as Missouri, and in a short time found employment with the George D. Hope Lumber Company, of Kansas City. He rapidly rose from the position of clerk in one of the many branch establishments of the company located in different sections of Missouri and Kansas to principal accountant and bookkeeper at the main office in Kansas City, and then to general manager of the company's affairs, which position he has held for several years.

Of the five younger sisters, whose names are given above, two are married. Margaret C. is the wife of George Taylor, one of the most successful and prosperous farmers and stock raisers of the county; and Dora C. is the wife of C. F. Rinker, M.D., of Upperville, Fauquier County, Virginia, who is practising successfully his profession in that county. The three unmarried sisters are among the most successful teachers in the schools of the county, and have taught also successfully in the public and graded schools of Missouri.

**THOMAS G. POWNALL**, son of A. H. and Charlotte (*née* Hannas) Pownall, was born in Sherman district, 1858, of Scotch, Irish, and German descent. His ancestors lived in New Jersey. From the age of six to sixteen he attended public and private schools about four months each year. At seventeen, at Rio, he taught his first school. He taught ten terms in county schools, and in 1886 was principal of Romney graded school, and was elected in 1888 to a similar position at Paw Paw. He was a member of the county board of examiners for teachers in 1884 and 1885. In 1889 he was appointed by A. B. White, deputy collector of internal revenue in Hampshire, Hardy, Mineral, Grant, Morgan, Berkeley, Jefferson, and Pendleton Counties, and served till 1893. In February, 1894, he was appointed assistant general superintendent for the United States Leather Company, and in October of the same year was promoted to general superintendent. On August 22, 1894, he was married to Miss Virginia G. Frye, of Keyser. Mr. Pownall resides at Cumberland, Maryland, in order the better to look after the extensive business of the leather company; but he holds his citizenship at Romney, West Virginia. He has one child, two years old. While teaching school, and while in the revenue service, Mr. Pownall dealt in live stock, timber, tan, bark, and real estate. He attended the Fairmont Normal School in 1880; and in 1887 graduated in the scientific course of the North-Western University at Ada, Ohio.

In politics Mr. Pownall is a Republican, and became interested in the welfare of his party as early as 1875. From 1886 to 1894 he was chairman of the Hampshire County Republican Executive Committee, and for the same period was a member of the Second Congressional District Committee. He resigned both in 1894 because of press of business. In 1888 he was nominated by his party for the State Senate in the twelfth district, and made a thorough and aggressive speaking canvass against Hon. S. L. Flournoy, Democrat, of Romney, who was elected by a reduced majority. Mr. Pownall is not orthodox in religion; does not belong to any church, and does not believe in the doctrine of eternal punishment.

**JOHN S. PANCAKE**, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of Joseph C. and Ellen D. Pancake, of Irish and German ancestry, was born 1846; married, 1884, to Margaret, daughter of



Robert W. and Sarah E. Gilkeson; children, Emily V., William C., and Elizabeth G. Mr. Pancake has an interest in an extensive peach farm near Romney, and also devotes his time to the raising of and dealing in stock. He was in the Confederate army.

J. W. POLING, deputy sheriff, resident of Romney, son of Joseph and Elizabeth A. Poling, of German, Welsh, and Irish ancestry, was born 1836; married, 1858, to Mary J., daughter of George N. and Elizabeth Hauser; children, Lawrence, Henry E., Annie B., Harry H., Dora S., M. Bessie, and George W.

V. M. POLING, Clerk of Circuit Court, resident of Romney, son of Joseph and Elizabeth Poling, of German, Welsh, and Irish ancestry, was born 1844; married, 1865, to Sallie, daughter of I. N. and Elizabeth Helskell, of Virginia; children, Addie E., Claud V., Edgar N., Virgil, Eva V., W. H. Beulah, Robert L., and Martha. Further mention of Mr. Poling will be made elsewhere in this book.

JOSEPH S. PANCAKE, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of Joseph C. and Ellen Pancake, was born 1856; married, 1897, to Sallie, daughter of John J. and Bettie Inskip.

JOSEPH C. PANCAKE, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of Isaac and Sallie Pancake, of Irish, Welsh, and German ancestry, was born 1814; married, 1843, to Ellen D., daughter of Silas and Maria Reese; children, Sarah M., Isaac H. C., John S., Mary B., William C., Andrew F., Joseph S., and Sydna M.

A. V. PARKER, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of James and Eliza J. Parker, of English and Irish ancestry, was born 1869; married, 1895, to Susan, daughter of David and Nannie Fox; child, Nancy J.

FREDERICK PANCAKE, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of A. J. and Ann Jemima Pancake, of German ancestry, was born 1860; married, 1886, to Sarah W., daughter of J. D. and Sarah L. Miller. His child is John A. Pancake.

I. H. C. PANCAKE, merchant, resident of Romney, son of Joseph C. and Ellen D. Pancake, of German, Scotch, and Irish ancestry, was born 1845; married, 1874, to Fannie, daughter of Lemuel and Isabella Campbell, of Virginia; children, Ellen C., E. Blair, L. Campbell, Joseph C., and Fannie G.

JEREMIAH POLAND, farmer, resident of Romney district, of English ancestry, was born in Hardy County, 1855; married, 1878, to Harriet E., daughter of Daniel and Martha Lewis; children, Margaret E., Anna L., Lorenzo G., Ora B., Hannah S., Granvil R., Jeremiah C., and Ada P.

JOHN W. POWELSON, farmer of Sherman district, son of Paul and Caroline Powelson, German and Irish ancestry, was born 1844; married Nancy J., daughter of John R. and Catherine Powelson; children, Alvin J., Elizabeth G., and Lester A.

JOSEPH F. PEPPER, farmer near Pleasant Dale, son of Jacob and Frances Pepper, German ancestry, was born 1848; married Lucy M., daughter of A. T. and Margaret J. Pugh; children, Margaret F., Ida M., and Charles A.

JAMES H. PEER, farmer of Gore, son of Elias and Rachel Peer, German descent, was born in Shenandoah County, 1850; married Rebecca, daughter of Abraham and Sarah Lambert, 1874; children, William, Salemma, Daisey, Samuel, Cleveland, Elias H., Minnie R., George, Benjamin, and Grayson J.

JACOB D. PARRILL, farmer of Sherman district, son of Joseph and Isabella Parrill, German ancestry, was born in Hardy County, 1825; married Lydia, daughter of George and Daritha Dellinger, of Virginia, 1848; children, Mary A., Margaret F., Amanda V., George W., Edward A. Mr. Parrill married Clarinda, daughter of Henry and Elizabeth Reynolds, 1863; children, Laura I., Joseph H., Charles A.

JOSEPH B. PILES, farmer of Sherman district, son of John H. and Martha E. Piles, was born 1860; married Matilda E., daughter of Daniel and Mary Simmons, 1883; children, Lumama E., William A., Anna V. B., Martha F. J., Floyd H., and Frona.

D. G. POLAND, farmer and mechanic of Sherman district, son of J. C. and Martha E. Poland, Irish ancestry, was born 1860; married Mary P. F., daughter of Armstead and Mary Alverson; children, Dale V. D., Bonn A., and Roy A. He has held the office of justice of the peace both by appointment and election.

A. B. POWNALL, farmer and teacher of Sherman, son of A. H. and Charlotte Pownall, Irish and Scotch ancestry, was born in Hampshire County, 1873.

WILLIAM PEER, of English ancestry, son of James H. and Rebecca Peer, is a farmer of Gore; born 1876; married Lizzie, daughter of Robert and Nancy Riser, 1893; children, Minor L. and Nina R.









DAVID W. SWISHER.

MRS. DAVID W. SWISHER.



**JOSEPH A. PUGH**, farmer near Pleasant Dale, son of John N. and Sarah Pugh, English ancestry, was born 1842; married Martha V., daughter of Jacob J. and Frances E. Pepper, 1872; children, Virginia M., Laura F., John A., Finley T., Ada M., and Thomas W. Mr. Pugh was in the Confederate army and was wounded at Cold Harbor.

**C. J. RACY**, a teacher residing three miles south of Purgitsville, was born in Hardy County, 1871; son of Morgan and Rebecca Racy; married, 1895, to Cora H., daughter of Warner and Hannah High. Their child's name is Violet I.

**JAMES R. RILEY**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Thomas and Margaret Riley, was born 1845; Irish ancestry; married, 1877, Mary E., daughter of Iven and Sarah Kidwell. Their child's name is Alonzo D. He served one month in the Confederate army.

**ROBERT F. RILEY**, residing three miles east of Capon Bridge, son of William T. and Susan A. Riley, was born 1859; Irish descent; married, 1889, Dorothy M., daughter of Louis D. and Elizabeth Schmilbe; children, Tracy L., Wilson C., and Mary P. He owns one hundred and five acres, one hundred improved. He attended the Ohio Normal University two terms, taught twenty years, sixteen of them on a number one certificate. He was two years a member of the board of examiners, and one year a member of the school-book board.

**F. B. RILEY**, farmer and mail contractor of Bloomery, son of Thomas and Margaret Riley, was born of Irish descent, 1852; married, 1891, Martha A., daughter of Robert and Mary A. Hook. Their child's name is Thurman R. Mr. Riley owns one hundred and thirty-eight acres, forty improved.

**JACOB C. RUDOLPH**, farmer, residing on Mutton Run, Capon district, son of George and Catherine A. Rudolph, German and Scotch extraction, was born 1837; married Cora, daughter of Adam and Catherine Bowers, of Berkeley County, 1864; children, Annie, Walter, Cora, Harry, Ada, Eliza, and Mary. He was four years in the Confederate army.

**JOHN N. RANNELLS**, farmer, residing near Higginsville, son of John and Kissiah Rannella, German descent, was born 1836; married Hannah E., daughter of Silas and Harriet Mileson, 1858; children, Augusta V., Charles L., Samuel F., W. Edward, Anale V., Annie B., and Katie.

**S. A. ROWZEE**, farmer, residing near Higginsville, son of Reuben and Sarah A. Rowzee, was born in Frederick County, 1835; French and Irish ancestry; married Ann J., daughter of Peter and Jane Reilly, of Ireland, 1860; children, Mary E., John W., Samuel A., Sarah J., Catherine A., Cyrus H., Isaac N., and David W.

**A. S. RHODES**, farmer of Green Spring, son of Andrew M. and Christina Rhodes, was born in Ohio, 1849, of German descent; married, 1889, Mary A., daughter of Leonard W. and Elizabeth Huff, of Maryland; children, Annie L., John S., Edward F., and Lucy M.

**M. H. RUSSELL**, of Okonoko; farmer; son of Mahlon and Mary A. Russell; born, 1830, in Loudoun County; English and Irish ancestry; married, 1873, Arabella W., daughter of Edward W. and Mary E. McGill, of Maryland; children, M. Edith, Henry M., Edna H., Virginia M., Edward M., Julia B., and Ann Louisa.

**L. A. RIZER**, a miller, residing in Keyser, son of Matthias and Nancy Rizer, was born at Springfield, 1845; French and German ancestry; married to Kate Hyde, daughter of John J. Hyde; five children.

**BENJAMIN REYNOLDS**, farmer of Romney district, son of James and Elizabeth A. Reynolds, was born on Lost River, 1866; married, 1891, to Mary S., daughter of Cornelius and Catherine Blackburn; children, Clarence P. and Leafy M.

**CHARLES N. ROBERSON**, farmer and trader, Sherman district, son of Captain Amos and Catherine Roberson, German descent, was born 1873. He has filled the office of constable.

**A. M. RUCKMAN**, farmer of Sherman district, son of J. T. and Caroline Ruckman, English ancestry, was born 1860; married Alverda, daughter of B. M. and Phoebe Wolford, 1885; children, Ira C., Herman G., and Floyd M.

**DAVID WARNER SWISHER** was born in Augusta County, Virginia, April 29, 1822. He is of Swiss-German descent. About the year 1750, four brothers named Schweiber set out from Switzerland for America to try their fortunes in that far-away land. They are known to have reached America, but from that period the history of three of the brothers is lost. It is thought that one settled near Winchester, while two of the others went northward into Pennsylvania, and their descendants afterwards migrated into what are now the counties of Marion, Monongalia, and Harrison. It will be noticed that the name was spelled and pronounced essentially differently at that time from what it is now. John Schweiber, the grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was born in 1730. He came to America in company with his brothers as before mentioned. He became an Indian trader and merchant. He made extensive trips into the interior of the State, returning to Philadelphia heavily freighted with valuable furs. These trips were made about once in six weeks, and the value of the merchandise brought back varied from two hundred to seven hundred dollars, as is shown by receipts given at that time. The oldest of these receipts preserved is dated at Philadelphia, July 24, 1767, and is for thirty-nine pounds two shillings and ninepence. It seems his trading in Philadelphia was largely with two persons named Daniel and William Wister, as their names are attached to many of the receipts. In these receipts the spelling of the name varies, sometimes being Schweiber, Sweltzer, or Switzer, and once it is spelled Schweighlger. In no instance does the name Swisher appear. Some time during John



Schweiber's stay in the vicinity of Philadelphia, he married Anna Warner. He soon afterwards moved to McGaheysville, Rockingham County, Virginia, where he engaged in merchandising. Later, moved to Augusta County, Virginia, where he died in 1802, and was buried on what is known as the Spring Hill Farm. This progenitor of the family in America left a large family of children. These were John, Jacob, Henry, Samuel, Daniel, George, Nancy, Elizabeth, and Mary. Of these Nancy married a man named Pence, Elizabeth married a Fauber, while Mary married Philip Thurman, of Illinois.

John Switzer or Swisher, as the name had come to be called, the father of David Warner Swisher, was married in 1811 to Catherine Trout. To them were born thirteen children; Mary, Anna, Elizabeth, John, Sarah, Jacob, Margaret, David, George, Henry, Samuel, Rebecca, and William. Of these Mary married John Kolner, Anna married Joseph Spore, Elizabeth married William Henderson, Sarah married Jacob Swisher, Margaret married Stuart Bennett, and Rebecca married Taylor Parker.

Upon the death of his first wife, John Swisher married Mary Grow, and two children, Daniel and James Swisher, were born to them. The descendants of the Swisher family are now scattered to almost every State of the Union, and in nearly every instance their habits of industry and perseverance have won for them the respect of their fellows and an honorable place in society.

The subject of this sketch, David Warner Swisher, was born a farmer's son, and has followed farming for his life's work. He received such education as the common schools of his time afforded. This was, of course, meagre, but his excellent business foresight and judgment have served him well for any lack of school-training. About the year 1838 he, with his father, moved from Augusta County, Virginia, to what is now Preston County, West Virginia, but he remained there only a short time, until he moved to Hampshire County, where he bought land near Higginsville in 1841. David W. Swisher married Miss Katharine Bonniel in February, 1846. Miss Bonniel was a daughter of Dr. Arnold Bonniel, of St. George, West Virginia. She had been carefully instructed by her father and in schools of those early days, besides having attended an Academy at Pruntytown for several terms. She had thus acquired what was for those days a polished education, and began teaching school soon after leaving the Academy. She came to Hampshire in 1845 and took up a school near Higginsville. While here she met Mr. Swisher, and they were married the following year. Soon after their marriage the young couple took up their abode on the lower Levels, at which place they still live. Mr. Swisher has always been closely connected with the thought and progress of his neighborhood. When the Free School system was inaugurated it had his hearty sympathy, although he was strongly Southern in feeling, and many of his neighbors ridiculed the new educational system, branding it as a "Yankee" institution. He was a member of the first board of education in his district under the new system, and had as his associates "Jackey" Thompson, Joseph Parker, and Zeller Chadwick. Since then he has many times been trustee of the Levels School, and has always watched the progress of education with satisfaction.

As a farmer he may be taken as a model, as his beautiful farm wrought out of the wilderness well attests. As a business man, few persons have a clearer insight into conditions than he. As a citizen he commands the respect of all who know him for his honesty, integrity, and industry. In politics Mr. Swisher is a Democrat. His church connection is with the Methodist Episcopal South. His children are Silas Newton, Anzalettie, Addie, John Arnold, Mary Isabel, David, Edward, Franklin, and Howard.

H. C. SWISHER, son of John and Catherine Swisher, was born at Tinkling Spring, Augusta County, Virginia, January 28, 1826. He is of Swiss-German descent. He came to Hampshire County in 1842, and is at present living at Levels Cross Roads in Springfield district. He was married March 25, 1847, to Elizabeth E., daughter of Samuel C. and Virginia Fauber, of Augusta County, Virginia. His children are Mary E., Samuel S., Jane A., Robert L., and Charles K. Mr. Swisher is a farmer by occupation. He owns land on the Levels and near Higginsville. His son Charles K. Swisher is associated with his father in farming and dealing in stock. C. K. Swisher is one of the most progressive young men of his neighbourhood, and recognized as the leader of his political party in the northeastern part of the county. Both father and son are Democrats.

SAMUEL SWISHER, son of John Swisher, was born in Augusta County, Virginia, March 23, 1827. In 1842 he removed with his father to Hampshire County, and is at present a resident of Gore district. He is a farmer by occupation, but has followed merchandising a good portion of his life. He was married, January 18, 1848, to Leah C., daughter of Philip and Rebecca Fahs; children, Rebecca E., Middle F., James H., Philip M., Mattie C., and Taylor P. He was married a second time to Miss McBride, and the children of this union are Nettie R., Robert W., Myrtle V., Minnie L., Samuel M., and Wildy B.

S. N. SWISHER, son of D. W. and M. K. Swisher, was born in Hampshire County, March 26, 1848. He taught school during the winter of 1868-69, and for ten consecutive winters following. During the year 1871 he made an extended trip to the west, visiting the States of Illinois, Iowa, Indiana, Missouri, and Kansas. He removed to Tucker County, West Virginia, in 1873, where he has since resided. He has held the offices of president of the board of education, county commissioner, road commissioner, and assessor in his adopted county. He was married, October 7, 1875, to Mary S., daughter of Jesse and Catherine Parsons, of Tucker County. His children are Minnie B., who teaches school, Scott N., a student at the West Virginia University, and Glenn T.

JOHN A. H. SWISHER, son of D. W. and M. K. Swisher, was born in Hampshire County, September 4, 1857. For some years he taught school in his native and adjoining counties. He attended the Fairmont State Normal School in 1879 and 1880. At present he is a fruit-grower, and resides in Tucker County. He married Ella C., daughter of Edward W. and Mary E. McGill, October 17, 1883; children, Wallace, Nellie, Belle, Lee, and Virgil.









MRS. MARY ABI SPAID.

ARTHUR R. M. SPAID.



**EDWARD D. SWISHER**, farmer of Springfield district, son of David W. and Mary K. Swisher, was born 1865; ancestry, English and German; married, 1886, Agnes J., daughter of Washington and Catherine Miller, of Pennsylvania; children, Hallie B., Grace E., Clyde E., Edward D., Ray M., Mary K., and William B.

**JOHN A. STICKLEY**, of Mill Creek; farmer; son of Tobias and Maria Stickley; German and Scotch ancestry; born near Romney, 1838; married, 1865, to Grace A., daughter of Joseph and Sarah A. Taylor; children, Tobias T., Rufus W., Joseph R., John R. Mr. Stickley was a member of Company F, Thirty-third Virginia Infantry, the "Stonewall Brigade." He was severely wounded in the first battle of Bull Run. He now owns and resides upon the old Joseph Taylor farm of two hundred and twenty-five acres.

**CYRUS O. STRIEBY**, an attorney-at-law of Davis, West Virginia, son of Henry J. and Rachel Strieby, was born at Williamsport, Pennsylvania, 1866, of American ancestry; married, 1896, to Miss Addie Adams, daughter of John J. and Angelica Adams, of St. George, West Virginia. Mr. Strieby graduated, 1889, from the Susquehanna University, and in December of the same year was admitted to practise law in the courts of West Virginia.

**THE SPAID FAMILY**.—According to the statement of Joseph Spaid, the oldest one of the family now living, George Nicholas Spaid was the first person of that name to settle in Hampshire County. He came from Germany in 1774, but from what part of that country is not known. He settled on Capon River, not far from Hoak's Mills, where he tilled the virgin soil. He married a Miss Kale, of Capon. To them were born nine children. Elias died when eleven years old. In the early part of the century George Nicholas Spaid, after having reared his family, moved to Will's Creek, Ohio. His son Michael married Margaret Cutloaf, and moved to Will's Creek also. William, Mary, and Nancy married in Ohio. Elizabeth, Christina, John, and Frederick remained in Hampshire. Elizabeth became the wife of Henry Secrest, and Christina the wife of James Anderson.

**JOHN SPAID**, eldest son of George Nicholas Spaid, was born August 19, 1783, and died March 3, 1862. He was a farmer. He married Hannah Anderson, December 19, 1806. To them were born thirteen children: Mahalah, Enos, Amos, Hiram, Joseph, Margaret, Mary, Rachel, Michael, Nancy, Christina, Melinda, and Elizabeth. Mahalah was born September 17, 1806, and married William Arnold, January 3, 1826. Margaret was born November 23, 1814, and died April 15, 1846, having been married to John Richards, February 16, 1834. Mary and Rachel were twins, born June 4, 1817. Mary was united in marriage to William Gardner, August 27, 1835, and died July 12, 1836. Rachel was married to Amos Lafolette, August 31, 1841, and is still living. Nancy was born February 1, 1822. She was married to Cyrus Groves, November 23, 1843, and died May 24, 1855. Christina was born July 24, 1824, and was married to Joseph Secrest, December 17, 1846. Melinda was born June 16, 1826, and was united in marriage to Meredith Capper, February 4, 1847. The Cappers live in Winchester, Virginia. Elizabeth was born May 26, 1828, and became the wife of Silas Lafolette, February 10, 1848, and died February 21, 1859.

**ENOS SPAID**, the oldest son of John Spaid, was a carpenter by trade, and was born January 30, 1808. On February 15, 1829, he married Elizabeth Brunner. She lived but a short time, and he married Rosanna Stifre, May 10, 1830. They became the parents of eleven children, two of whom live in this county,—viz., Emeline and Minerva. Emeline was born February 27, 1831, and was married to Lewis, son of Mary and Archibald Arnold, March 11, 1852. Hannah Minerva was born October 4, 1839. She became the wife of James F., son of Joseph and Anna Kelso, March 12, 1860. At the beginning of the Civil War Enos Spaid moved to Dayton, Ohio, his sympathies being with the North. Francis M. and John H. are dead. The other children, Elisha, James E., Jeremiah, Isaac N., Asberine, Alsinda, and Alonzo P., live about Dayton and Hartford, Ohio.

**AMOS SPAID**, second son of John Spaid, was a farmer, born September 22, 1809. Maria, daughter of Abraham Hackley, became his wife February 9, 1832. To them were born the following children: John J., Margaret, Emily, Flavius, and Sarah. All married except Sarah, who died at the age of eighteen. Margaret became the wife of John, son of Felix and Rachel Good. Emily married Elkanah, son of Amos and Rachel Lafolette. They are both dead.

**JOHN J. SPAID**, shoemaker by trade, is the oldest son of Amos Spaid, and was born December 28, 1832. He married Margaret, daughter of Felix and Rachel Good, September 1, 1857. Their first children were twins, born January 15, 1859. Both were boys, Lorenzo and Uriah by name. They died young. Their two boys, James William and Lemuel J., were born June 12, 1860, and September 7, 1870, respectively. Lemuel is a successful teacher. James married Laura E. Fox, daughter of J. J. Updike, of Browntown, Virginia, January 2, 1883. They had two children, John W. H., born January 10, 1884, and Annie E. E., born July 2, 1889.

**FLAVIUS J. SPAID**, farmer by occupation, and second son of Amos Spaid, was born May 20, 1846. He married Mary, daughter of James and Elizabeth Wilson, November 28, 1867. The following are their children, with date of birth: Sarah E., born April 19, 1868; Amos J., September 11, 1869; Asbury C., October 21, 1871; Jeremiah J., May 7, 1873; Maria E., June 23, 1875; May M., October 20, 1877; Clarisa S., December 5, 1880; John Arthur, August 19, 1883. Asbury died October 5, 1872, and Sarah, September 4, 1894. Sarah was married to Lemon, son of Amos and Elizabeth Brill, March 2, 1887. Amos J. Spaid was married to Laura, daughter of John and Margaret Slonaker, January 19, 1893. They have two children, Alfie G., born September 8, 1894,



and Daisy N., born September 2, 1896. Amos J. is a carpenter by trade. Maria E. became the wife of Aljourn, son of Amos and Elizabeth Brill, November 11, 1896.

**HIRAM SPAID**, third son of John Spaid, was a farmer, and was born April 6, 1814, and died November 12, 1876. His marriage to Jemima, daughter of William and Elizabeth Lafollette, occurred April 29, 1832. To them were born fourteen children, whose names and dates of birth are given below: Levi was born March 22, 1833; Margaret J., January 6, 1835; Elizabeth, November 14, 1836; Rebecca, January 15, 1839; John W., November 7, 1840; Frederick M., October 23, 1842; Silas J., February 1, 1845; Annie M., March 2, 1847; Hannah C., July 17, 1849; Sarah F., November 10, 1851; Christina A., April 6, 1854; Regina S., February 18, 1857; Tilberry M., June 19, 1860; George A., July 21, 1863. Of these the following died without marriage: Silas J., died January, 1856; George, February 3, 1876; Sarah, October 7, 1876; Rebecca, December 15, 1895. Elizabeth was married to John, son of Bartholomew and Nellie Lafollette, March 4, 1856. Margaret was united in marriage, April 30, 1856, to William, son of Jacob and Catherine Cline. Annie became the wife of Paul, son of Samuel and Mary Brill, December 13, 1867. Hannah was married, December 11, 1874, to George, son of Samuel and Maria Davis. Christina became the wife of Perry, son of Jacob and Emily Swisher, January 11, 1877. Regina was married to Henry, son of Spencer and Sarah Gray, December 28, 1893.

**LEVI SPAID**, the oldest son of Hiram Spaid, was a farmer. He married Margaret, daughter of Jacob and Catherine Cline, February 14, 1858. To them were born three children, Jacob F., November 25, 1858; William L., June 8, 1860; Jemima C., February 4, 1862. In 1861 Levi entered the Confederate army. He belonged to Captain Herrell's company, Thirty-third Regiment, Stonewall Jackson's brigade. He died of fever at Richmond, April, 1863. His son William died November 24, 1864. His widow died March 11, 1895.

**JACOB SPAID**, farmer by occupation, married Lydia A., daughter of Amos and Elizabeth Brill, January 11, 1894. Arthur W., their son, was born May 11, 1896.

**JOHN W. SPAID**, second son of Hiram Spaid, is a shoemaker by trade. He married Margaret, daughter of Michael and Eleanor Brill, March 2, 1865. Their children, with dates of birth, are as follows: Arthur Rusmiselle Miller was born July 27, 1866; Luther Lore, October 20, 1868; Elia May, June 17, 1870; Martha Evalona, July 12, 1875; William Pohe, July 23, 1878; Nellie Love, May 28, 1881. Luther died May 27, 1877, and William, April 16, 1885. Elia M. was married to Carter G., son of Joseph and Elizabeth Kelso, March 19, 1891. He died October 30, 1891, and his widow married Lemon H., son of Amos and Elizabeth Brill, March 24, 1896. Martha E. was united in marriage with Samuel, son of Henry and Laura Fox, October 17, 1895.

**ARTHUR R. M. SPAID**, the only son of John W. Spaid, is a teacher by profession. He attended the district school until he was in his twentieth year. In the spring of 1886 he entered Professor Taylor's school at Lacey Spring, Virginia, where he remained three months. The same summer he attended Professor Boglebaugh's Normal at Broadway, Virginia, for a short time; took the teacher's examination, secured a certificate and a school—Loan Oak—where he taught his first school. He engaged for a second year; but at the invitation of a cousin he went to Washington, Ohio; and having decided to enter Washington College, he resigned his position in Virginia. The first year he supported himself by acting as assistant librarian of the college, also as librarian of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union library in the town. He kept "bachelor's hall," living on two or three dollars per month. The following year he supported himself by acting as sexton of the Christian Church. In 1890 he became principal of the Twin Township high school at Bourneville, Ohio. In order to economize, he and E. M. Parrett, teacher of the village school, kept "bachelors' hall." In 1891 he again entered college; but the illness and death of his brother-in-law took him back to Bourneville. He completed the term of school which his brother-in-law had left unfinished. At the close of the term he returned to college and completed his course in 1893, receiving the degree of A.B. He was awarded the Haverford fellowship, worth five hundred dollars, and entitling him to a year of post-graduate work in Haverford College. In 1894 he received the degree of A.M. The same year he was elected principal of the Alexis I. Du Pont School of Wilmington, Delaware; a position he still holds. He at once placed himself in the front rank of the educational workers of Delaware, and received the commendation of the press and the educators for his advanced ideas. He is a believer in public schools, and he argues that no aim is too high for the American youth who has ambition for better things. His own life-work is an example of what industry can accomplish under circumstances by no means the most favorable. He has demonstrated that it is no more difficult for a talented man to become a leader than to follow others. The sum and substance of it all is well-directed work.

Mr. Spaid was united in marriage to Miss Mary Abi, daughter of Mary B. and Benjamin Farquhar, of Wilmington, Ohio, September 30, 1897. Mrs. Spaid was born April 11, 1872. In June, 1894, she graduated from Wilmington College. After having spent a year in a kindergarten training class in Columbus, Ohio, she became the kindergartner in the Alexis I. Du Pont School at Wilmington, Delaware.

**FREDERICK M. SPAID**, the third son of Hiram Spaid, is a farmer. He married Catherine, daughter of John and Cinderella Brill, December 13, 1866. To them have been born the following children: Edward T., born October 31, 1867; Frances H., October 10, 1869; John W., (October 23, 1871; Tilberry F., November 30, 1877; Margaret A. B., April 14, 1880; Cora J., June 13, 1884. Frederick Spaid volunteered his services to the Confederacy in 1861, and served through the war,



a member of Captain Lovett's company, E, Twenty-third Virginia Regiment. He was in nine battles, and received two bullet-holes through his clothes, one passing through his hat. Frances H. became the wife of Walter, son of John and Eliza Brill, November 14, 1894.

JOHN W SPAID, a farmer, son of Frederick Spaid, married Almira, daughter of William and Mary Ridgway, May 26, 1896. Their daughter, Maud B., was born March 19, 1897.

TILBERRY M. SPAID, the youngest living son of Hiram Spaid, was married to Lydia, daughter of Isaac and Jane Pennington, October 1, 1885. Their son Frank Clayton was born September 11, 1887. Mr. Spaid keeps a general store, and in May, 1897, entered upon the duties of constable of Capon district.

JOSEPH SPAID, fourth son of John Spaid, farmer by occupation, was born December 7, 1812. When a baby he crawled out of the cradle into the fire and burned the toes off both feet. However, that has not kept him from doing much hard work. He is the oldest Spaid living. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Leatherman, November 24, 1836. They became the parents of four children. John W. was born October 18, 1838; Hannah C., June 17, 1842; Nicholas L., August 15, 1846; Charles F., January 1, 1853.

JOHN W. SPAID, oldest son of Joseph Spaid, went west in 1860. He lives at Heyworth, Illinois, and is the father of ten children. Hannah became the wife of Jules G. Pennington, but died 1862.

NICHOLAS L. SPAID, a farmer, second son of Joseph Spaid, married Angeline, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth Anderson, March 26, 1873. The following are their children, with dates of birth: Evan W., June 30, 1874; Angus R., August 21, 1875; Branson B., January 2, 1877; Elvie C., June 1, 1879; Ora C., June 20, 1880; Nicholas R., November 30, 1881; Bertha L., September 3, 1883; Charles C., October 18, 1885; Ada E., November 28, 1887; Daniel B., June 13, 1890; Ida S., September 20, 1893. Evan W. died November 3, 1874. Angus R. Spaid is a teacher by profession.

CHARLES F. SPAID, carpenter, youngest son of Joseph Spaid, married Sarah, daughter of Jacob and Eliza Good, December 13, 1877. Their children are Lillie B., born October 2, 1878; John R., March 6, 1880; Margaret E., March 13, 1885; Joseph C., December 7, 1886; Jacob W., October 10, 1892; Florence L., May 25, 1895.

MICHAEL SPAID, farmer, the fifth son of John Spaid, was born July 17, 1819. He married Mary E., daughter of Jacob and Catherine Cline, August 22, 1849. He died January 18, 1868. The first child born to them, James C., June 27, 1850, died April 2, 1851. The following are living: Miranda I., born April 7, 1852; Ellen C., July 26, 1853; Sarah J., July 24, 1855; Aljourn R., November 24, 1857; Matthias William, May 24, 1860; Mary M., February 11, 1865. Aljourn lives at Lee Summit, Missouri. Mary became the wife of Atwell Alverson, January, 1897. They live in Texas.

The second branch of the Spaid family sprang from Frederick Spaid, brother to John Spaid. He was born December 3, 1785. He was married to his first wife, Margaret McVicar, May 5, 1808. Their children were as follows: Elizabeth, born March 22, 1809; Nancy, September 24, 1810; George, February 12, 1812; Margaret, February 16, 1816; Mary, September 17, 1820; Priscena, December 4, 1824. Elizabeth became the wife of Philip, son of Philip and Elizabeth Cline, February 27, 1827. Nancy never married. Margaret united herself in marriage with David Garvin, September 20, 1832. Mary died young, November 18, 1823. Priscena became the wife of David Moreland.

GEORGE SPAID, the only son of Frederick Spaid, was a farmer by occupation, although he was magistrate of Capon district for many years. He married Rebecca, daughter of William and Eleanor Moreland, August 25, 1836. He died March 13, 1879. His wife died August 13, 1878. There were six children: Margaret, born July 10, 1837; Mary, November 10, 1838; Rebecca, March 21, 1840; Lemuel, March 14, 1842; Fannie, February 25, 1844; Eliza, August 24, 1850. Margaret became the wife of Evan P. Ward, son of Simeon and Sarah Ward, April 12, 1854. Mrs. E. P. Ward's second husband was William Hall, son of William and Rachel Hall, whom she married in March, 1873. Mary was married to Levin, son of George and Mary Moreland, February 5, 1862. Rebecca married Isalah, son of Robert and Mary Hook, June 21, 1863. Lemuel Spaid married Miranda, daughter of Michael and Elizabeth Spaid, December 22, 1880. They live at Odessa, Missouri, and have a large family. Fannie married Roberts Chamberlain, December 23, 1868. Eliza became the wife of John, son of Samuel and Maria Davis, December 23, 1868. Frederick Spaid married his second wife, Priscilla Capper, May 22, 1832. Their children were Harriet and Marjary. Harriet became the wife of Elias Arnold. She was born November 19, 1833. Marjary, born October 28, 1834, became the wife of Flavius Sine, and is still living.

PHILIP SHELLY, son of Daniel and Catherine Shelly (*mée* Fauver), was born in Augusta County, 1831; German, Scotch, and Irish descent. In 1854 he married Hannah, daughter of Jacob and Margaret Shank; children, William and Luther. Mr. Shelly married a second time, 1877, to Susan, daughter of John and Carolina Hott; children, John, Theodore, Homer, and Eltie.

H. W. SHORT, farmer of Bloomery district, son of Joseph C. and Phoebe J. Short, German ancestry, was born 1878. The grandfather of the subject of this sketch was John Short, who was a shoemaker. His family consisted of seven boys and four girls. Joseph C. Short was youngest.



He was born 1857 and died 1894. He was a farmer. He married Phoebe Jane Snyder, daughter of Jacob Snyder, of Wordensville, Hardy County. They had eight children, only two of whom are living, H. W. and Lillian Grace Short. Joseph Snyder's second wife was Isabella J. Bennear. They had one child, now dead. Miss Bennear's father, James Bennear, resides at Elk Garden. He was in the Federal army.

DANIEL SHANHOLTZ, farmer of Bloomery, son of Samuel and Phoebe Shanholtz, was born 1844; German parentage; married, 1869, Rebecca, daughter of Nicholas H. and Maria Harris; children, Minnie, Florence B., Taylor, Joseph E., and Harman R.

THOMAS E. SANTINGERE, farmer of Bloomery, son of John B. and Harriet Santingere, of German and Irish ancestry, was born 1855; married, 1877, Elizabeth, daughter of John and Harriet Allen; children, John W., Edward T., Harvey D., James O., Asa W., Ernest L., Leslie, Maggie H., and Minnie E.

JOSHUA SHANHOLTZ, of Bloomery; carpenter; son of Martin and Elizabeth Shanholtz; German ancestry; born 1853; married, 1878, Mary J., daughter of John and Mary J. Smith; children, Leonora, Alvesta, John, Smith, Sarah, James V., Carl L., Harry, and Ira.

BENJAMIN H. STROTHER, farmer of Bloomery, son of Benjamin and Nancy Strother, German ancestry, was born, 1823, in Virginia; married, 1855, Letitia, daughter of Joseph and Lucinda Sale, of Virginia; children, George W., Dorsey S., Rosetta B., Florence A., John R., and Albert H. Mr. Strother was twice married, the second time, 1873, to Elizabeth M., daughter of Madison and Sarah Paskel; children, Annie E., Walter M., Lily W., Tenna E., and Ada M. Mr. Strother served two years in the Confederate army. He owns three hundred acres, half improved.

A. J. SAGER, farmer of Bloomery, son of James and Mary Sager, was born 1867; German ancestors. He owns two hundred and fifty acres, fifty improved.

SIMON W. SWISHER, farmer of Bloomery, son of John and Priscilla Swisher, was born of German parentage, 1839; married, 1864, Mary E., daughter of John and Julia Hiatt. Their son's name is Edward L. Mr. Swisher was captain of Company G, One Hundred and Fourteenth Virginia militia, until the company disbanded. He then volunteered in the cavalry, and served till the close of the war, surrendering at Winchester. He was one of the few Confederate soldiers never wounded or taken prisoner.

B. W. SHANHOLTZ, farmer of Bloomery, son of James and Harriet Shanholtzer, was born of German parentage, 1850; married, 1872, Amanda E., daughter of Isaac and Matilda Pepper; children, Bertha V., Henry G., Carrie E., Ernest L., Lily M., James C., and John C. His daughter Bertha has taught two terms of school in Hampshire.

A. C. SLONAKER, farmer and miller residing in Bloomery district, son of David and Margaret Slonaker, was born 1855; married, 1874, Elizabeth E., daughter of George and Margaret Hott; children, Irene M., Robert B., Mary C., Dally R. He held the postmastership at Cold Stream twenty-one years; was deputy sheriff eight years. He now owns the mill at Cold Stream, which was built by a man named Largent a hundred years ago. It has changed ownership from Largent to Thomas Yonley, from Yonley to Jonathan Lovett. It was then sold by decree of court, by Commissioner A. P. White, to Deskin Wills, and in 1876 it became the property of its present owner, who operated it on the old process until 1896, when he put in rollers. Mr. Slonaker owns four hundred and one acres, half improved, and has interests in other lands.

WESLEY SLONAKER, wagon-maker and farmer of Capon, son of Christopher and Mary Slonaker, German and Welsh descent, was born 1835; married Louisa L., daughter of John E. and Jane Heatwole, 1882; owns one hundred and seventy-five acres, one hundred improved. He was in the Confederate army.

H. H. SHARFE, printer of Romney, son of John H. and Fannie J., German and English ancestry, was born in Baltimore, 1871; married Ada L., daughter of H. C. Jackson, 1891. Their child's name is Ruth.

C. W. SCHAFFENAKER, blacksmith of Bloomery, son of William Schaffenaker, is of German origin. He has held the offices of school trustee and county assessor.

WILLIAM H. SALE, proprietor of Capon Springs; son of W. P. and N. C. Sale; English ancestry; born 1831, in Rockbridge County; married Sarah J., daughter of Samuel and Mary S. McCorkle, of Rockbridge. Their daughter's name is Sarah J. He was in the Confederate army, a member of the staff of General Fitzhugh Lee. Captain Sale was manager of the Rockbridge Alum Springs sixteen years, beginning 1854. He then became the proprietor of Capon Springs. He is believed to be the oldest spring manager in the United States.

CHARLES W. SCHAFFENAKER, blacksmith of Bloomery, son of C. W. and Catherine Schaffenaker, German ancestry, was born in New Jersey, 1857; married Martha F., daughter of Elias and Harriet F. Arnold, of Frederick County, 1885. He has served as member of the board of education and assessor.



**B. F. SINE**, teacher of Capon district, son of F. J. and M. A. Sine, English ancestry, was born 1865; married Annie R., daughter of B. F. and Julia A. Kerns, of Frederick County, 1891; their child's name is Guy B. He has taught in Stuart Normal College, the Shenandoah Normal College, in the Rock Enon High School, and in a normal school which he established at Capon Bridge.

**GEORGE W. SLONAKER**, farmer of Capon, son of Mr. and Mrs. George H. Slonaker, German ancestry, was born 1843; married Almira, daughter of Hillery and Sarah Oglesbee, 1871; children, James A., Dora E., John W., Charles E., Sarah M., Joshua D., Leatha V., and Carl M. He was a soldier under Stonewall Jackson, and was a prisoner nearly two years.

**GEORGE SAVILLE**, farmer of Gore, son of Oliver and Mary Saville, German descent, was born 1814; married Sarah J., daughter of Moses and Elizabeth Robinson, 1860; children, J. J., J. D., W. T. L., and G. L.

**S. A. SNYDER**, Gore district, railroader, son of Frederick and Lydia Snyder, was born 1872; German and English descent; married Flora E., daughter of James S. and Sarah F. Malcolm, 1892; children, Jessie C. and James L.

**BENJAMIN F. SNYDER**, farmer residing near Okonoko, son of Frederick and Lydia Snyder, German and English ancestry, was born 1861; married Mary E., daughter of Washington and Catherine Miller, 1886; children, Edith M. and Ora L.

**SILAS L. SHANHOLTZER**, farmer residing near Higginsville, son of Silas and Joanna Shanholtzer, was born 1842; German ancestry; married Maria, daughter of James and Catherine Watteon, 1867; children, Mary A., Lorenza E., Catherine G., and Herbert G.

**BENJAMIN J. SHANHOLTZER**, farmer of Gore, son of Joseph and Mary Shanholtzer, was born 1842; German extraction; married Nancy J., daughter of John W. and Elizabeth Daugherty, of Maryland, 1868.

**WILLIAM SHADE**, farmer residing on the Levels, son of Adam and Elizabeth Shade, was born in Frederick County, 1833; married Mrs. J. W. C. Largent, daughter of Josiah and Mary Kaylor, 1895.

**H. J. STRIEBY**, farmer residing near Spring Gap, son of Jonas and Sarah Strieby, Dutch parentage, was born near Williamsport, Pennsylvania, 1835; married Rachel, daughter of Nathan and Catherine Ridge, of Pennsylvania; children, Sadie A., Cyrus O., Emma A., Joseph C., Harry E., and Clara M.

**A. J. SHANHOLTZ**, farmer of Gore district, son of John and Barbara Shanholtz, was born 1844; German parentage; married Sallie M., daughter of Peter and Alcinda Alkire, 1871; children, M. G., Ettie M., Lulu B., Bursie E., Harper A., Vernie O., and Thurman W.

**BENJAMIN W. SMITH**, minister residing near Augusta, son of Jefferson and Ellen Smith, was born of German parentage, 1860; married Martha J., daughter of John and Anna Corbin, 1884; children, Annie C. M. and Mary Ellivildie.

**S. J. STUMP**, farmer of Gore district, son of John and Nancy Stump, was born of German ancestry; he married Rebecca, daughter of John and Rebecca Cuddy; children, Margaret E., Ann R., and Sarah J.

**WILLIAM SMALTZ**, farmer of Gore, near North River Mills, son of Jonas and Barbara Smaltz, was born, 1830, in Germany; married Caroline, daughter of Henry and Wilhelmina Bower, of Germany, 1864; children, Henry W., William L., Emma A., and Ella M.

**JAMES T. SPICER**, farmer residing near Spring Gap, son of Henry and Hannah Spicer, was born 1842; Irish extraction; married Anna B., daughter of James and Anna Nealis, 1877; children, Maggie E., Anna C., Mary E., Clara B., George W., Joseph H., and Rose M.

**SYLVESTER SNYDER**, farmer of Gore district, son of Adam and Barbara Snyder, was born in Pennsylvania, 1855; Irish and German descent; married Mary, daughter of Abraham and Mary Newcomer, 1880; children, Lizzie, Wesley A., and Amos.

**JAMES F. SMITH**, residing near Slanesville; machinist; son of Jefferson and Susanna Smith; German descent; born 1855; married Laura, daughter of W. R. and Martha Kendall, 1880; children, Sardis E., Albert L., Gorda A., Alonzo D., and Herbert F.

**I. J. SAVILLE**, school-teacher residing at Pleasant Dale, son of Oliver and Elizabeth Saville, was born 1863, of French descent; in 1888 he married Oceanna, daughter of Abraham and Margaret Barnes; children, Ira C., Ada P., Essie I., and Blanche.

**J. WILLIAM SMITH**, farmer of Gore district, near Pleasant Dale, son of Jefferson and Polly A. Smith, German descent, was born 1867; married Sarah A. M., daughter of John and Martha Piles; children, W. F., Dailey C., Susan M., and O. G.



**JOHN W. STUMP**, of Gore district, railroader by occupation, son of W. M. and Rebecca Stump, was born of German parentage, 1837; married Rhoda A., daughter of Bailey and Elizabeth Catlett, 1867; children, Lorena M., E. W., and Bessie M. Mr. Stump, in 1876, married Miss Jennie Showalter.

**WILLIAM R. SHANHOLTZER**, farmer of Gore, son of Isaac and Jane Shanholtzer, was born 1849; German ancestry; married Elizabeth C., daughter of James and Jane Henderson, 1870; children, Mary M. J., Sarah E. M., Annie B., Charles J., James B. L., Jacob W. B., Isaac S. E., Estella G. M., and Minnie N. F.

**B. A. SHANHOLTZER**, farmer of Gore, son of Jacob and Catherine Shanholtzer, was born 1851, of German and Irish parentage; married Eliza E., daughter of James H. and Caroline Saville, 1875; children, Hamilton T., Marshall G., Virginia M., James J. C., Sarah B., and George E. Mr. Shanholtzer, in 1894, was married to Miss Ettie Doman.

**EDWARD MAYBERRY SMITH**, formerly of Hampshire, but now connected with the Missouri, Kansas, and Texas Trust Company, of Kansas City, Missouri, was born in Romney, 1858; son of Abraham and Mary Elizabeth Smith; married, June 1, 1893, Elizabeth Reid, daughter of John W. and Elizabeth Waddell, of Lexington, Missouri. Their son's name is Walter Edward. Abraham Smith was killed in the Confederate army, an account of which will be found in this book. Mrs. Smith, with her two sons, Edward M. and Robert E., went to Missouri in 1870, and settled at Lexington. She died at that place four years later.

**B. F. SHANHOLTZER**, school-teacher residing in Springfield district, son of Fabs and Sarah A. Shanholtzer, was born 1871; German ancestry; married, 1893, Mary J., daughter of J. W. and Susan C. Crock; children, Claud E. and Charles L.

**I. N. SAVILLE**, railroading; son of Jerry and Mary Saville, of Springfield district; born in Hardy County, 1863; married, 1884, Martha, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. John Miles; children, Boyd, Cora, Rose, Alice, and Susie.

**JAMES A. SHORT**, shoemaker, Springfield district, son of John and Susan Short, was born 1854; Irish ancestry.

**SAMUEL SMITH**, railroading, resident of Green Spring, was born in Maryland, 1851; son of Jacob and Mary C. Smith; German ancestry; married, 1877, Cynthia, daughter of James and Sophia Crabtree, of Maryland.

**J. O. SAVILLE**, railroading, resident of Springfield district, son of Jacob and Elizabeth Saville, was born 1849; German ancestry; married, 1875, Amanda J., daughter of James and Sophia Crabtree, of Maryland; children, Kirk W., Eva L., Jacob H., J. Samuel, James T., and Ella T. M.

**M. L. SNYDER**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Mr. and Mrs. Frederick Snyder, was born 1858; German ancestry; married, 1881, Ellen, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Washington Miller, of Pennsylvania; children, M. W., W. C., L. M., and Oscar Lee.

**JAMES W. SAVILLE**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Jacob and Elizabeth Saville, was born 1839; English and German ancestry; married, 1864, Miss M. J. Malcolm, daughter of John and Eleanor Malcolm; children, William L., E. B., C. H., G. M., J. T., E. G., E. May, and N. C. Saville.

**WILLIAM S. SUTER**, engineer, resident of Springfield district, was born, 1841, in Pennsylvania; son of George W. and Susanna Suter; Irish and German ancestry; married, 1867, Margaret, daughter of John and Margaret Kagarrice, of Pennsylvania; children, Mary E., Paulina B., Sarah C., Josephine E., David R., William E., Eliza L., Wayne G., Percy E., George E. R., and Elva V.

**BENJAMIN SHANNON**, justice of the peace, Springfield district, son of Andrew and Mary Shannon, was born 1821; Irish ancestry; married, 1842, Hannah C., daughter of Jeremiah and Maria Chadwick, of Kentucky; children, Mary E., J. C., James, William, Anna B., Robert L., Elizabeth, and John.

**C. K. SWISHER**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Henry C. and Elizabeth E. Swisher; German ancestry; born 1869; married, 1895, Annie L., daughter of James A. and Margaret Athey, of Maryland.

**NOAH SHANHOLTZER**, blacksmith of Springfield district, son of Jacob and Catherine Shanholtzer, was born 1845; German ancestry; married, 1873, a daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Bedinger; children, M. L. C., S. E. A., S. R. M., C. V. F., M. A. M., D. R. E., and John W.

**J. W. SNYDER**, farmer of Springfield district, son of Frederick and Lydia A. Snyder, was born 1865; German parentage; married, 1895, Anna B., daughter of Samuel and Elmira Showalter. Their child's name is Lydia E.

**J. W. STARNES**, shoemaker of Springfield district, son of Frederick and Annie Starnes, was born 1844; English ancestry; married, 1867, Matilda J., daughter of Perry and Eliza Ches-



shire; children, Thomas A., Charles F., Wade H., Mary A., and Ellis C. Mr. Starnes was in the Confederate army; was taken prisoner at Frederick, Maryland; spent three months in the hospital, and was released on parole.

G. W. STICKLEY, farmer near Okonoko, son of Thomas and Mary A. Stickley, was born in Virginia, 1852; German ancestry; married, 1874, Nancy E. Kerns; children, Annie E., James E., Emmel I., Thomas B., Gabriel S., and Lottie P.

GEORGE W. SIFORD, Springfield district; miller; son of George and Delila Siford; born in Morgan County, 1863; German ancestry; married, 1881, Fannie, daughter of James and Mary Allison, of Pennsylvania.

C. W. SINGHASS, merchant of Springfield, son of James A. and Mary L. Singhass, of Virginia, was born 1854; English and German ancestry; married, 1872, Jennie, daughter of James and Mary Allison, of Virginia; children, Effie B., Walter F., Nannie P., and Lillian A.

J. W. STEWARD, farmer of Springfield district, of English ancestry, was born 1867; married, 1889, Eliza A., daughter of George and Sardina Steward; children, William N., Benjamin R., and Ethel M.

JACOB R. SEDERS, farmer of Springfield district, son of Thomas Seders, of German ancestry, was married, 1854, to Charlotte A. Kesler, of Kentucky; children, Mary, John J., Sarah, William T., Reuben H., Asberry, Henry C., Clarence F., Robert L., and Ida.

W. A. SHANNON, supervisor on the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad; resident of Springfield district; son of James C. and Elizabeth Shannon; Irish ancestry; born 1861; married, 1884, Fannie, daughter of William and Louisa Parsons. Their son's name is Augustus C. Shannon.

JOSEPH STUMP, of South Branch, railroading, son of Joseph and Elizabeth Stump, was born, 1816, of English ancestry; married, 1847, Nancy, daughter of Peter and Mary Hass.

JAMES SHEETZ, of Romney; merchant; son of Mr. and Mrs. Frederick Sheetz; born 1815; married, 1869, to Myra, daughter of William and Nancy Harper, of Pennsylvania. Their daughter's name was Nancy H.

J. W. SHANK, farmer of Romney district, son of George W. and Catherine A. Shank, was born 1835; German ancestry; married Sarah, daughter of William and Rachel Barrett; children, Charles W. and Della. Mr. Shank has worked twenty years on the north-western pike.

M. I. STARNES, farmer of Romney district, son of Frederick and Annie Starnes, was born 1849; married, 1872, to Sallie S., daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Albright; children, Lewis E., Charles F., Robert C., and Maud E.

WILLIAM B. SMITH, farmer of Romney district, son of George and Leah Smith, was born at Moorefield, 1869; married, 1894, to Edith, daughter of Charles and Sarah Keys; children, Sarah, Charles F., and Myrtle I.

J. R. STICKLEY, farmer of Romney district, son of Tobias and Elizabeth Stickley, was born 1853; German ancestry; married, 1873, to M. B., daughter of Isaac and Sallie Mills; children, Luther D., Tobias W., Otie L., Lloyd E., and Annie E.

A. E. SETTLETON, of Romney; teamster; son of Moses and Eliza Settleton; born 1861; married, 1886, to Sarah, daughter of Joseph and Sarah Jackson; children, Fannie, Clarence, William, Louisa, and Mary.

ALEXANDER SINGLETON, of Romney; teamster; son of Alexander and Emily Singleton; born 1876; married, 1896, to Lula, daughter of Isaac and Bertie Brown; children, Leona and Herbert.

JOHN W. SMITH, farmer residing near Augusta, son of Jacob and J. S. Smith, German and English parentage, was born 1869; married Minnie S., daughter of David and Mary Shaffer; children, Rannie J. and Clarence L.

JOHN O. SAVILLE, of Gore, farmer, son of Abraham and Eliza Saville, French ancestry, born 1838; married Sarah, daughter of Philip and Emily Shanholtzer; children, William T., Della J., Cora H., James C., and Minnie C. Mr. Saville served as a Confederate soldier through the war, most of the time in Captain Genevan's company.

JAMES C. SNAPP, farmer of Gore, son of Joseph and Margaret Snapp, German ancestry, was born in Augusta County, 1813; married Malinda, daughter of Robert and Elizabeth Monroe, 1860; children, Elizabeth and Alexander W. L.

J. LUTHER SHELLEY, teacher of Sherman district, son of Philip and Hannah Shelly, German parentage, was born 1867; married Sarah L., daughter of George and Matilda Roomsburg; children, Luther C., Susan V., and Myrtle.



**JOHN A. SAVILLE**, farmer of Sherman, son of Isaac and Martha Saville, English ancestry was born 1851; married Sallie, daughter of Daniel and Polly Simmons; children, Etna M. Matilda E., Rosa B., and James F.

**P. H. SAVILLE**, farmer of Gore, son of John and Rebecca Saville, German extraction, was born 1860; married Malissa, daughter of George and Elizabeth Mallick, 1892. Ida M. is their child.

**ROBERT H. STROTHER**, carpenter of Sherman district, son of James Strother, Irish extraction, was born in Loudoun County, 1842; married Rachel A., daughter of Spencer and Sarah Gray, 1871; children, Walter Spencer, John Henry, and Joseph Anthony. Mr. Strother died on North River, 1893.

**JOSIAH SIRBAUGH**, carpenter of Bloomery district, son of Jacob and Elizabeth Sirbaugh, was born in Hardy County, 1850; married Harriett A., daughter of John and Elizabeth Harper, Virginia; children, Clarence J. and Lulu V. Sirbaugh.

**A. A. SCHULLER**, miller and merchant, residing near Sedan, son of Ferdinand and Barbara Schuller, German ancestry, was born in Europe, 1851; married Catherine, daughter of Eli and Leah Frye, of Virginia, 1880; children, Mary L., Martha V., Bertha E., Lillian, Annie F., Arthur X., Rosa V., Effie E., and Florence X. Mr. Schuller was a soldier in the German army during the war with France, 1870-71. He came to America in 1873, and to West Virginia in 1876.

**J. H. SAVILLE**, farmer of Sherman district, son of Abraham and Eliza Saville, English descent, was born 1833; married Caroline, daughter of Henry and Eliza Yoste, 1854; children, Amanda F., E. Z., William L., and Rosa L. Mr. Saville was a Confederate soldier two years. He was in the fight at the wire bridge near Springfield.

**GEORGE W. SAVILLE**, farmer near Kirby, son of Peter A. and Mary C. Saville, was born 1872; married Dora B., daughter of Harrison and Catherine Peters, 1894; children, Lee E. and Harrison O. He owns one hundred and fifteen acres, seventy-five improved.

**JOHN W. STEWART**, farmer of Sherman district, son of James and Lucinda Stewart; Scotch ancestry; married Lydia N., daughter of James and Lizzie Haws, 1889.

**ISAAC SAVILLE**, of Pleasant Dale; farmer; son of Abraham and Eliza Saville; English parentage; born 1828; married Martha, daughter of James and Nancy McBride, 1851; children, John, Elizabeth, James B., Drusilla, E. A., Eliza, Mary, and Robert.

**JAMES L. SWISHER**, farmer of Gore, son of Jacob and Sarah Swisher, Swiss and German ancestry, was born 1853; married Annie, daughter of Michael and M. E. Scanlon, 1886; children, Johanna and James. These children own the old Swisher home, which has been in the family sixty years.

**GEORGE TAYLOR**, farmer and stock raiser of Mill Creek district; son of Thomas and Mary Taylor; English ancestry; born 1847; married, 1879, to Margaret C., daughter of L. and Elizabeth Pugh, of Capon Bridge; children, Pauline M., Georgiana, Mary E., Edith P., Katie T., Verdie M.

**WILLIAM TAYLOR**, a tanner and farmer; residence, Mechanicsburg; son of Edward and Margaret Taylor; of Irish ancestry; born, 1819, where he now lives; married, 1844, to Margaret, daughter of John and Ellen Parker; children, Charles W., Sarah F., Ellen H., Mary M., James S., Arminta, Alberta L., and L. Clyde.

**SIMON D. TAYLOR**, of Harrisonville, Missouri, was for many years an influential citizen of Hampshire. When the war began, he espoused the Confederate cause, raised a company, was elected captain, but, before being mustered into the service, he became disgusted with the failure of his men to hold their ground when the enemy appeared in the country, and disbanded the company, and soon afterwards joined the Hampshire Guards. He served in that until the second battle of Bull Run. He was captured, and was exchanged after two months. He then joined Rosser's cavalry. In the second day's battle in the Wilderness he was badly wounded through the arm, throat, and jaw. This rendered him unfit for service until the spring of 1865. He rejoined the command just before the evacuation of Richmond. He was in the rear during Lee's retreat from Richmond, fighting every day. Rosser's brigade did not surrender, but made its way westward. Mr. Taylor, while carrying a despatch, was shot through the hand. He learned that Lee had surrendered, and he knew that further resistance was useless. He made his way to Hampshire, took the oath at Cumberland, and returned to civil life. He subsequently removed to the west, and became the editor of a Populist newspaper. His comrades in arms speak of him as one of the best soldiers in the army.

**K. TAYLOR**, M.D., of Slanesville, son of Benjamin F. and Nancy Taylor, English and Scotch ancestry, was born in Loudoun County, 1840; married Louisa H., daughter of Robert and Margaret Rannels, 1874; children, Nannie M., Robert K., Ora C., E. F., Cleveland H., and Elridge S.

**JAMES W. F. TAYLOR**, farmer residing near Higginsville, son of Joseph I. and Harriet Taylor, was born 1852; German and Welsh descent; married Kessiah F., daughter of Jacob and Sarah Swisher, 1877; children, Adeline E. and James W. F.



**JOHN THOMPSON**, farmer residing near Three Churches, son of John and Emily Thompson, was born 1820; German, Irish, and English parentage; married Mary, daughter of John and Kessiah Rannels, 1843; children, John H. and James W. Mr. Thompson married Miss Mary E. Iser, 1894.

**ABRAM THOMAS**, farmer, resident of Springfield district, son of Andrew and Mary Thomas, of English and German ancestry, was born in Pennsylvania, 1835; married, 1858, to Elizabeth, daughter of Daniel and Susanna Douth, of Pennsylvania; children, Andrew O., Addie S., Omar, David, James W., M. Florence, Susanna, Clement, Daniel I., Emma J., and Ella E.

**W. F. N. TAYLOR**, farmer, resident of Springfield, son of W. F. J. and Elizabeth A. Taylor, of English and German ancestry, was married, 1877, to Susan M., daughter of Newton and E. H. Guthrie, of Pennsylvania; children, Thomas I., Elizabeth B., Susan F., and W. F. N.

**J. W. THOMPSON**, farmer residing near Three Churches, is son of John and Catherine Thompson. His ancestry is Irish. He was born 1851; married, 1873, to Elizabeth J., daughter of Isaac and Jane Parker; children, H. D., Mary J., Charles T., Pearl H., Leonidas V., John W. B., Oscar A., Leora G., and James R.

**JAMES W. TAYLOR**, farmer, resident of Springfield district, son of William and Rebecca Taylor, of German and Irish ancestry, was born 1844; married, 1869, to Emma Click; children, Fannie L., Joseph A., Addie B., John M., Susan B., Albert B., Victoria, and George F.

**W. W. TEETERS**, of Green Spring, a carpenter, son of George and Margaret Teeters, of German and Irish ancestry, was born in Pennsylvania, 1840; married, 1866, to Hannah A., daughter of John A. and Mary Mourrett; children, John T., Hannah C., Joseph H., William L., Mary M., George N., Sarah A., Lorena E., Charles E., and Amanda M.

**JOSEPH T. TAYLOR**, farmer of Romney district, son of William and Rebecca Taylor, was born, 1846, of English and German ancestry; married, 1873, to Catherine, daughter of Isaac and Sarah Mills; children, Dora S., Mary E., William M., John W., and Sallie B.

**ALBERT J. THOMPSON**, teacher in the deaf department of the West Virginia Schools for the Deaf, Dumb, and Blind, at Romney, is the eldest son of Isaac and Mary J. Thompson; born at Blue Sulphur Springs, Greenbrier County, West Virginia, May 13, 1865; married, 1886, Emma F. Hoff, daughter of D. K. and Martha L. Hoff, of Clintonville, Greenbrier County, but formerly of Botetourt County, Virginia; children, Nora E., Elbert, Winnie, Gordon, and Forest E. Mr. Thompson was educated at the common schools and at the summer normals held in the county for the benefit of teachers. He began teaching in the public schools of Greenbrier and continued in that capacity until 1893. At the meeting of the board of regents of the West Virginia Schools for the Deaf and Blind, held June, 1893, he was elected steward of the schools, in which position he continued until September 1, 1897, having been elected teacher in the deaf department of the schools at a meeting of the board of regents held July 14, 1897.

**THOMAS TIMBROOK**, of Romney district; teamster; son of Joseph and Malinda Timbrook; born 1873; married, 1892, to Lydia, daughter of William and Harriet Fout; children, Charles L., George R., Arthur A.

**OLIVER H. TARR**, of Romney; barber; son of Lewis and Sarah A. Tarr; English and Irish ancestry; born, 1866, in Maryland; married, 1893, to Mary S., daughter of Henry M. and Harriet High, and widow of Asa High; children, Fannie G. High and Sarah M. Tarr. Mr. Tarr formerly resided in Baltimore.

**PHILIP TIMBROOK**, farmer of Romney district; son of Joseph and Malinda Timbrook; born 1873; married, 1892, to Margaret, daughter of George W. and Delilah Sherman; children, Joseph H. and Lillia V.

**B. J. THOMPSON**, farmer near Pleasant Dale, son of George and Mary Thompson, was born 1833; Irish and German parentage; married Martha, daughter of Joseph and Mary Shanholtzer, 1858; children, Eva J., Lucy B., M. P. Emily, Sallie V., J. H. Allie, Lorena, and Nevada.

**A. S. VEACH**, farmer and merchant, Mill Creek district, was born in Hardy County, 1853; son of William and Phoebe J. Veach, of Irish and German ancestry; married, 1878, to Christina K., daughter of Warner T. and Hannah High; children, John A., Laura B., Clyde E., and J. C. S. Mr. Veach owns two hundred and ninety-seven acres near Purgitsville.

**J. W. VANDIVER**, farmer residing near Burlington, Mineral County, son of Mr. and Mrs. William Vandiver, was born 1848. His mother's maiden name was Carrington. He married Charlotte, daughter of John S. and Jane Arnold, of Knobly, 1881; children, John Arnold, Edward Goheen, Mary Wright, and Ann.



**CORNELIUS E. VANOSDEL**, farmer of Bloomery, son of Jefferson and Hannah E. Vanosdel, was born of German parentage, 1866; married, 1893, Ruth, daughter of Lemuel P. and Amy L. Hiatt.

**CHARLES H. VANDIVER** was the second son of Archibald Vandiver, who resided on his farm near Burlington, now Mineral County. He was born May 1, 1840, and was reared on the farm, receiving a common school education, completing his school course at the Institute in Romney, under Rev. Joseph Nelson. When the war broke out he enlisted as a private in Captain George F. Sheetz's company, and served until June 26, 1864, then lieutenant commanding the company. On this date his right arm was shot off by a shell in an engagement near Petersburg, Virginia, that disabled him from further active service in the field.

After the war he studied law and was associated with White & Jacobs in the practice at Keyser. In 1870 he embarked in journalism, became the owner of *The Keyser Tribune*, and continued its editor until 1883. It prospered in his hands and became a prominent and influential local Democratic newspaper. In 1883 he was elected sergeant-at-arms in the West Virginia State Senate at Wheeling. Having invested in property in Missouri in 1881, he sold his paper and moved to the latter State on the adjournment of the Legislature. In 1886 he was a resident of Lafayette County, and was nominated by the Democrats of his district, and elected to the Senate over his Republican opponent by three thousand eight hundred majority. In the Senate he was the patron of a bill declaring the Confederate Home of Missouri an eleemosynary institution of the State which became a law. Another bill introduced by him, known as the "Anti-trust Bill" became a law. He made a creditable representative of his district, one of the wealthiest in the State, and old Hampshire has no cause to be ashamed of her son in his adopted State.

In the Confederate army he was wounded three times, the third time losing the right arm. His first was a scalp wound from a minie-ball when the Federals made their first advance on Moorefield. He was shot through the body while leading a charge, dismounted at Culpeper Court-House in October, 1863. He had a horse shot at Kernstown, another at Piedmont, a third at Brandy Station, a fourth at Fairfield, Pennsylvania, and three in battles of the Wilderness in May, 1864. He has been a member of the Presbyterian Church since early youth, and is now a ruling elder in that church at Higginsville, Missouri. He has accumulated by industry and frugality a comfortable estate. He is a bachelor, and is engaged in farming.

**WILLIAM L. VANDEGRIFT**, merchant of Sherman district, son of Thomas and Deborah Vandegrift, was born 1840; married Margaret A., daughter of Isaac and Nancy Haines; children, John I., William H., Bessie J., Ira H., and Ada N. Mr. Vandegrift was twice married; to Mary H. Watson; children, Milton H. and James T.

**JOHN W. WHITACRE**, shoemaker by trade, Gore district, son of Jonas and Mary Whitacre, was born in Loudoun County, 1837; German and English ancestry; married Mary C., daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth Sirbaugh, of Virginia, 1858; children, Maria E., Rhoda A., Jacob W., Dudley, Annie E., Alpheus A., Jonas W., James S., John H., and Ida C.

**JOHN W. WHITE**, merchant, residing at Forks of Capon, Bloomery district, son of Arthur L. and Ellen C. White, was born 1880; Irish ancestry. Mr. White's father was formerly a resident of Hampshire, but removed to Moundsville, West Virginia, where he was appointed an officer in the penitentiary.

**JOHN WILLIAMSON**, merchant of Paw Paw, son of Benjamin and Martha Williamson, was born in Hampshire County, 1843; married Rebecca F., daughter of Robert M. and Mary Powell; children, Ethel C., Lillian C., and Harry B.

**JOHN W. WAGONER**, farmer of Gore district, son of William A. and Malinda Wagoner, German and Irish ancestry, was born in 1844; married Sarah J., daughter of Uriah and Freddie Milsagle, 1877; children, Albert W., Edgar C., Laura A., and Rose I.

**D. W. WOLFORD**, mechanic, residing near Slanesville, son of Jacob and Catherine Wolford, was born of German and Irish ancestry, 1829; married Eliza J., daughter of L. D. and Mary Henderson, 1851; children, Emily C., Alda F., Caroline R. F., Isaiah C., Matilda, Jacob W., Mary F., Hattie E., and Leona C. B.

**JOHN S. WOLF**, farmer of Gore, son of Joseph and Lydia Wolf, German ancestry, was born in York County, Pennsylvania, 1862; married Maggie C., daughter of Isaac and Matilda Pepper, 1881; children, Firman L., Fanule G., Bertie C., and Joseph T.

**W. R. WOLFORD**, carpenter of Pleasant Dale, son of A. M. and Mary E. Wolford, was born of German parentage, in Berkeley County, 1861; married E. M., daughter of B. C. and Margaret Hawse, 1884; children, Charles W., Nannie O., Mary M., and Toy O.

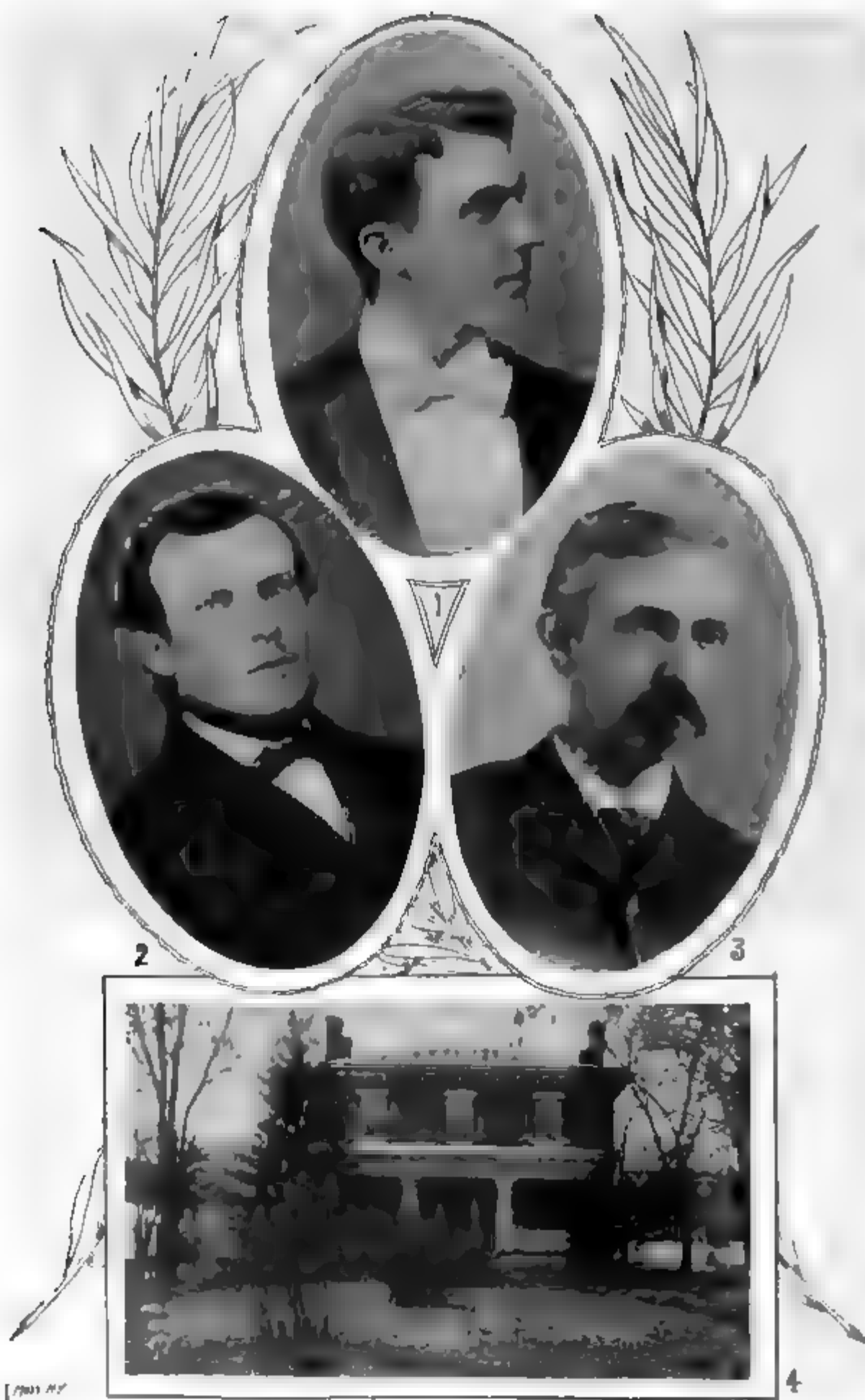
**JOHN W. WOLFORD**, farmer of Gore, son of Jacob and Catherine Wolford, German and Irish descent, was born 1833; married Margaret, daughter of Phillip and Emily Shanholtzer, 1861; children, Benjamin F., Ida F., Sarah C., Emily J., E. C., Lizzie E., John E., and Sydna A.

**DAVID WADDLE**, near the close of the eighteenth century, was born at Capon Springs, in Hampshire County. He inherited from his mother an interest in that celebrated watering-place. Some of the old residents still remember him as a generous, peculiar old man, possessing nearly all the virtues and not a few of the vices of his time. He spent much time and money at the gaming-table, but usually won as much as he lost; and it was his boast that he always played









1. MAJOR JOHN BAKER WHITE.  
 2. ALEXANDER WHITE. 3. HON. S. L. FLOURNOY.  
 4. LAST RESIDENCE OF JOHN B. WHITE; PRESENT RESIDENCE OF JULIUS WADDLE.



with gentlemen; and he was proud of naming Henry Clay, and Senators Pearce and Platt, of Maryland, and other men equally distinguished, as among those who had indulged in gaming with him. At the time Mr. Waddle came into possession of the Capon Spring property, there was only one tavern for the accommodation of guests, and not more than two or three dozen could be entertained in it at a time. It was called the Herron House, and was somewhat rusty, weather-beaten, weather-boarded structure, of which Waddle was head waiter and chief cook, as well as general superintendent. It is recorded that the table which he spread was unsurpassed, and that a guest who once visited him usually returned year after year. Besides the small tavern, there were a number of cabins at which families found comfortable quarters and kept house for themselves. In the latter part of his life he joined the Methodist Church, and forever bade adieu to the gaming-table. He died near the close of the Civil War.

J. T. WOODSON, son of Lindsay and Parmella Woodson, is a farmer near Springfield, of English and Scotch descent; born in Albemarle County, Virginia, 1851; married, 1876, Mary C., daughter of William and Margaret Adams; children, William L., Walter E., and Stella M.

JAMES W. WALKER, farmer near Green Spring, son of William and Adeline Walker, was born 1849; Scotch and Irish ancestry; married, 1875, Sarah F., daughter of George and Mary J. Gettys, of Pennsylvania; children, George W., Louisa E., J. R., Franklin R., and Sarah M.

HENRY S. WINCE, farmer of Springfield district, son of John J. and Mary A. Wince, was born 1858; Irish ancestry; married, 1887, Lucy J., daughter of John M. and Elizabeth A. Wagoner. Their son's name is Charles H. Wince.

N. M. WAGONER, farmer of Springfield district, son of William A. and Malinda Wagoner, was born 1850; German ancestry; married, 1872, Martha J., daughter of Jesse and Elvina Rice, of Maryland; children, Lloyd B., Lucy L., Clara E., Mary J., Missouri A., Walter S., and Norman V.

W. R. WILSON, of Springfield district; merchant; son of Nathan and Mary Wilson; Irish ancestry; born at Piedmont, 1868; married, 1893, Effie, daughter of Samuel and Eliza Bennington, of Maryland; children, William R. and N. I. Wilson.

HOWARD J. WAGONER, attorney-at-law, residing at Davis, West Virginia, son of J. J. and Maria Wagoner, was born near Frankfort, now Mineral County, 1859; German and Scotch ancestry; married, 1888, Miss Lou V., daughter of Charles H. and Margaret A. Sutton, of Hancock, Maryland; children, Carrie May, Howard Sutton, and Karl. Mr. Wagoner taught school eleven years in Hampshire, Mineral, Morgan, and Tucker Counties.

W. F. WIRGMAN, farmer, resident of Romney district, son of O. P. and Mary J. Wirgman, of English ancestry, was born at Hamilton, Virginia, 1852; married, 1881, to Jennie V., daughter of John W. and Julia J. Vandiver; children, Edna J., O. Bowly, Meda R., Wilbur F., Mary, and James V.

J. S. WADDLE, in the railway mail service, son of Julius C. and Mary J. Waddle, was born 1853, at Winchester; married, 1891, to Edith, daughter of Isaac and Susan Parsons. Their son is John D. Waddle.

M. W. WATKINS, farmer near Augusta, son of Washington and Rebecca Watkins, English and Irish parentage, was born near Ebenezer, 1845. Mr. Watkins was a Confederate soldier in McNeill's company.

SILAS WILKINS, son of Abraham and Rachel Wilkins, farmer of Sherman district, was born in Hardy County, 1867; German ancestry; married Sarah E., daughter of William and A. M. Davis, 1892; children, Annie V. and Fanchon V.

CHARLES E. WOLFORD, carpenter of Sherman district, son of John J. and Elizabeth J. Wolford, German parentage, was born 1860; married Rebecca V., daughter of Jacob and Louise Godlove, 1880; children, Florence M., Harold C., Charles O., Preston E., Lemuel C., Mary E., and William E.

THE WHITE FAMILY have been for many years connected with the history of Hampshire County, especially since the year 1815, when John Baker White took up his residence at Romney. They are of Scotch and English origin, coming of an old Covenanter family, and united by the ties of blood on the Scotch side with the martyr Patrick Hamilton and Captain Robert White, who assisted in the defence of Derry in 1688-89, and on the English side with Major Henry Baker, who so largely conducted that famous defence of Derry. The family have since the days of Knox been Presbyterians. Their ancestral home was near Edinburgh, Scotland, and is said to be still standing.

The first of the family to reside in America was Robert White, who was a surgeon with the rank of captain in the British navy. Visiting his relative, John William Hoge (who was the ancestor of Dr. Moses Hoge, of Richmond, Judge John Blair Hoge, of Martinsburg, and the Hoges of Wheeling), who resided in Delaware, he married his daughter, Margaret Hoge. For a while he resided near York, Pennsylvania, where he erected a home and called it, after his Scottish home, White Hall. He then removed with his kinsfolk and clientage to Virginia, and



built a home near North Mountain, a little west of Winchester, which he also called White Hall. There he died in the year 1752, in the sixty-fourth year of his age, and was buried in the old Opequon graveyard, near Winchester. He had three sons who survived him, Robert, Alexander, and John, all of whom did service in the French and Indian War, and bore commissions under the colonial government. Robert inherited a large part of the estate with the residence of his father, and it descended to his grandchild. Robert was the grandfather of Francis White, who was sheriff of Hampshire County. Alexander became a lawyer of eminence. John was a member of the first bench of magistrates of Frederick County, Virginia, and was the father of Judge Robert White.

ALEXANDER WHITE, after whom Alexander White, of Hardy County, now deceased, was named, was a very distinguished patriot and statesman, and an uncle of Judge Robert White. There is a volume of Virginia Historical Reports which contains four hundred and seventy-nine pages about Alexander White. He was a member of the House of Burgesses of Virginia with Patrick Henry, and it is said in the book referred to that Patrick Henry never voted until after he had consulted with Mr. White. Alexander White was an eloquent speaker, and being of old Scotch Presbyterian stock, he was much opposed to the support in colonial days of the church by the State, and it is said that he was the first man in this country to offer a resolution in a public body upon the subject of religious freedom, and this long before George Mason had his celebrated resolutions inserted in the Virginia bill of rights. Mr. White was a member of the Virginia convention which ratified the Constitution of the United States. He was also a member of the first Congress of the United States, and some of his speeches are found reported in the debates of that Congress. It is stated in histories of that time that he was the most eloquent man in that Congress. After the adjournment of the first Congress he retired to private life, having done much as a patriot and statesman. He was one of the commissioners to adjust the matters relating to the northwest territory. He practised his profession and owned extensive and valuable lands in Hampshire County.

JUDGE ROBERT WHITE was the father of the late John Baker White, who for about one-half a century was the clerk of both the circuit and county courts of Hampshire County. Judge White was one of the early judges in the district of which Hampshire was a part. He held his first court in this county early in the present century.

He was for many years the president of the old general court of Virginia. The following sketch, copied from the "Southern Literary Messenger" of May, 1837, tells of his life and character. The article is an editorial review of a life of Judge White and others published by a Maryland author.

"Our Maryland friend deserves, and will no doubt receive, the thanks of every Virginian for this interesting sketch of her gallant sons and revolutionary heroes. We doubt not that it will be acceptable to our readers generally. Virginia ranks among her distinguished sons, Robert White, late judge of the general court, who was gathered to his fathers in March, 1831. He was born in the neighborhood of Winchester, March 29, 1759. In his seventeenth year he volunteered as a private in a company commanded by Captain Hugh Stevenson, and marched, June 20, 1775, from Morgan's Springs, Berkeley County, to Boston, where the British army was besieged by Washington. He soon arrested the attention of the commander-in-chief by his chivalric bearing. Washington's discerning eye saw in the boy the germ of that remarkable decision of character which in after years sustained him in many appalling trials.

"On March 17, 1776, Boston was evacuated, and White saw his beloved chief occupying the position vacated by a cruel and imperious foe. Following the standard of his country, he shared the dangers and sufferings of the disastrous campaign of the following summer, when he was made an ensign. We next find him at Germantown, on October 4, 1777, where he fought as a lieutenant under Major William Darke, of Berkeley County, Virginia, his intimate friend through life, who on this occasion displayed an intrepidity unsurpassed by the bravest of the brave.

"After this engagement, which resulted unfavorably to our arms, Lieutenant White was constantly employed in harassing detached parties of the enemy in the spring of 1778. During one of these enterprises, at Short Hill, New Jersey, his thigh was broken by a musket-ball, and nearly at the same moment he received another severe wound in the head from a British grenadier. He fell senseless to the earth, and was taken prisoner. In the autumn, after being exchanged, he reached Winchester by slow and painful efforts, exceedingly lame, weak, and emaciated.

"In 1779 he was commissioned as a captain of cavalry. For some time he was employed in recruiting and training his troop in Philadelphia, but was compelled, from bodily inability, to retire from service. His military career closed in the twentieth year of his age. In this year he commenced the study of law in the office of his uncle Alexander White, one of the most profound lawyers in the Valley of Virginia. While here he read Blackstone, Coke, and other books for nearly four years, until he appeared at the Winchester bar, December, 1783. His health was now restored, and he was quickly cheered with an extensive and profitable practice. He was an able lawyer, clear and cogent in argument, but not eloquent, his voice rather harsh and shrill, and in the impetuosity of debate his enunciation was sometimes affected even to stammering. For ten years he maintained a lofty eminence at the Frederick bar, during which period he was frequently elected to represent his county in the house of delegates. Here he mingled in debate with some of the most prominent figures in the commonwealth. He heard the celebrated Patrick Henry deliver his argument against the British debts. He declared that no language could describe the splendor and grandeur of the scene. On November 16, 1793, Mr. White was appointed judge of the Federal Court of Virginia, which office he held till his death.

"Until 1825, Judge White was not only over indefatigable in discharging the high trusts of his station at Richmond in June and November of each year, but each successive spring and



fall, whatever might be the state of the roads and the weather, you would see him wending his way in his gig, through five counties, of which the tenth judicial district was composed, at the appointed time, for the very small salary of sixteen hundred dollars per annum. His reported opinions in the case of Hyers, who was tried for murder, and Preston's case, on a question of estoppel, are universally acknowledged to be powerful specimens of sound learning and extensive research.

"When Judge White was in the social circle, the sternness of his official character was thrown aside, and the soft, insinuating manners of the polished cavalier made him the delight and admiration of all.

"He kept on steadily in his high career of usefulness to the community until the spring of 1825, when, in coming to court in Loudoun, he halted for the night at a tavern on the banks of the Shenandoah. He retired to his room at an early hour, and was found by the landlord at bedtime, sitting by the fireside, stricken with paralysis. He remained in this situation for several weeks, and was then borne in a litter to Winchester. Here I saw him, and never shall I forget the interview. I approached the patriarch for the first time since his affliction. Alas! how changed. His dark and brilliant eye no more flashed with the lightning of genius; those lips, which were once vocal in the discharge of his official duties and in establishing the rights of his fellow-citizens, were now almost powerless; the intellect was prostrated; his noble form was in ruins; all was desolate and sorrowful. I wrung the hand of the patriot, and bid him adieu forever. He died a Christian, and rests near the tomb of General Morgan in Winchester."

JOHN BAKER WHITE was born near Winchester, Virginia, August 4, 1794. He enlisted as a soldier in the War of 1812, and was made an ensign. He was appointed clerk of the circuit and superior court of Hampshire County in 1814, and on March 20, 1815, he qualified as clerk, and he continued to fill both these offices by successive appointments and elections up to the time of his death. In early life he was married to Miss Louisa Tapscott, of Jefferson County, by whom he had three children, Susan J., who married William J. Armstrong, of Hampshire County; Juliet Ople, who married Noble Tabb, of Berkeley County, and Arabella, who married Judge Lucas P. Thompson, of Augusta County. This wife living only a few years, he afterwards married Frances A. Streit, of Winchester, who bore him nine children. He was a man of great integrity, kind heart, strong sense, sound judgment, high principle, and broad cultivation. He was a Christian, and was prominent in every enterprise for the advancement of the county or the betterment of its people, a good lawyer and safe counsellor, true and trusty in all the relations of life, and with a heart and hand ever open to charity. His life was rich in good deeds, and his means and large influence were potent factors in promoting the material interests and moral, religious, and intellectual advancement of the people of his county.

Few men have been more beloved and honored than he was among his own people. Possessed of means in his younger days, his home was the seat of true old Virginia hospitality, and it opened its doors not only to friends, relations, and those of worth and high position, young and old, who crowded its rooms, but also to every passing soul who needed food or shelter. The house first built by him in his early life was a large brick mansion. It was destroyed by fire in the year 1857, and upon its site was then erected the smaller brick house in which he resided until driven from it during the war between the States in 1861, and it is now the residence of Julius Waddle.

Among the young persons who to a large degree received their training under his care in his office and as inmates of his home and who afterwards became useful and honorable men were Newton Tapscott, a brilliant lawyer, who died at an early age; Henry M. Bedinger, member of Congress and Minister to Denmark; Alfred P. White and Philip B. Streit, who were in their time perhaps the foremost lawyers at the Romney bar; Judge James D. Armstrong, of the Hampshire judicial circuit, and Dr. Robert White, Presbyterian minister, of Tuscaloosa, Alabama. John Baker White up to 1861 was a Union man. He supported Bell and Everett for president and vice-president in 1860, and voted for the Union candidates for the convention which passed the ordinance of secession, one of whom was Colonel E. M. Armstrong, afterwards of Salem, Virginia, who was Mr. White's son-in-law. But when President Lincoln issued his call for troops to invade and coerce the seceded States, Mr. White at once ranged himself with his State in defence of the rights of the States and the Constitution of the United States as Virginia and her people had always held them. From that time till his death no man was truer to his State, and not many contributed more of effort or suffered more loss in her defence. With three sons out of four (the only ones old enough) in the Confederate army, himself active and effective in his county in bringing the people of this border county almost in a solid mass to the support of the cause in which his State had unsheathed her sword, he inevitably aroused the enmity of the Federals, and was compelled to leave his home to escape arrest. He went with his wife and young children to Richmond, and was given a position in the treasury department of the Confederate government. He died there on October 9, 1862. His death was no doubt hastened by the loss of his property and the anxieties oppressing him. He was buried by the Masonic fraternity in Hollywood Cemetery, at Richmond, Rev. Moses D. Hoge of the Presbyterian Church, Bishop Duncan of the Methodist Episcopal Church South, and Bishop Minegerode of the Episcopal Church, taking part in the funeral services.

COLONEL ROBERT WHITE, now of the city of Wheeling, son of John Baker White, was born in Romney, February 7, 1833. He attended school in Romney, the last being that kept by Dr. Foote, at the Literary society building, now the West Virginia institution for the deaf and blind. He went into his father's office when fourteen years old and remained there until he entered the law school of John W. Brockenbrough, at Lexington, Virginia, where he studied his profession as a lawyer. He obtained his license to practise on March 30, 1854, and at once commenced the practice in Romney. Before the war, he was captain of the volunteer military company known as the Frontier Riflemen, which marched to Harper's Ferry on May 18, 1861, and



reported to Stonewall Jackson, who was then commander of the Virginia troops there. His company was assigned as Company I of the Thirteenth Virginia Regiment, then commanded by Colonel A. P. Hill. During the winter of 1861-62 he was assigned to duty in the ordnance department, until, in 1863, he was authorized to raise a battalion of cavalry. This battalion was raised and organized with him as its commanding officer. Some time afterwards it was united with other companies, and the Twenty-third Regiment of Virginia cavalry was formed, of which he was commissioned the colonel, and in that service he continued until the surrender of General Lee.

Since the war Colonel White has been prominently connected with many of the important affairs in the State. In 1876 he was nominated at the Democratic Convention held in Charleston, without his asking, as the candidate for attorney-general, and was elected to that office by the largest majority ever given to any man in the State. The capital of the State was then at Wheeling, to which city he removed with his family in the spring of 1877. Many years ago he was appointed by the legislature as a member of the State board of trustees of Capon Springs as well as of Berkeley Springs. The latter position he resigned some years ago, but still holds his membership in the Capon Springs board.

A few years after the war, he prepared and attended to the passage of the act of the legislature establishing the deaf, dumb, and blind institution of the State, and when the board of regents met at Wheeling to locate the institution, he attended that meeting, and through his earnest efforts the institution was located at Romney. He was appointed secretary of the board, and for years, while living in Romney, acted as one of the regents. It was through his instrumentality that the contract was made under which the South Branch Railway was afterwards built to Romney, and greatly through his efforts that the means were raised for its construction; and from the beginning, until he removed to Wheeling, he was the president of the company.

As attorney-general of the State, he had charge of very important suits, in which at that time the State was interested, and among them the cases which involved the liability of railroad companies for taxation, which were decided by the Supreme Court of the State in favor of the State and which decision was afterwards affirmed by the Supreme Court of the United States, and by reason of which the railroad companies from that day to this have annually paid large sums, by way of taxation, into the State treasury. He was appointed and acted as the representative of the State upon the staff of the chief marshal at the dedication of the Washington monument, in Washington, February 22, 1885. He has twice represented Ohio County in the legislature; the first time at the session in 1885, and the last in 1891. At both sessions he was the chairman of the finance committee. He has held the office of solicitor of the city of Wheeling for two terms, and has twice been president of the Ohio County Bar Association. He was a member of the celebrated arbitration convention which met in Washington, in May, 1896, and is now the president of the West Virginia Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. He is also a member of the board of trustees of the Southern Memorial Association, and one of the executive committee of that board, and the chief officer of the West Virginia division of the United Confederate Veterans, with the rank in that organization of major-general. For years he has been one of the ruling elders in the First Presbyterian Church at Wheeling, and was a delegate to the Centennial General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church which met in Philadelphia. For years before leaving Romney, he was Master of Clinton Lodge of Masons, and in the year 1875 was Grand Master of Masons in the State of West Virginia, and as such laid the corner-stone of the capitol building at Wheeling.

JOHN B. WHITE, son of John B. White, was born in 1837. Was educated at the Potomac Seminary at Romney; studied law, and was admitted to the bar in 1858; became a partner of James D. Armstrong in the practice of law, and died unmarried at Romney. He was at the time of his death an elder in the Presbyterian Church, and the resolutions of the bar and the officers of the court on the occasion of his death express their "high appreciation of his talents, lofty honor, unassuming modesty, and all the other qualities that adorned his character."

ALEXANDER WHITE, son of John Baker White, was born at Romney in 1841. Was educated at the Potomac Seminary; was sworn in as deputy clerk of Hampshire County courts, April 26, 1860. He entered the Confederate service, April 19, 1861, as a private in Company K, Thirteenth Virginia Infantry. He remained with this company, participating in all the campaigns and battles in which the regiment was engaged, until September, 1864. This was A. P. Hill's old regiment, and it was engaged in almost every battle fought by the "Army of Northern Virginia" up to that time, serving not only around Richmond, but also in the Valley of Virginia and in the Maryland and Pennsylvania invasions. He became a sergeant in his company and one of Stringfellow's sharpshooters. In the winter of 1863 he was recommended to the War Department for transfer and promotion for gallantry. This recommendation was approved by General Lee, and the Secretary of War in the spring of 1864, but the order never reached him until late in the summer of that year, when by virtue of it he became first lieutenant of Company C, Twenty-third Virginia Cavalry, in which capacity he served till the end of the war. After the war he went to Cumberland, Maryland, and was for nearly two years a clerk in the office of Horace Resley, clerk of the circuit court of Alleghany County.

On July 23, 1867, he married Miss Susan L. Williams, of Hardy County, and engaged in farming, he residing upon the farm now occupied by the widow and children, on Capon River near the Hampshire line, until November, 1884, when he died of pneumonia. He was for some years assessor of Hardy County and was candidate for election on the O'Conner ticket in 1872. He was a good scholar, an extraordinarily fine conversationalist, with keen wit, fine imagination, great logical powers and a wonderful command of language. He was a writer of no mean ability, kind, generous, honorable, of perfect integrity, and he won and held the esteem and affections of those with whom he came in contact, and he accomplished in his short life in Capon a work for good which has kept his memory bright and dear in all that region. He was an elder in the Presbyterian Church, abundant in labors and in charity, and left to his children



that best of all heritages, a good name. One of his brothers, who knew him best, speaking of him, said "he was the best and brainiest White." As soldier, citizen, gentleman, Christian, he stood, like Saul of Tarsus, among his brethren higher than them all.

CAPTAIN C. B. WHITE was born in Romney, March 10, 1840, and was educated at the Potomac Seminary in his native town. He is a son of John Baker White, who was clerk of Hampshire County courts and an officer in the War of 1812, and a grandson of Judge Robert White, who was an officer in the Revolutionary War. Inspired with the same spirit and motives which led them into the military service of their State, he, on April 19, 1861, entered the army of Virginia as a private in the Thirtieth Virginia Infantry. He served with that regiment in the Confederate army more than a year, until disabled and discharged, being promoted by consecutive steps to sergeant-major, and acting adjutant. During the winter of 1862 and 1863 he was first a clerk, and then head of a bureau in the Confederate treasury department. In the spring of 1863, having become able for cavalry, though not for infantry service, he resigned his position in the treasury department, and under a commission from President Davis joined within the Federal lines a company of two hundred men for special service. Declining promotion, he remained with his company till the close of the war, receiving one severe and two slight wounds. After the surrender of Lee, he started with part of his company to join Johnston in North Carolina, but Johnston having surrendered before they reached him, the men were disbanded, without surrender or parole, and he returned to his home, reaching there about June 1, 1865. Upon his return home, being then an unpardoned and unpardoned rebel, deterred by the then existing laws of his State from practicing the profession of law for which he had been educated, he rented a farm and engaged successfully in agriculture.

In 1872, the legal disabilities of all ex-Confederates having been removed, he was elected clerk of the county court of Hampshire, and has by successive re-elections held the place ever since. He was for a term clerk of the circuit court also, but declined to be a candidate for re-election to that office.

In 1876, being chairman of the county Democratic committee, he organized and carried out the campaign in his county, which resulted in a victory by the Democratic majority from four hundred and forty nine in the previous election to thirteen hundred and eighty nine.

In 1877 he was appointed State Commissioner for the State of West Virginia, was reappointed by each succeeding Democratic governor, and was for most of the time president of the commission.

In a constitutional convention at Wheeling, in August, 1868, he proposed and advocated, and after strong opposition on grounds of expediency, the constitution adopted, the first straight tariff reform and anti-monopoly constitution ever passed by a Democratic convention of West Virginia. He was among the very first of Hampshire Democrats to declare himself opposed to the financial policy of President Lincoln, a Republican. The Democratic party of Hampshire were the first in the State to declare their opposition to the position of this policy, and Captain White made the first public speech in Hampshire denouncing it, and was thereafter active in working in the organization of the party at that time of party which resulted in the nomination of William J. Bryson for governor. He has been a delegate to most of the constitutional and congressional conventions and to every gubernatorial convention (except one) of his party, and in these conventions has always been found with the majority of Hampshire's delegates supporting Democratic principles and usually successful candidates.

Independent in thought and character and fearless in following his convictions, he has never been a follower of party leaders, but always a consistent though liberal Democrat. He was from its formation until June 1867, commander of Camp Hampshire, Number 446, united Confederate veterans, which was the first camp ever organized in West Virginia. He was also one of the first members of the committee of the Southern Memorial Association, appointed by General J. B. Gordon, and assisted in drafting the plans for the organization and consolidation of that association, and for securing the erection of the Battle Abbey of the South in accordance with the proposition of Charles B. House. Failing health and press of private affairs determined him to resign this position early in 1867, and upon the acceptance of this resignation, Colonel Robert White of Wheeling was appointed in his stead.

Captain White was married July 26, 1867, to Miss Bessie J. Schultze, a daughter of Robert Schultze, of Edinburgh, Scotland, a member of the British diplomatic service residing at the time of her birth at Rotterdam, Holland. She was the mother of Captain White's son, John Baker White, and died June 24, 1889. On May 26, 1873, he was again married to Miss Catherine, daughter of Thomas G. Steele of Fairmont, West Virginia, and has by her four children, Louisa, Anna, Robert C. B., Jr., and Bessie.

Captain White is a Mason, a member of Clinton Lodge at Romney, and a Past Master. He is a member of the Presbyterian Church.

CAPTAIN JOHN B. WHITE, son of Captain C. B. White, was born at Romney, West Virginia, August 24, 1868. His mother was the first wife of Captain White, to whom he was married July 26, 1867. Her maiden name was Bessie J. Schultze. His education was in the public schools and in his father's home. From the time he was thirteen years old, he went to school from nine until four o'clock and worked on the farm before and after school, and during his vacations. He quit school at the age of sixteen, and the next two years were spent on the farm, in the county clerk's office, and in private study. At the age of eighteen he was appointed messenger in the office of the Secretary of State, Henry S. Walker. He was raised to the grade of a clerk in the office, again promoted to stationery clerk, and finally made chief clerk during the latter part of Mr. Walker's term. He was retained in this office by Mr. Walker's successor as a clerk until March 8, 1893, on which date he was appointed private secretary to the governor for the term of four years commencing March 6, 1893.

After leaving home he was entirely on his own resources, and by his own hard work and



conscientious devotion to duty made his way. In politics he is a Democrat, and was recognized in the campaigns of 1892 and 1896 as a leader of young men. He was a member of the governor's guard in 1888, and was gradually promoted to the command of the second battalion of the second Regiment of West Virginia National Guards. He was a number of times despatched to the scene of the strikes in this State, as the special representative of the governor. Captain White is a practising attorney in Charleston. He is a member of the Masonic Fraternity, being a Royal Arch Mason.

ROBERT J. YOSTE, farmer of Gore district, son of Henry and Eliza Yoste, was born 1847; German and Irish ancestry; married Rachel C., daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth Saville, 1873; children, William, Bertha R., and Eliza E.

J. D. ZILER, farmer of Bloomery, son of George and Mary A. Ziler, German parentage, was born 1839; married, 1880, Emily A., daughter of Israel and Elizabeth Hardy; children, George I. and Israel H. He lives twenty-six miles from Romney on a farm of four hundred and fifty acres, ninety improved. He and his brother Joshua once had the remarkable experience of catching a black bear in the wood, one of them holding its mouth shut while the other cut its throat. It had been in a tree, and when it came down they grabbed it.

THE END.





















3 2044 012 761 318

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED  
AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT  
RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR  
BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED  
BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE  
NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE  
BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

STALL-STUDY  
CHARGE

STALL-STUDY  
CHARGE

CANCELLED



